

# C The right plesaunt and goodly

Histore of the four sonnes of Aimon the which for the  
excellent endyng of it, and for the notable provves and great  
vertues that were in them: is no les plesaunt to  
rede, then worthy to be knowne of  
all estates bothe highe  
and lowe.





## The Prologue.



**S**o the Philosopher in the fyrt booke of hys methapsyque sayth þ every man naturally desireth to know and to connewe thynges. And therfore haue the Clerkes & people of great vnderstandinge desyred and couerte to lerned sciencies and to know vertues of thinges. Some by Philosophie, other by Poettrye, and other by Histories and cronyckes of thynges passed. And vpō these three they haue greatly laboured in liche þ thanked be God, by theyr good dylgence and laboures; they haue had greate knowledge by innumerable volumes of bookes, whiche haue be made and compyled by great studye & Payne vnto hys day. And bycause that aboue all thinges the princes & lordes of hys estate and entendement desyre to see thynges of the ryght noble and hye vertues of the predecoures whiche ben digne, and worthy of remembraunce of perpetuall recommendacion. Therfore lase se þ request and commaundement of the ryght noble and vertuous Erle John Erle of Oreforde my good synguler and especial lord I reduced & transtaled out of Frenche into our maternall and Englyshe tongue the lyfe of one of his predecoures named Robert Erle of Oreforde before sayd w diuerte & many great myracles whiche God shewed for him as wel in his lyfe as after his death, as it is shewed all a longe in hys sayde booke. And also that my sayd Lord desyreteth to haue other Histories of olde tyme passed of vertues chual-

ry reduced in lykewyse into our Englishe tonge: he lase sent to me a booke in Frenche conteynynge chaces and sayces of warre doone and made agaynst þ great Emperour and king of Fraunce Charlemayne by þ. iiiii. sonnes of Aymon, other wylle named in Frenche, Les quatre sylz Aymon. Whiche booke accordyng to hys request I haue endeuord me to accomplayshe and to reduce it into our englyshe, to my great coste and charges as in the translatinge as in enprynsing of the same, hopyng & noe doutering but that hys good grace shall rewarde me in liche wise that I shal haue cause to pray for his good and prosperus welfare. And belechynge his said noble good grace to pardon me of þ rude and this simple wozke for accordyng to the coppy whiche he set to me I haue folowed as nigh as I can, and wher as any defaute shal be founde I submyt me to the correction of them that vnderstande the cronycle & history besyching the to correcte it & amende there as they shall synde faute. And I shall praye almighty God for them that so doo to rewarde them in liche wylle that after this shorte and transitory lyfe we all may come to euerlastyng lyfe in heuen. Amen.

¶ Thus endeth the prologue.

¶ Here foloweth the Table of this presente booke.

A.ii. xvi

the table.

**W**ho that wyll know the historye of the fourte noble and worshippe knyghtes, named the fourte sonnes of Aymon, wherof the fyfthe was called Reyna Wde, the seconde Alarde, the thirde Guychard and the fourthe Rycharde: let hym first reade this presence table solowyng, In whiche men shall fynde that thys presente booke conteyneth. xx viii. chapters, whiche speaken of many faire and dyuerse matters, whiche they that shall reade thys chappycres shall nowe see the history all alonge. And ye shall see in this fyfth chappitre, howe that after kyng Charlemayne was come agayne from the partyes of Lombardye where he had had great and merueilouse batailles ayenste the saracyns: he helde vpon whitsondaye open couerte at Parys. Where was a sayre kelauship of Princes and Barons; as ye shall heare after alonge. And in the same chapitre ye shall also see howe the same daye the duke Aymon of Aldeyne broughis to the couerte hys fourte sonnes, that is to wit Reyna Wde, Alarde, Guychard and Rycharde, and howe kyng Charlemayne made theim knyghtes wþ his owne handes, also howe the duke Benes of Argremount slew Lohier the eldest sonne of kyng Charlemayne. the duke Benes was vncle to the fourte sonnes of Aymon, and after howe the duke Benes of Argremount was slain, he coming to Parys by the comandement of kyng Charlemayne after that he had appointed for the deaþ of his sonne. And also in this first chapitre men shal nowe see many other faire matters, whiche were to longe for

to be reherced in this preambule of this present booke. fol. i.

**T**he seconde Chappitre sheweth howe Gryffon of hauleekelle and Guenes after that they had slayne the Duke Benes of Argremount retourned to Parys and recounted to kyng Charlemayne the mortall treason that they had put to execucion, wherof the kyng was ryghte glad and syn after he was ryghte sorry for it. For after that the two bretcherne of the Duke Benes made great warre ayenst him, and so dyd Gerarde of Rousillon, and Dron, and Hawgys the sonne of the duke Benes, and after they made peace and accorded togyþer. But the kinge Charlemayne accorded not with the fourte sonnes of Aymon nor to their cosin Hawgys. Item howe Reynawde slew the nevew of king Charlemayne with a chesse boorde as they plaid togyþer at the chesse, wherof the warre began the whiche was so mortall and lasted so longe: that it bare a great dommage to the realme of Fraunce. fol. xiii.

**T**he thirde chappitre speaketh, howaþer that kyng Charlemayne hadde made all his batons to forlake the fourte sonnes of Aymon. He went and besyged them at mourenforde where he was discomficed two tymis but the castelle of Mourenforde was taken after that, by treason. And after howe Reynawde and his bretcherne auenged theim of the traytours that betayned theim. And after saued theim selfe wþin the forest of Aldeyne where theyr fader

the table.

Father found the as he went from the  
Syege to warde his londe of Bordon.  
And howe so to keep his orde that he  
had made to kyng Charlemayne. He  
dyd assayle hys sonnes, so that of  
fyue hundred menne that they were  
there abode on fyve with his sonnes but  
xvii. persones. But Reynawde and his  
brether had none euil, but slew many  
of their faders men. fol. xvi

**T**he sixt chappere sheweth how  
after that the olde Iimon had dis-  
comfyted his chyldeyn: they wene  
and dwelled in the depest of the forest  
of Ardeyne and abode ther eyll that  
they were al counterfayre blacke and  
roughe as wilde beastes so the greace  
hungre that they had suffred, and ac-  
ter they went to Bordon so to see their  
father that made them good ther, and  
feasted them greatly. And gaue them  
of hauoyre so muche that they myghc  
well make war with ayenst the king,  
and howe Matgis ther cosyn attri-  
ued whan that they shold haue depar-  
ted, whiche wene with them in to the  
realme of Gascoigne with fyue hun-  
dred knyghtrs. And whan they mo-  
ther sawe them deparre she was so i-  
full sorpe. fol. xxi

**T**he sytthe chappere sheweth how  
after that Reynawde and hys  
brether with their cosyn mat-  
gis were departed from theyr mother  
so to seeke their aduenture: they wene  
so longe eyll they came to the realme  
of Gascoigne. And howe goynge thi-  
ther warde they made manye euylls  
in fraunce. And howe the kyng of

Gascoigne whā they were come therē  
dyd receive them in his seruise ryghtes  
sweetly in bōrdē upon Gyronde, by  
cause that than this king of Gascoigne  
nebat was called Pon had warre a-  
penst a kyng sarasin that was entred  
in to Gascoigne, that had to name  
Boetus that helde Tholouse and all  
the londe aboure. fol. xxvi

**T**he vi. chapter speaketh how  
Reynawde and his bretherne  
discreased bōrgons a sarasin that  
had destroyed the realme of Gascoigne,  
and had chased the kinge pon to bōrdē  
upon Gyronde that durst not  
depart from thence for feare of the sa-  
rasins. And howe kyng pon gaue his  
sister Clare unto Reynawde to be hys  
wyfe, for the greace seruise that he  
hadde doon to hym. And dyd doo ma-  
ke so hym the castell of Mounte W-  
ban. fol. xxviii

**T**he seuenth chappere speaketh  
how Charlemayne for a boy-  
ge that he made to saint James  
in Galice he knewe in his comynge  
agayne hys Reynawde and his bre-  
therne that were his mortalle enemis  
were in Gascoigne wiche in a strengē  
castel called Mounte Wban. And how  
he senne worde to kinge pon that he  
shoulde deluyer to hym Reynawde and  
hys bretherne. And yf he refusid  
to doo thys: he sholude come and  
besyge hym in hys londe afore x. or  
xit. moneths were passed, wherof kyng  
pon answered that he shoulde not doo  
it. And howe after that kyng Char-  
lemayne was recournd to patys,

133. Baw

## The table

Rowlande his neues arryued at  
Paris, whiche the kyng made knyght.  
And after sent him for to reyle a lige  
afore Loloyn that a sasyn had be-  
syged, that was called Loloynawde  
the which was ouercome by Rowland  
And howe Reynawde wan the crow-  
ne of Charlemayne for his well ren-  
yngge vpon hys baye horse at Pa-  
rys. fol. xlviij.

**H.**. viii. chapitre speakech howe  
**T** Charlemayne went in to Gas-  
cogne with his host & besieged  
Reynawde and his bretherne Within  
Mountroun, and he we Reynawde  
wan the syrte batayn of the king, which  
Rowlande conduyted with Olyuet,  
and the bishop Turpin wherof Char-  
lemayne was so sore wrother that he  
wende to haue wered mad for it of the  
great shame that he had of it. fol. li.

**H.**. ix. chapitre sheweth howe  
**T** Reynawde and his bretherne  
were betrayed and sole to king  
Charlemayne by kyng yon, that sent  
theym in to the playne of Valcolou-  
res all unarmed, but onelye of theyz  
swoedes, tydinge vpon muletes clo-  
thed with mantelles of scarlate sur-  
red with mynes. From the Whiche  
walle they escaped worthylye, by the  
wyll of oure lord. But they were so-  
re wounded. Of Charlemaines par-  
eye abode there deade Foulques of  
Mouzon, and many other barons for  
whome the kyng was ryghte sorre.  
folio. lvi.

**H.**. x. chapitre speakech, howe  
**T** after that Goodard the secreta-  
rye of kyng yon had be wraped

all the treason to Hawgys that the  
kyng yon had doone to hys cosyns  
whiche he knewe well. For he had  
seene kyng Charlemaynes leetes.  
And had wyteen answere therupon  
from kyng yon, that Hawgys brought to  
reynawde and hys, such a succours  
that by his wyt they were kepte from  
death. fol. lxvii.

**H.**. xi. chapitre speakech howe  
**T** by the succours that Hawgys  
brought to reynawde and to his  
bretherne into the playne of Valco-  
loures, they discomfited kyng charle-  
maynes folke, wherof Ogier had ma-  
yne reproches of rowlande for some  
goodnes and fauoure that he had shew-  
ed to reynawde and his bretherne at  
the mountroun, and was therfore  
called traitour, wherof a great incon-  
uenience came therof afterwarde a  
soze king Charlemayne. fol. lxxi.

**H.**. xii. chapitre sheweth howe  
**T** that after reynawde and hys  
bretherne were whol of their woun-  
des that they had had in the playnes  
of Valcoloures: they retourned to  
Mountroun. But whan kyng yon  
knewe of theyz comynge agayn: he  
fledde awaye, and made hym selfe to  
be shorne a monke in a monastery that  
was within the woode of the serpente,  
where to wande and Ogier the Dan  
founde him and wold haue made him  
be hanged, for the treason that he had  
doone to reynawde and to his brethe-  
ren, yf Reynawde had not succoured  
him. fol. lxxviii.

The table.

**H**e xiiii. chapter sheweth, how that after Reynawd had succoured kyng Ryn, was the same houre a meteuplyouse battayle betwene Reynawd and the frenliche men. For Rowlande was there sore beten and many other, wherof Ogier was glad by cause that Rowland had called him traptoore. And also he knewe that the loute sonnes of Aymon, were not for to be so lyghtelye overcomen, as men had sayde afore. And for this cause there had been a sore medle betwene Rowland and Ogier, if it had not be the other barons that departed them, and in this reountre Rycharde the brother of Reynawd abode for prisone of Rowlande. fol. lxxviii.

**H**e xlii. chapter sheweth how after that Reynawd, Rard, and Guychard were gone to Warde Moundawban after the battayle, and that they had made full greate sorowe for Rychard thei<sup>r</sup> brother which was in kyng Charlemaines handes. The sayd Rychard was deuyeted by manys greate wylde. fol. xc.

**H**e xv. chapter speakest how after that Reynawd and hys brethren and Hawgys had discomfited Charlemayne: they came and ouerthrew downe his paulyon, and bare a waye with them the Egle of golde, that was there vpon the paulyon wherof kyng Charlemayne was sore an angred, in so muche that he wolde yelde vp his crowne vnto his barons, sayinge that he wold be no

more kyng, for they had sayled hym and habandonne for the loute sonnes of Aymon, and sayde to the that they shold crown Reynawd that he myght be thei<sup>r</sup> king, for they loued him much more than they dyd hym. Then Olyuer sayde to kyng Charlemayne, that he shoulde take againe the crowne, and that he shoulde bryng to him Hawgys that he had taken, whan he was aboue to pylle the paulyon, so he abode alone. Whan kyng Charlemayne heirde the same: he tooke agayne his crowne, and was ryghte glad of th<sup>e</sup> pris of Hawgys. fol. cii.

**H**e xvi. chapter speakest how the kyng Charlemayne wold doo hange Hawgys Incony, nente that Olyuer had take hym to him. But by the meane of the Douse pices of Fraunce that at the requestes of Hawgys pledgyd hym, for one nyght onely: he made so muche that he escaped to the honoure and acquytaunce of hys lertes and of hym, and bare a waye with hym to Moundawban the crowne and the swerde of kyng Charlemayne the same nyghte. Wherof kyng Charlemayne was full soray. And therfore he sende word to Reynawd that he shoulde sende to hym agayne his crowne and his swerde, and all that Hawgys had borne a waye with hym, and he shoulde graunt hym his truce for two yeres. To the whiche thing Reynawd accorded hym, wherof happed to hym after that many greate euylles. fol. cv.

The

### The table

**T**he. xvii. chappitre sheweth, how Reynawde caught with Boiland. which he ouercame, by the wyl of god. And broughte him to mountawban, wherof kyng Charlemayne was greatly wrothe. And also sheweth how mawgys brought king Charlemayne in to the castel of Mountawban upon bayarde all a slepe. And after tooke him to Reynawde within his bed. And after went and attayned hym leste in maner of an hermyte poorely cloched. And leste all his kynnesmen and frendes, by cause that he wolde not let the peace of Reynawde toward the kyng Charlemayne. For the war had lasted to longe. fol. cxviii.

**T**he. xviii. chappitre sheweth how after that Maugys had taken Charlemayne in to the handes of Reynawde his good colin: he went with out leaue in to a woode nyghe the ryuer of Bordon, in to a hermitage where he dyd dwelle as an hermyte, living poorely for to sauue his soule. fol. cxvii.

**T**he. xix. chappitre sheweth how the barons of Fraunce that were at Mountawban made great sorowe by cause that they myghte not awake the kyng Charlemayne that Maugys by his crake had made to slepe, and broughte unto Mountawban. But whan the houre of the enchaunement of Maugys was passed: kyng Charlemayne awaked. And whan he saw hymselfe in Mountawban: he sware that he shoulde never make peace wryth Reynawde as

longe as that he were prysoner. And so Reynawde dyd sende him againe upon his horse bayard free and quide, wherof he repented him soore after warden. For soone after this, kyng Charlemayn made Mountawban to be besyged of so nyghe: that he famylshed Reynawde and his bretherne, his wife and his chldern, and all the people, so that they dyed for hungre and chirst, the most partie. fol. cxvii.

**T**he. xx. chapitre speakeþ how after that Charlemayne had besyged Mountawban of so nyghe that he dyd famylsh all them that were wrythim, knewe howe Reynawde was gone, and had habandonned Mountawban, and was gone his waye he and his bretherne, hys wryke and hys chyldeyn by vnder the erthe, and were gone to Ideyne, where kyng Charlemayne went and besyged the agayne. But alore that he dyd set hys syege: Reynawde and hys bretherne issyued ouce apon hys, wherby manye one loste their lyfe of the one partie and of the other. And the duke Richarde of Normandye was taken therre, which was one of the doulx petes of Fraunce, and a ryghe noble and a wroþy knyght, yren and hardy, wherfore kyng Charlemayne was ryght sorwe. fol. cxix.

**T**he. xxi. chapitre sheweth, how Maugys beyng in his hermitage, came in his mynde a vysyon that he hadde by nyghe in his slepe, for to goe see Reynawde and his bretherne. Then in the morwyng he tooke hys wryke, and fowlder wroþy chaunces

### The table.

chauntes the whiche had be robbed by  
seuen cheues in a wood. Of the whi-  
che seuen cheues: Maugys slewne fwe  
of them wth his palstev, and tooke  
again to the matchauntes theyr mar-  
chaundys, and all theyr hauoyres.  
And than he wene soore his wape to-  
ward Mountabon to see his cos-  
syns and his bretheren. fol. cxxvii.

**H**e. xxi. Chapytre Sheweth,  
how Reynawde wold haue  
doon hange Richard the duke of Nor-  
mandye by cause he myghte not haue  
peace with the kynge Charlemayne.  
Ind howe whan the Douse peeres  
of Fraunce knewe this: they came to  
kyng Charlemayne and prayed hym  
to make peace with Reynawde, for  
to haue againe theyr feli. The duke  
Rycharde of Normandys, to the whi-  
che chynge kyng Charlemayne an-  
swered that he wold not doo so, wher-  
of they were so sore an angred that  
they left hym, but kyng Charlemain  
dyd sende after them and sent them  
wordes that they shoulde returne  
agayne to hym, and that he shoulde  
make peace with Reynawde vnder  
this condicyon that Reynawde shoulde  
goe beyonde the sea, beggyng his  
breade. fol. cxxvii.

**H**e. xxii. Chapytre Sheweth,  
howe after that Reynawde  
was departed from Ardeyne for to  
make his vyage beyonde the sea, poo-  
rely clothed as a pylgrym seekyng  
hys breade for goddes sake: Rycharde  
of Normandye tooke Bayarde and  
brought with hym Iard, Guphard,  
and Rycharde bretherne to Reynawde

and presented them to Charlemayne  
the whiche he receyued ryghte honour-  
ably by good loue, and after braks  
his syege and departed for to goe to  
Patys. But whan he was in the ci-  
tye of Lyege upon the brydge ouer  
the riuere of Meuse: he made Bayarde  
to be cast into the Water with a mille  
stone at the necke of hym, but bayarde  
the horse escaped and is yet a lyue in  
the forest of Ardeyne, as men sayen.

Fol. cxliii.

**H**e. xliii. Chapytre Sheweth  
howe that after Reynawde was  
departed from Ardeyne from  
hys bretherne, from his wife and fro  
hys chyldryne for to goe beyonde the  
sea, for to accomlysyhe hys voyage to  
to the holy graue: he found in Consta-  
tynople his cosyn Maugis and went  
boch togidher vnto aforne Iherusalem,  
that a kynges lacasyn whiche was ad-  
myral of percie had taken by treason,  
but Reynawde and Maugis dyd so  
muche wth the folke of the lond, that  
the cypre was take agayne of the chri-  
sten. fol. cxlii.

**H**e. xxv. Chapytre Sheweth, how  
that after Reynawde was come  
agayne from the holy londe wher-  
re he had doone meteyles: he sent his  
moner and sonner hys two sonnes  
to kyng Charlemaine muche honou-  
rably for to be made knyghtes of hys  
hande. for he taughte them well in  
araynes in all good maners, and tooke  
to the myue hundred good men well  
horsed for to conduyte them towards  
the kyng at Patys. fol. Lvi.

**H**e. xxvi. Chapytre Sheweth  
how after that kyng Charle-  
mayne

the table.

mayne had muche swetely receyued  
the chyldren of Reynawde and made  
them knyghtes: they fought wþ þ  
sonnes of Foulques of Morþilon,  
and discomfited them in the feild at  
Paris, whiche is called the ylle of  
our ladi. Bicaus that they had char-  
ged theyz father of treason, bicaus  
he had slaine theyz father Foulques  
of morþilon in the playnes of Val-  
colours. Fol. Lvi.

**T**he xxviii. chapitre conteyneth  
þow þ after Reynawde was  
gone fro Mountawban in maner of  
a pylgryme never to haue returnd a-  
gayne after that he had dealed his  
goodes to his chyldren, his breþers  
and his sonne Aymone made great  
soww, whan they wylt that he was  
gone wþout theyz kno wledge all  
barefote wþ a palster in his hande.  
Folio. Lxvii.

**T**he xxviii. chapitre sheweth  
þow after that Reynawde  
was deparced fro Mountawban for

to sauþ his soule he went to Colcine  
þpon the Rynne, and founde that men  
builded the churche of saynt Peter.  
And there came to hym a Wyll and  
a deuocyon for to serue the masons  
that wrought ther, for the loue that  
he had to our lord. But at the laste  
the other labourers had so great en-  
uy at hym of that he was more los-  
ued than they were of all the may-  
sters for the good seruice that he dyd  
that they slew hym, and after they  
put hym in a sacke & caste hym into  
the water of the Rynne, but by the wil  
of our lord his corps appered aboue  
þ Water making so many sayre my-  
racles healing of all sykenesses, so  
that he was named a saynte the day  
of hys buryenge. Fol. Lxix.

**C**here fynssheth the table  
and consequently foloweth  
the booke heere after.

Howe duke Aimon of Arden brought to the courte his  
soues sonnes, that is to wit Reynawde, Alarde, Guichard, and Richard, and  
howe kyng Charlemayne made them knyghes Wyth his owne handes, also  
howe the duke Benes of Aigremount slew Lohier the eldest sonne of kyng  
Charlemain. the duke benes was vncle to the soues sonnes of Simon, and after  
howe the duke Benes of Aigremount was slaine coming to Paris by the  
commaundemente of kyng Charlemayn after that he had appoin-  
ted for the death of his sonne. And also in this first chapitre  
men shal now see many other faire matters, which  
were to longe for to be reherced in the  
preamble of this present  
ooke.



Whelye we finde in  
the gestes & faices  
of the good kyng  
Charlemayne that  
vpd a time at a feast  
of Penthecoste the  
sayde kyng Charle-  
mayne kept a ryght great and solemp-  
ne court at Paris, after that he was  
come againe fro the partyes of Lom-  
bardy where he had had a ryght great  
and meruaylous batayle ayenst the  
Saracyns, and such folke as were  
oute of the beleue, wherof the cheef of  
the sayde Saracins was named Gis-  
thelym the lesne. The whiche the said  
kyng Charlemayne by hys prouesse  
and valyauntnes had dyscomfyred  
& ouercomen. At the which battaylle  
and dyscomfyture dyed greate noble-  
neses of kinges, princes, Dukes, Er-  
les, barons, knyghes and squyters.  
As Salamon of breteyn. Huon erle  
of Hauns, syr pyes, syr puoyeberen-  
ger, and Hacon, syr Atnaunde of Be-  
aulande, syr Walleraunce of Bollon  
and many valyaunte knyghes. The  
Douse petes of Fraunce were come

ther and many Almaynes and Eng-  
lyshmenne. Normans Poeteuyns.  
Lombardes and Barnyets. And as  
monge other Dukes & princes was  
come thys her. The good and Worþre  
duke Iymes of Aldeyne. And in his  
fela wþypp his soue sayre sonnes,  
that is to wyt Reynawde, Alarde,  
Guichard, and Richard, that were  
wonderfull sayre, wþypp, great, migh-  
tyn, and valyaunte, spesyally Reyn-  
awde whiche was the greatest and  
the tallest manne that was founde at  
that tyme in al the worlde. For he had  
xvi. feete of length and more. Than at  
this assamble and feast stood the sayd  
kyng Charlemayne on his feete a-  
monge his prynces and barons, say-  
inge in this wylle, barons my brether-  
en and frendes, ye knowe howe I  
haue conquered and gotten so manye  
greate londes by youre helpe and suc-  
tors. So many of the Saracins and  
misbeleuers brought to death, & in my  
subiection, howe but late agoe ye haue  
seen by þ paynyn Gisthelym whiche  
I haue dyscomfyred & ouercomen, and  
reduced to the chyssen faich. Nor wþch  
standing

The table

Standynge we haue losse there ryghte  
greate cheualry and noblenesse. And  
so; saute of many of oure bassetilles  
and subiecces that to vs dayneth not  
to come, howe be it that we had sent  
for theym, as the Duke Rycharde of  
Roussellon, the duke Bryon of Nan-  
cuell, and the duke Benes of Hygrem-  
ounte, that been all three bretherne  
Germayne. Wherof vnto you I com-  
playneme, and tell you that yf it were  
not syz Salamon that Woxchylle  
came to succoute vs with. xx. thous-  
ande sygheynge menne, and syz Lam-  
breyght bernier and syz Gestraye of  
Bourdelle bich walleraunce of Bul-  
lon that bare our baner: we were alle  
dyscomyted and lost as ye all kno we  
we, and this by the defaut of the said  
thre bretherene that dayned never to  
come to our sendynge, nor obey, and  
aboue all the duke Benes of Hygrem-  
ounte. Ill be it that they be all oure  
lyege menne that euer owen to me ser-  
uice and sydelytie. Now I shal sende  
hym Worde that he come to serue me  
at this nexte somer with all his po-  
wer. And in case that he shal be refu-  
syng to obeye oure commaundemen-  
tes: by saynt denys of fraunce I shal  
sende for al my freendes and subiecces  
and I shal gae besprege him at Hygrem-  
ounte. And yf we can haue him: I  
shal make him to be shamefully han-  
ged and his sonne Hawgis to be slas-  
he all quycke, and shal do brenne his  
vncourteous wyle. And I shal sett  
all his londes in fyre. Than the good  
Duke Haymes of Bayere rose vp  
dyligently and said to kynge Charles  
mayne in this wyle. Sayz me semer  
that ye ought not to angre your selfe

so sore. And yf ye wyl beleue my coun-  
sel: ye shal sende a messenger to the  
duke of Hygremount which messan-  
ger shal be wel and honourably accom-  
panied. And he muste be sage and pru-  
dent, so to shewe wel to the Duke of  
Hygremounte all that ye shal charge  
hym. And after whan ye shal know  
hys answere and his wyl; ye shal  
than aduyse you what ye oughte for  
to doo. In good fayre sayde the kyng,  
ye counseylle me ryghte well and wi-  
selye. Than thoughte Charlemayne  
what message he myght sende to him.  
And than he sayde all hyghe afore  
them all, complauninge himselfe who  
shall be he that shal doo thys mes-  
sage. And for double of deathe shal not  
leue nothynge unsayd of hys message  
to the duke benes, but there was no-  
ne of them all that oughte answered.  
For manye of them were of Sybbe to  
hym. As the duke Symon of Ardeyne  
that was his brother Germayne.  
Thus were the soute bretherne of one  
fater and of one mocher. Than was  
kynge Charlemayne ryghte wrothe  
and angrye. And swore by saynt de-  
nys that the Duke benes shoulde be  
wasted and destroyed. And no manne  
shoulde be in the wrold that shoulde  
keep him thereto. Than he called digh  
his eldest sonne Lohier saying in this  
maner, ye must doo this message my  
dete sonne, and lede with you so; you  
conduye and serue an hundred kny-  
ghet arm'd and honourably arrayed,  
And ye shal saye to the Duke benes  
of Hygremounte that yf he come not  
for to serue vs thys somer aboue  
saynt Johans daye nexte comynge  
as I haue saide afore: that I shal be  
slege

Syege Aygremounte & shall dystroye  
 all his lande and he and his I shal  
 doo hange or slea al quicke, and his  
 wyke to be brenke. Syz sayd Lohier  
 al at your pleasure, I shal doo. And  
 wit þ ic shall not be taryed, for feare  
 of death, but that I shal tell him al  
 a longe al that ye haue charged me  
 of. And I shall depart to morow in  
 the morwyng by the grace of God.  
 Than shouldest you haue sene þ king  
 weape of pitie for his sonne Lohier  
 For he repented him þ he had char-  
 ged him for to doo this message, but  
 syn þ he had so sayd: he must doo it.  
 And the moorne was come Lohier &  
 his noble company made them re-  
 dy and after lept on horsbacke, and  
 came afore þ kyng. Than sayd Lohier  
 to the kyng his father. Syz here  
 I am redye and all my folke for to  
 fulfyl your wyl. Fayre sonne sayd  
 Charlemayne I recomand thys vns-  
 to god that on þ crosse suffred death  
 and passion, and hym I beseche to  
 kepe and wacont thee & all thy ser-  
 lawshyp from eury & from any com-  
 braunce, than departed Lohier and  
 his company, wherof after warde  
 the kyng made great lamentacyon  
 for his sonne Lohier, and not wylth  
 out a cause. For he shal never see hi  
 quicke agayne as ye shal understand  
 þ yc wyl kerken it. Now go the ge-  
 till messangers streyght towarde  
 Aygremount, soze thretenyng the  
 duke Benes of Aygremount, saying  
 that they shouldest take the head from  
 the body of hym þ he doo ought to  
 them agaynst his deuoyce. But ic  
 shal go all other wylle w them. For  
 ic hayed all contrary to theyz myn-

des and purpose wherof afterward  
 many ladyes abode Widowes wout  
 hushades, & many gentil wome wout  
 a louer. And so many churches  
 destroyed, and so many landes brenke  
 and wasted, wherof it is yet pitie for  
 to see. And thus ridinge & thretenyng  
 Benes of Aygremount, a spy heard  
 all that they sayd, and came hastelye  
 to Aygremont to ward Benes that  
 was in his Palays and tolde hym  
 how messagers were coming unto  
 hym from kyng Charlemayne that  
 soze thretened him, and that the sone  
 of kyng Charlemayne was there in  
 person. Than sayd the Duke to hyg  
 folke wherof he had at that houre son  
 son with him in his Palays because  
 of the feaste of pentheroste. Lordes  
 sayd he, the kyng Charlemayne set-  
 teth lyte by me, that will that I shal  
 go serue him with all my power and  
 my purssance, and that wox is, he  
 sendeth to me his eldest sonne for to  
 tel me some message þ threteneth me  
 greatly, what counsell ye me thereto  
 my bretherne & frændes. Than spa-  
 ke a good knyght that was called  
 syz Simon, & sayd. My lord I shal  
 counsel you truly þ yc wyl herken  
 and beleue me. Receyue honourably  
 the messangers of the kyng Char-  
 lemayne. For wel ye wote that he is  
 your ryght wyse lord, and wit that  
 who þ warreth against his souerayn  
 Lord: he doth agaynst god & tayson  
 and haue no regarde to your kynne  
 nor to thys that your bretherne Gy-  
 rarde of Roussillon and the duke of  
 Rantuell wolde not obey hym. For  
 I aduise you wel that Charlemayn  
 is myghty, and he shall distroye you

### The booke of the fourre

osbody and of goodes, but yf that ye obey him. And yf ye amiable go to hym, he shall haue mercy of you. Than answered the duke that thus he wolde not doo, and that the sayd knyght gaue him euill counsell. For yet sayd he I am not so low brought but that I haue three brythren that shall helpe to susteine and beare out my warre agaynst Charlemayne, & also my fourre neueres the sonnes of my brother Aymes of Dordon & ben full fayre knyghtes, wychy and wel caught in faytes of warre. Alas sayd than þ duchesse. My good lord beleue your good counsell. For no men shall prayse you that ye make warre agaynst your right wylde lord, and wile it welle that it is agaynst the comandementes of God, & against all equitie. Wherfore yf ye haue misdoone any thig agaynst hym, doo so much þ ye be accorded w him. And take none heed to your brethren, as syz Symon dothe counsell you. For neuer good may come therof so to be euyl in faioure w his louetayne lord. Than behelde the duke the duchesse in great warthe and bad her that she shold holde her peace in þ deuilles name, & that she shold neuer more speake to hym of this master. For in certayne he shold not do for the kyng Charlemayne the mou tenaunce of a peny. So helde her peace þ duchesse & sayd that she shold speake nomore to hym therof.

**O**reat was the noyse and the bruyte within the palayce of Aygremount, for some counselled the duke, that thus as the duchesse

sayd: he shold doo, and many other sayd nay. Than sayd the duke unto them that counselled him naye and that he shold not accordenor make peace wth the kyng Charlemayne, that he could theym chanke, muche longe they spake of this mater. And the messangers of the kyng Charlemayne duryng the same haue riden so muche that they ben come to Aygremount. And the castell was set upon a roche ryght hye and well conuerted with stronge walles thicke highe and wel garnyshed with great towres, so that for the strength and syuacyon of the castell, it was impenable, but only by famylyng. Than sayd Lohier to þ lordes that were wth hym. Lordes nowe see what a fortresse is there, what walles what a ryuer teneth at the foote of it: I beleue verely that in al chis tendome is not her lyke. It can never be take by force, but yf it is by famylyng. Tha spake a knyght that was called Sauary and sayd to Lohier his lord, syz sayde he it semeth me (spekyng vndre correccion) that my lord the kyng Charlemayne your father hath enterprised a great foly, whan he croweth to come to at an ende of this duke of Aygremout for in good sorte he is right puissant And I beleue that he shall make as mani men for to make the warre, as shall my lord your father yf it cam there to that he wolde make hym warre. It were a fayre thynge yf they myght be accorded together, and of my parte I shoulde counsell the same yf it myght be doone. But well I wot that yf your father had

had hym, al þ golde in Paris shold  
not kepe hym, but that he shold do  
hange hym or r̄is lea hym quycke.  
So beseche I you ryght deere syz þ  
ye speake humbly vnto the duke be-  
nes of Argremont. For in certayne  
he is ryght fyers and outaygous &  
incontinençt myght haue there a soze  
meddle betwene you and hym, wher  
of the losse shold tourne vpon vs.  
For we ben to swolde folke. Than an-  
swered Lohier and sayd to hym that  
he sayd well and wylsely, but alway-  
es sayd he we doubt hym not of any  
thyng. We be here al redy an hondred  
knygthes well appoynted, and for  
sothe þ he say vnto vs anye thyng  
vnto our dyspleasure: he shalbe the  
fyrt that shall repent and be sorwe for  
it. Than sayd the knyght Sauare al  
softly to hymself, that this were not  
wylsely doone. For wel I were said  
he vpon my sayth that yf it hap you  
to say any thyng to hym that by any  
maner shall displease hym: he shall  
make you sorwe and shall wreke it  
vpon your bodye. And happelye we  
shall all be in a waye for to dy. Thys  
aduise your selfe well & wyl to pro-  
cede prudently in your message.  
For well I say vnto you that he is  
ryght cruel, and of greate worthy-  
nesse accomylshed.

**T**hus spekyng of one thyng and  
of other rode so longe the mes-  
sangers, that they ben come to  
the gate of the castel which was sone  
shet by the porter, then knocked the  
sayd knyghtes, and the porter answe-  
red to them. Lordes what be you?  
Freende answered Lohier open to

vs this gate presently. For we wyl  
speak to the Duke Benes of Argre-  
mont from the kinge Charlemayn  
Now abyde you a lytle and hast you  
not sayd the porter. And I wyl goe  
speake redely to my lord the Duke.  
So went the sayde porter into the  
halle wher he sawe the Duke his  
lord. He kneeled incontinençt afore  
him & tolde him howe downe at the  
gate was a right great company of  
men of armes. And that they were  
well an hondred men or more ryght  
well horsed & well arm'd, and with  
them is the eldest sonne of king char-  
lemayne þ strongly threteneth you,  
and also your folke. My lord sayde  
the porter shall I open the gates vnto  
the, yea sayd þ duke. For I doubt  
them not thyng, and we ben ynoch  
for them. And many worthy knygh-  
tes and esquyers ben nowhere able  
for to defende vs all, were Charle-  
mayne himself with them with hys  
puissaunce. So ran incontinençt the por-  
ter downe agayne for to open vnto  
them the gate. Lohier & his felowes  
entred vnto and mounted vp vnto  
the donegeon of the castel wher the  
duke was that sayd to hys barons.  
Lordes heere cometh the eldest sonne  
of the kyng Charlemayne for to tell  
me his meüage. But (bi þ god þ suf-  
fered death and passyon) þ he speake  
wylsely to vs he shal do as sage. And  
þ he sayth any thyng that shalb dys-  
please vs, we shall soone & without  
delaye take vengeance therof. So  
was the duke Benes well accom-  
panied & nobly of wel two hondred  
knygthes & more. Thys was in the  
moneth of May that all creatures

## The booke of the fourre

humain ought wel for to reioyce the  
and that folke preu and worthy in  
armes taken here and hardinesse for  
to defende them self wel, and warre  
agaynst they, enemyes. And this du  
ring: Lohier the sonne of king char  
lemayne entred into the halle of the  
Palays of Agremount ryght no  
bly armed and his folke also, and  
saw the halle ryght garnyshed  
of fayre folke rychelye arayed. And  
the duke sittynge ryght proudlye a  
monge his barons, and the duchesse  
hys Wyfe next by hym, and before  
hym his sonne Maugrys that was  
a great mayster of the science of Ni  
gromancy that playcd afore his fa  
ther of his art of nigromancy, wher  
in the Lordes that were there tooke  
great pleasure. And wit it well that  
in all the Wozde was not a wor  
thyer chyisten, nor more able, than  
Was the sayd Maugrys. Except on  
lye hys cosyn Reynawde one of the  
Sonnes of Iymon, wherof specyal  
ly treateth now this History. Than  
marched forthe Lohier and Wente  
in the fyrt of all, and after hym hys  
folke by good condurte. And salued  
the duke Sines of Agremount in  
thys Wyse, wherby moch great euill  
happed vnto him at last. That God  
that created þ firmament and made  
all thyng of nougnt for the people  
to susteyne. And on the crosse suffred  
death and passyon for all soules to  
be redeemed out of the paynes of hel:  
keep and saue the king Charlemay  
ne Emperour of Almayne and king  
of Fraunce and all hys noble lyne  
and confound thee Duke Benes of  
Agremounte. By fater the kyng

by me expressely sedeth to thee wozd  
thou come incontinent to Paris w  
syue hondred knyghtes for to do to  
him right and reason of thys that  
thou Were not Wyth him in armes  
in the partyes of Lombardy for to  
fyght agaynst the enemyes of the  
christen fayth. Where by thy faute  
Were dead there Bawdoyne lord of  
Melanke, Glestroi of Boudel, and  
many other great Dukes Pynces  
knyghtes and barons. And yf thou  
Wylt not doo it: I tell thee(duke be  
nes) that the kinge shall come vpon  
thee Wythan hundred thousand men  
of armes. So shalt thou be take and  
brought into Fraunce. And there þ  
shalt be iudged as a theefe and a fa  
se traytour vnto thy Souerayn  
Lord, for to be slayne and hanged  
all quicke, thy Wyfe brente and thy  
chyldryen destroyed and banysshed.  
Doo therfore this that I commaund  
thee in the kinges behalfe, for thou  
knowest well that thou arte his ma  
vassalle and subicte.

**W**han the Duke Benes of ar  
gremount had heard Lohy  
er thus speake: Than yf ye had sene  
hym chaunged hys colour pouffe  
þ blowe, as a ma cruel, proude and  
outrageouse, and sayd to Lohier in  
thys maner. I shal not goe to kynge  
Charlemayne nor nothyng of hys  
wyll I shal not fulfull. for I hold  
nother Castell ne fortresse of hym,  
but I shal goe vpon him with all  
my pupstaunce, and shal destroy all  
the lande of Fraunce vnto Parys.  
Than sayd Lohier vnto Duke Be  
nes

nes of Aygremount. Bassyle sayde he yo w darest thou answe're thus? And if the king knew now that thou thretenest hym thus as thou doest: he shold come incontynent vpon thee, and shold vterli destroy thee, Well thou knowest that thou arte hys liege man, and that thou canne not say agaynst it, come than redely and setue thy souerayne lord le kinge Charlemayne, and belue ye þt thou Wyll saue thyne owne lyfe. For if þ doo it not: I make thee sute and certayne þt ye can haue thee by force that he shal make thee to be hanged therre as the ayze and the wnydes w theyz great blastes shall dry vp the bones of thee. Whan the Duke heard Lohier speake to him in this maner he stode vp anon vpon his feete, and sayd, þt to his euell chere he cam there for to make to hi hys message. Tha came soorth a knyght named syz wa ter that was a man of the Duke of Aygremount and sayd to the Duke My lord keeþ for gods loue that ye doo no folþ. Let Lohier say all hys Wyll, for þt be never the worse for his layenge, and as ye well knowe kynge Charlemayne is ryght purþ, saut and so moche that there is noþer castell, Little, nor towne never so stronge that can holde agaynst hi, Go than to him by my counsell, for ye be his man his bassyle & his sub ieet, and of hym you holde your cas tell of Aygremount and all your lades, and þt þt so doo: ye shal doo as sage, and it shal be your prouffyte, & also of al your lande, and for to war agaynst your ryghtwise Lord, nothing but euill can come to you there

of. Whan the Duke had hearde the Wyse knyght to speake: he coulde to him ryght good thanke therfore, but al ipayes al angry he sayd to hym, holde your peace. For I shal holde noþyng of hym allonge that I shal may beare armes, and moute a horse backe. I shal sende for my deere bre therne Gerrade of Bouillon, and Dron of Matuyl, and Garnyer his sonne, and than we shal gone vpon kyng Charlemayne, and þt I canne mete with him in any place: we shal destroy hym, & shal doo of hym that he croweth to doo of me. Wene he þ I am a cowardenay by my saythe, for I shold not take all the goldin Patys but that I shold leaþ mesanger. Euyll was to hym whan he durst so thretchen me. And than sayde Lohier, I neither prayse you nor do ute you not. Whan the Duke bencs of Aygremount underclode Lohier: he woxed for great wrathe as red as ony fyre in hys face, and began to ryse vp and to call. Howe Batons vpon hym, bryng hym to me, for he shal never be wraunted but that I shal make hym to dye shamefullie. And the bards durst not say against theyz lord, but drew al theyz swer des. And incontynent did ren vpon Charlemaynes folke. And Lohier called his baner, and than began he and his folke to defende them selfe sharply. And god knoweth howe many headeþ and armes were there cut of þ day. For at the same houre began a thynge, wherof after warden so manye ladyes and damoyselles were w out husbandes & wþhout louers, so many of chilidren father-

The booke of the four

liss, and so manye chirches wasted  
and destroyed that never sythe were  
repayred. what shal I tel you more?  
Wynt it that they fought thre so  
longe wytin the halle of the Pa-  
lays; that the noys went through all  
the towne. Thā shold ye haue seen  
the bourgeys, Hatchaunys, & men  
of craft with axes swerdes and other  
wepyngs, and came to the Castel war-  
de aboue seuen thousand men and  
more. But the ente of the Palays  
of Aygremount was natow, and þ  
frenche men were wytin that kept  
them well that they entred not in at  
theyr ease. Alas what terryble and  
vnhappy a slaughter was there that  
daye. For the folke of kyng Charle-  
mayne were but a few to the regard  
of them of the other parte. And as  
ye may knowe suche assemble was  
ryght euyll. So defended them selfe  
muche noblye and valyauntlye the  
folke of kyng Charlemayne and so  
muche that Lohier seynge that, that  
he and þys folke had the worse; he  
smote a knight by fore þyng Duke  
Benes of Aygremount by suche a wyle  
that he overthrew hym downe dead  
forth sayd he gods curse haue thou,  
and afterward he sayd pteously in  
Waylyng himselfe. Lorde God that  
Within the holy Wombe of the bles-  
sed Wyrgyn Marye tooke thy her-  
bowryng and suffred death & pas-  
sion for to redeme mankynde, Wilt  
defende me thyys daye from shame-  
full death and from tourment, for  
I wot well, but yt it be that your  
hygh diuinitie socour me this day:  
I shall not see þyng Charlemayne  
my father no mox. Than the Duke

called hygh vpon hym sayenge, Lo-  
hier so helpe me God thy day shall  
be your laste. It shall not be so sayde  
Lohier. And with this he smote the  
Duke vpon the head, but hyg helme  
saued hym. And the stroke descended  
to the heele of him so that the bloud  
ranne out. By God sayd Lohier ye  
shall not escape. Than came the du-  
ke Benes of Aygremount to him as  
woode and sore an angred, sayinge  
I shold prayse my selfe full lytle if  
I might not auenge me vpon thee.  
So heaued vp the Duke hyg brande  
of steele and smote Lohier so harde  
vpon hyg bryght helme that he cle-  
ued hym to the teeth. And Lohier  
fell dead afore hym, vpon the paue-  
ment of the Halle. Ha God what  
great damage hath done the Duke  
Benes of Aygremount to haue thus  
slayne Lohier the eldest sonne of the  
great kyng Charlemayne. For after  
ward al the site of Fraunce was in  
muche great and innumerable tour-  
mente therfore and in ryght greate  
payne continual, and the Duke him  
selfe dyed therfore, full sorly. That  
was the payment that he had for it,  
as ye here after shall heare yf peasly-  
bly ye wyl heare me.

**T**WIS outrageously slayne  
the good Lohier the eldest  
sonne of kinge Charlemayne And þ  
duke Benes of Aygremount full of  
cruelnes tooke the hed from the bo-  
dy of hym. And after that the folke  
of the sayd Lohier the sonne of the  
great kyng Charlemayne saw their  
Lorde dead: thynke ye they made no  
great defensse. Alwayes of a hundred  
that

that they were entred within the pa-  
lays with theyz Lord Lohier abode  
there on lyue but .xx. Wherof þ duke  
incontynente made .x. of them to be  
slayne, and the other .x. he retayned a  
lyue, and to them sayde, þf ye wyl  
promyse and sweare to me vpō your  
othr, and fayth of knighthode that ye  
shall beare your Lord Lohier to  
hys fader the kyng Charlemayne,  
and say to hym that I sende to hym  
his sonne Lohier in good array, and  
that in an euyll houre he dyd sende  
hym to me for to tell me suche Wor-  
des, I shall let you goe quyte and  
laufe, and to hym ye shall saye that  
for hym I shall not doo the mounte-  
naunce of a Peny, and that I shall  
go vpon hym in thyg Sommer next  
comyng wþtþ fourtye thousande  
men, and that I shall destroye hym  
and all hys lande. They answered,  
þy we shall doo that, that shall  
please you to commaunde vs. Tha-  
t the Duke dyd doo make redyly a by-  
ere, and made the corps of Lohier  
to be put wþthin the sayd byere. And  
after he deliuerde it to his .x. knigh-  
tes that were left on lyue and put it  
in a carte to drawe wþtþ two hor-  
ses. And the Duke conueyed theym  
thorough the Towne. And whan  
they were in the feildes: the .x. knigh-  
tes beganne to weape and to make  
great mone for theyz Lord Lohier  
saying, alas my lord Lohier what  
shall we no wþ sayc for you to the  
kyng your fader that so great so-  
ro we shall haue, whan he shal kno-  
we your cruell death. We may well  
be incertayne that, that he shall ma-  
ke vs all dye. Thus weeping and

makyng theym for the loue of  
theyz Lord Lohier, the rode on  
theyz way streyght to Parys.

**C**But nowe we shall heare leane to  
speake of the messangers and shall  
tell you of the kyng Charlemayne  
that was at Parys.

**C**Charlemayne that was at Pa-  
rys with a great multitude of  
Lordes that were there assemblid.  
And there vpon a day kyng Char-  
lemayne sayd vnto hys Lordes and  
barons. Lordes I am moch wroch  
and soray of my sonne Lohier that I  
haue sente to Agremounte, and I  
feare me sore that they haue take de-  
bate wþtþ the duke Benes of Agre-  
mounte, whiche is fell, and cruell, &  
I doubt me leste, he hath slayne my  
sonne Lohier. But by my crowne þf  
he haue so doone, or any thyng that  
furneth to dyspleasure or dommage  
to my sayd sonne: I shal go vpon him  
wþtþ a hundred thousand men and  
shall make hym to be hanged at a  
gybet. þy sayd the good Duke Ay-  
mes of Dordonne, I shall come you  
ryght soore, þf he hath offened against  
you that ye make punysshment of  
and weake on hym greate venge-  
aunce. He is your liege man, and  
ought to serue, prayse and honoure  
you. Alwayes þf he hath trespas-  
sed agaynst you in any manere I am  
ryght soray for it, and þf ye haue a  
cause to be wroch wþtþ hym, I  
haue heare my four sonnes, That

The booke of the four

is to wyt Reynawde Wardre Guy-  
charde and Rycharde, that ben ry-  
ght valyaunt as ye sy; well know we  
which shalbe trusly and true to you.  
Iymon sayd the kyng Charlemayn  
I conne you great thanke of the of-  
fice that nowe ye haue doone to me.  
And it is my Wyll that ye make the  
to come hether presently to the ende  
that I make them knyghtes, and I  
shall gyue to them Castelles, tow-  
nes and townes, and Cites ynow-  
gh. Than sent the duke Iymes In-  
continent for hys children, and made  
them to come afore bynge Charle-  
mayne. And whan the kyng Charle-  
mayne saw them: they pleased him  
muche, and Reynawde was the first  
that spake and sayd. Sy; ys it please  
you soz to make vs knyghtes, we  
shalbe ever redy soz to serue you and  
your noble Lordshyp. Tha the kyng  
Charlemayne called hys le warde  
and sayd to hym. Bringe to me the  
armes that were the kyng Cedres  
whiche I haue wryth my handes  
slayne in batayle before Pampelune  
and shall gyue theym to the gentyll  
Reynawde as to hym that is as I  
wene the moste valyaunt of all, and  
of other good armes I shall gyue to  
the other three bretherne. So brou-  
ght therre the le warde þ armes that  
were full fayre and riche, and than  
were armed the four gentyl brethre  
children to the good Iymes of Dordone,  
and Ogyer of Denmarke that  
was of theyz kynne dyd on theyz  
spurres to the new knight Reynawde,  
& the kyng Charlemayne gyrd  
hym his le warde, and than doubted

him to a knyghte sayinge Godnes-  
creace in thee goodnes, honour, and  
Worthines. And than mounted Rei-  
nawde on horsebacke vpon Bayard  
that was suche a horse, that never  
was his like in all the world nor ne-  
ver shall be except Busifal the horse  
of the great kinge Alexander. Soz  
as soz to haue conne. xxx. myle toge-  
ther he Wolde never haue sweted.  
The sayd Bayard thys horse was  
grovyn in the Isle of Bornesca, and  
Hawgys the sonne of the duke Be-  
nes of Agremount had gyue to his  
colin Reynawde, that after made the  
kyng Charlemayne full wrothe  
and lory, as ye shal now heare here  
after.

**R**eynawde was a horse bache  
wia Sheelde paynted hangyng  
at his necke, and therwred his swer-  
de by great faynesse. And wyt Wel  
that he was a fayre knyght won-  
derful great and well founded, and  
of hym was a fayre syght, soz well  
he seemed one of the moste valyaunt  
knyghtes that men coulde fynde  
in all the Worlde. And the Barons  
that were there sayde. Ha god what  
a fayre knyght is he? Neuer was  
nor shall be sene so fayre a man of ar-  
mes as Reynawde, god encrease to  
hym honour and worthynesse, good-  
nes and prysse. And after were  
muche honourably and worthily ar-  
rayed and armed the other three bre-  
therne of Reynawde, and sith lyght  
all on horsebacke vnder hant Wi-  
tor nyghe Patrys. Than made the  
kyng Charlemayne to set vp in the  
grounde

grounde a poste agaynst whiche he made the new knyghtes for to assaye them selfe. They Justed moche woxchely, but Reynawde Justed best vpon his hore hore bavarde, & ryght well lyked and were a grable vnto charlemayne the saytes of the valyaunc knyght Reynawde, vnto whom the king sayd, Reynawde for hens forth ye shal come with vs in batayle and Reynawde answered him in thys maner. Syr god yelde it you an hundred thousand tymes, and I promit you in good sayth to obey and scrue you truly. Nor never ye shall fynde my selfe in no forsayte, but yf it com of you.

**T**he Emperour Charlemayne after the Justynge was done: he retourned to his Palays in Parys. Than he resoned wryth hys prynces and Baroys, and there were the duke Naymes of bauyres, Oger the dane and the Archebysshop Turpin, and sayd to them in thys wyle. barons sayd he I cannot maruayle me to moche of Lohier my eldest son that taricth so longe in hys message I haue great feare that some inconstinent be happed vnto hym. I dremed this night in my slepe that the thondre bolte fell vpon my Sonne Lohier, and then came the Duke benes of Argremount vpon hym and smote his head of, but by my bearde yf he haue doone so: whyles he lyueth he shall never accorde with me. Nor I shall never haue Joye at my herte. For it is he that I loue best in this woxde. Syr sayd yduke Naymes I beleue not such thinges, nor

vnto such dremes ye shall not gyue no credence, alwayes sayde the king yf he haue doone so: I shall never leue him the value of a peny, for I shall sende for the Normans, the Bernyngers, the Fleminges, the chāpenoys, the Almaynes, the Bauiers and for Englishmen, and so shall I goe vpon hym and shall vterly destroy hym, and Naymes sayde ever vnto hym that he shoulde not feare hym selfe of nothyng tyll that he knewe the certentye. And as they spake thus: there came rydig a mesenger vpon a hore hore soze sicke and werye, and also soze wounded vnto the death. He came vnto Parys afore the Palays where Kyng Charlemayne was at the wyndowes. And whan he sawe come the messanger: he came downe lightlye from the Palays halle vnto the gate and with him Naymes of Baulier and Oger the Dane. And whan the messanger saw the kinge: he salued him full soft as he that was ryght soze and soze wounded, and that wryth Payne myght speake, and said in this maner wyle. Great folye ye dyd, whan ye dyd sende my Lorde your sonne for to aske trybute and obeyllance of the Duke Benes of Argremount, the Whiche trybute your sonne asked him shāfully, but the duke Whiche is soze fel and cruel whan he heard speake my sayd lorde your sonne: he comauded to a mayny of knyghtes þ were therre þ he shoulde betake & þ he shoulde never retourne agayn to you for to recont his messa ge nor what answere he had founde to þ whiche taki g: þ medle was great and

## The booke of the four

and cruell, so that your dere sonne Lo  
hier was dead there. And the Duke  
Benes of Aycemount kyld hym  
and all your folke except me and .ix  
other that conduyte and bryng your  
sonne in a byere. And I my selfe am  
soe hurt as ye may se. And than the  
messager could speake no more. But  
fell downe in a swoone of the greate  
greefe and soze that he felte bycause  
of hys woundes. And Whan the kig  
had heard these wordes: he fel downe  
vpon the groud for the greate sorow  
that he tooke therof and wrange his  
handes, and pulld his beard. And  
tare all hys heres sayinge. Ha good  
lorde that made heauen and erth, ye  
hauie brought me in greate sorowe &  
toument Irrecouerable that never  
shall cease with me. So requyze I  
vnto you the deach hnmblly. For ne  
uer more delyze I not to lyue. The  
good duke of Bauxre began to re  
comfort him, sayinge. For goddes  
loue syz tourment not your self, but  
hauie good hert and hope in god and  
recomfort your folke. And thys  
Wolde say the duke Naymes for the  
that he saw wepe there for theyz kis  
men and frendes that were dead vnto  
Lohier. And doo(sayd he to þ kyng)  
let your sonne be worshypfully bu  
ryed at saynt Germayne of the medow  
es. And than ye shall goe vpon the  
Duke Benes of Aycemount wth  
all your noble power, and great pu  
yssance, and shall destroy hym and  
all hys landes at your pleasure.  
Than the kinge Charlemayne re  
comforted him selfe, and well he  
knew that Naymes coulled hym  
truly and lawfully. Than sayd the

kyng, Barons make redy, and we  
shall go agaynst my dere sonne Lo  
hier. And incontinent all the pryn  
ces and Barons made them selfe re  
dy for to doo the commaundement  
of the kinge. And Whan they were  
gone two myle out of Parys: they  
met with the corps. And were there  
With the kinge Naymes Ogyer.  
Sampson of bourgoyne, and many  
other great Lordes. Than sayd the  
kinge Charlemayne Whan he sawe  
the body of his deere sonne Lohier:  
Alas how shamefully am I treated:  
he descended from his horse a foote,  
& tooke vp the cloth that was vpon  
the biere & behelde his sonne Lohier.  
Than saw he the head þ Was snyt  
te of from the body and the face that  
was all to heren. Ha good Lorde  
sayd he, how well maye I be made  
now al quicke, well I ought for to  
hate þ duke Benes of Aycemoute  
that thus hath murdered my sonne,  
he than kisseid his childe al bloudi ful  
often and said vnto him in this wise.  
Ha faire sonne ye were a talie man  
anda gentil knight. Now praye I  
the puissant God of gloriye that he  
take your soule this yf it be his plea  
sure into hys Realme of Paradyse.  
Great sorow made the kyng Char  
lemayne for the deach of his sonne  
Lohier. But alwayes recomforted  
him the good Duke Naymes And  
the Ogyer the Dane and Sampson  
of Bourgoyne tooke him vnder the  
armes of him and ledde him vnto  
saynt Germayne of the medowes.  
And there the bodye of Lohier was  
buried and enoynted with balme as  
it apperteyneth vnto all the sonnes  
of

of kinges. Thus was he put into  
hys graue God haue of hys soule  
mercy.

**W**e shall tuehere to speake of  
the good king Charlemayne þ  
was moch loue of his sonne Lohier  
as pe haue heard, and shall tell you  
of the good Duke Aymon of Bey-  
nawde, his sonne, and of his three  
bretherne that were at Patys. My  
children sayd Aymon, ye know how  
þe kyng Charlemayne is moche  
Wroche and not without a cause, by  
cause þ my brother your vngle hath  
slaine Lohier his sonne. And I wote  
well that he shall go vpon him with  
all his pupsaunce, but verelys we  
shall not go wyth him. But rather  
shall we goe to Dordon, and yf the  
kyng make warre agaynst hym we  
shall helpe him withall our power.  
So lyghced anon on horsebacke the  
good duke Aymon & the fourre knigh-  
tes his children, and baptesd no wher  
tyll they came to Laon & from thens  
they rode so longe tyll they came to  
Dordon. And whan the Lady sawe  
her Lorde and her fourre children:  
she was right glad and went against  
them so to welcom them, and asked  
after tydinges, and yf Baynawde &  
hys other childeren were made kin-  
ghes: Than the good duke answe-  
red yea, and after she asked why they  
were departed fro the kinges courre  
And than he rehersed vnto her word  
by word, how hys brother the duke  
Benes had slayne Lohier the sonne  
of the kinge Charlemayne. Wherof  
the good Lady Margery was won-  
derfull Wroche and soþe. For well

she knew that this death of Lohier  
was the totall dystrucion of the  
Duke Aymon her housbande of her  
self and of her childerne and of their  
lande. She heارد Reynawde her el-  
dest Sonne that thresned Charle-  
mayne the great kyng, then sayd to  
hym the Ladie hys Mother. My  
Sonne Reynawde I pray thee un-  
derstande me alyle. Loue thy loue-  
rayne and thy naturall Lorde, and  
dread him aboue all chinge, and bere  
hys honour and reuerence. And God  
shall reward thee for it, and ye my  
Lorde Aymon I am moche maru-  
led of you that are departed from  
Charlemayne without leue of him  
þ hath doone to you so moche good  
and so great worship, and hath geuē  
to your sonnes so noble and so riche  
armes, and hath made them knigh-  
tes with his owne handes, more  
great honour he might not doo to  
you nor to your childre. Lady said þ  
Duke we be thus departed fro king  
Charlemayne because that my bro-  
ther hath slayne his sonne as I haue  
tolde you afore. A God sayd þ Lady  
that of the virgin was borne in beth  
lehem, howe hath that enyll thyg  
day surmounted the good? For gods  
des loue my Lorde sayde the Ladie  
medle not withall. For ye shall see  
this next somer that the kinge shall  
go vpon your brother, & by my coun-  
sell serue the kyng your ryghtwyse  
Lorde, nor fayle him for nothyng.  
For and ye doo other wylle, ye shall  
be untrewe and false to warde your  
Souverayne and naturall Lorde.  
Lady sayd the duke by god omnipo-  
tent I wold leuer haue lost my eas-  
tel

The booke of the fourre

tell and the halfe of my lande, than  
that my brother shoulde haue slayne  
Lohier. Now the wyl of god be do-  
ne therin, and none other wylc.

**D**speake of the good Duke  
Iymon of Bordon and of his  
wife the duchesse and of theyr sones:  
We shal haue leue, & shall returne to  
speake of kynge Charlemayne that  
was come agayne to parys, makyn  
great sorow for his sonne Lohier.  
There had you seene many a gowne  
torne & broken, many a hande wron-  
gen, and manye heares of the head  
pulled so that it was piti and won-  
der for to se. Alas mi dere sonne said  
kyng Charlemayne, he þ hath slayne  
thee so cruelly loued me but lytle. I  
shall never be in quiete nor in rest  
till that I haue vengeaunce of  
thy death. **S**ayd the duke Bay-  
ere haue mercy of your selfe. For it  
behoueth not so great a prince as ye  
be for to make so great sorow as ye  
doo. And in þ meane whyle came a  
messenger afors þ kynge, which shew-  
ed to him howe Iymon Duke of  
Bordon & his fourre sones were gon  
into their countrie, wherof the kyng  
was sore an angred and wrothe.  
And sware god and saynt Denis þ  
afors he sholde dye: that Iymon and  
his chyldeyn sholde aby full soze  
for it & that þ duke Venes of Aygre-  
mount sholde not kepe them thereto.  
The dyner was redy & they wasshed  
their handes and were set at dinner  
but wyt it that the kynge dyd eate  
but lytle, as he þ was in greate me-  
lancolye, & the farre Salomon ser-  
ued that day afors hym the cuppe, &

great people was there. After dinner  
the Emperour Charlemayne did res-  
son with his barons and sayd to the  
(lorde sayd he) þ duke Venes of Ay-  
gremount hath doone to me greate  
outrage þ so shamefully hath slayne  
my sonne Lohier. But and it please  
God I shall go wrycke it vpon hym  
this next somer and I shall destroye  
all his land, and if I may take hym  
I shall not leaue hym for the duke  
Iymon þ shamefullye is gone from  
mee, nor for his fourre sones that  
I haue made knyghtes wherof I me  
repente soze, but that I shall make  
them to be hanged. **S**ayd than þ  
duke Baymes nowe heare. What I  
shal say to you, your sone is dead by  
great vnhap & well in an euill hour  
was he put to death, for never death  
was so soze soldene so dere bought  
as this shalbe. So sende nowe for  
your folke through all your londes,  
and than from hens toward Aygremoun-  
te take your waye. And yf ye  
may take the Duke Venes, let the  
death of your sone Lohier be to him  
ful dere soulde.

**I**ymes sayd the kynge ye be  
a good man, sage curtoys &  
valyaunt, euen thus shall I doo, for  
well wryslie ye haue counselleed me.  
Than gaue he leaue to many of hys  
barons and gentil men that were in  
his courte at that time & tolde them  
that eche of them shoulde go into his  
countrie for to make them self redy,  
and that they shoulde come agayne  
to him the next sommer. So was it  
doone as þ kynge had commaunded  
And thus wente the barons and the  
gentil men from þ courte into theyr  
coun-

country, and by them were tydinges brought through all the landes vnto Roine, that kyng Charlemayne made a great assemble of men of armes, so that the renome thereof shoulde unto the duke Benes of Aygremountes court, which of that other parte dyd sende for his kynsman and frendes, and in especiall for his brethern Gerarde of Roussillon, and Bron of Mantel, so that they were whan they came together well four score thousand fyghtynge men and mo, and as fayre folke as euer were sene, whiche than sayde I beleue yf the kyng beseige the Castell: that the Worle shal returne vnto hym. Than sayd the Duke Benes of Aygremount to Gerarde of Roussillon. Brother sayd he be not dysmayed, for I hope to hurte the kyng so soze yf he come vpon vs: that he shal be wary of his bargayn, but let vs goe forth towarde Troy in chāpaygne and there we shall fyght wyth the kyng vrgozously. For well I wote that God shal helpe vs agaynst hi. This was at the begynnyng of the moneth of Maye, and Charlemayn was at Paris, that abode after hys men that shoulde come, for to go with a great puissaunce vpon the Duke Benes of Aygremount. And vnde not longe that Rycharde of Normā, dy came to the kyng wyth. xxx. thousande fyghtynge men. And of a nother syde came to hym the Erle Guy that had wyth hym a ryght noble & a great company of good men, and after hym came Salomon of Berayne and the Erle Huon. And of al sydes ye shoulde haue sene come to

the kyng Charlemayne Poeteus, Gascoyns, Normans, Flemynge, Bernyers, and Bourgoynes, and so many other great Lordes that it was great wonder for to see, whiche came all and Lodged themselfe in y medowes of saynt Germayne.

**T**han whan the kyng Charlemayne knew that this folke was all arryued: he had of it grete Joye, and incontynent made hys batayles to departe, for to goe to hys enterpryse, and made of Rycharde of Normandy, of Walleran of Buylion, of Guydelon of bauyere, of yngar of Remours, of Oger the dane. and of Escouf the sonne of Dedon Wyth them. xl. thousande men hys forwarde. There shoulde ye haue se a ryght noble company, and manye hardi men, they departed from nigh Paris. And put them self to y Way strayght to Aygremounte, and they (th<sup>e</sup> rydynge after many dayes Jurney whiche I can not tel) came thare streyght to Oger the Dane that was in the forwarde a messanger soze hastly rydynge. That asked to whome was thys noble company, and he answered to hym that they were kyng Charlemaynes folke. Than sayd syz the messanger that he Wolde well speake wyth hym, than Went Oger the Dane and shewyd hym the kyng. And assone as the messanger saw hym: he made hym due reuerence, and the kyng gaue hym agayne hys salute, and him demandid what he was and fro whens he came: and y messanger tolde hym that he was of Troye and y vnto him he was sent

The booke of the fourre

sto Hubert the lord of Troye that  
was his liege man, whiche besought  
 hym humbly for socoures. For the  
 Duke Benes of Aygremount, & his  
 two bretcherne Gerarde of Rousyll-  
 lon, and Dyon of Nantuel and with  
 them an hundred thousande figh-  
 ting men had besyeged him within  
 Troye. And that ys ye came not to  
 helpe hi, he must yelde vp the towne,  
 also the fayre towre that Julius Ces-  
 sar dyd buyldre there.

**W**han Charlemayne the Em-  
 perour vnderstode that Troy  
 was besyeged by the duke Benes &  
 his bretcherne, he was full soray of it  
 and he swore by Haynte Denys of  
 Fraunce, that he shold go there to  
 hys armes, and that ys he shold hold  
 the duke of Aygremounte he shold  
 make hym dye a shamefull death, so  
 called he the Duke Haymes of ba-  
 uyere, Goodbew of frysle, and the  
 Duke Walleran and sayd to them.  
 Barons ye vnderstande what thys  
 messager sayth, let vs ryde hastelye  
 towarde Troye or ic be take, and they  
 answered to hym ryght gladly that  
 they wolde doo it so. So dyd they  
 ryde a good pace tylle that they came  
 nyghe Troye. And firsle of all came  
 the foze warde with the Oryflame.  
 Of the whyche were gouernours  
 Ogier the Dane, Rycharde of Nor-  
 mandy, & the duke Walleran, and w  
 them fourty thousand men. And the  
 messanger of Troye that condurcd  
 them. And whan they were come so  
 nyghe ys they sawe Troye afore the  
 a messanger came to Gerard of rous-  
 sillon that was afore Troye, saying  
 to hym that the kynge Charlemayne

came vpon them for to socoure Au-  
 bery with a ryght great & puissaunce  
 companye. Chan layde Gerarde to  
 hys bretcherne, that is to wyee Duke  
 Benes of Aygremount, and ys Erle  
 Dyon of Nantuell that it were good  
 that they shold go agaynste kyng  
 Charlemayne to all theyz puissaunce  
 and that ech of them shold proue  
 himself a good man. They did so as  
 they had deuyled, and Gerarde of  
 Rousillon was the firsle in the foze-  
 warde, and they rode so longe till ys  
 the one partye saw the other. Chan  
 sayd Ogier the Dane to Richard of  
 Normandy whan he sawe come Ge-  
 rarde of Rousillon se: sayd he howe  
 Gerarde of Rousillon wenched for to  
 fare soule with vs. But now let vs  
 thynke for to defende vs wel, so mo-  
 the that the worshyp abyde to the  
 kyng Charlemayne and to vs. And  
 than they let renne theyz horses fro  
 one parte and fro the other, and Ge-  
 rarde of Rousillon wente & smote  
 an Almayne wryth his speare so mo-  
 the, that he made it to entre throught  
 the body of hym. Whiche fell anon  
 dead to the ground, and Gerarde to-  
 ok his baner & cryed with an high  
 voyce Rousillon Rousillon.

**T**han began the batayle sore  
 stronge fell and cruell. And  
 whan Ogier the dane saw thus his  
 folke dye: he was wood and mad  
 with it. So went he and smote a kni-  
 ght named Pouson by suche a wylle  
 that he put his speare throught the  
 body of hym whiche fel do wne dead  
 afore him. And whan Gerarde had  
 seen the same: he went and smote one  
 of Ogiers men, so that all dead he  
 cast

cast him afore hym. And then he said  
ye haue this for your maysters sake  
Dyng. Muche great and meruayl-  
lous was the stoure and the batayle  
so fiers. For there shold ye haue se-  
ne so many of shecires perced and  
clouen, and so mani a habergon brea-  
ken, and salettes and helmes vnbo-  
kled and soze beten, and so many me-  
lying vpon the other dead, that all  
the earth was couered with þ bloud  
of the dead men (and of them that  
were hurt there) so þ it was a great  
pictre to for to see. And than came the  
duke Benes of Agremounte that  
spurced hys horse certeblie, and wæc  
and smote Enguerran lord of Pe-  
ronne & of saint Quintine so harde  
that he ouerthrew hym dead afore hi  
and than sayd. Now go goddes cur-  
se haue thou, and cryed with an hi-  
ghe boyce Agremounte, and than  
came to him his brother the Duke  
of Mantuell with all his folke, and  
they went al together vpon Char-  
lemaynes folke, and of the other part  
came with great puissaunce Almay-  
nes poeteins and Lumbardes al-  
so þ were of the parte of kinge Char-  
lemayne. So medled theym selke the  
one party amoge the other. And ther  
was moche harde and horryble assé-  
ble. For there were slayne many mi-  
ghty and worthy knyghtes of bothe  
sides, and Richarde of Normandie  
shewid wel ther he his great proffesse  
and worshyness. For he wente and  
smote a knyght þ Gerarde of Rous-  
sillon loued moche by suche a stren-  
gh that he ouerthrew hym dead  
from his horse to the erth afore the  
sayd Gerarde. Whiche than sayd.

Nowam I wel soray and brothe for  
hym that now is dead that I loued  
so soze, certes I shal never haue Joy  
at my hert but þ I be auenged ther-  
of of Mortiye. Than tooke Gerarde of  
Rousillon his baner in his fist. But  
hys brother Mantuell came anon to  
hym and sayd, brother I coulde you  
that ye tourne agayne. For here co-  
meth Charlemayne Wyth hys folk,  
and well I tell you that yf we a-  
byde hym: he losse shal tourne vpon  
vs. And whyle they were speas-  
kyng thus: Walleran of Bollen  
smote þ newew of Gerarde of Rous-  
sillon so that he foyned at hym, with  
his swerde throught the body of hym  
& fell downe dead to þ earth. Than  
trowed Gerarde to haue gone out of  
his Wyte, and sente anon for the  
duke Benes his brother þ he shold  
come loone to succoure him, and he  
dyd so as preu and balyuant that he  
was. And of the other syde assem-  
bled ther the kyng and hys folke.  
So shal you now hear of a thing  
meruaylous of so greate a nobles þ  
at the same feild were crudly slayn.  
This was in the moneth of Maye  
upon a mornynge that kyng Char-  
lemayne did assemble his folke with  
the folke of the duke of Agremounte  
and of his brotherne. To the whiche  
assemble ye shold haue sene manye  
sayre harayles shynynge for the  
sunne that sayre and cleare was þ  
day, the whiche assemble was Wun-  
dersfull stronge. For there were so  
many feete and headeis myten of &  
so many good horsis slayne, and the  
other ranne thoroough the medowes  
wherof the maysters lay dead vpon

The booke of the four

the grasse. And Wyt it for trouthe þ  
þere were dead that same day of the  
one syde and of the other: more than  
xi. thousand men. A God what slau-  
gher, there was muche great nobles  
dead. The duke Benes sore angred  
went and smote syr Walter Lorde of  
Pierrele in his shielde so þ hys spere  
Went through the body of hym and  
fell downe dead afore hym. Than  
cryed he with an hys voice his baner  
Aygremounte.

**O** Reat was the preas, and þ ba-  
tayle fyers and meruaylous.  
And therel he wed Rychard of Nor-  
mandy much worthili his great har-  
dynes. For he Justed agaynst þ duke  
of Aygremont so that he perced hys  
shielde and dyd hurt hym right sore  
and sayd to him by God ye shall not  
thys daye escape deaþ. It was an  
euyll daye for you whan ye dyd slea  
my Lorde Lohier, & with that he did  
draw out his swerde, and smote the  
duke agayne vpō his helme in such  
a wise that if it had not ben a coyfe  
of steele that made his stroke to stide  
the said Benes had be dead þ hourē  
And the stroke fell downe upon the  
horse, & cut þ horse in two as though  
it had be nothing. And thus fell the  
horse dead vnder hys mayster. Thā  
was þ Duke Benes sore abashed  
Whan he thus foun̄d him self a groud  
But he stooode vpon his feete redely  
as he that was preu and valyaunte  
holding his swerde in his hande, &  
Went and smote a knight named sir  
Symon so that he kyld hym sterke  
dead in the place. And than he called  
With an highe voice, Aygremount

his baner. Than came to hym hys  
þ Wo bretherne, the Duke of Rousillon  
and of Nantuei, and of the lide  
of kinge Charlemayne canic Ogyer  
Paynes, wallerā of Bolon, þuo  
lorde of Mauns the Erie Salamon  
Leon of Frise the archebisshop Tuc  
pyn and Escoufe the sonne of Odo  
And than shold ye haue sene there  
at that assemble muche greate & mer-  
uaylous noblesse of knyghtes that  
lay dead vpon þ erth, the one vpon þ  
other that it was a pytous syght  
for to beholde.

**T**o this iuhumayne occyption  
Was comeþ þeþt out Char-  
leayne cryinge batons if they esca-  
pe vs we shall never haue honoure,  
and than he bare vp his spere to the  
rest and went and smote into the shielde  
of Gerarde of Rousillon so þ  
he ouerthrew both horse and man to  
the ground, and there had be his last  
daye yf it had not ben the Duke Benes  
and Dron his brether, þ muche  
worthely and Wyth great dylygence  
succoured hym. Of that other party  
came Ogyer the Dane vpon hys  
good horse Groyfoste that smote a  
knyght of the folke of Gerarde duke  
of Rousillon called Sir Soulque  
so that he cloue hym to the teeth and  
fell downe dead vnto the erth. And  
Whan Gerarde of Rousillon sawe  
thus hys knyght slayne he called to  
god & to our lady saying. Wel haue  
I hys daye lost my fayre and good  
knight. And the duke of Aygremont  
was sore abashed and prayed God  
also full pyteously þ it wolde please  
hem to kepe hym from death, and

from fallynge in to the handes of Charlemayne. Heghe was the sonne vnder and it was well aboue cō plyn tyme & the syghters of the one parte & of the other were wery & sore chaufed. And so wytched we the thre bretherne abacke vnto theyz Tentes With moche wraethe and in especyal Gerarde of Boussillon that had lost that day Aymon his colyn and a hundred other of the best knyghtes of his company. And he sayd in this Wyse. In euill houre it was whan the sonne of Charlemain was slain. Than came to hym the duke Benes of Argemont bledyng as he þ was horriblie wounded. And whan Gerarde saw hym: he began to sygh tēderly sayinge. Fayre brother are ye wounded to deach: May sayd he I shal soone be whole. Than swore Gerarde the duke of Boussillon that to morow at þ sonne rising: he shold begyn agayn þ batayle against king Charlemayne and hys folke wherfore thryty thousande shal lose heir lyues. Alas for god may sayd his brother the Duke Mantuelli. But þ ye wyl doo my counsell we shal sende xxi. of the wyllest knyghtes that we haue vnto kyng Charlemayne and by our sayd knyghtes we shal doo hym towrt and shew þ he haue pitie and mercy of vs, and that the Duke Benes our brother shal amende hym the death of hys sonne Lohier even so as it shalbe aduyled by the prynces & barons of hys fe lawlyng and of ours, & ye know wel all redy þ we beþ hys lege men, & þ for to warre agaynst hym we doo cruel falphed, & yet more it is, that þ

he had loste all his folke that he hath here with him, or euer þ it were a moneth palled he shold haue recouered t Wyse as many, so may we nothing doo agaynst hym. And therfore may we nothing doo against him, & therfore I pray you my brethern, that ye wyl doo thus, & to hym answered his two bretherne that they wold doo it, syn that he counselled the so, and cōcluded together þ they shold sende thyther as soone as it were day. They made that nyght good Watche vnto the morning, and than they made redi their messangers for to sende to the kyng Charlemayne, And whan they were redy: Gerarde of Boussillon sayd to them. Loydes say wel to kyng Charlemayne that we be soze dyspleased of the death of hys sonne Lohier, and þ our brother the duke Benes repented him selfe of it full soze, & that þ it please hym to haue mercy of vs that we shal go & serue hym wher he shal please him to sende vs with x. thousand syghtyng men. And also ye shal saye to Raynes of Hawere that we pray hym þ he wyl employ hymselfe to warde the kyng Charlemayne that this accorde may be had.

**A**fter that the messangers had well al alonge vnderstand what they shold saye to the kyng Charlemayne from þ thre bretherne dukes: They lyghted on horsbacke eche of them, berynge braunches of Olyue tree in their handes, in token of peace. And ceasid not to ryde till that they were come aforc þ tente of the kyng charlemayne. Than spake

## The booke of the four

one of hem whiche was named Sir  
uen, that salued the king in this ma-  
ner. **S**yr I praye our lorde that of  
his grace giue you good lyfe & long.  
And wyt syz that the duke Gerarde  
of Rousillon and the Duke Benes  
of Aygremount and Dron of Nan-  
tuell ben come hither the Whiche cry  
you mercye, and beseche you ryght  
humbly that it please you to pardon  
them the death of your sonne Lohi-  
er. Of the Whiche they are vrothe &  
sozy. And þ duke of Aygremount let  
you wyt by vs, that þt be your  
pleasure to doo so: that he and hys  
brotherne halbe your lyege men, &  
shall come to serue you with x. thou-  
sand fyghting men in all that halbe  
your pleasur to employ them, syz for  
goddes sake haue remembraunce that  
god forgaue his death to Longes þ  
euell sticked him to the hart. Wher-  
fore syz please it you to pardon the,  
& take them to your good grace. And  
of this right hubly they beseche you.

**W**han the kyng Charlemayne  
had thus heard spake þmeli-  
sangers of the three brotherne: he stro-  
pied his forehead, & knitted his bwo-  
wes, and looked full angryly, and at  
that houre he answere to them no-  
thyng, and than soone after he bega  
to speake in this maner. Bi my fai-  
ch syz Steuyn sayde he well had the  
duke Benes lost his wittes whan  
he so shamfully new my decrete sonne  
Lohier, whiche I loued so tenderly.  
Now is he my man wyl he or not.  
**S**yr lard Steuyn I am certayn that  
he shall doo to you all reason to the  
dirección of your good counsell.

Than sayd the kyng of this we shal  
couisayll vs, and withdrawe hym  
a lytle a side, and called to him duke  
Aymes. **O**gret the Dane, syz Ha-  
lamon. Huon of Hauns. Walleran  
of Bollon. Odet of Langres, and  
Leon of Fryse, & sayd to them. Lo-  
des heere ben the messangres of the  
duke Benes and of his brotherne þ  
lende me Worde þt they wyl come  
for to serue me where my wyl shalbe  
wyth x. thousand good fyghting me-  
yn. We wyl pardon them the death  
of my sonne Lohier. And they shall  
be our vassayle and true liege men, &  
of vs they shall holde theyr landes  
and theyr lordships. **S**yr answered  
the duke Raines in this is nothing  
but well. So counsell I you that  
ye pardon them. For they be muche  
valyaunte, and of great renome.  
Wherfore pardon them þt it please  
you.

**T**han by the Counsell of the  
Duke Rainys of Bayerc  
the kyng byd pardon the three bro-  
therne & called to him the vi. knigh-  
tes, and said to them, how he par-  
doned the three dukes the death of his  
sonne Lohier, by such a condicione  
that the duke Benes of Aygremout  
should come for to serue hym at the  
feast of Haynt John next compnyng  
wyth x. thousand fyghting men wel  
arrayed, and ye shall tel to them that  
they surely come nowe to me for to  
take of them theyr orthe and fayth  
that they shall strohens forthe, obey  
and serue truly. And that of me they  
shall holde all theyr landes. Then  
departed the knyghtes from afo, &  
the

the kyng Charlemayne and came a-  
gayne unto the Dukes and shewed  
Unto them how they had sped of their  
message with the king Charlemayn  
Wherof the three brethren thanked  
much humbly our lord God. Then  
sayd the duke Rycharde of Rousyllon  
it is reason that we take of our good  
gownes and go to the kynge Char-  
lemayne naked and crye hym mercy  
of this that we haue thus offended  
agaynst his hygh pupissaunce & lord-  
ship, and the other two brethren an-  
swered that well they ought to doo  
so. So tooke þ noble knyghtes their  
clothes of, and al naked bare foote  
and in poore estate departed from  
þeþ lodges, and well soure thou-  
sand knyghtes Wyth them all bare  
foote and in their shertes, and in such  
estate as were theyþ masters. In  
þys wylle they came tofore the king  
Charlemayne. And Wyth wel that in  
right great humilitie were set the  
three brethren soz to haue peace and  
accorde wþth the kyng Charlemain  
that was wroth to them spacyally to  
the Duke of Aygremount as more  
playnlye ye shall heare here after.

**W**han the kyng Charlemayne  
sawe thus come þ three bre-  
therne Wyth theyþ barons & knygh-  
tes: he called to hym the duke Hay-  
mes & many other barons, and sayd  
to þe, can ye not tell me what folke  
ye see ponder comyng? So sayd the  
dukes Haymes it is the Duke Ben-  
es of Aygremount with his folke,  
that come soz to requyze you of mer-  
cie. (This hanging) þ Duke Benes  
of Aygremount came afore the king  
and cast hymselfe upon hys knee, &

sayd unto hym in this wise. Soz for  
god I crye God mercy we ben heere  
comen by your commaundement, if  
I haue slayne your deere sonne by  
my foly: I no w as your man yelde  
me & my bretherne also Gerarde of  
Rousyllon and Dyon of Antuell  
and wyl be your lyege men and serue  
you with all our pupissaunce where  
your pleasure shalbe to set vno, and  
neuer dayes of our lyues we shall  
sayle you but yf it belongeth in you.  
Than whan the kyng sa we theym  
thus come humblie towarde hyg-  
prescence in theyþ shertes & barefoote  
and had hearde this that the Duke  
of Aygremount had sayd to hym: he  
had of them ryght great pitie, & par-  
doned them the death of his sonne  
Lohier and all his euyll wyl. Than  
should ye haue sene from one part &  
from the other kylle and colle eche o-  
ther their kynnesmen, and som wept  
for Joye and the other for pitie.

**W**han were pleased þ baron  
wyth the king Charlemayne  
by the counsel of the good  
duke Haymes: than sware & promi-  
sed the three brethren good fydelite  
to the kyng Charlemayne, and that  
they shold serue hym at all tymes þ  
he shold cal for þe. So tooke they  
a glad leue from the kyng, but the  
kyng charged the Duke of Aygremount  
that he shold come to serue  
hym at the feast of saint John next  
comyng. And than returned hymselfe  
Charlemayne towarde Parys, &  
the bretherne went agayne ryght  
gladde eche of them towarde  
þys place, soz well they crowed for

The booke of the four

to haue accordē the Duke Benes of Agremount theyz brother to warde Charlemayne, but other Wyse it were a full lytle was woxhe theyz accordē for soone after dyed therof the Duke Benes of Agremount by treason and vnder the sauke conduyte of the kyng Charlemayne, as ye shall vnderstante yf ye wyl heare me. ¶ Ye shall wote that a lytle afore the feast of saynt John baptist that the kyng Charlemayne helde a greate courte in Parys and the Duke Benes forgot not to goe thither as he had promysed, so departed he fro Agremouſee wyth two hundred knigthes and tooke his way to Parys towarde þ kyng for to serue hi wher he wolde put hym vnto. Now shall ye heare how the kyng beyng in parys, came towarde hym the earle Guenes his newewe. Byz foulquet of Moryllon hardres & Berenger, whiche told hi how þ duke Benes cam for to serue him wþ two hundred knigthes, capig by this maner. Byz how may ye loue or well be setued of him that so cruelly hath slayne your sonne oure colin, if your pleasure were we should well auerge you of hym. For in good sooth we shold slea hym. Guenes said the kyng it were treason, for we haue ḡuen to hym trewes, alwayes doo with it your Wyll, so that the synne tourne not vpon me, & kepe you. for in certayne the duke of Agremout is ryght mighty & of great kynged, & well ye myght happe to haue a doo yf ye fulfil in this your owne entē. Byz ansuwered Guenes care ye not therfore, for theris no ryche a man in all the wþrld þ durst vndertake

any thyngē agaynst me & my lineage. Byz sayd Guenelon to morowe erly we shall departe with fourte thousand fyghting me, & take no care for it. For we shall deluyer this wþrld of hym. Certes sayd the kyng it were treason, care not therfore sayd Guenes he snew well your sonne Lohyr by treason whyche was my kyng and therfore I wyl be auenged and I can. Now doo you there in sayde the kyng protestyng alwayes that I am not thereto consentyng.

Whan the mornynge came: departed well erly fro Parys the sayd Guenelon and his felawes and wyth them well fourte thousand fyghtyng men, and never they faried till that they came in the valey of Soyslons, and there they recounted the Duke Benes wþys purstaunce and whan the Duke Benes saw them come: he sayd to his folke. loydes I trow that yonder be some folke of the kynges that retourne again from the courte. It is no forre sayd one of his knigthes. I wote not what it may be said the duke. for the kyng Charlemayne is soze vengeable for to auenge hym self, and also he hath with hym a lynage of folke the whiche be fel and cruell. It is Guenes Foulquet of Moryllon and certayne other of his courte, and in trouȝt to night in my cleape I dreamed that a Gryffon came out of the Heauenis that perced my shidle and all myne armes, so that hys nayles stacke into my Lyuer and my myle, and all my men were therof in great tourment, & they all were eaten with

Wyth bores and of Lions, and none of them scaped, but one alone. And also me semed that out of my mouth yslued a whyte Dove. Than sayde one of hys knyghtes that it was all but well, & that for cause of thys dre me he ought not to dismay hymself. I Wote not sayd the duke what god shall sende me, but of thys my herte dredeth. So comauded the duke Benes that every man shold arme hi selfe, & hys knyghtes answered that r, ghe gladly they wold so doo. So began eueryche of them to seeke his armes and habylmētes. Here shal you heare of the harde hewyng and of a thynge heuy to be recounted of the great slaughter that made þ tray tour Guenellon of the good Duke Benes of Aygremount.

**T**he Erle Guenes rode Wyth great force that was wonderfull stonge and syers & well accompanied. Than went and met with the Duke Benes kynde Foulques of Morillon the Whiche sayde to him that he had doone ii for to slea Lohyct þ e dest sonne of king Charlemaine, but oþ euer the cuyn cam: he shold haue a sorȝe rewarde for it. Whan the duke vnderstode hym: he metuapled hym selfe muche and said Ha god howe myght one kepe hym from traytours. Alas I helde the king Charlemayne for a true prince & I se now the contrary but a foze þ I dye I shall sell my death ful dere. Than went they & fought þ one party agaynst the other muche angry in so muche þ Guenes smote byforce the duke his cosyn Rychard so that he ouerthrew hym downe dead to the

erthe afore his sete and after he cried with an hye voyce, smite on knyghtes for he slew my good cosin Lohyct the duke Benes of Aygremount dayned not accorde with me, but nowe I shall sell it him ful deare. So ran Guenes & his folke vpon the duke of Aygremount, and the Duke ryght worshiply defended hymself & smote a knyght named syr Fawcon so that he shoued his swerde into the bodye of hym, and he fell dead afoze hym. And after thys the Duke Benes of Aygremount tooke himself for to weepe strongly, & wylled much after his brethern & also after his newewcs. Alas sayd he deere Bonne Hawgys where be you now that ye be not here for well I Wote yf ye Wyste this enterprise ye shold well succour me. Ha my deere brother þ duke of dordon & of natuel & Gerard of roussillon Wel I know þ ye shall neuer se me a lyue. Alas þ ye knowe not þ false enterprise of charlemayn & of þ erle Guenellon, þ so cruelly & by great treason shal this dai make incinhuainli for to dye, wel I wot that right worshiply ye shold come helpe me. Ha my deere newewcs Reynawde, Marde Rychard & Guichard so muche nede I haue this day of you. Ha my deere newewc Reynawde wox thy knyght, as þ art, yf it please vns to god of hys benigne grace, that thou might know the greuous turment and the sorowfull matter vnto the Whiche by treason I am thyg day lyuered. Wel I Wot that by thee I shold haue succours. For in al þ worlde is not thy pece of beautie or goodnes of provesse & of worthyness

Now

The booke of the soure

Now may not this day succoure me  
al my noble and Worthy Image, but  
that cruelly and vnder the laufcon-  
dryte of Charlemayne I shall dye  
pyteously.

**H**eres was the bataile & right  
harde to endure, but well ye  
may wyt þe duke of Agremount  
myght not resynte agaynst so manye  
folke. For he had not with him but  
two hundred knyghtes, and the o-  
ther were more than four thousand  
thus were they euyll matched. Tha  
should ye haue sene that dai so moch  
braynes in the scelde, so manye feete  
and headez smyten of, that it was a  
pytious thyng to behold. After cam  
yet agayne Guenes that smote Joy-  
uslyne of Bloy so that he casted hi  
dead to the erth, and he made loone  
to goe backe the Duke Benes folke  
of Agremount. Than was soire a  
ballshed the duke of Agremount, the  
Whyche kne we well that Wythoute  
death he myght not escape. So went  
he and smote one of Guenes folke  
so great a stroke that he ouerthrew  
him dead. For none other Wyse he  
coulde doo, but defende hym selfe  
as well as he could so to length his  
lyke Wythall. Ha god what a greate  
Dommage it was to haue thus sham-  
fully betrayed hym. For after many  
chylches many townes and Castel-  
les were therfore set in a fyre, and so  
many great nobles full pyteouslye  
brought to death. So much sped the  
traytor Guenes agaynst the good  
duke of Agremount that the folke  
of the duke were weke & almost go.  
For of two hundred þ he had brought

he had no moe with hym, but fourty  
Barons: sayd þ duke Benes of ay-  
gremount ye se that we ben almoste  
all dead yf we defende vs not Wyth  
greate herte and Worthynges. And for  
goddes loue let euery of vs be wox-  
the thre as longe as we shall no w  
be alyue. For ye se that herte pytous-  
ly we must departe & breake felow-  
shyp. Than wente the duke agayne &  
smote a knyght named syr Helpe, so  
that he made hym to fall dead to the  
erth. And than cryed with an hyghe  
voynce Symte well barons. The va-  
lley was fayre and lounded of þ noyle  
that was made therre, & at that hout  
one named Gryffon of Hautefell,  
Wente & smote the dukes horse into  
the breste wyt hys spere so that he  
ouerthrew him vnder the horse, and  
the duke anon arose vpon his feete,  
& tooke his swerde wenyng to smite  
the sayd Gryffon, but the stroke fell  
vpon the horse so that he cutte him  
a sondaer as it had ben nothyng.

**W**han the duke of Agremout  
satwhimselfe thus on foote he  
knew wel that it was doone of him  
but well he sware that hys death he  
should seil ryght dere. but sodaynly  
came therre vpon him the erle Gue-  
nes that sat vpon a good courset þ  
which smote the duke Benes of Ag-  
remounte with his speare suche a  
stroke, that he shoued hym thorough &  
thorough his body, & thus fell downe  
dead the duke Benes of Agremount  
and than þ duke Gryffon þ father of  
the sayd Guenes came to the Duke  
Benes of Agremount that lay dead  
vpon the lande & shoued his swerde

in to his founement. Than sayd þ  
duke Gryffon, no whast thou thy re  
warde for mi lord Lohiers death þ  
þou let snew shamefullye w in thy  
palays. Now is the good and wort  
thy duke Benes of Agremount de  
ceasid, god of his soule haue mercy,  
& the traitour Genellon & the Lord  
of Hautefell þ lighted upon a good  
horse Wente after the duke of Aigre  
mountes folke þ fled, whiche were  
but x. a lyue of two hundred and yet  
these x. Were soone ouertaken, and  
than the traytours made them to  
swere and promyse that the bodye of  
þ late duke theyz mayster they shold  
brake to Agremount, lyke þ he had  
doo byng the body of Lohier to pa  
ris in a bytere, and the sayd knighees  
promyseid them for to doo so. So to  
ke they the corps from the other bo  
dyes dead, wherof was there greate  
number, & put hym in a bytere. And  
than went on theyz way with all &  
Whan they were gon a lytle ferther  
God knoweth what sorowe and la  
mentacion that they made for the  
death of theyz mayster, sayinge. Ha  
god good duke that so worty was  
how now we are soroy for þ, certayn  
ly full euill hath doone kyng Char  
lemayne that vnder this laufcoudur  
te hath made thee to be slayne in trea  
son. These sorowful knighees went  
thus makynge theyz mone beatyng  
the body of the Duke Benes theyz  
mayster vpon a bytere that two hor  
ses bare, whiche corps never staun  
ched of bledyng by the space of. viii.  
myles, & how many dayes Journey  
that these knighees were w þ bodye  
of theyz mayster by þ way: I cannot

tel you. But they went so longe that  
they came nygh Agremount, and  
approched so moche that the traytou  
res came to þ towne & to þ duchesse  
þ her lord had be thus traytorouslye  
slayne. So ought not be asked of the  
greate sorow þ the duchesse & her  
sonne Hawis made. They yssued  
after out of the towne with them of  
the church & went agaynst the corps.  
For also ought not to be asked þ  
there were made that day great we  
pynges & lamentacions. For whan  
the duchesse saw her lord, & the wou  
des þ he had in his body more than  
threec times: she fel do wne in a stro  
ne vpon him. And in this wyse they  
bare the corps to the chief churche &  
the bishop of the towne vp the ser  
uyle. And thā he was put in his gra  
ue & was right reverently buryed.  
Thā sayd his sonne mawis. Good  
lord what a domage is this of such  
a worthy lord to haue be thus slayn  
cruelly by treason, but & if I live lōg  
Charlemayne and the traytours þ  
thus haue doone: shal aby for it ful  
deerely. His lady mother he recom  
forted and said to her. My deere mo  
ther haue a litle pacience. For myne  
vnkle Gerarde of Rousillon D̄o  
of nantuel, and my cosyns Reynar  
de Blarde, Guicharde and Rycharde  
shall helpe me wel for to auenge the  
death of my lord my father. Nowe  
shal we leue heare to speake of them  
of Agremount þ hen in great lame  
tacion & weepinges for the death of  
their lord; and shal retorne to tel of  
the traytours Giffon & of Guenes  
his sonne that with theyz folke were  
gone agayne to Parys.

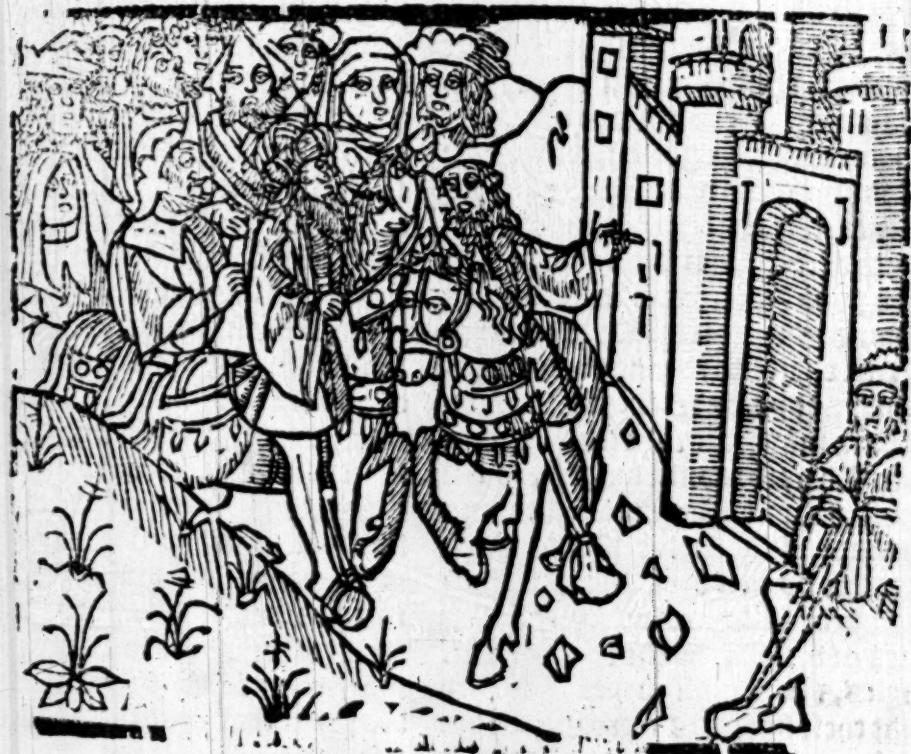
Nowe

The booke of the four

**H**ow Gryton of Haukell and  
Guncillon after that they had slayn  
the Duke Benes of Argemounte  
they retourned to Parys, & recoun-  
ted to the kynge Charlemayne the  
mortali treason that they had com-  
myled and doone. Wherof the kynge  
Charlemayne was glad, But after-  
ward he was ful wrothe & sorry for  
it. For after þ Duke of Argemoun-  
tes death his two bretherne Gerard  
of Rousillon and Dron of Mantuyl  
warred sore agaynst hym with their  
newe Hawgys, & than they made  
peace and accorded together, but the  
kynge Charlemayne apoynted not  
wyth the four sonnes of Aymou,  
nor to Hawgys they colyn.

**C**Item sheweth also the same chap-  
ter how Reynawde slew the newe  
of kyng Charlemayne Wyth a chesse  
borde, as they were playng together  
at the chesses. Wherof the Warre be-  
gan. The whyche was sore and mo-  
tall, as ye shal now heare here after  
and lasted so longe that it dyd great  
dommage to the Realme of Fraunce.

Campitulum .ii. Fo. xiii.





**Y**E shall now heare and vnder-  
stand from hensforthon a terry-  
ble and a piteous songe, yf ye  
hereafter lyst to herken. Thys was  
at the feaste of Penchecoste after the  
holy thursdaye, that the king Charle-  
mayne helde a great court at Parys,  
afer that he hadde accorded with the  
bretherne of the saide duke Venes of  
Aygremont. And to þisaid feaste came  
william the Englyshe, Walleran of  
Bullon, &c. kinges, & xxx. dukes, and  
well. lx. erleys were there at þisdaye for  
to crown Charlemain. And also was  
come therre the duke Aymon, of Doz-  
don with his four sonnes, that is to  
wyt Reinawd, Blard, Richard, & Gui-  
chard, to the which Aymon the kyng  
said. Amo said he I loue you & your  
children wel, and wye that I wyl ma-

ke of the fayre Reinawd my stuard, &  
the oþer shall serue me for to beare  
my faucons & goe with me. Soþ said  
the good Aymon I thank you muche  
of the greate worshyp that ye doo to  
me & to my children. And wye that  
thei shal serue you truly as your lieg-  
me, but wel I tol you good king that  
ye myspriȝt soȝe whan my brother  
the duke Venes of Aygremont vnder  
your laufconduit, & in treason ye  
made thus shamefullye die, & beleue  
that it gretch me ful soȝe at the hert  
& if wȝ doubted not you so much, cer-  
tes vengeaunce we shold take ther-  
of. But sith that my brother Gerard  
hath pardoned it to you: I forȝet ye  
you also. Amo said þis king ye know  
better than that ye saye. For ye know  
wel the offence that your brother had  
doon to me for to haue slaine so crue-  
ly. Loþere my eldest sonne þis loued  
so much. Now set the one ayenst the  
oþer, & let be spoken nomore therof.  
No more we shal saide duke Amo,  
but wel I pray god to haue mercy  
of his soule, for he was a right wor-  
thy knyght. The came forth Reinaw-  
de, Blard, Guichard, and Richard, and  
whiche reasoned with the kinge, say-  
ing in this maner. Sir said Reinaw-  
de the fairest of al knyghtes and moste  
expert in faires of knyghtode, ye ha-  
ue made me & my breþern that been  
now aforþe you knyghtes, but wte it  
soȝe very certain that we loue you not  
& that we haue toward you a greate  
and a morall hate for the deache of  
our uncle the duke Venes of Aygrem-  
ont, of the whiche deache ye haue  
not accorded with us. whan the king  
vnderstoode Reinawde: he looked

D. i. grim.

The booke of the four

grymly and fyerly in his visage for  
greate wroth and became blacke as  
a cole, and smote his soþer for angre  
and after said, Reynawd thou yong  
boye vnde out of my presence. For I  
swere by saynt Simon, and if it were  
not the compayne of the barons that  
be heere: I shold make thee to be put  
in suche prison that thou shouddest  
not see noþer hande nor foote that  
thou haste. Sy; said Reynawd it were  
not reason. But such that it is so ferre  
come that ye will not heere vs: we  
shall keep our peace.

so much was beloued, whiche traitor  
tully and shamefully hath be slain: &  
if I take not vengeaunce of it: I shal  
Were mad. In this wise sorowed the  
good Reynawd, and his breþern re-  
comforced him. The barons came ouþ  
aþter dinner for to play & sporeþ hym  
selfe, and Berthelot the newewe of  
Charlemayn called Reynawd for to  
play with him, wherof grew a great  
mischef for afterward many a good  
knight died therfore & manye a faire  
childe faderles as here after ye shal  
herken well.

**T**hus leste the four formeſ of  
Amon the debate and ſpake no  
more to the kyng Charlemayn  
for that tyme of this matter. Fayre  
Was the courte, and the day was ful  
fayre and þryghe, and fayre Was þ  
companye as of .xv. kynges. .xx. du-  
kes, and .ix. erles. They Went to the  
chirch for to heare þ faire masse that  
was songe, and muche ryth was the  
offertyng. And whan they had hearde  
the masse: they came agayn to the pa-  
lays, and asked after watet for to  
walle they þ handes, and the dynet  
was readye, so they walled and ſet  
therm downe to dynet. And the .xv.  
kynges Were all ſet, except the kyng  
Salamon that ſerued that daye with  
the Duke Godscaye. But Reynawd  
at thys dynet myghe not eat by  
cause that the kyng Charlemayne  
had rebuked hym so shamefully. Ha  
ſaid Reynawd to hymſelfe Alas,  
howe shall I conne doo so muþe  
that I may avenge my ſeile of Char-  
lemayne for the death of my vñcle, þ

**D**ñe was ſet Berthelot and  
the worthy Reynawd for to  
play at the cheſ whiche were of y-  
uor, wherof the boord was of golde  
mally, and ſo longe they played that  
debate fel betwene them two, by ſuch  
maner that berthelot called Reynawd  
de horſonne, and Cooke by his hand,  
and smote Reynawd in the vylage  
ſo that the bloud fel to the grounde,  
and whan Reynawd ſaw himſelf  
thus shamefully ouþeraged: he Was  
ryghe wroth and ſore angred & ſwore  
by god him ſhouldyl beþde therfore.  
Tha Cooke Reynawd the cheſ boord  
and smote Berthelot upon his head  
ſo harde that he cloued hym to the  
teeth, and thus Berthelot fel down  
deade to the grounde afore hym, ſo be  
gan the crye at that houte for to ſtong  
in the Palays that Reynawd þ ſon-  
ne of Amon had ſlain Berthelot the  
newewe of kyng Charlemayn, whan  
the kyng vndethooðe thys: he  
went myghe ouþe of his wþt, and cal-  
led of heþghe. Barons keep well  
that Reynawd ſcape not. For by ſaþe

De

Denis of Fraunce: he shal not esca-  
pe quicke yf we maye holde hym, for  
he hath slaine our newe Betchelot.  
Than can soone the knyghtes vpon  
Reina Wde. And his kynnesmen  
defended him nobly. And thus was  
there greate styrke and manye heres  
pulled, and manye gowones toren. For  
suche a stray was therre never seen as  
that daye was in the palays of Pa-  
rys. Many strokes gaue therre Haw-  
gys the cosyn of Reina wde, and soone  
to the duke Venes of Argemount.  
And while that this straye was in  
the palays: Reina wde and his thre  
bretherne, and theyr cosyn Hawgys  
escaped redyly out of the palays and  
came vnto theyr horses that soone  
were made redye. So lyghted they  
on horsebacke and rode soone oute of  
Parys, and fled streight vnto Borsdō  
to lorde theþ; lady mother.

passyon, keep thys daye my bretherne  
and my cosyn from the deathe, and  
from combraunce, and from fallings  
in the handes of Charlemayne the  
cruell, and of the other parte chased  
them the frenchemen brochynge with  
the spurres as fast as theyr horses  
myght renne, so muche that a knyght  
that was better horsed then the oþer  
were: overtooke Reynawde and sayd  
to hym, ye shall abyde ye vntre  
knyghte and I shal brynge you to  
kynge Charlemayne. And Whan  
Reina wde heard hym: he turned bay-  
arde ayenst hym and smot the knyghte  
with his spere in his sheld, & rouȝe  
him with so grete a myght that sterre  
deade he overthrew him. So sealed  
Reina wde the knyghtes horse and  
cooke him to his brother Alarde that  
lyghted anon vpon the backe of him.  
And after that he was on this good  
horse: he wene & smote a noþer kny-  
ghte with his swerd so that he made  
him fall deade afore him, and so be-  
cooke this knyghtes horse to his bro-  
ther Guicharde that thanked hym  
muche for it. And a noþer knyghte  
of the kynge Charlemayne came to  
þeym. Glosons sayde the knyghte ye  
shall come to the kynge that shal ma-  
ke you al for to be hanged. Ha by my  
sayd Reynawde thou shal lye,  
and with this Reynawde cooke vp his  
swerd & gaue him such a stroke that  
he overthrew him dead at the ground,  
than cooke Reynawde the horse by the  
reyn and gaue hym to his brother  
Guicharde that great need had of it.  
Now be the thre bretherne newe hor-  
sed & Reynawde is vpon bayarde and  
his cosyn Hawgys that he loued so

**A**nd whan thempetour Char-  
lemaine wylt that Reina wde  
and his bretherne were gone oute of  
Parys: he made for to be redy Wel  
two thousand knyghtes for to folow  
them. Now keep them our lordre that  
on the crosse lufred passyon. For yf  
the kynge holde them: they shalld dye  
Withoute remissyon, but Reynawde  
vpon hym is no care. For he was  
vpon his horse bayard that goeth as  
the Wynde. So taryed not the fourte  
bretherne & theyr cosyn cyll that they  
came vnto Hawmore, and they bay-  
red theyr horses of Alarde, Richard  
and of Guicharde. Thanne began  
Reynawde to make sorowe sayinge.  
Fayre god that lufred deathe and

The booke of the four

Wel behynde hym, now they goe god  
wyl leade hem & keep them from e-  
vil, & Chatlemayne pursued after  
them, but for noughe he ranayled,  
for they were never the rachet taken  
for hym. Than was the sonne gone  
vnder, and the nyght began to come,  
and the fourre bretherne & their cosyn  
were come in to the towne of Soisso.

**S**o much rode Reynawd by nyght  
Sand by daye upon bayarde that  
bace him and Hawgis his cosyn:  
that they came to Dordon there they  
mett with the duchesse theyr mother,  
that canne for to kylle them and colle  
them. And syn asked what they had  
doon of theyr fader and if they were  
departed from the courte wher wa-  
the? Lady sayd Reynawd, fader I haue  
slayne Berchelot the newe we of the  
kyng Charlemayn, the reason why  
I dyd so: was because he called me  
boreson & gaue me with his fyf vpp  
on my vissage so that the bloud came  
out of it. And whan the ladye vnder-  
stoode him: she felle downe all in a  
swoune, and Reynawd tooke her vp  
redely. And whan the good ladye was  
come agayne to her selfe she sayde to  
Reynawd. Fayresonne and howe  
durst you doo this that yehauedone  
For I promis you ye shal once repente  
for it. And your fader shal be destro-  
ed therfore and cast out of his lodes.  
And if he scape on lyue it shal be great  
meruayl. So pray I you all my chil-  
dren that ye flee awaye, but take a-  
fore all my treasour. For yf youre fa-  
ther come agayne from the courte: he  
shall well reedyou to the kyng Char-  
lemayn. Lady sayd Reynawd weene

ye þ our fader is so cruel & so wroth  
with vs that he wolde take & deliuer  
vs in to the hedes of the kyng Char-  
lemayne, that is ourre greate enemys  
mortall.

**R**eynawd, his thre bretherne  
& Hawgis wolde make no-  
ne other soiournyng: but tooke so  
muche of the hauoyre and treasure  
of theyr fader and mother: that they  
had þnough of it. And thenne tooke  
theyr leue of their lady mother. wher-  
of there was great pycie at the depar-  
tinge. For the children wept redely  
and the mother also of the other side  
whan she saw that her chidren that  
thus went fro her & wist not if she  
should euer see them again: so depar-  
ted the newe knyghtes with theyr  
cosyn Hawgis and yslued out of the  
towne & entred in to the greate forest  
of Ardeyne streyght through the va-  
lleye of Fey, and rode so much that  
they came vpon the ryver of Muse,  
and there they chose a faire grounde  
wher they made to be buylded a fai-  
re castell upon a fayre roche muche  
stronge, & at the foote of it: passed the  
saide riuer of Muse. And whan that  
the castell was made vp: they called  
it Mountaynford, & as I row where  
was not suche another of strengthe  
fro the said place vnto Bounepeller.  
For it was closed wth great walles &  
enuyronned rounde about wth dyches  
soe deep, & well garnished wth all  
maner of bretailles & of all thinges  
be needful to be had in a fortres, now  
doubre the newe knyghtes nochtynge  
Charlemayn yf he wroughe not by  
treason. Charlemayn was at paris  
much angry for þ dech of his newew

þer:

Berthelot, the which Reynawd had slayne playing at the chesse as it is sayde, so made he to come afore hym the duke Aymon of Dordonne the fa- ther of the fourt knyghtes, and made hym to swere that he shoulde never gyue no help to his children and that they shoulde never be the better of a peny by hym, & in what place that he shold them fynde he shoud take the and shoulde bringe them to him, the which Aymon durst not saye ayenst hym, but swere that he shoud doo so wherof afterwarde he was sore reproued. And after that he had sworn thus he departed oute of Parys all wroth & angrye of this that he muste chasse thus his children: and came to Dordon. And whan the duchesse saw him she began to weep full soore: and the duke knew wel what she yeelde. Lady said the duke where be my sonnes gone. Syr sayde the ladye I can not telle wheret they are drawen, but why suffred you that oure sonne Reyna wde leue Berthelot the ne- ue we of kyng Chatlemaine, ladye said he I coude not doo theris, & wot that oure sonne Reynawde is of so greate a strengthe that never lyth the incarnation of oure lord. Was not seen so stronge a knyghte as he is. Nor all the assemble that than was in the pallays at Parys myghte not keepe him, but that he flewe berthelot afore all the lordes that were there. And afore this our said sonne Reyna wde demaunded of kyng Chatlemaine ryght and reason to be doone to him of the deathe of my brother his uncle the duke Benes of Argemount, wherupon the king ful shamed.

fullye and outerageouslye answered to our said sonne, wherfore Reynawd was wrothe and soore angred, and þ cause why Reynawde leue Berthelot was for to aueng him of the kyng Chatlemaine. Not withstandyng that Berthelot had Inuryed oure sayde sonne ful soore at the playe of the chesse. And also he smote hym syste outrageously that the bloud came out of his face, so Reynawd for his great and hardy courage myghte not suffre this by no wise. And therfore the kyng hache made me swere that yf I can take my chyldren that I shal bryng hem to hym at Parys, and that no helpe they shal never haue of me nor succours, nor that they shal not be the better a peny of all my hauoure. Wherof I am wrothe and full sorwe. ¶ We shall leaue heere to speake of the duke Aymon and of the duchesse that ben ryght sorie for theyr chydre: And shal shew you how the kyng Chatlemaine made to seeke after the fourt sonnes of Aymon thoroouge all his realme, but he myghte not know nor understande no tidinges of them, tylly that at last came to hym a messenger that recounted to hym howe he had founde them in the forest of Ardeyne. In which they had edysped a fayre castell & soore stronge. And whan the kyng vnderstoode these rydinges he sent worde inconuenient to all his folke of armes that they shold make ready themself, the whiche dyd so without delaye.

The booke of the four

¶ How after that kyng Charlemaine hadde made the duke Aymon to forslake his sonnes: he went and besieged theym at Mountaynforde, Where he was discomfited two tymes. But the castell of Mountaynforde was taken by treason. And howe Reynawde and his bretherne auenged themselfe of the traytours that had betrayed theym, and howe they sauied them selfe after that with in the forest of Ardeyne, where theyr fader found theym as he went from

the siege towarde hys countrey, and howe for to keep his orbe that he had made to kinge Charlemaigne, he dyd assayle to his sonnes, so that of v. hundred men that they were, abode a liue with his sonnes but xvi. persones but Reynawde and his brethern had no hurt of theire bodies, howe be it that they slewen manye of theyr faders men.

Capitulum iii.



**N**owe sayth the hystoþe that  
sich the tyme of the kynge Al-  
exander: was none suche hearde as  
this same, & therfore faire lordes plea-  
se you heare and understande how it  
befell of the fourre sonnes of Aymon  
that were enmyes of the emperoure  
Charlemayne kyng of fraunce, for  
the same tyme king Charlemain had  
banyched them oute of the realme of  
fraunce & made all his barons boþe  
yonge & olde to seeke after them, and  
also made þe swere that they shold  
neuer helpe ne confort them by no  
maner of wise. And the same oþ had  
made with many other the olde duke  
Aimon theyz lacher as ye haue heard  
afore, wherof he was full sorry after-  
ward. It happed than that the kyng  
Charlemayne, helde a greate courþe  
in Parys. And as this courþe was  
assembled wher all the barons of  
fraunce were togyþþer: a messenger  
came there before the kyng Charle-  
mayne & kneeld afore him and sayd  
þy I brynge you tydrynges of þat  
ye dyd sende me for, Wyt þy that I  
cam fro the greate forest of Ardeyne,  
Wher I haue founde the fourre son-  
nes of Aimon þas dwelþ there with  
in a stronge castell well sette vpon  
a roche, and if ye wyl fynde them  
and be auenged of them: Wyt þat  
ye maye well þnough doo so as I by-  
leue for certayne. wha Charlemayne  
understood this messenger: he began  
to metuayle hymselfe soþe and called  
hys barons and sayd to them. Fayre  
lordes whan it is so that ye be heere:  
it apperteyneth not that I shoule  
sende for you at your places. So I  
pray you and require as to my lyȝe

men that ye help me to be auenged of  
the four sonnes of Aimon that so great  
douage haue doon to me as ye know  
well.

**W**han the barons vnder-  
stoode the prayer that the  
emperoure Charlemaine  
made to them: they answered With-  
one voice. Sir we shal doo your com-  
maudement without doabt, gyue vs  
leauue if it please you that we may goe  
to our countees for to make vs ready  
to harneys and of horses, the which  
thing the king graunted them. And  
so departed al the barons fro the court  
and went in to þeyz countreys, the  
which abode not long þat they came  
agayne to Parys all arrayed and rea-  
dy to to warre with their army. And  
Whan the kyng Charlemayne sawe  
them: he receyued them gladly, and in  
continent without anyc taryinge he  
departed out of Parys, & went with  
al his hoste to Moundlyon a towne  
of his, and there he laye that nyghe.  
And at the morowe as soone as the  
daye appered: the kyng Charlemaine  
departed from Moundlyon and went  
on his wai with his hoste, & ordeined  
þ foreward to the erle Guy of mou-  
peller that wolde much greate harme  
to Reynawd, & whan they had set þe  
selfe in the way: the emperour Char-  
lemaine called to him his good vas-  
sylles Kenyer, Guyon of aubeford,  
the erle Garner, Gestray, Langon,  
Dgier the dane, Rycharde of Nov-  
mandy, & the duke Naymes of baui-  
ere, and saide vnto them all. Lordes  
ye knowe well what ye haue to doo,  
I praye you that ye keep well your  
selfe from Reynawde and goe not to  
nyghe

The booke of the four

nyghe, but abyde all togidher in such a stonge place that we may haue no domage, and let good warthe be made euery night, for my hearte geueth me that we shal dwelle there longe.

**T**han salde the duke Raines of bauyete. Sir we shall doo so. Than made they the trumpetes to be blowen, & all the hoste they made to come togidher. And thus they rode so muche that they came to Milleyn otherwise called Aspes, & whā they were come thare they sawe the castell of Mountaynforde, that Raina Wde & his bretherne & their cosyn Watogis hadde doo make, euen at that houre that kinge Charlemayne and his hoste were com to Aspes, & thre bretherne of Reynawd were coming to the chasse oure of the Wood of Ardeyn, and Richard the yongest bare a right riche horne bothe fayre & good: the which Reynawd louedfull deare. And in their felawhyp myght well be xx. knyghtes and no mo. And as they returned to Mountaynforde Richarde beheld and sawe ouer the Ryver of Mule tholle of the king Charlemayn wherof he began to be soze metuerilled, & called Guycharde his brother & said to hym. Fayre brother what folke maye be they that I see yonder I heard say the other day of a messenger that tolde it oure brother Reynawd: that the emperoure came for to besyege vs within our castell.

**A**nd after whan Guycharde vnderstoode his brother he behelde ouer the ryuer & sawe the foyr warde that Guyon conduced, and

whan Guycharde sawe them he smote hys horse with his spurres, he & his folke went ayenst Guyon, & sayde to hym. Fayre syr what are these folke: syr sayde Guyon these been the folke of the emperoure Charlemaine that goeth to Ardeyn for to besyege a castell that the foyre sonnes of Iymon haue doo make thare, for they strenge the they cravayle vs much, god gyue them euyll rest. Lettes said Guycharde I am a souldier with Reyna Wde, & con you nother chanke nor gracie of that that ye saye, for I am holden to defend them at my power & with this he spurred his horse, and smote the said Guyon throughe hys sheelde so harde, that he ouerthrew hym deade to the grounde, and than he tooke the horse of the sayde Guyon and tooke hym to one of his squyeres and assembled al the knyghtes togidher of one part & of the other, they of Fraunce cried Mountaynforde Fayre Denys, & the bretherne of Raina Wde cried mountaynforde. Than shoulde ye haue seen a fell batayle and rygbe stuel the one agenst the other sheeldes broken and helmes broken, som dead and som soze wounded so muche that it was great pite to see. What shall I tell you more al the folke of Guyd that made the foyr warde were thers slayne. This hangyng came a squier to the king & shewed him howe hys foyrward was vterly dystroyed, & that Guycharde the brother of Reynawd had slayne the earle Guyon.

**O** God salde than the emperoure Charlemaine haue I now lost Guyon, of hym it is greate domage,

Now wot I not from hens forh on  
howe I shuld wyn, siche that I haue  
lost the forward, and than he called  
Ogyer the dane & said to hym. Ogier  
gote to the succours you & Naymes,  
for Guichard bethel with him al my  
hauoyze & haue slayne all my folke,  
than Ogier the dane abode not but  
lyghed on horsbacke he and the duke  
Naymes with thre hundred knigh-  
tes well arm'd & well arated & went  
after Guychard, but theyz laboure  
was nougat wort to them, for Gui-  
chard & his men were all ready with  
in Mountainford with al the hauo-  
re that they had won. Whā Reinaud  
saw his brother come with so greate  
hauoyze: he went ayenst him & kisst  
them al, & than he said to Guychard,  
sayze brother where haue ye taken so  
greate hauoyze that ye bryng heere?  
lyp sayde Guychard I shall tell you  
tydynge. Wherof ye shall be greatly  
meruaylled. Nowe wyt that kyng  
Charlemain commeth for to besyege  
you with all his hoste & hath so great  
chivalry with him that it is wonder  
for to see, my bretherne & I come fro  
the chase out of the Wode of Ardeyn  
& we haue reounted the forwarde  
of Charlemain that the erle Guy con-  
duyted, therelough we cogither w  
them, but god be thanked & my men:  
myne enemys were discomfited &  
ouerthowen, one partie we haue flat-  
ne: & the other fled away, so haue we  
brought theyz hauoyze & ye see heere.  
And therelough is dead the erle Guy and  
many other greate lordes & all theyz  
men. Than sayd Reinaud I ought  
to loue you dearely whā ye canne war  
so wel that ye haue ouerthowen your

enemies at the fyfth compyng on, and  
than he called all his bretherne & his  
folke and sayd to them, sayze lordes  
nowe is the tyme come that everyche  
of vs must preue himself a good mā,  
wherore I pray you that every man  
force himselfe to doo wortlyp his do-  
uore that your worshippe and oures  
be kept, and that men may not wyt  
vs no cowardes, & let vs doo kno-  
we oure prowesses to kyng Charles  
mayne so that he holde vs not for fe-  
ble & myschance, whan Reinaud  
had spoke to his bretheren and to bys  
folke: they answere to hym in thys  
maner, my lord haue no doubte of  
none of vs, but be sure that we shal  
neuer sayle you for the hewynge of  
our lymmes as long as we shal liue.  
and whan Reinaud vnderstood the  
good wil of his folke and namely of  
his bretherne: he beganne againe to  
speke to the and sayde, let the gare be  
shere and draue by the byrdge, & so  
go we to the windowes for to se this  
folke that come ayenst vs. And than  
they went therelough Reinaud sayd, &  
whan they lokid out of the Wyndo-  
wes: they saw Ogyer the dane com-  
minge with a thousand men w  
him, whiche whā he saw that Guychard  
was entered into the castel: he reour-  
ned agayne & sayd to the king how ic  
was, and than he sayd, Sir I lec you  
wyt that the castel of Mountainford  
is the fairest & the strongest that euer  
ye saw for it is set vpon a hye roche  
of harde ston, and well I lec you for  
certayne that ic shall not be so taken  
so lyghely as men ween. For suche  
folke doo keepe ic that wel and wort-  
hely shall defende ic.

Whan

The booke of the four

**W**han the Emperoure Charle-  
mayne hearde speake Ogier  
the dane: he was of it so wroche  
that he went myghe out of hys Wye,  
and swore god that he shoud never  
returne into Fraunce but that Ret-  
naude Were take, and that þe he  
maye haue hym: all the wroldes shall  
not saue hym but that he shall make  
him to be hanged at his brother Guy-  
shard to be drawnen at horsestalles.  
þe said Ogier Well ye oughte to doo  
so, for they haue trawayled you full  
often and haue gyuen you greate la-  
boure & payne. Sit sayde Soulques  
of Mortillon, haue no doubte for shor-  
cely we shal auenge you of them, ma-  
ke to be cled incontinent that youte  
hoste goe lodge lightly about Mountenforde,  
Letres said the king ye saye  
well and than he made trometeres  
to be blowen of a heymere for to as-  
semble toghether al his men of armes  
and commaunded that all the castell  
of Mountenforde shoud be enuyron-  
ned rounde about with folke, & that  
every baron shoule doo þynghe there  
his paullion, and they dyd so as the  
king had commaunded. Now Wyl  
I shew to you how noble the castell  
Was set. The said castell was closed  
& set vpon a hie toche, & of the one side  
of it Was beeing a great riuere called  
Muse, & of the other side it had eyn  
þe hand a great Wood ful pleasaunt,  
of a nother syde it hath a fayre plat-  
ne, and of that other syde a full faire  
medow greate and pleasaunt to be-  
holde. Whan the folke of the king  
Charlemaine were al lodged: them-  
þe w felawship for to see the strength

of the castell, & when he had well be-  
holden it & seen at his case: he began  
to say in himself, ha god how is this  
castell closed & set in a stronge place  
god how these knyghtes know wel þ  
crafte of warre, not withstandinge þ  
they be but yonge folke, fayre lordes  
thinke to warre wel, for we haue som  
what more to doo thā I wende, whā  
þ paullions & the tenes of þ kinges  
were dressed vp: he made to be set a  
charbonk le tight rich all hys on hys  
tente whiche ston full þrecious was  
shining as a corche þ brēnch, & with  
the same a great appell of fine golde  
of greate value, & whan the said tenes  
were al spred & hanged: the emperoure  
entered within & made the duke Nay-  
meng to be arm'd, & charged him that  
no man of warre so hardy for to ligh  
on horsebacke of eyghe dayes, but it  
Were for to spore himself. For I wil  
doo know through al the realme that  
men bryng to vs viayles in greate  
habundance afore that þ castell of  
Mountenforde be by vs assayled, and  
make my chappel to be appataled to  
chend that we pray god þ he wil help  
vs to be auenged of þ four sonnes of  
Simon the whiche we shal famly or  
ever it be a moneth. For they shal not  
can haue no viayles fro thowt by no  
way, þa said þ duke Raines to the  
king, sit you mas doo better if it be your  
pleasure, send a messenger to Retnaude  
to tel him that he yeeld to you gu-  
chard his brother, & ye shal quicke him  
al his londe, & if he yeeld him to you:  
make him to be beheaded anon, & if þ  
Retnaude refuse for to do this he mas  
wel be sure þ warre shal not leue him  
as long as he shal be aliuine, than an-  
swered

wered Charlemain, ye saye well and ryght wrytely, but certaintlye I wote not wher to fynde a messenger, to whom I myght well trust. Soys said the duke Naymes, yf it please you, Ogier and I shal doo thys mssage. It please me well sayde the king, and ryghte greate thanke I shal conne you for it, for ye never fayled me at a need. Than went Naymes, and Ogier and made theym ready, and whan they were ready: they tooke in theyz handes braunches of Olyue tree for to shew that they were messengers, and so went they both together withoute any other company, & whan Mayns that kept Watche sawe that two knyghtes come: he wene & askeid theym what knyghtes they were that came ther. Soys said the duke Naymes, we been messengers of the kyng Charlemaine that hath sent vs byther for to speake with Reynawode the sonne of Aymon, and incōtynent the saide Mayns wene to hys lorde and tolde him howe at the gate were two messengers of the kyng Charlemaine that wold speake with him, Reynawode commaunded forthwith that the gate shoude be opened to them & that the drawbrydge shoude be let downe for he wold see the messengers & speake with theym. Than wene the twobartons leyn & brought afore Reynawode, and whan Reynawode sawe them: he salued them curiously, and after that they had salued eche other: they set them al therbypon a brythe. And than began the duke Naymes to speake & said thus. Reynawode said he, the emperoure Charlemaine of Fraunce lete you

wryt by vs, that ye sent to him. Godes brythe your brother to make of hym his pleasure and his will, and yf ye wyl not doo so: Charlemayne defyeth you, and sayth that never he shal leue you vnto the tyme that he shal haue you all, and whan he shal haue you: he shal make you al to be dead, and hanged, and dye an evill deathe with great shame.

**R**yan Reynawode vnderstoode these wordes: he wered alred for ancre, & than he saide to the duke Naymes. By the faid that I owe to al my ffrendes, if it were not that I loue you: I shold make you both to be hewen al to peces, and ye haue wel deserued it. For you Naymes are my nigh bissman, & as me semeth ye oughte well to helpe and defende me ayenst all men, and ye nowcounseyl me to my great dyshonoure & ayenst mine honeste. Tell to Charlemaine that he shal not haue Guichard my brother, & that he leue his threcenyng & doo the worst that he can, for we shal not doo for hym no: for hys threcenynges the mountenaunce of a peny, and goe you to tel him in my behalfe that he take vs: he shal haue a greater need of helpe than he wenereth. Now woyde from our lyght lyghtely oute of oure paleys, for to see you thus heire greueth me to soore. Whan the duke Naymes & ogier vnderstood Reynawode: they made no lenger dwellyng, but departed incontinent with ouc any more speaking, and are come to Charlemaine & recorded to him al this that Reynawode had sayed.

whan

**H**an the emperour Charlemai-  
ne vnderstood this ays were: he  
was so sore an angred that he  
went almost oute of his wyt, and thā  
he commaunded that the castel shold  
be assayled to the whiche they sawe  
but thre gates. Wherof was set afo-  
re the maykers gate, their Reiner, &  
Folques of Morillon, the earle of  
Neuers, and Ogier the dane. And a-  
sore the secound gate: was the duke of  
Bourgoyn & the erle of Alphinoz, &  
afors the thirde gate: was þolde By-  
mon the fater of Reynawde that was  
come to Charlemayn for to warre a-  
yens his sonnes as choicer. Nowe  
weneth the emperour to haue besieged  
well Reynawde and his bretherne,  
but and god keep Reynawde in good  
helche: Charlemayne shall lese there  
more than he shall wynne. Reynaw-  
de and his bretherne were such knigh-  
tes & so sage that they defended well  
their castell ayens Charlemayn, al-  
wayes it was besieged with so great  
numbre of folke as I haue sayde a-  
fore that it was mercyll to see for  
there were bretongs, fleminges, maun-  
sealz, oxigners, english bourgoines,  
the bauyers and the frenshemen, but  
Reynawde made one chinge that cur-  
ned hym to a great worshyp. For he  
sayde to his folke, faire lordes I pray  
you that yemounce not vpon youre  
horses cyl that ye heare the trompet-  
tes blowe. For I see wel that Char-  
lemaines folke ben tigh: sore traia-  
led, and nowe while they been thus  
wery: it were no worship to vs for to  
tenne them vpon, but whā they shal  
be a littill eased of their wetynes: we  
shall channe make diligencye and

Worthely our first yssue vpon them,  
and I praye you and require you ali  
in general, that every man sheweth  
his prowesse and strenght, and wye  
it that in the castell of Hounsford  
was a faucebray vpon a roche, tho-  
rough the whiche Reynawde and hys  
bretherne went out vnder couerte at  
all tymes that they wolde withoute  
daunger.

**R**yan Reynawde saw that  
it was time so to goc oute  
vpon their enimies: he cal-  
led to him Sampson of boudelops,  
this was a knight a crasy man that  
was come there so to help Reynaw-  
de and his bretherne, and hadde with  
him an hundred knyghtes, Reynawde  
said to him, sir it is nowe tyne that  
our enimies know what we been, for  
if we tary lenger: the kynge Charle-  
main moughit hit vs of cowardnes,  
And whan he had said thse wordes:  
he came to his brother Guicharde, &  
saide to him, faire brother Guichar-  
de, leue not so to be alwayes bolde  
and hardy as longe that I am a man  
on liue, for I loue you as much as I  
doo myne own body, and it is reason  
that I doo so, for ye & I are bretherne  
bothe of fader and mothe and also  
I beleue ye be the best knyghte of my  
lygnage. And than he takerh hym  
betwene hys armes and kyssed hym  
by greate loue, and whan he hadde  
doone thus: he sayde, brother ma-  
ke the Trompettes to blowe vp of  
heyghe, and leue vs make ready oure  
selve so to yslue oute so to shew to  
Charlemayne what folke that we be  
yf

ys god wyll that we might take the  
citle of Estampes I shoud be therof  
ryght glad. For it is the mā, ameng  
all our enemies þ wroste dooth to  
vs, þ more hath hurted vs, happily  
þ: shal not scape vs, for he is alwaies  
in the forwarde, whan these wro-  
des were lynnished: all the fourte  
þerue and al them of theyz compa-  
nye arrayed them self and yslued out  
of the castell at the faþebray, wþth  
out to make any noyse nor crye, and  
so gone they upon the hoste of Char-  
lemayne by so great wrath: þ it was  
marueyle, and begā to make so great  
destruccyon of folke and to cast bothe  
tentes and paullions a ground: that  
it was wonder and pitie for to see.  
And who had seene than Reynawde  
the worthy knyght upon hys horse  
bayarde, and the faytes of armes þ  
he made vpon his enemies: shoud  
haue great merueyl, for to looke vp  
on him, for that man þ he recoured  
myght well say that he was borne  
in an euill houre, for to say the trou-  
th Reynawde smote no knyght so that  
his stroke came ryght but that he cle-  
ued hym as lyghtly as they had not  
ben armed. whan the folke of Char-  
lemayne saw theyz enemies: they rā  
incontynent to their haueynes and  
whan they were armed they ran vp  
on Reynawde and his folke, & than  
began the batayle so cruell: þ it was  
pytie for to see. For ye shoud haue  
seine many speres broken, and heel-  
des broken and clouen a sondre, and  
many a good haubergen vnmayled  
corsettes & flancardes all to broken  
and sore beaten, and so many a good  
ly man and noble knyghtes beyng

full myscrably vpon the earth. Whā  
þ olde Aymon heard þ crye: he mos-  
ted on horsbacke also lone as he mi-  
ghte he and his folke and came to þ  
batayle ayenste his sōnes. and whā  
Reynawde apperreyed there his fa-  
ther: he was right sorry for it, & sayd  
to hys bretherin. See here is a greate  
meruayle, for here is our father and  
by my counsell we shall make hym  
runne. For I wold not for nothig  
that none of vs shoud set vpon him  
And than they turned at another si-  
de of the batayle: but Aymon theyz  
father came there agaynst them and  
began to set sore harde vpon them &  
theyz folke. And whan Reynawde  
sawe that hys father leyd sore vpon  
them and bare them greate domage  
of theyz men: he sayd to him al anan-  
gred. Ha father what do you: certay-  
nely ye doo great sine. For ye shoud  
helpe defende and kepe vs, & ye doo  
to vs worse thā the other doo. Now  
I see well that ye loue vs so lytle,  
and that ye be dyspleased that we be  
so pri and so good men of armes a-  
gaynst Charlemayne, for yf ye haue  
forbanyshed vs: Well we knowe it,  
and that we shall never haue nothig  
of your herytage and we haue made  
this lytle castell for to kepe our selfe  
therin, and yet ye come hecher for to  
helpe it to be destroyed. It is no fa-  
thers Werke, but it is operation of  
the deuyl, yf ye wil doo vs no good:  
at least doo vs no harme, For I swe-  
re you vpon all Sayntes that yf ye  
come any ferther agayn st vs I shall  
forbere you no lenger, but I shall  
gyue you wþth my swerde suche a  
strooke that ye shall haue no leyser

E.i. for

The booke of the four

for to repente you of the folye that ye  
doo. Whan Aymon vnderstode the  
wordes of his sonne Reynawde: he  
ooke therof so greate angre at hys  
hert that it lacked lylle but that he  
sall do wne in a swoun to the erth,  
for he knew well þ Reynawde tolde  
hym trouth. But he could doo none  
other wylle for feare of Charlemayn  
but alwayes he wylle dwel himself  
abacke, & suffred his sonnes to passe  
by hym hatmles at that tyme. The  
whiche went and dommaged right  
soze the folke of king Charlemayne.

**D**ulynge the tyme that Rey-  
nawde spake thus to his fa-  
ther Aymon: came Charlemayne &  
Aulbry, Ogyer, and the erle Henry  
and Foulques of Morillon. And  
whan Reynawde sawe them come:  
he made hys trumpettes to be blowen  
for to brig his folke together again,  
& whan they were assembled at one  
parte of the other: a knyght of char-  
lemayne þ was called Thier: made  
hys horse to renne agaynst the folke  
of Reynawde, and whan Alarde saw  
hym come: he spurred hys horse and  
came agaynst him and smote him so  
hard in hys sheild: that he shoued a  
great hauberke that he bare through  
the body of hym, so þ the sayd Thier  
fell dead do wne to the erth. And  
whan kyng Charlemayne sawe falle  
dead his knyght Thier: he was ther  
fore so sore angred that almosle he  
lost his wit and his vnderstanding.  
Than began he to cye wylle a hye  
voyce, sayunge in this maner. Lo-  
des and barons deliuer you for to a-  
venge me of these gluttons that le-

den our folke so cursedly. See that  
they ben wel punylshed & charpelye,  
Whan the olde Aymon heard Char-  
lemayne speake thus: for doube to be  
blamed he spurred hys horse & wene  
and smote one of his sonnes kny-  
ghtes that was named amaney so cru-  
elly with his brand of steele, it at he  
smote his heade cleane of stro þ shoul-  
ders of hym, fader cryed Reynaw-  
de to hym) ye doo yl Whan so cruelly  
ye slea my men, but by the sayth that  
I owe to god if I crowed not to hurt  
therbi my honour: I shold take ther  
of cruell vengeaunce. And than said  
agayne the valiaunt Reynawde, ha  
lady mother how shold ye be sorry  
þ ye kne we the great werkes and þ  
great harme that our fader doth to  
vs this day.



**F**han Foulques of Morillon saw that the folke of Reynawde maistened the ſelue ſo worthely agaynst them: he began to cry. Sir Empereur and king What meaneth this? I beleue that ye be forgoote, ſend ſo many of your folke and cumaunde them that they take incontynent the traptours that now ſayne themſelue agaynst your enemyes, & without delay make the to be hanged and ſlayne all quicke. Whan the frenche men vnderſtoode this that Foulques ſayd to Charle, mayne: they made none other abydig but ſpurred theyr houſes and ſmote vpon the folke of Reynawde ſo hard, that they made them to recule backe. Wolde they or not, whan Alarde ſaw

hys folke goe backe: he was ryght ſor it, and tooke his ſwerde and began vbi his folke to make ſo great effors of armes: that the frenche men were all abaflied of it. What ſhall I tell you moare of this batayle: wyt it that it was ſo meruaylous accuel, that it was pitie for to ſee, for eucry one made the Worſte that he could, yone agaynst the other. And wyt that the fourre Sonnes of Aymon made ſo great occiſion of men & of houſes: yone durſt come afore the, but none myght compare vbi Reynawde for to doo well. For he made there ſo great meruaille of armes: that the frenche men durſt not come forth for feare of him, for to ſay the trouth Reynawde ſmote no ſtroke a right, but that he

E.ii.

ll. v

## The b ooke of the four

Ne wham wherē vpo it lighted. What will ye þ I tell you more? Wyt þ in thyg batayle kyngmen nor parentes spased not eche other for they slew þ one þ other as dōbe beastes. There shold ye haue sene coming thrrough the battayle the kyng yon of saynte Omars that rode vpon a good horse that canne well, & agaynst him came a knyght called Guyon, & yon smote Guyon suche a stroke: that he ouerthrew both horse and man to þ erch, & whan Reynawde saw this he was ryght wroth for it. And thā he tooke hys baner & sayd to hys folke doo so muche that I haue that good horse, for þt he goth away: I shall never haue Joye at my herte. for I wyll that he kepe felawshyp to Bayarde. And whan Richard his brother that was so worthy a knyght and so gentyll vnderstode his brother that so spake: he made no raryng but spurred hys horse and smote yon of saynte Omars so harde þ hys sheilde nor hys haunrys might not kepe, but that he huced hys glaue thrrough the brest and ouerthrew him dead to the erch and than Richard tooke the horse by the bydell & led hym to Reynawde and sayd to hym, syx we haue the horse þ ye haue called after so soze. Nowe mape you lyght vpon hym whan it please you, brother sayd Reynawde grameroy of this present, for wel ye haue serued me therof. Nowe haue we two good horses to whome we may trust well vpon now lyght at once vpon hym sayd Reynawde, and whan Richard vnderstode the commaundement of his brother: he lighed lightly vpon the horse & tooke his

owne for to kepe to a good knyght.

**A**nd whan Reynawde came agaync to the bataile: he saw yet his sacher, and whan he saw him he was ryght sorri for it so that he lost almost his wit for the same and cam & sayd to hi by a maner of reproch, by my sayth father ye are greatly to blame: ye myght well kepe your selfe that ye come not so often to se vs, & for to doo vs harme. We wyll shew to you þ ye be our father. For good but euyll. For ye shewe to vs harde frendshyp and a lourlesse at chyf masse and at Easter men ought to go vyslyte and se his good frend for to fealst hym and to doo hym good & eate wþth him whan the dynner was redi, bitt this ye doo not. For ye com to see vs in a hote warre, & with the poynt of the swerde ye chere vs, it is no loue of a natural father, but it is rygour of a stepfather, thā answered the duke Aymon I Wyl that ye kepe your selfe well. For if Charlemaynes can take you all þ Wozide shall not kepe you, but that he Wyll sica & hag you or otherwile make you to dye a shamefull death, facher sayde Reynawde let þ alone & come & helpe vs so shall the kyng be dyscomfyted, go forth gloton gods curse haue þ sayd Aymon to his sonne Reynawde, for I am to olde for to doo treason. Facher sayd Reynawde little ye loue vs I leit wel, but kepe your self wel, for I shall shew you whether þ I can doo any thyng wþth the spere & of the swerde & whan he had þ sayd: he spurred Bayarde & went & smote a squyer þ w̄s called Gniuer so that he ouerthrew him dead frō his horse

to the ground. Whan Charlemayne  
sa Whis squier dead: he spurred hys  
tourser Wyth an angy cheere & had  
in his hande a stasse of yron, for he  
wolde parre the batayle a sonder, by  
cause he saw well that hys folke had  
the worse & that they myght resytle  
agaynst hys great strokis of Reynawde  
in no Wyse, for it was meruaylous  
for to see the great faytes of armes  
that he made there, for he ouerthrew  
downe dead both horses and men by  
great strengthe.

**C**harlemayne is commen to the  
Frenchemē, and commaunded  
them toz to withdraw them self, for  
it was tyne for to departe fro hys ba-  
tayle, & as they Wolde haue gone a  
way: came there throught batayle Be-  
tarde the bourtayner & smote Sy-  
mon of Breimoys so fyerly: that he  
fell downe dead to the ground, whā  
the fourre sonnes of Aymon saw Si-  
mon dead: they Were right sorwe for  
hym, and spurred theyz horses Wyth  
the spurres & came at that syde and  
brake the preste for to venge Si-  
mon death, & roght it Whā Reynawde was  
come there it was kno We right wel  
for he w his swerd brought to death  
Wel thre hundred knyghtes of the  
best men that kynge Charlemayne  
had in his company. Wheroft hys king  
was right sorri & sore an angred, this  
hanging: Blarde wet throught hys preste  
so came he & Jousted agaynst the erle  
Estapes, & his sheldē he letted not  
but he shoued his spere through the  
body of him, and thus was by hym  
slayne the sayd erle, whan that Rey-  
nawde saw that stroke: he came to  
Blarde his brother & killed him upon

his helme & bo wed him selfe toward  
him and said faite brother blessed be  
the Wōbe that bare thee, for ye haue  
suenged vs of hys greatest foe that ws  
had. And whan he had said this word  
he made his trumpettes to be blowē  
for to call his men together.

**W**han the Emperour Charle-  
mayne sawe this greate do-  
mage that the fourre sonnes of Aymon  
dyd to hym: he cryed wyth a hys  
voice. Lordes & barons withdrawe  
our selfe a backe, for our enemyes be  
to good knyghts for vs, nowe is this  
to vs great dyshonour & great myl-  
happe let vs returne agayne to our  
pauillions I pray you. for I were  
vpon all Hayntes that theyz castell  
shall never be taken but by tanis-  
hing, for they ben ouer good knyghts  
prou and wise & well aduised of hys  
warre. Whan the barons of Charle-  
mayne heard this commaundement  
they sayd, fy we shall do your Wyll, &  
as they wolde haue departed: came  
Reyna Wde spurring hys horse, and  
his brethern, & wet and smote vpon  
the folke of hys Emperour so shaprly:  
that he departed them so well, & they  
miste needes flee & take theyz paup-  
lions, and so bode wyth them prys-  
ners Anthony Guyemaulte the erle  
of Neners, & Chierri of Normands  
for no man myght endure agaynst  
Reyna Wde and his brethern. And  
whan Reynawde sawe the dyscomfi-  
ture and the folke of the Emperour  
that fled: he made his trumpettes to  
be blowen for to withdraw his folke.  
And whan they were assembled: Rey-  
nawde and his bretheene retourned

gladly into theyz castel. And was al-  
ways the hindermoste man for to  
kepe his folke the better that led pri-  
soners afore. Then came Aymon  
theyz fader atresshe vpon them and  
began to make the great combraunce  
and whan Reynawde saue his fa-  
ther: he wold so to haue waded mad  
for angre, so retourned he bayarde &  
smote the horse of his fader so hard  
that he fell do wne dead to the erth.  
For as of his fader he wold not  
touche, and whan Aymon saw him  
selue a grounde: he rose vp quickeleye  
vpon his feete and tooke his swerde  
in his hande, & began ryght well to  
defende himselfe. But his defencse  
should haue ben full lytle worthe to  
him, for his childe should haue take  
him for theyz prisoner yf it had not  
ben Ogier the Dane that cam & suc-  
coured hym. And than sayde to hym  
the sayd Ogier. Sir. What semeth  
you of your chilidren, they be ryght  
cheualrous and hardy as ye may see  
and knowe.

**W**han Aymon was horsed  
agayne: he pursued his  
chilidren as a man wroth  
& out of his wit, and said to his folke  
Now goe we after the glotong, for if  
they lyue longer: they shall do vs har-  
me and damage so great that wylh  
payne it shalbe recovered. Wha Reyna-  
wde saw his fader that followed  
them so sharply: he turned Bayarde  
and wylt and smote amonge the thic-  
kest of his faders folke and began  
to hurt them so soze with the help of  
his brethren, y he put them to flichte  
maugre their teeth. For they might

no longer endure y great maugre y  
Reynawde bare to them, for so says  
the trouth: no harneys was noughe  
withe agaynst the swerde of Reyna-  
wde. For he cleued all that he  
rought.

**A**nd whan themperour Char-  
lemayne saw this hys pro-  
wesse that Reynawde made: he bles-  
sed hymselfe of the great meruaile  
that he had therof, and so stronge he  
spurred his horse that he wylt against  
Reynawde, and than he sayd to him  
Reynawde I forbyde you that ye go  
no ferther. Whan Reynawde saw this  
kyng: he made to hym reuerence and  
than withdraw himself abacke. And  
sayd to hys men, let vs goe fourth,  
for here cometh the kyng. I wold  
not for nothing in this wold that  
any of you should laye hande vpon  
hym. Whan the folke of Reynawde  
vnderstode these wordes: they pue  
theyz swerde in theyz shipes and  
went agayne vnto theyz castel righte  
glad of theyz fayre auenture y was  
happed to them that daye. And wha  
that they were within theyz castel  
of Mountaynforde: they made the  
dyngwe brydge for to be drawen vp, &  
Went and vnaured them and soide  
the supper redy, and so they set them  
selue at the table. And there was a  
great many of prisoners. And wha  
thei had eaten and dronken their fill  
Reynawde came to hys brother and  
thanked hym muche with al his hert  
of that he had slayne the erle of Es-  
tampes.

**A**nd whan the Empyroure Charlemayne saw that Reynawde was with in his castell: he lighted downe from his horse into his tente and swore by god þ he shold never departe from thence vnto the tyme þ he shold haue the fourre sonnes of Aymon or that the castell were take. What shall I tel you more: themþerour Charlemayne lay well. vñl. monethes at spege afore þ castell of Mountaynforde, and there was no weke, but they had a batayle or a scar myshe, & I tell you that Reynawde was not so sore besparged, but that he wente to chace in woodes and in touners as often as hym pleased. And dyuerse tymes it happed that Reynawde spake wþtþ the frenche me of trayte the one to the other, sayinge thus to them. Fayre Lordes I pray you that ye speake to the Empyroure Charlemayne & tel hym that he shal never take vs by no force, for our castell is right stronge and well garnished. But knowþe þyng one thing that whiche he may haue by goodnes, he wiced not make by force. He may haue the castell and vs also þtþt please hym in such maner as I shal tell you. Whan I shal put in his hand the castell of Mountaynforde my bretcherne and my selfe, our goodes and bagage sauf, & that the warre take an ende that hath lasted so longe: he may be well content. Reynawde said Ogier the Dane ye say wel and wise ly, & I promye you I shal shew the same to the kinge as ye haue sayd, & þtþt ye will beleue my coulles: I ensure you I shal tell hym that ye doo so for ye are not folke so; to be set lytel

þtþt thus, nor for to be fro the courte, for þtþt the kinge had you nyghe him, he shoulde be the better for it.

**A**nd thus as Reynawde & Ogier spake together, there camme folques of Mouillon that cried to Reynawde vassayle yee vs, but a toole, for certes I haue heard poure wordes well, ye shal leue vs Mountaynforde for it is not your herytage and your heades in Lydewyse, foulques sayd Reynawde ye haue repayed me full often. I know well all þtþt harme þtþt the Empyroure Charlemain wyl to me, is because I haue slayne Berthel of his newew with a Chesse boarde of whome god haue mercye. Certes I could not doo thereto, but I was full sorry for it god wot it. It is trouþh whan we played together we had some wordes, by whiche wþtþtþt any wordes he gaue me suche a stroke vpon my face that the bloud ranne downe at the groud. And wha I saw my selfe so armed. I myghe not be so soft that I could endure þtþt great outrage that he had doone to me with out a cause. So defended I my selfe to my powre. For wholter he hym selfe to be slayne his soule shal never haue pardon. And thou kno wel folques þtþt I dyd was in my defedyng. But to this must be made shorte wordes, and if it please you, ye shal tel to þtþt king charlemain that he taketh vs to mercy, and that we may be frendes. And þtþt ye doo thys: ye shal doo your honoure. For as soone may ye be slayne there as a nother. Than sayde folques by god all thys is nouȝt worth vñ-

to you, for ye shall die therfore ye are  
your bretheren. foulques layd Reyna  
wode ye threten to muthe, it apper-  
teineth not to you for to threten kni-  
ghthes so muthe that beir better than  
you, and þt ye haue ony thyng vpon  
your herte doo it without any more  
wordes, for I tell you well that þt  
purchatt yore death. And whanne  
Reynawde had layd these wordes:  
they went agayne to theyr pauly-  
ons. And thus abode the hoste vnto  
than without any syghtyng, but the  
frenchemen came agayn wylde they  
or not, wherfore the kyng Charles  
mayne was wrothe.

**T**han the Emperour Charles  
mayne sent for men through  
all yss lande, and whan they were  
all come he layd to them. Syres I  
complayne me to you of the fourre  
sonnes of Aymon that hath my ladi  
destroyed and wasted. And Mountayn-  
forde is so stronge: þt strenghe  
it can never be taken, but by famps  
thyng. Now tell me what I ought  
to doo: for I shall doo therin your  
counsell, whan the barons heard the  
complaynt that the kyng made to  
them of the fourre sonnes of Aymon:  
there was none so hardy þt durst say  
a word, but þt duke Haymes of Ba-  
uiere that layd to the kyng. Syr em-  
perour þt ye wyl haue good couisel:  
I shall grue you good, þt ye wyl be-  
leue me. Let vs returme into hyghe  
Fraunce, for we be to night the win-  
ter for to make Warre. And whan þt  
newe tyme shal be come: ye shal mow  
come agayne to lay your syge afoore  
Mountaynforde. For I doo you to

understand þt Reynawde is not soze  
preled, but that he goeth in wodes &  
in riuers at all tymes that he wyl.  
And a man that may goe out and in  
at his wil: is not ouer soze besieged.  
And of the other parte Reynawde  
and hys bretherne are suche knygh-  
tes that they shal not be lyghtly o-  
uercome. This is my couisel syr who  
knoweth a better: let hym tell.

**T**hen spake Herny of Saunce  
ne, and to him said, syr I shal  
gyue you a better counsell þt ye wil  
belue me, gyue me the castell and al  
the hauoyre that is with in and the  
Lordshyp þt yore myles aboure it: and  
I shal yelde to you Reynawde and  
al his bretheren for prisoneis afoore a  
moneth cum to an ende. And þt shal  
we goe into Fraunce for to see oure  
wyues and chidren. Hernyer layd þt  
kyng, ye haue layd well and wylsely  
þt ye may do thys that ye haue said.  
I graunt to you the castell and all þt  
ye haue asked with þt same. Syr said  
Hernyer I thanke you for it an hys-  
dred thousand tymes. And I promye  
you I shal delynet vnto you Reyn-  
awde and hys bretherne as youre  
prisoneis or euer þt a moneth be pas-  
sed. But knowe you that Hernyer  
dyd mylles of his enteynyme, for he  
kept not couenant to the kyng as  
he had promised him: for Reynawde  
tooke hym and made hym to be he-  
wen all in peces, and made all they  
that were wþt hym whan he made  
the treason to be hanged and slayne,  
as more playnly ye shal understand  
here after, þt that ye lyste to harken.

Hernyer

**D**ernier of Haueyn made none  
nother taryenge, but he layd to  
kyng Charlemayne in this maner.  
Syz comaunde ye Guyon of Bouc  
goue that he doo put in array a thou  
sand knyghtes well arm'd, and that  
to morow afoore the day he goe vpon  
the moutayne fayre and sofely Wiche  
out noyse, & I shal put hym within  
the castell hortly. Whan he had sayd  
this: he went to hys tente, & made hi  
selfe to be arm'd. And whan he was  
arined: he lyghted a horsbacke, and  
rode to the gate of the castell, & sayd  
to them that kepte Warde. Alas for  
god fayre lordes haue mercy of me  
if it please you let me in, or els I am  
but dead, for the Emperour Charle  
mayne maketh to folow and seke me  
all aboute, for to make me dye by  
cause I haue said to him much good  
of Reynawde, & also I tell you Wel  
þ I shall shew to Reynawde a thing  
Wherof he shall be ryght glad þ hys  
pleasure is to heare me.

**R**yan they þ were abone b  
yon þ gare heard hi speake  
thus: they without lōg ta  
ryeng let goe downe the drawbridge  
and made him come in, & dysarmed  
him & did to him great honouer. But  
the false tracyour rewarded the full  
þll for it after that. This hangyng:  
Charlemayne commaunded Guyon  
to make him redy, & a thousand kni  
ghtes wiche him, and sent them vpon  
the hille, without makyng of anye  
bruyce tyll that the day were come.  
And wþt that Guyon had wþth hym  
of the best knyghtes of Charle  
mayne.

**D**oris Harnper þ tracyour  
within the castell of Bouc  
tayntorze, vnto whome men made  
good cheere. And whan Reynawde  
wyste that a knight of Charlemayne  
was come: he sayde that he Wolde  
speake wþ hym. And so he was bro  
ght afoore hym. And whan he sawe  
him: he sayd to hi. What be you fayre  
knyghte that are come hither? And  
he answered, syz my name is Her  
niet of Haueyn, & I haue angred  
kinge Charlemayne for the loue of  
you and for this cause I am com his  
ther prayng that ye haue me for re  
commaund, for I wot not whether  
to goe nowe. Good freend sayd Re  
ynawde, syth that ye say þ ye be oure  
freend: ye be ryght welcome to me.  
For of luche goodes that God hath  
sent me ye shall not caple. Now tell  
me I pray you how doth the hoste  
of the Emperour? Haue they anys  
great plente of byrables. Syz sayd  
Hernier they ben scarce wþth them.  
But I tell for very certaynþ they  
shall goe theyz wayes within these  
fourty dayes, for none of the barōs  
wyll no lenger abyde there. Where  
fore the kyng Charlemayne is soze  
an angred wþth them. And I promit  
you yf the hoste wente awaye ye mi  
ght hurte theym ryght vetye soze,  
and gette verye muche good, yf ye  
wyll sette then vpon the caple of  
them. Freende sayde Reynawde to  
hym, ye haue comforted me ryght  
Well, yf it is so as ye say, for yf the  
king Charlemayne be once ouertho  
wen: he shall not come a nochtys  
me vpon vs wþth so good a Wyll  
as he dooth nowe. And then Reys  
nawde

The booke of the four

na wde had hym Wyth hym to hys  
brethern, that made vnto hym good  
cheere. And whan the supper was  
redy: Reynawde and his bretherne  
set the downe vnto theyr meat and  
supped gladly. And in theyr compa-  
nye was the traytour Hernier, vnto  
whom they made good cheere. After  
supper all the knyghtes Wente to  
slepe. For they were wety of bearig  
of theyr Marneys, and they had not  
ceased to syght all that day. And wit  
that Hernier was well and honest,  
ly brought to bed. For Reynawde  
had so commaunded. And whan all  
the knyghtes were fast a slepe: Her-  
nier as the false Judas slepte not.  
But he rose and tooke hys harneys  
and armed hym selfe. And whan he  
was well armed at his easc: he came  
to the drawe brydge, and cut the cor-  
des that kept it vp, and let the draw  
brydge go downe, and than he went  
vpon the walles where he sound him  
that made the watche and slew him.  
And whā he had doone this: he came  
to the gate and opened it. For he had  
taken the keyes from hym that he  
had slayne, whiche had them in his  
kepyng.

**T**han whan Guyon of Bour-  
goyne saw the gate open: he  
made no taryng, but came and en-  
tered into the castell, and al hys folke  
with hym. And began to kylle and  
slea all the that they found. **N**ow  
shall ye heare of the fayre aduenture  
how that Reynawde & his brethern  
were sauued from this mortall slaw-  
ghter. Wyt that whan the yemen of  
the stalle had supped they were drōke

and wente to theyr bed, & whan they  
were a slepe: the hōse of Alarde  
was sōwhat proude began to make  
noyse agaynst the other. And Alarde  
and Richarde heard the noyse of the  
hōses, they rose vp and saw hōe  
of the halle open, and perceyued out  
of it the harneys p̄gylstered agaynst  
the moone that shone full bryght.  
Than went they to the bedde where  
they had brought the false Hernier,  
whiche they foud not there. Whereof  
they were ryght soze abasshed. And  
than was Reynawde awaked, and  
asked who was there that maketh  
thys noyse. Let our knyghtes take  
theyr rest, that haue so soze trauay-  
led all the day it is euyl doone for to  
go thus stampyng at this houre, thā  
cryed Alarde to Reynawde and sayd.  
Fayre brother we ben betrayed, for  
Hernier that false knyght hath put  
the folke of Charle mayne within  
thys castell, the whiche kyll and slea  
your folke and put them to a greate  
marter, whan Reynawde vndestode  
this: he made no taryng, but he arose  
and armed hymself quickly, and cri-  
ed vnto his brethern and to his men,  
Now my freendes let vs beare our  
selfe worthly, we had neuer so great  
need, and wyt that Reynawde had vs  
hym but. xxx. knyghtes Within the  
dungeon of that fortreſſe, for al the  
other were within hōe base courte whi-  
che was as it had ben a lytie towne  
well peopled, where as Guyon of  
Bourgoyn & his folke slew them.  
This hanging: Reynawde & his bre-  
thren had armed themselfe ryght wel  
hoppyng to defende theymselfe  
well.

Than

**T**han came Hernyng the traytour steryng about throughe the maystres strete & with hym wel an hundred knyghtes. Thā sayd Reynawde to hys brethern, sayze Loydes come forth, for yf god helpe vs not: we are all lost, & than Reynawde and his brethern came to the gate, & defended so well y none durst paille but he was slayne, what shall I tell you more: the base courte began to be soze moued, and the crye was so great, for al them of the dongeon defended hemselfe valyantlye. Whan the folke of the Emperour Charlemayne saue that they that were w in the dongeon defended hemselfe so well: they set y base court in a fyre and began to brenne, and pul down the houses and al that they founde. And y fyre was soone so great that it tooke the dongeon of the castell. Whan Reynawde saw that he was so taken wth fyre: he was soze angred and sayd to hys brethern What shall we doo here: for yf we tary any lenger we shall all be brennt or taken and yf it were not the fyre that thus warreth agaynst vs: I make myne a uowe to god that we shold yet caste this folke out of thys castell, but syn that the fyre is in it: we cannot kepe it no lenger. And than he sayd to his bretherne, come all after me & they went to the faulchay that was all wayes open, and yllued out he & his brethern & his folke with them, and whan they were out: than were they moxe abashed than they were afore for they wyl not wheret to goe.

Now heare how they dyd as wox thy knyghtes. for whā they saw the

castell brennen: they entred wthyn a pyt that was there vnder the erthe, for feare of the fyre & set the doze vp on them, & there they began to desyd hemselfe so stronglye: that none entered there in but he lost auon hys head. And whan Hernyng the traytour was aware of ysame: he tooke his folke with him & came to y pyt & began to assayle Reynawde harpsi and his brethern, and al they that were therin with them, & wyt it that there at the ntre of the sayd pyt were made great saytes of armes for they of wthyn defended hemselfe so wel: y none inyghte come in but he were dead anon. ¶ Whylc that the fourt sonnes of Aymon were in y pyt vnder therthe they hearde the crye that his men made, the Whiche Hernyng made to be slayne. Than began Reynawde to sai to his brethern. Lordz let vs go succour our folke, for and they shold thus dyc: it were to vs a great blame. Sayd hys bretherne goe in goddes name whan it please you, and whan they were come out of the pittie: the batayle began to be therke ful terryble, for ye shold haue seen Reynawde & his brethern gyue therke great strokis and manye. For Reynawde smote so merucylouse strokis wth hys swerd flamberge the whiche he did cut al that he caught. For Reynawde was all wrothe, and for great angre he had abandoned and Jeoparded both lyfe and gooddes. And therfore he bare greate hurte and harme to hys enemys, for he had cast hys swerde ouer hys backe, and helde his swerde flamberge wth both his handes & made

## The booke of the four

so great destruction of the folke of Charlemaine: that the place was at full of bloud. And whan Reynawde saw that theyr enemyes were sore abashed, and that they durste not abyde him: he sayd to his brethern. It was to vs great cowardnes to abyde vs so. Syr sayd Alarde ye say trouthe. Then sayd Reynawde. My Lordes my brethern let vs to doo well. For traitours ben good to ouercom they shall not now endure longe agaynst vs. And whan he had sayde these wordes: he came to þ gate of þ castel, and the fyre was a lytle quenched, and maugre al his enemyes he smot the gate of that dounegon, and had vp the draw bridge of the sayde castel. And whan he had doone this: he came agayne to the batayle, & found his brethern that slewe and beate done so many knyghtes, and bare themselfe so worthely: that it was maruayle for to see. For they smote no stroke, but they slewe a man.

**T**han was Hernyng the traytour in the medie within the dounegon, wherof Reynawde had locked the gate, and drawen the bridge, and the good Reynawde saw that he was safe of the hoste of Charlemayne, and began to put hymselfe in the medie so shapely that he dyd so muche he and his brethern: that of þ folke of Charlemayne that were wythin the dounegon abode of the aliue but Hernyng and xii. other, and whan Reynawde saw that they were all dead: he and his brethern and his folke tooke Hernyng and the xii.

other. And than Reynawde did doo make a gybet upon one of the hyghest towres, and there he made to be hanged the xii. men. And made Hernyng to be bound his fourre membris that is to wyt, feete and handes to fourre horse tayles. And so he was drawen all quicke and quartered in fourre pecces, as a traytour ought to be doone vito. And whan Hernyng was dead: Reynawde dyd make a great fyre, and made hym to be cast therin, and as he was al toghether brent: he made the ashes of hym to be cast in the ayre to the Wynde.

**A**nd heere ye may see how the traytours that wold betraye Reynawde were dead and slayne. For they were puysched as they had deserued.

**T**han whan king Charlemayne wylt that his folke were thus dead, and þ he shoulld not haue Reynawde nor his brethern: he was soye angry therfore, and sayd to him selfe. Ha good God lorde how am I euyl dealed wytchall by this fourre knyghtes brethern, I dyd my selfe great harme, whancuer I made the knyghtes. And it is ofteyn sayd, that men make often a rood for them self. And that I may well nowe take to me. For theyr vncle slewe my sonne Lohyer, and Reynawde my neuerre Berthelot that I loued so deereleye, and yet nowe he hath hanged my men and many of them slayne. Wel I myght call my selfe vnhappye, whan I that am the mooste puysched of the wroide, cannot auenge me of the fourre symple knyghtes. I shall

neuer departe from hens till that I  
be auenged, or els they shal ouercom  
me, and all mine armye. Soz sayde  
folques of Morillō pe haue a good  
cause why, and Reynawde is a foole  
that he fereth you not. For if he had  
doubted you he shold not haue han  
ged your men, but he hath doone so  
in disperte of you. Thā sayd þ Duke  
Naymes of bauyer, had þ beleued  
me: þe shold not haue lost your men  
þe Wolde beleue Hernier, it is hap  
ped of it as þe see. Now beholde your  
folke þe ben shaking with the winde.

**A**nd whan theperour Char  
lemayne vnderstoode this þ  
the ouise Naymes sayde to hym: He  
knew that he sayd trouth, and wylle  
not what he shold say to it, but loo  
ked downe all a shamed. This han  
ging: Reynawde & þys bretcherne are  
gone vpon the walles, and looked a  
boure them and sawe that the base  
courte of the castell brenned there as  
their vitayles were. Then began reyn  
awde to say to his bretcherne, sayze  
lordes the thinge goeth well, þy þ  
we ben scaped thanked be god from  
so perillous and hard aventure. It  
lacked lytie but that we were al dead  
by false treason, but the worse that  
I see: is that we haue loste our store  
of vitayles so that we haue nothing  
to liue vpon, and me semeth that þ  
we dwel aye lenger heere within:  
We doone not wysely. But þy it seeme  
you good, it is tyme that we departe  
hence. Broþer said Alarde, ye speke  
well and wysely, and we shal doo  
as þe haue sayde. For as longe as

the lyfe is in our bodies: we shal  
not leue you. whan þe sone bretcherne  
were together accorded for to departe  
thens: they trussed al theþr barrys,  
and tarped tyl that it was night, and  
than they armid themself, & ryghted  
on horsebacke, And whan they were  
cedy: Reynawde sayde to hem, Loz  
des how many men ben we? we ben  
answering Alarde well. v. hundred.  
It is þnough sayd Reynawde. But  
wot þe what we shal doo: let vs keep  
ourselues alwyses together withoute  
makyng of aye a strape and so gos  
thorugh the lande of Almayne, and  
þy the folke of Charlemayne hap to  
assayle vs: thynke to defende ourself  
well and smyte harde vpon them so  
that we haue to our woship the bet  
ter of them, whan it was tyme to li  
ght on horsebacke: Reynawde mounte  
d upon Bayard, and the other al  
so lyghted vpon theþr horses. And  
whan they were all horsed: they ope  
ned the gage, and wente out at theþr  
leyser wþout makyng any noyse.  
And whan they were all yssued out:  
Reynawde behelde and saw the cas  
tell þy brent, wherof he tooke greate  
pitie, and sayd. Ha god good castel ic  
is great domage that þe be thus dis  
troyed and wasted, goddes curse haue  
he that betrayed this good castel. It  
is a goe seuen yere that þe were made  
þy brent, alas we haue had there in so  
muche good and so myky lwoþlypp:  
and none we leue you malwre vs.  
Cretes þe were my trusse after my  
bretcherne. And whan I muste leeso  
you: there is none so sorry for it as I  
am. And as he spake these wordes:  
the teres fell downe from his eyen,

f. l. and

The booke of the four

and he was so taken with greate heynnes that almoste he fell dwone in a swoun so muche of sorowe he had in his herte.

**A**nd whan Alarde sawe Keynawde so full of sorowe he came to hym and sayd. By my fayth brother ye be to blame to say so, ye be not the man that shall come to mischief. For all the knyghtes that ben a lyue are not worthe you, and therfore I pray you that ye wyl conforste your selfe, for I wene you vpon all halowes that afore two yere be passed ye shall haue a lastcill that shall be worthe liche four as this is, but now let vs put our selfe to the waye for we haue no need to tari. Brother sayd Keynawde I haue founde ener in you good counsell. Now goe we than our way, and take you a Guycharde the foreward, and I and Guycharde shall come behynde. Soys sayd Alarde all shall be doone as ye saye. And than tooke Alarde his brother Guycharde with him and wente afore with a. C. knyghtes with them and had forthe theyr caryage in the myodes of theim. And Keynawde & Guycharde came after with the resdue of theyr folke, but they could never make noz passe so softis, but that the folke of the hoste of þemperoure overtooke them.



**T**han whan Charlemayn knewe that Keynawde came: he was muche wrothe, & madc his comandemente that every man shold be armed, & than the hoste began to moue and wente incontinent and armed hemselfe. Whan Alarde and Guycharde that wente afore sawe that they myght not passe, but that they muste medle: they spurred their horses & ranne vpon Charlemayns folke so shapely that they were all an angred with it, for thei ouerthrew two knyghtes to the grounde, and in continent was there greate a doo. And whan Keynawde sawe that the hoste moued: he called to hym twey knyghtes and bad hem take and lede soozhe the caryage afore out of

of the hoste, & he shoulde go helpe hys  
bretherne, sy sayd they we shall doo  
your commaundemente. And than  
Reynawde spurred Bayarde and en-  
terred amonge þ thickest, and began  
therre to make so great meruayles of  
armes that all the folke of Charle-  
maine wondred vpon, for he and his  
bretherne ouerthrew there dead so  
many knyghtes that none durst com  
afoore them, but he was slayne.

**W**hat shall I tell you wyc it that  
the folke of king Charlemayne was  
so disdiscited for because that it was  
uyght, and myght not well see what  
nombre of folke the souce bretherne  
were, that Reynawde and hys com-  
pany passed malwyre them of þ hoste  
And also I tel you for certaynethat  
Reynawde and hys brethern dyd so  
great harme to the folke of Charle-  
mayne: that he was sorry for it man-  
dayes after. Whan Reynawde was  
passed: he foud his sommers and his  
caryage, and his knyghtes that con-  
duyte them, wherof he was glad.  
þa he sayde to his brethern. Syrs  
go on your wye, and they dyd hys  
commaundement, and Reynawde  
wyth his brother Rycharde abode  
þeynde, and whan Charlemayne  
wyste that Reynawde went a way:  
he was glad by cause he had lefft the  
Castell of Mountaynforde, and in-  
continent he made hym to be folo-  
wed, and also the hoste was redelye  
armed, and whan they were well a-  
rayed: they tooke theyr way after the  
souce sonnes of Aymon.

**D**ow ben the soure knyghtes  
bretherne ryght soray of that

they haue thus lefft theyr sayre castel  
of Mountaynforde, and wher it that  
Charlemayne folowed them well of  
uyght, and sayd that it shoulde hure  
him sore, but þt he myght take them.  
But Reynawde the worthy knyght  
is not abashed, but he taketh all his  
folke and setteth them afoore hym, &  
sayde to hys brother Alarde, Good  
brother Alarde, take kepe of thy  
folke betwene you and Guicharde,  
and þt the folke of Charlemayne al-  
sayle vs: We shal defend vs wel. Syrs  
sayd Alarde as ye haue sayd: so shall  
it be doone. And than they saw come  
Charlemayne and Ogyer the Dane  
the duke Raymes of bauiere, foul-  
ques of Moryllon, and many other  
and whan Charlemayne that came  
afoore well horsed saw Reynawde &  
his folke he cryed to them and sayde  
So helpe me god glotons ye be now  
dead, this is the day þt I shall make  
you all soure to be all hanged. Syrs  
answered Reynawde it shal not be  
so as ye wene, and it please God, for  
þt god gyue me lyfe and health, and  
to my horse Bayarde, the pursuite  
shall sore dete be bought þt ye no we  
doo. And whan he had sayd the same  
he turned Bayarde against Charle-  
mayne for to smite hym. For he wete  
well to haue slayne him wþout a-  
ny faute. The kyng Charlemayne  
was in daunger to dye þt Reynawde  
had caught hym, but Danipe hughe  
wente betwene the kyng and Rey-  
nawde that came with hys spere in þ  
rest Wylling for to doo great harme  
And at this coming: he smote Danipe  
hughe thorough the shielde so har-  
de that he perceid his herte wþth tho

The booke of the four

Iron of his spere , and so he fell  
downe dead afore the kynge. And  
Whan Reynawde had gyuen that  
stroke he wente hys wye after hys  
brethern.

**W**han Charlemaine saw hughes  
fall dead: he cryed whan highe  
voynce: Now after lordes after, for if  
chese glotonys scape vs: I shal never  
be mercy, & Reynawde came agayne  
to hys folke and sayd to the. Lordes  
doubt you not as longe as I am a  
lyue, but be al assured and so tyde on  
hardly and in good araye. ¶ What  
hall I tell you more: Wyt it y. xxviii  
myle lasted the chasse, and there was  
neuer a myle: but that they tusted to  
gether, & many knyghtes were there  
ouerthowen & slayn. But Reynawde  
and his folke bare themself so malþ  
that they lost, but three of theyz fe-  
lawship at that tyme, but they rode  
so longe till that they came to the ri-  
uer. The kynge called to him his ba-  
rons and sayd to them: Lordes let a  
lone the chasse, it were folys from hys  
forth on for to folow them, for I see  
in al our horses may no more let the  
goe to a hundred thousand deuyls,  
for yf Reynawde wrought with wit,  
ch craft he could doo no more, chā he  
dorh. Let vs thinke for to lode vs  
here nyghe þ ryuer. For the countey  
is good and pleasant as me lemerh  
Hys sayd the barons, let it be doone  
as ye haue commaunded. Then they  
vuladed theyz sommers, and pyght  
there their pavyllions. And whan  
they were set vp: the king made him  
to be dysarmed. And in the meane

Whyle the supper was made redye  
lyghtye, for of all the daye the king  
had nother eaten nor drōkē, nor none  
of hys felowshyp. And Reynawde  
was passed ouer the riuer he and his  
bretherne, and his folke safē a lōud  
Wheras they wolde be by the grace  
of our Lorde, and whan Reynawde  
and his brethern saw that the chasse  
was ceassed and left: they went all  
softly, and whan they had gone ferre  
from the oþre of king Charlemayne:  
they found a fountayn fayre and  
cleare, and abeute that fountayne  
was muche fayre grasse and thicke.  
Whā Reynawde saw þ place was so  
pleasaunt: he sayd to hys folke. Herre  
is a fayre ground for to lode vs &  
for our hors, Hic said Riarde, ye say  
trouth. And thā they vuladed theyz  
sommers and theyz cartes, and Wyt it  
the horse were wery, but the poore  
knyghtes were euylodged, for they  
had there no meate nor drynke but  
cleare water. But wyt it that Reys-  
naude nor none of his knyghtes dis-  
armed them not, but made good war-  
the all the nyght one after another.  
And whan they saw the daye come:  
Reynawde made hys harneys to be  
trussed, and they lyghted on horses  
backe, and tooke theyz way through  
the great forrest of Ardeyne, and whā  
they had riden longe they lyghted do-  
wne afore another fountayne that  
they that had watched the nyght a-  
fore should rest themselfe there.

**D**o myght well say Charle-  
mayne þ he can neuer hirre  
thefour sonnes of Aymon. **W**yt,

wit that he was lodged vpon the riuer where he abode, whan he wolde no more solow after Reynawde, and whan the day was clere he sayde to the duke Haymes. What thynke ye what we ought to doo? Syr sayd the duke Haymes yf ye wyl belue me: Wee shal tourne backe agayne. For to goe any fether this waye: it were but a folys, for thys wood is to thick and the riuer ouer muche perillous & also Reynawde & his brethern are suche knyghtes that they be not for to be lyghtly overthowen, & whan the king and the duke spake together there came many knyghtes to hym, and whan Charlemayne saw hym: he called Wydelon, Reynier, Ogier y dane and sayd to them. Lordes I wyl that ye come agayne to parys wþth me. And whan they vnderstode this: they were glad and sayd to the king, Sir it is the beste counsell that ye can doo, and after that thei were so accorded: Charlemayne made to be cryed that every man shal returne agayn into his countrey, & that they shold kepe it well, & that he prayed them so to doo. Syr sayd the barons Wee shal doo your commaundement, and whan all was sayde: they made the hoste to descende & take theyr way, & the king went streyght to paris and the barons in theyr countreyes, and whan Charlemayne was come to paris: he called afore him his barons & to them sayd, sayre lordes I am y mooste vnhappy kyng of the worlde, whan I haue no power to auenge my selfe of the fourre sonnes of Aymon, and they led me as ye know. I wene they shal returne into theyr

coutrie or to theyr castell, and it be so: I wyl y we go there agayne soz to lep slege there. Syr sayd the duke Haymes, that shal they not doo, for they are in Ardeyne, And ye knowe y the forest is so great that they shal fynde some cheuysaunce. That mighe wel be sayd the kyng Charlemayne. But wher some euer they go: euell way myght they fynde. And whan he had sayd this: he tourned to Ward Ogier, and sayd to him. Take Gerard, Soulques the Almayne, and Dron of Mondidier, and gyue leue to the frenche men and to the other. Syr sayd Ogier Well shal be doone your commaundement. And then wæt Ogier to Soulques, to Gerard and vnto Dron, and tolde them thac y Charlemayne had commaunded. And after came to the frenche men, & tolde to the other knyghtes, & gaue them leue. And whan the kynges folke haue had leue: certe man wæt to his countrey, not the right waye: But trauersyng the mountaynes. And thus as Aymon went trauersyng the lande towarde hys countrey: It bapped to him so that he came by the fountayne wher hys sonnes dwelled. Whan Aymon saw hys chyldren: he was abashed and ryght soray for it. And then he sayd to his barons. Lordes counsell me I praye you what I ought to doo agaynst mi chyldren. For and I assayle them, and that they ben slayn or taken: I shall never haue Joye. And if I let them goe: I shalbe forsworne to Charlemayne. Whan his barons hearde him speake so: there was never one that answered anye worde:

F. iii. And

### The booke of the four

And whā Aymon sawe that he was  
counscled of no man: he sayd agayn  
to them. Sych it is so that ye wyll  
gyue me no counsell: I shall doo afer  
ter myne owne wyl. For god forbid  
þt be layde to me, that I haue foud  
thē heire. And haue not fought with  
them. But well I tell you that it is  
for my synne that I haue founde  
them here. But fro hens forth it shal  
be doone therin as it pleaseþ god &  
fortune. Syr sayd Elmenstaye þt ye  
assayle your children ye doo not a-  
mylle for ye swarc it to the kyng  
Charlcmayne, kepe syr Aymon þt  
he be not forsworne. For a man of your  
age shold rather dye than he shold  
doo any treason. Good freend ye say  
well sayd Aymon, and I shall sados  
that I shal not be blamed, and than  
he cailed tƿo of his knyghtes, and  
sayd to them. Go toward Reynawde  
and his bretheren and defre them in  
my behalfe. Syr sayd the knyghtes  
it is a harde thinge for to be doone,  
but sythe it please you: We shall doo  
as ye haue commaunded, & than thei  
wente to Warde Reynawde that was  
soone abasshed, for he knew wel that  
they were of his fathere's folke, wher-  
of he was full sooy for it. And after  
he sayd unto his bretherne. Lordes  
now arme your selfe. For a man þt  
is well garnysshed is not oflyghte  
ouerþro wen, and of the other syde  
I know so muche the hardynes of  
my fathere: that he shall not fynne to  
be fught vs. Brother sayd Richard  
ye law trouth. Thys hangyn: ca-  
me the tƿo knyghtes afore hiw, and  
Whan Reynawde sawe them come  
vyghe hym: he went agaynst them &

said to them. Lordes what be ye: and  
what winde dructh yon hyches: þt  
spake one of the knyghtes, & sayd to  
Reynawde. Syr we ben knyghtes of  
my lordes your fathere that sendeth to  
you by vs a defiaunce. Lordes sayd  
Reynawde I Wyse it well as soone  
as I dyd see you of ferre. But go a-  
gayne & tel to our fathere that it wyll  
please hym to gyue vs crewe for he  
shall not doo wel for to be fught vs  
þt are his naturall chyldre. Syr said  
the knyght of the tolle ye speake, but  
thinke to defende your selues wel,  
for he shall assayle you wout doubt.

**H** ƿd whan they had sayd these  
wordes: they retourned a-  
gayne for to rchere to Aymon theyz  
message, & how they had defyd hys  
childre. Whan the olde Aymon vn-  
deritode them: he made none other  
tacyng but spurrd his horse with  
the spurres, and ranne the formaste  
vpon hys soone. And whan Reynaw-  
de sawe his fathere come: he came a-  
gainst him and said. Ha fathere what  
doo you we haue none so great a foy  
as ye be to vs, and I haue gret mer-  
uayle that ye come alwayes vpon  
vs, ye doo yll & great sinne for to doo  
so. At the leaste þt ye wyll by no Wyse  
helpe vs: be not to vs contrary ne e-  
nemy þt please you. Thou cheele  
said Aymon, ye shal never doo good  
syth that ye begyn to preche. Go to  
the wood so shall ye become wylde  
beastes, cully day gyue you god. For  
ye ben not worth an handful of straw  
Now thyuke to defende your selfe.  
For yf ye bentaken: ye shal be put to  
a great tourmente. Syr sayde Rey-  
nawde

ma vnde ye doo vs wronge. I shal iefende me lych that I mai none other Wyse doo. For yf I shalde let mi selfe to be slaine: mi soule shalde be put to paine and tormente. Whan Aymon saw that: he brought his spere in the rest, and put himselfe among his children, lyke as they had ben straungers. And whan Reynawde saw that: he cryed to hys men, and sayd, heere is none other but doo wel now. Lordes thike to smite wel, for need compelleth vs thereto. And whan he had sayd yworde: he spurred his hysc with his spurres, and put hymself in the thickest. And began to make so great esforges of armes, that all the folke of his father meruayled of ic greatlye. ¶ What shall I say: the batayle began so ferre and so cruelle: that ytie it was to sce. For ye shoulde haue scene greue and receyue great and horrible strokes of the one parce, and of the other, and many knyghtes and horses dye, many sheeldes broken and mani Whyte barneys broken. So manye heades smitten of and so many legges and armes broke and sore hurt. And thinke that this batayle was sore stronge and well holden of the one syde and of the other. But to say the trouth: Reynawde must lose at ytyme. For yhs father had three tymes as many folke as he had. For of syue hundred men that abode with Reynawde after his castel was take whiche were with hym at this bataile: were left on lyue, what herte a sound but fyfty persones. But I tell you well for verye certayne that Reynawde & his brotherne dyd so great

harme to the folke of theyz father: that they slew well halfe of the men that he had. But at ylast Reynawde must lose and flee away to warde the mountaynes, and Aymon chaled hym as well as he could, for he wed well for to haue taken theym. And whan Reynawde saw them self upon the toppe of the mountayne: he sayde vnto his brethern. Let vs not departe frō hence. For this is a good place for to defende. Wyt that there was great scarmyshig and iulkyng made and many a knyght dead and verye sore wounded. And there was slayne vnder Alarde his good horse. And whan that Alarde sawe himselfe a ground: he lepte vpon his feete ryght quickli. And tooke his swerde in his hands and began for to defende well his bones. And whan that Rycharde sawe his brother Alarde a foote: he turned towarde him for to helpe & succour hym, and Aymon and his folke came there for to take him. So began the batayle yet agayne more cruel then it had be afor. And wyt that Alarde shoulde haue been taken there, yf it had not be the noble and worthy knyght Reynawde that came for to helpe him. And whan that he was come there: he smote Bayarde wylch hys Spurres, and wente into the greatest prese. So that he ouerthrew the Duke Aymon his father doun vnto the grounde, and after he sayd vnto hym. Father ye haue pledged my brother Alarde for ye be now set a foote as he is. Then was Aymon very sore angry that he loste almoste his wittes. And

Rey,

### The booke of the four

Reynawde set his hand to his swerde and began for to departe the prese in such a wise that he brought hys brother Alarde out of the prese, and after sayd to hym. Fayre brother lepe behinde me vpon Bayarde. For to abyde here any lenger: it were folye. Whā Alarde vnderstode his brother Reynawde: he was ryght glad for he was so wery þ he myght no more and so he mounted vpon Bayarde behynde his brother Reynawde. And whan Bayarde wylle him self lade wþt two knyghtes: he strenghted hymself so strongly: that it seemed to Reynawde that he was more joyouse and more myght than he had be of al the daye. Now wit it that Reynawde made fourre Joustes vpo his horse Bayarde with hys brother Alarde behinde hym. Wherof he slew fourre knyghtes of the folke of Charlemayne that were come with hys fader Aymon. And all thus Reynawde tooke Alarde out of hys enemies handes Hawgre theyz teeth & bare hymself right worthely þ same day, as here after ye shal now moze playnly vnderstande.

**D**owben the fourre sonnes of Aymon recraunt & almooste wery, but only Reynawde that never was the weker for nothing that he dyd in armes. For as he went: he turned hymself at euerye passe that he made, and rebuked and kept his enemies a backe with his harde strokcs that he gaue to them, so that his folke wente afore hym all at theyz easse and leyser. And whan he sawe that his folke were wel ferre from their

enemyes: he spurred Bayarde and came to his folke (his brother Alarde behinde hym) as lightly as bayarde had be without anye bridell and no saddle vpon him. For this horse was such that he was never wetye, and thus as Reynawde went away: charcam & followed after him Elmenfray þ was one of the mooste worthely knyghtes of Charlemayne & was vpon a horse ryght good and blacke, that Charlemayne had geuen to hym. And whan he was nigh Reynawde he cried to them. So helpe me God glottons ye ben dead or taken sureli I shal brynge you to Charlemayne. And anon wet and smote Reynawde in his sheelde, wherof Reynawde was muche angry, and Reynawde smote him agayne in such a wyse and wþt so great a strength: þ neyther for his sheelde nor for his good armures of steele he was not kepte, but that Reynawde ouerthrew hym sterke dead to the grounde. And whā this knight was dead: Reynawde tooke his horse by þ bridell and sayd to Alard his brother holde fayre brother, light vpon this Blaue horse whiche is good. For I gyue him to you.

**A**nd whan that Alarde sawe the fayre present that his brother Reynawde had doone to hym: he was as glad of the same, as thou ghe he had wonne Parys. And tha he made none other tarienge: but þ he lighted downe from Bayard and mounted vpon Elmenfrays blaue horse that his brother had giue hym & smot him with the spurres & wene and

and Justed agaynst a knyght of his  
fathers folke that was called austrai  
so harde that he ouerthrew him dead  
to therthe. And shorly to speake af-  
ter that Blaerde Was in this wise set  
agayne on horse backe: began the ba-  
tayle of a freshe sore hard and fell, in  
so muche that at that houre Were  
slayne. xx. of the best knyghtes that  
Aymon had with him. Whan Aymon  
saw this: he Was sore angry for it, &  
cryed to hys folke. ha lordes yf they  
scape you I shal neuer haue ioy, for  
they haue slayne Elmenfay y good  
knyght that king Charlemayne had  
givyn to me. Whan the folke of Aymon  
underitode these wordes, & the  
Wyll theyz Lorde: than they dyd ren-  
upon Blaerde so much that thei made  
hem to leue the place by force, and if  
it had not be the passage of a lytle ri-  
uer that easyd and holpe them great  
ly: Reynawde and hys bretheryn had  
muche to doo, but I tell you with-  
out faute that Reynawde and hys  
bretheryn made so great occysyon of  
that folke of theyz father: that it Was  
pitie for to beholde, for therre dyed  
well of them .xxv. at the passage of  
the ryuer. and yf Reynawde had had  
Wytch hym a fyfty knyghtes more thē  
he had at y passage: he shold haue  
dyscomfyted his fathir and all hys  
folke but for faute of me: Reynawde  
myst for sake the place and myght  
not saue with hym but. xiii. knyghtes  
of hys owne. Now we see ho w so-  
towfull was the batayle, for of frue  
hundred knyghtes that Reynawde  
had wytch hym there: abde wytch hym  
alþue byt. xiii. and ye maye wot  
that the olde Aymon had dommas-

geo his children right soze, but that  
they passed ouer the Riuere, for as it  
is sayde they had loste all theyz men  
Wherof they Were full sorys and  
Wrothe.

Now hath Reynawde so fewe fol-  
ke that he wot nomore what to doo,  
but he myght not doo thereto, wherof  
the teres fell downe continually fro  
his eyen, and in lykewyse wept Aymon  
hys fathir at the oþer syde as  
the historye dooth tell, and whan  
he had wept ryough: he sayd in this  
maner.

Ha fayre Sonne prue  
and worthye howe soryc am I: for I  
am the occasyon of your harine and  
douage, now shall ye all goe as ex-  
iled, for ye haue nouȝt to lyue vpon  
& I cannot helpe you by anye wyse,  
wherof I ensure you I am greate ly  
displeased and soryc for it. The devyl  
take his soule that fyrt becā y strike  
& so shal he. whan he had made hys  
mone and lamētacions longe y nouȝhe:  
he made incōtinent all the dead  
bodyes to be taken for to be buryed.  
And thay that Were huttie: he made  
to be brought wþth hym as well as  
he coulde, And made the bodi of El-  
menfay to be pus vpon a litter, and  
tooke on his way towarde Ardeyne  
Wher he bode but a night, and in y  
mornynge he made the litter to be boz-  
ne vpon two horses & went agayne  
to Paris and came afore Charle-  
mayne and sayd to hym. Sir Whan  
I went now last towarde my coun-  
try, wyt that as I was on my way,  
I founde my children, and fyue hun-  
dred knyghtes wytch them in the fo-  
rest of Ardeyne, & for thacquiance  
of myn oþer: I dyd scud to them in-

The booke of the four

disfaunce, & wolde haue taken them  
for to haue brought them to you as  
prisoners, but I myght not, for they  
be sore doubted. And þ I assailed the  
it hath cost me sore dete, for they haue  
borne unto me so great harme and  
domage that it can not be esteemed,  
and I leual theyz folke excepte. xii  
persones that ben escaped with them  
but they haue slayn rount knyght Es-  
menstray, but at the last they went a  
way discomfited and ouerthowden.  
And they shold haue ben taken yf it  
had not be a ryuer that they passed o-  
uer, wherby they were sauied. Whan  
Charlemayne vnderstode these wor-  
des: he was ryght sore an angred, so  
miche þ he loste almost his Wyte.  
And than he sayd to olde Aymon in  
angre, by God Aymoþ ye excuse your  
selfe fally, for neuer Rauen eate his  
yonge byrdes, to a nother ye shall  
make thyg to beleue but not to me.  
Whan þ olde Aymon vnderstode the  
kynge that he spake thus: he sayd to  
hym. Syr Emperour wit that I doo  
tell you is crouth, and I doo shewe  
it to the ende that my trouthe be kno-  
we, & for none other cause, doo bring  
afore me your reliques and halowes  
that I shall stiere vpon the sayntes  
that ben in heauen, that it was as I  
haue recounted & sayd to you, and  
yf it please you ye shall beleue me, &  
yf ye wyll not: ye may chuse therof.  
Aymon sayd Charlemayne I know  
well your herte, for yf it went all at  
your wil, your sonnes shold be lo-  
des of all Fraunce, and of all my em-  
pere. Syr sayd Aymon ye be wrothe  
of some other thyng, wherof I may  
not doo thereto, & yf ye haue any kni-

ght in your courte þ wyl make good  
this that it please you for to saye: I  
shall prove it on hym wth my body  
that he lyeth falsely. But euermore  
ye haue be such that ye never loued  
a true knyght, but flateres and liers  
wherof mani euilles ben happed and  
shall happe. And than Aymon came  
downe from the Palays, and lygh-  
ted vpon hys horse and went agayn  
to his countrey without any leaue  
that he tooke of the kynge, & he rode  
so longe a day after another that he  
came to Ardcine, and there he found  
the Duchesse his Wyfe, that came a-  
gaynt hym, and receyued hym with  
a glad chere, and asked hym, howe  
he had doone.

**T**han sayde the duke Aymon, ful  
euyll haue I doone. For I souþ  
my fourre sonnes in the Wood  
of Iedeyne, & so I assayled them cru-  
elly wenyng to me for to haue take  
them, whiche I coulde not doo, but I  
slewe & discomfited all theyz folke, &  
they haue doone me so great harme  
of my folke, and so many they haue  
slayne of them: that I know not the  
nombre. And I tell you for very cer-  
tayne, but yf it had ben the prowes &  
great wo:thynes of our sonne Rey-  
nawde: I had taken Alarde, for my  
men had slayne his horse, and had  
brought hym so lowe that he myght  
no more goe, but Reynawde his bro-  
ther came vpon vs and brake vs so  
sore that he brought Alarde out of þ  
prese, ma wgre vs and oure folke, &  
made hym lyt behinde hym vpon  
Bayarde. And I tell you that Rey-  
nawde fought so sore that never lond

nor no boze fought so stedgely against anye other beast, as he dyd syghe against our men, at euery pace that he made for warde: he turned himself agaynst vs with blarde behinde him that made vs so greatly abashed y. Wee might not beate nor abyde his great strokis, & at this turning that he thus made: he slew Elmentraye a knight of Charlemayne, which he loued muche, and whan he had slain hym: he tooke his horse & gaue him to blarde, & made him to goe downe fro Bayarde, and lighted anon vpō the horse of Elmentray. And thus they went from vs wylde we or not. And I wente agayne to Bayrys to Charlemayne, and shewed to hym how the thyngis was come, and how Elmentray was slayne, wherof I tro wed not to haue had blame, but he blamed me ryght greatly for it, but sith y he is my heauylorde with out a lawfull cause: I shall make hi wrothe and sooyt a oze syx monethes come at an ende.

**Y** Chaue doone euyll sayd y la-  
dy, that ye haue thus soze dom-  
aged our chyldren, ye shold defed  
them agaynst all men, and ye doo to  
them the worse that ye can, be they  
not your sonnes naturell comen of  
your owne fleshee. For sooth the my-  
lorde, ye ought wel to bear your self  
better to warde them than ye doo, for  
neuer so ryche a bourdeyne was boze  
in the wombe of a lady, blessed be y  
houre that they were begotten & nou-  
rished, & so helpe me god my Lorde,  
as I wolde that your chyldren and

myne had taken you prisoner, to the  
ende that ye shousd yelde to them a-  
gayne al that they haue loste by you,  
and I thanke god right hyghly that  
Charlemayne is wrothe Wyth you,  
For euyl to doo may no good come  
of, ye assayled your chyldren agaynst  
god, and agaynst ryghtwysnes, and  
y harme is come to you therfore:  
thanked be God. Than sayd Aymon  
Lady ye say me right, for I haue doo-  
ne great wronge, and I promytte  
you that I neuer dyd thinge wherof  
I repent me so sore as I doo of this.  
But trusste I shall keep me another  
time to doo them an harme. But  
heere leaueth the history to speake of  
Charlemayne and of y Duke Aymon  
& of y duchesse his wif: & returneth  
to speake of reynawd and of his bre-  
thern y are in the woddes of Ardeyn.

**C**how after that the olde Aymon  
had discouerted his chyldren they went  
and dwellicd in the depeste of the fo-  
rest of Ardeyn so longe that they  
were all cosyrefayte blacke & rough  
as beastes, for the great hungry that  
they had endurid. After they wente  
to Ardeyn to see theyz mother that  
sealed & chered them greatly, & gaue  
to them so great good that they my-  
ght well entreyne themselfe and  
theyz estate ther upon agaynst Char-  
lemayne. And how Bayrys theyz  
colin arrived whan they woldes de-  
parte, whiche went Wyth them into  
the Realme of Gascony Wyth syue  
hundred knyghtes. And of the sorow  
that theyz lady mother made at theyz  
departinge.

Capitulum.iii.



**H**is party the tale saith,  
After that Reynawde had  
slayne Elmenstap and giue  
his horse to his brother Bayarde: they passed ouer the ryuer and  
Went into the forest of Ardeyn soye  
deep in it, by cause they wolde not be  
aperceyued. And whan they hadde ben  
there a lytie whyle: they begā to keep  
the waycs, & all they that came for  
by them and that bare any wytayles  
they were distressed by them and ther  
of they liued, for they durst not goe  
to no towne nor to no castelles for  
to bre anye wytayles, and ther  
fore they suffred great need & greate  
dysease, for they had nother meate  
nor drynake, but water. For the most  
parte they eate fleshe without anye  
brede. And knowe that for cause of

thys great suffraunce þ they endured  
thus, & also of the great colde þ they  
had, for by cause of the snowes that  
were there: they folke began to dr.  
And abode nomo line but Reynawd  
and his brethern. And thys was be-  
cause of the great strenght that was  
in theyr bodies. For no traualy mi-  
ght not hinder them. And wit þ they  
had but eche of them fourre an horse  
that is to wit Bayarde and the thre  
other, but they haue nother Dres  
nor other Lorne for to gyue theym,  
but they eat only such as they might  
fynde in the forest of rootes and lea-  
nes. And for this cause: theyr horses  
were so leane that with peyne might  
they stande, saue Bayarde that was  
fatte and in good plight, for he could  
bette feede and lyue w rootes, than

the

the other shoulde haue doen with hem  
endoces. And wryt it well that the  
fourte sonnes of Aymer syued ther  
this lise so longe that every man that  
passed therre as they were and kepte  
them selfe, escaped not, but he was  
other slayne or distresed of suche by-  
catties as he had, so that all the coun-  
tre aboue hem was soye wasted by  
them that it was meruail. And at  
the laste the fourte knyghtes were so  
soye apayzed, i haue they that had seene  
them aforne: shoulde not haue knownen  
them, for their hanrys was all rusty  
and their saddleys and byrdelles all  
corren, so that they had made their ret-  
unes with corren. And them self were  
become all blacke. And it was no  
meruail, for they weare alwayes  
theire cote of mayis all roulye upon  
theire doublettes, and hadde nother  
herte nor jacket but they were all  
corren. What haue I tel you more  
and wryt that Reynawd was deuced  
and seared soye that it was meruail.  
For nigh therre as Reynawd hauced:  
was no man that durst abide therre,  
but onely wryt him the forresses. For  
whan Reynawd was mounted vpon  
Bayarde, and his thre brethren vpon  
on thir other thre horses: all thir  
rychesse and power was with them,  
and yet they wasted and destroyed all  
the countre all about them. And so  
the fourte poore knyghtes were soye  
distigured, chas who someruer had  
seene them: shoulde not haue knownen  
them. For they were as roughe as  
horses that been famyshed and were  
ryght soye lene that every hode had  
of it pyte.

**A**nd whan Reynawd sa we  
himselfe so porely arrayed: he  
called to him his brethern and sayde,  
Lordes I meruayle my selfe muche  
that we take not some good counsell  
what we haue to doo, and me semeth  
that we ben becomyd, & that slouthe  
is amonge vs. For yf we were such  
as I rowed: we shoulde not suffre  
the martidome that we endure and  
that we haue endured so longe a goe,  
no we know I that we ben but yrel  
worsh to haue let resle oure enemys  
as we haue. But one thing I consi-  
der, we haue but fewe horses & armes  
barneis, & no money at al and yet we  
ben in such a pligh that we ben more  
like beastes than folke. So praye I  
you all in generall that ye wil tell me  
what we ought to doo for the best, for  
I tel you for very certaine that I had  
muche leuer die as a knyght than fy  
to die here for hunge & for dyspleasur.

**A**nd whan Alarde hearde Reyn-  
awde speake thus: he sayde,  
brother so helpe me god. It is longe  
sith I dorde take heede to that ye sayd  
now, but I feared me full soye to tellis  
you therof lest ye wolde haue be tyd  
pleased with me for it, but sith that ye  
haue opened the wordes, yf ye wyl  
believe me: I shal gyue you good cou-  
sely as me semeth. Sir we haue sus-  
tained grete poueris a longe tyme  
& we may not goe into no countre but  
we shall be take, for as ye knowe all  
the barons of braunce, & namely oure  
father, & al our knyghtes haereth vs  
deadlye, and if ye wyl belieue me: we  
shall goe streight to Ardeine towrad

## The booke of the soure

out mother, for she shall not sayle vs  
and ther we shall sorourne a lytell.  
And whan we shall haue sorouied:  
we shal take with vs some company  
and ihall goe serue some great lordes,  
where we shall get some good, for ye  
be not such a man but thacy shal yet  
ones haue great plenti of goodes, for  
I know no man in erthe that of wors-  
chynes & of stenghe maye compare  
to you. Brother said Reynawde ye  
saye well and wylsely, and I promy  
you I ihal doo so. Whan the two other  
knightes hearde the conseil þ Alarde  
• their brother had gyue to Reynawde:  
they began to saye. Brother Alarde  
we know wel that ye gyue good cou-  
selli to our brother Reynawde. Thau  
sayd Reynawde. Sith that this cou-  
selli semeth to you good: we shall doo  
it to nighte, so muche abode the fourre  
sonnes of Iymon that the nyghe ca-  
me, and whan it was come: they ligh-  
ted on horsebacke and put theimselfe  
to the way so well clothed and arm'd  
as I haue tolde you aboue and in su-  
che wise that their flesh was seen na-  
ked in manye places of their bodies.  
And so longe they rode by nyght and  
by daye that they came there as they  
were borne that was nigh the citie of  
Ardeyn, and whan they were sough  
the citie that they myghte well see it:  
they looked vpon it, and they remem-  
bered the greate ryches wherfor they  
were cast and banysched, and of the  
greate pouertye that they had suffred  
longe. And as they approched nyghe  
the cyrke. Reynawde sayde to his  
brethren we haue doone euyl that we  
haue not taken suretie of oure fader,  
for ye knowe well that he is so

cruell that yf he may take vs: he shal  
yeelde vs prisoners to Charlemain.  
Brother saide Rychard, ye saye well  
but my herte gyueth me not that oure  
fader wolde doo as ye haue said, and  
he so dyd: yet haue I leuer die afore  
Ardeyne: than for greate dyscase and  
hungre in the forrest, let vs ryde sure-  
ly, for I telle you that no bodye shall  
know vs. And of other parte if we  
can see oure leet within Ardeyne: we  
shal be safe ynough, for we be wel bei-  
loued, and my ladi our mother shold  
neuer suffre that men shoulde doo to  
vs any hertine nedyspleasure.

**C**hretes fayre brother saide Rey-  
nawde, ye haue sayde ryght wel  
and wisely, and muche ye haue recom-  
mende me. Nowe let vs ryde in a good  
houre. And whan he had sayd these  
wordes: they entred soone after with  
in Ardeyne, and they rode thorough  
the maystres streeke that they were  
not knownen of no bodye, & they were  
streyght to the castel without any ta-  
ryng. And wye that whan they pas-  
sed thorough the streeke: the folke  
that behelde them, meruyld muche  
of them, for they wylste not what fol-  
ke they were, and sayd the one to the  
other, see what folke ben these. I  
trowe that they ben not of oure lawe  
nor of our beleue. Than they asked  
theryn, what ben ye lordes that are so  
countrafaire, are ye Paynemes, or of  
what countrey ben ye: Byrs au-  
ted Reynawde ye enquire ouer much  
see ye not what folke we been. And  
whan they were come to the palayes  
they lyghted downe a foot, and too-  
ke their horses to keep to their kni-  
ghthes

ghtes that were come of late in their felawship, and thā the fourre br̄thern wente vp to the halle, and met with no body. For the olde Aymon theyz fath̄er was a hawkyng vpon the riuer, & the duchesse their mother was in her chamb̄re, where she was continually penyful and sor̄y because þ she might not heare no tidinges of her childre. Whan þ fourre br̄thern were entred Wythin the halle: they founde no man to whom they shoulde speake, Wherof they were soze meruayled and they set themself downe, the one heare, and the other there, & abode th̄ a longe whyle that no boþy came there. And whan they had taried longe ymough: than came the duchesse theyz mother out of her chamb̄re, and she looked a longe the hall, where she saw her sonnes thus counterfayte whiche she knew not but meruayled herself greatly what folke they were. And whan Alar de la Wy hys lady mother come: he said to his brother Reynawde and to his other br̄thern, þðer is our mother that we soze desp̄zed for to see, let vs goe agaynþ her yf it please you, and tell her our great penurye and oure need. Brother sayd Reynawde we shall doo so, but we shall tary tyl she speake to vs or not, and thus taried the fourre br̄thern tyl that theyz mother was come to them. And whan she sawe them so blacke & so hidous, & principally Reynawde þ was so great & so rough: she tooke so greate feare of them that she Wolde haue gone agayn into her chamb̄re, but apon she assured herself & said to the, God saue you Lordes. What be you

or of what naþyon: are ye christen or payntimes, or folke þ dooth penaþce wyll yee not haue some almesse or some cloþyng for to couer your boþd̄ with: for I see ye haue great need of it, and þþe Wyll haue it for goddes sake I shall giue it you gladlye, to thende he haue mercy on my chylðren, and that he Wyll keep them fr̄o ylle combraunce and fr̄o peril, for it is welþeuþ yeres that I did not see them. And whan the Duchesse had sayd this: she tooke so great p̄tie to rememb̄ze her chylðren that she begā to weepe soze tenderlye. And whan she had wept a longe whyle: she sayd soþygh that her chylðren vnderstode it. Ha good god whan shall the daye come that I shall see my chylðren: Was good lord how sayne wolde I see them. Was there euer Ladye that bare so riche a bourden as I haue, and that were of it so discomforþed as I am:

**A**nd whan Reynawde sawe his lady mother so soze wþful & sor̄y: he had of it great p̄tie, and the teres began to come at his eyen, & Wolde dysconer himselfe. But whā the duchesse behelde well his visage and his behauour, and maner: her bloud ranne vp to her face, and heuered within her body, and began to shake full fast, so that aþmost she fel downe in a þwoun to the erth and was a greate whyle that she myght not speake her hert was so close and so soze p̄ssled, & all her coloure lost and gone, and whan she was come agayne to her selfe: she dyd caste her syght agayne vpon Reynawde, and

G.ii. knew

The booke of the four

knew hym ryght well by a wounde  
that he had in his face, whiche was  
doone to hym of a fall, whan he  
was in his tender age. Tha she said  
to hi as glad as any mother may be,  
Reynawde my sonne, whose peice  
is not among al the knyghtes of the  
Worlde. Howe see I you so soze ap-  
payzed and chaunged? Where is gon  
your great beaultie? why my sonne  
dooye hide you towardeme, y loued  
you more than my selfe? And while  
that she said these wordes: she looked  
about her, and knew her children, &  
anon she went towardem them wþth  
her armes spred abrode, for to colle  
and kisse theym soze weepynge for  
great pitie that they were so soze a-  
payzed of theyz beaultie, and so long  
she kissed one and than another: that  
at last she fel downe in a swoune.  
And Reynawde tooke her by her armes,  
wher she abode a good while  
and Reynawde & his brethern cas-  
sed not from weeping, for great pitie  
that they had of theyz mother.

**A**nd whan the duchesse was  
come agayne to hir selfe: she  
tooke her children & made them sitte  
downe by her, and sayd to them how  
is it that I see you thus poore & dys-  
figured? why is it that ye haue with  
you no knyghtes nor none other com-  
panye? where haue ye ben that haue  
endured so gret pouertie, and so  
gret disease? whan þ duchesse spake  
thus to her chyldren she dyd weepe  
all soze tenderly, and loundred all  
entres, holdynge her sonne Rey-

na wþ betwene her armes, and kissed  
hem sweetly. Lady sayd Reynawde  
we haue with vs but thre kny-  
ghtes that keep our horses yoder with-  
out. For our fader hath slayne all  
our knyghtes, & all our folke. And  
also he shoud haue slayne vs yf it  
had not be our lord þ kept vs ther-  
to through his pitie & mercy. Soze  
had patiance dyd he shew to vs  
our naturall fader. Whan the Du-  
chesse vnderstoode these wordes: she  
was ryght sozy for it. And called to  
her one of her seruantes and saide  
to hym. Goe and make my sonnes  
horses to be had into a good stable,  
and that they ben well tended. And  
þryng he hir þ thre knyghtes, that  
keep the horses without, for I wyl  
see them. Madame sayde her squyer  
it shal be doone incontinent. And  
then he went to the thre knyghtes  
and sayd to them, that the duchesse  
wolde see them. Whyche incontinent  
dyd as the ladye had commaunded,  
and came to the Palays wher as  
Reynawde taryed for them. Lordes  
said the duchesse to them, ye be right  
welcome. Madame sayd the kny-  
ghtes God gyue you good life & longe  
and Joye of your chyldren. For they  
ben the best and the mooste worthye  
knyghtes of all the Worlde. Thys  
hangynge: came ther a reman, that  
sayd to the duchesse. Madame, yf it  
please you to sit at þ table: þ meat is  
redy. Tha the lady tooke Reynawde  
and the other with her, & lede thens  
to dinner and made them sit downe  
all afoze her, and theyz thre knyghtes

tes at the lefft side of her. There made good cheare the tourc sonnes of Aymon, and ate at theire case & at theire owne wyll. For it was longe syth þ they had ony good mele, wher they myghte take theire naturall food at theire case. And as they were at the table: Thenne came theiȝ father Aymon from hawkynge and hunteynge whiche had taken tourte harts and two wylde bores, and dryuerse pertyches and fesauntes. Whan Aymon sa we them: he kne we them not and he sayd unto the duchesse. Lady what are these folke that ben thus couterfeiȝ: whan the duchesse vnder stode her husbande she was sore a gaste, and began for to weep and sayde. Syz these ben your chyldren and myne, that ye haue traauaylled so moche, and sore hunted as wylde beastes. The whiche haue dwelled so longe tyme in the forreste of Ardeyne wherc as they haue ben soze tourned as ye now may see. Now are they come unto me by cause I am ryghte glad whan I see theyai. For to you they ben not come. For they knowe well that ye loue them not. But I praye you for god that for the lone of me ye wyl lode them this night. For they shall depeare to morow erlye, & I wot not yf euer I shall see them. wherfore of this I beseeche you ryght humbly,

**T**han whan Aymon vnder stode these wordes: he shooke al for anger, and tourned hym selfe toward his sonnes, and madero them cuill cheare and said to them. Glotōs goddes curse haue you, for ye ben not

worthe a strawe. For ye haue nother forse nor money, nor no prisoner þ might pay to you a great hanoyze. Father sayd Reynawde by the sayth that I owe to you, if your lande is in peace, the other ben not so. For ye might goe syxe score miles that ye should not finde nother riche man nor poore, but that they keepe theire sciuies within forrestes and in castellies. But ye doo great wronge for to doo vs the wort that ye can, ye cooke syȝt from vs our god Castell of Mountaynforde. And after þ ye had assayled vs in þ wood of ardeyne, and slew all our folke so that of syue hundred knyghtes that I had ye left a lyue with me but enleuyn, wherof. viii. ben dead, and these. iii. that ye see herre at abyde a lyue, now beholde well father, and thynke how ye haue your selfe to warde vs. But syȝt it is thus that ye ought to vs no good Wyll, and that ye may not see vs: Make vs the heade to be surnam of, and so shall you be beloued of Charlemayne, and hated of god, and of all men.

**H**ad whan þ olde Aymon vnder stode Reynawde th<sup>o</sup> spcke he kne we well he sayde trouth, and began to syght soze at his herre, and then he sayd to hys chyldren. My schaunt your lidernes, & slouth hath overcome you. Ye were truer my childeyne: for þ þ were such as me wene: ye shold not haue suffred the great pouertie that ye haue endurcd so longe. But ye shold haue gone wiþ your enemies, for to maintein your self honestly, & make good G. iii. Warre

The booke of the four

Warre to Charlemayne through all  
hys lande. But ye are become my-  
chaunt, & therfore I tell you that ye  
get nethyng of me. Now the boyde  
out soone of my Palaye, and goe  
begge whiche ye wyl at a nother place  
S. I sayd Reynawde ye say that an  
eyll and an vnkynde fater ought  
to saye. For I tell you for very cer-  
tain that we haue slayne so manye  
theues and brygauntes: that I can  
not numore the an, wherof I fele my  
selfe in great synne. But for god we  
requyre you that ye wyl heipe vs  
to recouer our lades of Charlemayn  
and ye ye wyl not doo so: gyue to  
vs of your godes, and we shall goe  
farrre from you. I wyl not sayd Iy-  
mon. fater sayd Reynawde here I  
se well your eyll wyl. I and my  
brethren haue doone so muche, þ we  
ben comen into your place, that we  
should fare the better for it, but I see  
Wel ye wyl eas vs therfore to great  
astarc. And I swere to you by the  
saych that I wile to my Lady mo-  
ther that yf I maste nedes departe  
from you in such a manre: ye shall  
adye it full deere, þ ye caste vs thus  
out of your lande, for I haue leuec-  
die here by you, þa to die for hūg. c.  
Sith that it may be none otherwile.

**T**han whan Reynawde sawe  
that his fater was so hard-  
herted against him and his brethren:  
he werede þ for angre, and began to  
chauge colour, & drewe hys swerde  
halfe out of his herche. And whan  
Iymon saw hys brother Reynawde  
chauge colour: he kne we well that  
he was wrothe, so canne he & called

hym savenge. Ha farrre brother, for  
goddes loue angre not your selfe so  
sore to our fater for he is our lorde  
and therfore whether it is right or  
wronge he may say to vs as it plea-  
seth hym, and we ought to doo hys  
commaundement. And if he is cruel  
towarde vs: we ouȝt to be humbly  
& pleasaunt to warde hym. So keep  
your selfe for goddes loue that ye  
see not hande vpon him. So, it were  
agaynst the commaundement of god  
brother sayd Reynawde it lacketh but  
lytle that I were mad al quiche wha  
I see afor me him that shoulde helpe  
vs, defende & loue vs as his childre  
& gyue vs his good counsell to vs,  
and towarde all men: And he dooth  
all contrary the same. He lai made  
peace wþh Charlemayne for to dys-  
troye and vndoo vs. I saw never so  
cruel a man agayn his sonnes, for  
he chaseth vs a waye from him full  
shamfulli, as though we were litau-  
ges or sarasyns. I shoulde not can-  
teil the harme & g. eat hurte that he  
hath doone to vs, nor the greare po-  
uerie that we haue suffred for hym.  
I wold never haue doone so to him  
for rather I wold haue let me ben  
slayne all quicke. But a yf I caue  
go from hens: I certifie you that I  
shall angre him, and shal so wast his  
laude that it shall doo him but lytle  
profite so that it shall be spoken of  
perpetually.

**H**an whan Iymon herad Rey-  
nawde speake thus: his herie  
wred softe abegan to weape ful sore  
& sayd. Ha godhow I am sorȝ þ I  
may not enjoy the good þ godhaty  
gyuen

gyuen to me largely, there shold be no man in the worlde so happy as I were, yt my chidren had theyr peace with kinge Charlemayne. For I am sure that the kinge Priamus of Troy had neuer better wroght to his chidren nor more balyaut ne pru, thā I haue. Hā euyll heire thou sholdest not haue heed to none other agaynt thy chidren, but sholdest helpe them & keep them agaynt al me, wherfore I ought wel to hate thec: euyll heire thou hast made me hate þ I ought to loue as myne owne seife: & whan he had thus spoken to hym seife: he sayd to Reynawde. Fayre sonne ye are right wroght & sage: for icuer Hector of Troy was wroght you, nor in al the world is not rounde your marche. And therfore I oug̃t well to doo your Wyll. Whan the duke Aymon had sayd this wordc: he spake to his Wyfe the duchesse & sayd, lady I go yonder with out, for I Wyll not be forsworne agaynst the kyng Charlemayne: ye haue Wythyn golde & siluer ynough, & many horses & muche harness, palfreyes & sommers. Now giue to my chidren all that they wyl take. And whan he sayd thus: he tooke hys me with him, & went his Waye.

**T**han sayd Reynawde we oug̃te to tanke you muche of that ye haue now sayd, and we shall go hence to morrow erly with goddes grace: to the ende þ ye be not euyll at ease, and if it please you we shall abyde for this night for to comforte our mother, þ bath be so ill at ease for the loue of vs. And I promy whole we shold no haue come

yet, but it had be for her sake, Reynawde fayre sonne sayd þ duke ye are full of great witte. Wit that whan Berthelot was dead I durst not shewe me afore the king Charlemayne: bycause he sayde he had icuer haue loste the halfe of his Realme, & thretened me for to hange or breyne and distroye all my lades, and I dyd so muche by the counsell of my frenches that I made mine apoyntment and that I was out of al blaine. And ye haue not considered the othes þ Charlemayne made me doo against you, as agaynst all other þ heide w̃ you, and I am sōze dyspleased of þ I fōud you in þ woodes of Ardeyne as I did. But I was forced of mine honour to doo as I dyd for to be in peace with kyng Charlemayne, your mother hath not forsworne you, and therfore she may giue you of our goddes at your Wyll. And whan þ duke had sayd these wordes: he yllued out of his palay, & went to the wood.

**A**fter whan the free duchesse heared that, that the duke Aymon gaue her leue for to doo w̃ hys goddes at her Wyll: he called her chidren and sayde to theym. Fayre chidren now be you sute that sythe your father is not within ye shal be well tended vpon, and shal haue al the chere that I can doo to you. And thā she did doo make þ baynes redy & made them all to bayne honestly, & Wyth þ in theyr bayne were manye a swete herbe, & whan they were well clene: the good lady made byng linnen and other clothes for to chaunge, and to eche of them a mantel of fine scarlet

The booke of the four

scarlet furred with hermyng, & whā  
she had them well aparelled: she led  
them in a chambrie where theyr fa-  
ther's treasour was and shewed it to  
her children, whan Reynawde saw so  
riche a treasour: he began to laughe  
and said lady mother gramercy of so  
fayre a gift as here is. For it misre-  
th me well, and thā he tooke of that  
treasour at his Wyll. And inconty-  
nent he sent messangers through al  
the countrey for to get hym souldy-  
ours of the best men of warre, wher-  
of many one came gladly to him, the  
which Reynawde payed for an whole  
pere. What shall I tell you mox:  
Reynawde and his brethern lay that  
nyght within the Castel of their said  
father. And the next mornynge after  
or it was day they departed and had  
with them syue hundred men well  
horsed and well arrayed. And whan  
Reynawde & his brethern had take  
leue of theyr lady mother þ duchesse  
she sayd to them fayre sonnes I wil  
that ye drawe towarde Spayne, for  
it is a plentious countrey. And as  
they wold haue departed: than cam  
Mawgys theyr cosyn, that came  
out of Fraunce, where he had ben  
longe tyme,

**A**fter whan Mawgys was  
lighted from hys horse: he rā  
to Reynawde, his armes spred abro-  
de, & began to kisse him, & whan he  
had so done: he kissed his other three  
brethern, & than he sayd to them. Ha  
fayre cosyns I am ryght glad to see  
you, & thanked be our Lorde that he  
hath brought me into this coste. Co-  
syn sayd Reynawde Where haue you

ben so longe þ we had never syd-  
ges of you. Cosyn sayd Mawgys I  
come from the great Litie of Paris  
where I haue stolen three hōsles la-  
ben with golde, & here they ben, the  
whiche Charlemayne wende for to  
haue hid well, & I gyue you the hale  
of it for I might not bestowe the bet-  
ter than to you. Cosyn sayd Reynawde  
god thanke you. And whā he had  
sayd: so he went out of Ardeyne with  
his bretherne & his folke, & soond his  
father þ came fro the Wood, & whan  
Reynawde saw his fathur: he made  
him reverence & bowed hymself to  
hym, & Symon sayde to them, fayre  
sonnes nowben ye well garnysched  
& honestly arrayed. I praye you that  
ye doo so in Fraunce, that men speke  
of your prowes, & ye my other chyl-  
dren. I commaunde you that ye obey  
Reynawde and keep hym aboue all  
thing, for as longe as he shal lyue ye  
ought not to be aferde of no harme.

**T**han sayd Garde, syz we shal  
doo your comandement, and  
we pray you for gods loue, þ ye will  
be euermore our good fathur. I wyll  
be somy children sayd Symon, & thā  
Reynawde tooke leue of his fathur &  
of his mother þ conueyed them out  
of the towne. But the good lady fel  
downe in a swoone whā she saw  
parte her children. And all the towne  
began to make such a sorow: for at it  
was great picie, and Reynawde and  
his bretherne went on theyr waye.  
And whā þ duchesse came to her self  
and saw her children departe: She  
began to say. Ha poore heire myne,  
why bryakest not thou, alas if I had  
dyed

dyed longe a goe my soule were  
the bter at eale. I am not a  
mother but a stepmother. Alas I se  
my ryche burden go to exile, and yet  
I cannot withhold them nor helpe  
them that they abyde with me, thus  
as the Duchelle made her mone to  
her women: Aymon came and cooke  
her betwene hys acnes and recom-  
forted her and layd vnto her. Ladpe  
dyscomforst not your self so muche,  
for my hert giueth me that we shall  
yet see them in great prosperiti and  
honour and gret Joy and gladnes  
ye shall once haue of them in shorte  
tyme. Shorlye to speake: the good  
Aymon recomforted so muche the  
Duchelle that she lef her soow &  
went agayne to the palay with the  
duke Aymon. I leue heare to speake

of the duke Aymon and of þ duchess  
hys wylle: and returme to speake of  
Reynawde and of his brether.

¶ How after that Reynawd his bre-  
ther and his cosyn Hawgys were  
departed out of Dozdene fro theyz  
mother for to seeke their aduentur: they  
rode so longe that they came into  
the Realme of Gascoyne. ¶ And  
how by the waye they made greate  
harne to the Realme of Fraunce.  
And how the kynge of Gascoyne re-  
tayned them in his servys.

¶ Capitulum. v.



The booke of the foyre

**R**ow sayth the tale that after  
that Reynawde, Barde, Gui  
charde & Richarde, and Hawgys  
their cosyn were issued out of Ardei  
With all theyz fela wchyp, that was  
wel of. vi. hundred men, well moun-  
ted & arayed: they passed thorough  
Byfheuse and wasted all Fraunce,  
and passed through the countre of  
Gaslynoys, & so forth to Orlaunce  
where they went ouer the riuere of  
Loire, and wasted all the lande vnto  
Poyters. And whan they were  
come to Poyters: they hearde tido-  
ges that the kynge Pon of Gascoyn  
that was a puissant prynce was as-  
sayled of the Sarasyns. And whan  
Hawgys heard these wordes: he ca-  
to Reynawde & sayd to him. Colin  
the kynge Pon of Gascoyne is a  
prynce of great renome and of great  
power go we to hym and serue hym  
and suche seruyce we shall mowdo do  
to hym: that Charlemayne shall not  
mowhynder vs by no wayes. Colin  
sayd Reynawde let vs than go there  
syn that it semeth to you good, and  
wha they were here to accorded they  
ooke theyz waye towarde Gascoyn  
and rode so longe by their iourneys  
that they came to Burdeus a fayre  
titi, where they foud king & on with  
a great company of knyghtes, and  
whan they were dwyne from theyz  
horses: Reynawde sayd to his folke,  
go we londge vs. Colyn sayde Haw-  
gys we shall not doo so, but we shall  
speake streight with king Pon, & yf  
he reteyneth vs: in a good house be it  
& yf he not doo so: we shal serue bo-  
gyns the sarasin, whiche is ryght  
pueg sage, & hath al redy conques-  
ted

almoste all the lande of kyng Pon,  
as Tholouse, Montpeiller, Lictary  
& saynt Gyle, Tarascon, & Arles, &  
yf we sayle heere: we shall not sayle  
there. Colyn sayd Reynawde ye spe-  
ke well and wylly, & we shall dos  
as ye haue sayd. And thā Reynawde  
tooke with him. L. knyghtes & hys  
thre brethren & Hawgys, and tooke  
of his armes and cloched hymselfe  
honestly and rychely, and whan he  
was well arayed: he went to þ king  
Pons court vpon a litle nagge, and  
whan he rode thorough Burdeus:  
all the people ran for to see hym, be-  
cause he was so great & so wel made  
and so fayre with all, and also hys  
thre brethren, but they were not al  
even so great. And whan they were  
come to the gate of the kynge place  
Reynawde light on foote, & went vp  
to þ Palays, and founde þ king at þ  
counsell. And whan the stewarte  
saw Reynawde so fayre a man and  
so goodly, and so many folke wþ  
hym: he came him agaynst and sayd  
to hym. My lordye ye be right welcō.  
And Reynawde answere to him  
god giue you good aventure. Howe-  
tel and please you whare is þ kyng?  
My lordye sayd the stewarte, the king  
holdeth no wþ his counsell, for Bour-  
gong the sarasin is entred in his lād  
and hath doone to hym great harme  
and dommage. For he hath brent  
townes and castelles abbeyes, hos-  
pitalles, Churches, and al other mo-  
nasteries, and now he is parforce  
within Tholouse with a great puish-  
faunce. Certes sayde Reynawde.  
This Bourgong is of great power  
as me semeth and after that menne  
saven.

layen. Thus as Reynawd & the sta-  
ard spake togither: came king yō out  
of the couſeil chamb're, & whan Rey-  
nawd saw him: he tooke his brether  
& his cosyn Mawgis with him & went  
ayenſt the king, whiche Reynawd sa-  
lued right humbly & said to him. Sir  
I am come to you fro a ferre londe w  
me threē brethern & my cosyn that ye  
ſee heere for to doo you ſeruise & oure  
folke if it please you, & We ſhal ſeruie  
you in ſuch a maner, þ We will haue  
nothiſg of you, but & our ſeruise be a  
greaſable vnto you: ye ſhal promife me  
as a king if it be your pleasure, that  
ye ſhal be my warraunt & help ayenſt  
al other, good freend ſaid þ king you  
ye be righe welcome to me, & Where  
ye ſaye ye be come for to ſerue me: I  
chanke you for it with al my hert, but  
I will firſt know what folke ye ben,  
for ye might be ſuch that I ſhould de-  
fende you, or that I ſhoulde be your  
emy. þ ſaid Reynawd ſich that it  
please you to know what we ben: I  
ſhall tellit to you, wyt that my na-  
me is Reynawd & am ſonne eldeſt to  
the duke Aymon of Ardeyn, and theſe  
threē knyghtes ben my brethern, hee-  
reis Alard, Guichard, & Richard, &  
heere is Mawgis our cosyn one of þ  
best knyghtes of the wold & moſt wi-  
ſe. Charlemayne hath caſt vs oure of  
Fraunce, & hath diſheryced vs, & our  
fater hath diſauo wid vs for the lo-  
ue of him & for this cauſe ſit we goe  
ſeeke a bout after a lordē that is good  
and true that ſhoulde helpe vs to de-  
fende ayenſt Charlemayne, and we  
will ſerue him wel and truely.

**W**han king you hearde thiſg that  
Reynawd ſayde: he was righe

gladde of it that they were the fourre  
ſonnes of Aymon the beſt knyghtes  
of all the wold and moſt dourced, &  
Mawgis that was the moſte ſubtyll  
of the wold that were come for to  
ſerue him, he Wolde not haue ben ſo  
glad þ men had gyuen to him al pa-  
rys. for he wylt well that þ euer he  
ſhoulde ſyniſhe his warre: it ſhoulde  
be by their meane. Then he looked  
up toward heauen, and thanked our  
lorde of the comyng of cheſe worthy  
knyghtes, & than he ſayde to them.  
Lordes ye are receyned of me for ye  
ben not the men that oughe to be reſu-  
led. I promyce you truely and in feith  
of a kinge, that I ſhall defende you  
with all my power ayenſt all men, ye  
are diſheryced & I alſo, therfore it is  
well reaſon that we be cogyther, and  
that the one helpe the other of all his  
power. Sir ſaid Reynawd we chanke  
you a thouſande tymes & I promyce  
you that we ſhall die in yourre ſeruise  
or elles your ionde ſhall be recouered  
again. The king caſled his ſuarder &  
ſayde to him and commaunded that  
Reynawd & his ſeawlypp ſhould be  
well lodged. Incontinent the ſuarder  
tooke Reynawd by the hande, & ful-  
ſyld the commaundement of the  
kyng. Now are the fourre ſonnes of  
Aymon acqynted with the kinge  
yon of Gascoyn, whiche went to ha-  
ue doo wel but he repented him ſoone  
aſter. ¶ But here we leaue to ſpeake  
of king yon, and of the fourre ſonnes  
of Aymon: & return to ſpeake of bou-  
gyns that were at Tholouse, the  
which he had take by force of armes.  
¶ How Reynawd, and his brethern  
and Mawgis deſtroyed Bourgong  
ſches

The booke of the soule

the Sarrazins, that had destroyed the  
realme of Gascoyne and chased the  
kyng von vn:o Bordewos upon Sp  
conder that durst not goe thence for fea  
re of the Sarrazins. And after howe

lynge you gave my ladye Clares bps  
syster to Reynawde for to be his wi  
fe, for the greate seruise that he had  
done to him. And howe he made for  
hym the castell of Mounteban.

¶ Capitulum. vi.



**I**n this party sheweth the hys  
coppe that after Bourgong had  
taken Toulouse: he made a great par  
lyamente to his folke. And sayde to  
them. Lordes ye knowe well, that  
whan the yron is well hot: it wets  
keth the better. This worde I haue  
sayde afore poure lordshyppe for to  
gyue you to knowe what we oughte  
to doo. And therfore we semelh that  
we oughte to ryde now towarde Bour  
gong whyle the cozne is in the ere.  
For our horsses shal haue meat ynow  
ghe, sit latde his folke, ye speake wel  
and wisely, lec it be doone as fe haue  
deuided, & whan the morrowe cometh:

Bourgong departed out of The  
louse with well. xx. thousand knygh  
tes wel arm'd, and ceassed not for to  
ryde till that they came afor Bour  
gong in. ir. daies. And he set all hys  
folke in a bushement within a greate  
woode that was rygh, & abode ther  
with them, excepte foure hundred  
men that wente to the cyrie walking  
and brennyng all the countrie vnto  
the cite of Bourgong, and whan the  
daye wachte that was vpon the gate  
of the cite sawe the Sarrazins come:  
hecried with an highe woice, come  
you knyghtes for heere ben the Pay  
nimes that come for to hurt you.

Whan the Little vnderstode this: he began to before moued.

**T**han when Reynawde sawe that it was tyme to take hys hatnes on: he sayd to hys brethern. Loz make you all redye, and make our trumpettes to be blouen that all our folke put them self in armes. In contynent made hys brethern his co maundement. And whan they were al armes: Reynawde mounted vpon Bayarde, and came to kinge Pon & sayd to hym. Sy be not abashed of nothyng: but be sure that god helpe vs thys daye. My self, my brethern and all our folke we goe afors, and make your folke to be redy in contynent for my hert giueth me that this cursed Sarasyne shal be thys day dyscomfited, and ouercome wyth the helpe of god. Fcreende sayd the kinge, god be wyth you, and I wyl doo that ye t. l me. And thus Reynawde went out of Bordes, the fornest of all hys folke agaynst the Sarasyne vpon hys horse Bayarde, the sheld at his necke, and his swerde in hys hande and ranne fierly vpon hys enemies and incontynent smote a Paynym thonghe his sheld so that he ouer threw hym dead to the grounde, and forth wyth he cast a nother, god wot he helde well his swerde, for he hew the Sarasyne as they had ben with out harneys. And shorly to speake after that Reynawde and hys folke were assembled: the Paynymes mis ght not endure. For Reynawde and his brethern sle we them as beastes, so that they must nedes flee to warde theyz busshement. And whan boute

gons saw hys folke come thus: he yssued out of the Wood wyth hys company, and made busynes a houres to be blouen, & came for to succoure his men. And whan Reynawde saw so great numbre of folke coming out of the wood: he was sorc metayled, and turned hym self towarde his bretherne and sayd to them. Loz des keep that ye be not dismayed, for we shall get a great Worshyp thys daye, and I praye you that euery man parforce hymselfe to doo well, brother sayd. Rycharde we shall never be dismayed as longe as ye be vpon Bayarde. Brother sayd Reynawde doo as good men, for yf ye wyl parforce your selfe a lyter. These paynmes shal not hold afor us. Thus as Reynawde spake to his bretherne: they saw Bourgois come the spere in his rest and smote a man of Reynawde by such a strength that he shoued his spere through and throughe his body, so that he fell downe dead to the eath. Whan Marde saw that: he was wrothe, & spurred his horse and ranne vpon a Paynym so hardy that he felled hym therke dead afor hym. And shorly to speake there was never seene suche a distresse of folke, as Reynawde, his bretherne & many hys cosyn made wyth so fewe folke as they were agaynst Bourgong the Sarasyne.

**T**han when the kinge Pon that came to the succours of Reynawde saw y great fayres of armes that he and his bretherne made, and how hardy they dyd set vpon and ouerthrew all that they recounterred

H. i. afor

## The booke of the houre

afors them: he blessed hymself of the  
meruayle that he had of them. And  
than he sayd to hys folke. go we suc-  
cour these worthy knyghtes, for it is  
tyme longe a go, and whan the kyng  
yon had sayd these wordes: he spur-  
red his horse & put hymself amoung  
the thickest & began to doo wel, and  
dyd so moche that he brake the great  
preses, and came where Reynawde  
was. And whan Reynawde saw the  
kyng yon he sayd to hym. Sir be  
sure and certayne that the Saracins  
are discomfited, than sayd the kyng.  
Reynawde I am well assured þ god  
shall do me grace through your high  
prowesse, blessed be the houre that ye  
were boorne, & came into these mar-  
ches. To speake shortly the batayles  
were assembled of one parte and of  
the other, but whan Borgong saw  
the great harme that Reynawde bare  
to hym of his folke: he sayde to hys  
men, we ben overcomen by the pro-  
wesse of these syue knyghtes. Let vs  
go backe agayne, for it is tyme. And  
whan he had sayd these wordes: he  
and his folke begā to flee. And whā  
Reynawde saw Borgong that fled:  
he smote Bayarde with the spurres  
and ranne after hym and said to hym  
self that Borgōs should abide there  
or els it should coste hym his lyfe.  
Wythin a shorte whyle Reynawde  
was ferre from hys brether, & ferre  
from his felawship so that they wist  
not whiche way he drewe. Whan þ  
Alarde saw that, he wist not where  
Reynawde was drawen: he sayd to  
hymself. Ha god whiche way is my  
brother drawen to þ I am not wyth  
hym & than came there kyng & on þ

sayd to them. Lordes and knyghtes  
we yе knowþ grāmercy (god) that it  
is not wyldome for to chāse ouer mo-  
che his enemis for often tymes co-  
inceth there a great dommage, let vs  
Withdrāw vs I pray you, syr sayd I  
larde What say ye: we haue lost Reyna-  
wde our brother & wot not where  
he is, noȝ yf he is dead or taken, whā  
kyng yon understande this wordes: he  
was full sorȝ and wrothe, and they  
wente and sought amoung the dead  
men that lay upon the feilde. And  
whan Alarde sawe he coulde not be  
found: he made great sorȝe Wyth  
Guycharde, Richarde and Hawgis  
also. And whan þ folke of Reynawde  
saw that he was not found: they be-  
gan to make so great sorȝe that it  
was pitie for to see.

**A**las sayd Alarde what shal I  
do: I departed fro my lande  
poore & exyled, but I dyd not care for  
it, for I wente Wyth the best knyght  
of the wortle and crowed by the pro-  
wesse of hym to haue recovered ho-  
nour and hauoyre my selfe & my bre-  
therne, & now I haue lost hym tho-  
rough my defaute. Alas my chānce  
what shal we doo fro hens forthone  
for þerth shal not now susteyne vs  
no more. But that it shal fōudze un-  
der our feete, & whan the kyng yon  
saw the great sorȝe that the poore  
knyghtes made for theyr brother: he  
sayde to them. Lordes and knyghtes  
what is this that ye doo: sith þ he is  
not dead: it ought to suffise you, for  
þ he be take ye shal haue him agayne  
& it should cost me al þ I haue in the  
wortle. And also we haue so mani of  
them

them prysoneſ, that Borgons ſhal not doo to hym no harme for nothig. Hys ſayd Alarde let vs go after for goddes ſake, let vs wyt where he is become. Freende ſayde the kyng I wil doo ſo gladly. And thā they ſpured theyr houſles and went as fast as theyr houſles might renne, & wile þ Alarde Guycharde Richarde & Hawgys rode a good pafe ſo moche that it ſeemed that the erthe ſhould haue clouen a ſondre vnder them.

Now will I tel you of Reynawde that went after Borgons ſo fast as yf the tempeſt had chaled hym, and he was gone ſo ferre in a ſhort while þ it is wode for to heare tel, for there was no beaſt that went afore Bayarde his houſle. And whan Reynawde had ouertaken Borgons he cryed vpon him as hys as he myght doo. Certes Borgons thy houſle may no more I ſee it well, and therfore ſlee no fercher, but turne thy ſelf toward me, for yf thou dyed ſlyeng: þ thou ſhould be ſhamed. whā Borgons heard Reynawde ſpeake thus to hym, he returned incontinent, and whan he ſaw Reynawde he knew well that it was the good knyght that had dyscomfyted al his folke and ſayd to hym. Hys knyght, go backe agayne and marre not your houſle aboute noughe, for if ye leſe him: ye ſhal never recouer ſuche a nother, and this he ſaid for to abafe the good knyght Reynawde, for he durde not Iouk with him because of the great pro- wes that he had ſeen in him but Reynawde was not the man that ſhould be made aferde, wylde wordes and then Reynawde ſayde agayne to him

Borgons this wordē nedeth not to you for to ſay: for ye muſt nedeth deſende your ſelue. And than he ſpured incontynent bayarde, and whan Borgons ſaw that he myght not be deluyered of Reynawde but by Ju- lynghe ſpurced his houſle and ranne vpon Reynawde as harde as he mi- ght, & ſmote Reynawde ſo ſharply þ the ſpere wente in peces. Reynawde fell not, but ſmote Borgons ſuche a ſroke that he ouerthre w both houſle and man to the grounde and woun- ded borgons in his bret full ſore. And whan Borgon ſaw hymſelue at the grounde: he roſe vpon lyghtyng and tooke hys ſwerde in hys hande, and caſte his ſheilde vpon his head. And whan Reynawde perceiued þ ſroke that he had giuen hym in hys breast: he cryed to hym and ſayd. Certes it ſhal not be reproched to me that ye fyght wylde me a ſore and I on houſle backe, and with this he lighted down fro bayarde & dre w out his ſwerde & went againſt Borgons. & Borgons agaynſt hym, & there began a Sharpe batayle and whan the houſle of the payne felte him ſelue fro his maſter: he begā to rene away ouer þ ſeeldes and whan Bayard ſaw him rene away, he went after and ouer tooke hym ſoone enough, and thā he tooke hym by the mane with his teeth and drew hym with ſo great myght that he brought him agayne to hys maſter in the ſame place wheres the two worthy knyghtes foughte together, and Reynawde gaue a ſroke to bor- gons with his ſwerde vpon his ſheilde and all that the ſwordē toughte he cut throug; to the fleſhe, and well

The booke of the fourre

an hundred mayles of his flancers  
dcs and made hym a great wounde  
into the haunce.

**T**han Whā borgons the sara-  
ghe of Reynawde, & the great stro-  
kes that he gaue to him: he was soze  
afrayed and tered leal he shold die,  
and so he withdrawe himselfe abacke  
and sayd to Reynawde. Ha gentyll  
knyght I pray thee for the loue that  
thou hast to thy God that thou giue  
metrue, and I shall make the lord  
& lyfe of all þ I haue in this wold.  
Cerces sayd Reynawde I wyll not  
doo so, for I haue promyсл to kyng  
ron that I shall helpe hym agaynst  
all men, and he in lyke wylle hath pro-  
myсл me, but and yf ye wyll make  
your selfe christen: I shal doo it glad-  
ly. Spy sayd Borgons I wyll yelde  
me to you, for to no better knyghte  
than ye be I cannot yelde my selfe, if  
ye wyll saue my lyfe and my mem-  
bres. Borgons said Reynawde yf ye  
wyll yelde you to me ye shall haue  
no more harme thā I shall. Wyll ye  
promise me thys said Borgons: yea  
said Reynawde. Now hold my swerd  
sayd Borgons & I put my self al to  
gether in your hand. And Reynawde  
ooke hys swerde and assured hym  
that he shold not dye and they two  
wente together for to take theyr hor-  
ses, and whan they had them they  
lyghted vpon, and tooke theyr way  
towarde Bordewys, and as they cam  
againe: they met with king Ron that  
came and hys folke renning agaynst  
hym as fast as they myght. Whan  
Reynawde saw þ kyng: he thanked

hym muche that he was coming af-  
ter hym, and presented to hym Bo-  
rgons that he had thus taken and con-  
quested as I haue rechesed to you, &  
sayd to him. Noble king of Gascoyn  
I beseche you that Borgons haue  
no harme, for I haue assured hym.  
Good streend sayd king you, nomore  
he shall, but all honour for the loue  
of you, and I praye to God that I  
may doo no thyng that is agaynst  
your wyll. And whan Warde Guy-  
charde, Rycharde, & Malwys saw  
Reynawde that brought Borgons  
prisoner: they were never so glad, for  
they wend to haue lost hym, so tanne  
they and kyssed hym ful sweetly and  
made hym great feast and great hos-  
pital for the loue of hym.

**B**rother sayd Warde into a great  
sorow and heunes ye had brou-  
ghe vs this day, for we wende that  
ye had betake, but sith that ye haue  
taken Borgons the warre is doone  
and blessed be the houre that ye were  
borne & the pappes that ye sucked,  
and whan they were wel feasted: they  
tooke on theyr way to Warde Bo-  
rdewys, wherc they led Borgons as a  
prisoner. And whan the kyng yon  
was at Bordewys: he lighted downe  
and tooke with him Reynawde and  
his brethern by the hande & Malwys  
also & wene vp to the palay, &  
foude his folke that made great feast  
and he called them to hym and sayd  
Lordes here honour and worshyp  
more to this knyght than to me, for  
I am king of Gascoyn by theyr wor-  
thines

chynes and great provges. For if thei  
had not ben I had ben dead and ouer  
thowen, blessed be that good lorde þ  
þyd put in theyr myndes for to come  
into this coste, for they haue quyted  
my land & haue set all my reame in  
peace. To speake shortlye the kyng  
made the bacy to be dealed. Wherof  
the mooste party he made to be gyuen  
to Reynawde & hys bretherne. And  
Reynawde wolde take nothyng of it  
but gaue it all to his folke, and wha  
the kyng saw the great largenes of  
Reynawde he loued hym more than  
he did aforne, and than he sayd that he  
Wolde make Reynawde lorde buer  
hym, and of all his lande.

**T**he kyng yon had a syster the  
Whych was a right kyng da-  
moyseil. Whan she hearde speake so  
moch good by Reynawde: she calid  
to her a knyght that was called wa-  
ter, and sayd to hym; tell me by your  
sayth Who hath the þyce of the bas-  
tayne. Madame sayde water I shal  
telle you with a good wyl. So we  
wyd þ Reynawde is the best knyght  
of all hys bretherne & of al the world  
for he tooke Borgons the sarasyn  
by force, wherby he hath brought the  
warre at an ende. wha the pucell un-  
derstode this wordes. She was ryght  
glad & dyd thanke our lorde for it w  
al her heit. And þ king & his knyght-  
tes ceassed not to make ioye for the  
victory þ god had sent to them thos  
rouh þ great proesse of the valiaut  
Reynawde. Whan borgons saw hym  
selfe in prisyon: he sent wordes to kig  
yon þ he shold come speake wþ  
hym. And as soone þ king yon wþst

of it he went to hym. And whan borg-  
gons saw hym, he salued hym a after  
sayd to hym. Myr I am your pris-  
oner & also þ mooste party of my folke  
þf it please you þt whai put me to rai-  
son and my men also, & I shal gyue  
you x. horses laden wþ golde for  
me & for my folke. Borgons said the  
kyng I shal doo wþ a good wyl,  
þf Reynawde counsel me so and no  
other wylle I wyl not doo, and thā  
the kyng yon sent for Reynawde &  
for his bretherne and all hys other  
barons. And whan they were come  
he helde his counsell howe he shold  
doo for the delyuerance of borgons,  
Reynawde & his barons counselled  
the kyng that he shold put borgons  
to raison, & wha the kyng saw þ his  
barons counselled hym the same: he  
made borgons to be caled, and made  
his delyuerance to be sygnysyd w  
to hym. And thus was borgons de-  
lyuered and went wþ his folke in-  
to his countrey, & yeled Tholouse  
agaynt to kyng yon a sent to hym.  
þ. sommers al laden wþ fyne golde  
as he had promyfed to hym. And in-  
contynent that the kyng & on had  
receyued them: he gaue them to Rey-  
nawde and to his bretherne, but Rey-  
nawde did as a worthy knyght. For  
not a penye he wolde take of it nor  
his bretherne also.

**T**happed upon a day þ Rey-  
nawde & his bretherne wente  
in a forrest that was not ferre thens,  
& toke fourte wylde beastes, & as they  
were comynge homwarde they fould  
themselvpon the riuer of Gironde,  
& as they wente, Alarde looked ouer  
the riuer and saw a hyghe mountain

The booke of the four

and all hyghe on the toppe of it was  
a fayre roche. And whan Alarde saw  
so fayre a grounde and so stronge: he  
turned hymself towarde Reynawde  
and sayde to hym, Brother yonder  
vpon that hyghe Mountayne is a  
fayre grounde and a stronge, I beleue  
that there hath besometime a castel.  
And ys we myght doo so muche to  
buylde there a stronge place for our  
selke: Charlemayne shoulde never ta-  
ke vs there. And ye Wyll beleue me  
ye shal aske it of kyng ton, and ys he  
gyueth it to you: let vs doo make  
there a stronge castell. Colyn sayde  
Matwyss (to Reynawde) Alarde gi-  
uereth you good counsell. And I pray  
you that ye wyll doo so as he hath  
sayd. Colyn sayd Reynawde I shal  
doo it sych that ye counsell me so.  
And whā they were accorded to the  
same, they entred into a barge and  
wente ouer Syrounde. & whan they  
came a lande: they ceassed never till  
that they came afore the kyng, and  
presented hym the beastes that they  
had taken. And whan the kyng saw  
them: he receyued them curtoysly, for  
he loued them moche. And than the  
kyng embraced Reynawde in hys  
armes.

**T**he morowe nexte after that  
the kyng had hearde masse:  
Reynawde tooke the kyng & drewhim  
a lylle at a syde, and sayd to him  
Syr we haue serued you longe well  
and truy. Certes sayd the kyng ye  
say trouthe, and therfore I am holde  
towarde you well for it, now looke  
ys I haue in al my lande cities tow-  
nes or castellcs, or other thyng that

ye wyl haue, for yeshal haue it inched  
tinet. Syr sayd Reynawde I thankes  
you muche of your good Wyll. But  
heare my wordes ys it please you,  
say on hardly sayd the kyng. Syr  
sayd Reynawde I and my bretherne  
were the other daie comyng fro the  
chase, and as we came alonge by the  
sydes of Syrounde and of Dordone  
and naniely betwene these two ry-  
uers: I saw a Mountayne soare hy-  
ghe, and ys it please you I wold  
wyl buylde therpon a castell after  
my pleasure. Wherfore syr & it please  
you ye shal graunte to me thys gift  
for al the seruice that euer I dyd to  
you. Whan the king vnderstode this  
wordes: he was ryght glad of it, and  
sayd to Reynawde I ryght gadlyc  
graunt this to you. And with the same  
ye shall haue of me x. thousand man-  
ke eueri yere for to maynteyne your  
estate. Syr sayd Reynawde gramer-  
cie, and cast hymself to his feete. And  
the kyng You tooke hym vp anon  
curtoysly and kyssed hym for greate  
loue and after he sayd unto hym.  
Roble knight I promise you I shal  
make you a ryche man and ys God  
spare me lyfe. Syr sayd Reynawde  
god yelde you, and we shal serue you  
truly, & thus they departed eche fro  
other. The next day after whan the  
kyng was rySEN out of hys bed: he  
made Reynawde to come afore hym.  
And after he tooke xx. knyghes w  
hym and no more & tooke his barge  
vpon syround and passed ouer the ri-  
uer Reynawde and hys bretherne w  
hym, and they dyd so muche that they  
came vpon the roche, and whā they  
sawen the place so fayre and so plas-  
taune

launt: the kyng was mercayled of it and Reynawde was ryght glad, for the great strength that the place had, for if he myght doo so muche to bryde there a castell: he shoulde not doubt Charlemayne of a penye nor none other person of the wold whā vitayles were in it. For vpon the highest of the mountayne sprong oute a fayre fountayne and plencouse y noughe for x. thousand persons.

Whan the knygates that were wyth the kyng saw the place so fayre and so pleasaunt and so stronge with all: they were greatly abashed, a knyght than tooke the kyng and had hym a lytle a syde and tolde him. **S**yr what is this that ye wyl doo? wyl ye haue a lord aboue you? Will ye doo make heere a fortresse? I tell you vpon my faythe that yf Reynawde set heere a castel, he shal feare you little nother you nor all other barons of Gascoyn, for Reynawde is suche a kyng as ye knowe, and also hys brether and they colyn dawgys, and also they be straungers, & soone they shal beare you great harme yf they wyl doo to hi some other good yf ye wyl beleue me, and let thys alone, for ouer greate harme myght come to you therof.

**T**han whan kyng Eon vnder stoode such wordes: he became all abashed of it, for he wiste well that the knyght sayde trouth, and Ȭell lacked that the werke of Ȭal stell came not forth, he began to thike a lytle and after he sayde, that he had promyssed it to Reynawde, and

thus he sayd to the kyng that the castell shoulde be made, so called he Reynawde and sayde to hym. **S**yr good frēnde where wyl ye that the castel be made? **S**yr sayd Reynawde, I wyl yf it please you that it be set heere in the same place vpon this toche. **L**eres sayde the kyng I gyue it to you. Now hast you to see that it be made and builded vp as ye thynke best, and than ye shall doube nother me nor my folke. **S**yr said Reynawde let be these wordes, for it is no need to speake therof. For I certaynlyc you as a true knyght that I had muche leuer to dye an evyll deach amonge the Turkes, than that I shoulde this be treason vpon you nor vpon no other. **S**yr I am and haue betake hether to and holde for a true knyght, god giue me gracie that I doo not fro hens forthon wherby I shoulde otherwys be taken. **S**yr thynke you bycause I am enemy to Charlemayne my souerayne lord, that I shoulde be therfore a traytor and that I haue doone agaynst hym some treason. Wyt that whan I slew Berthe lot his newew, alas I dyd it in my defens, for he drewe syr bloud vpon me wythout reason or cause whye. But I swere to you vpon my fayth that yf any man doo any wrong vnto you: I shal auenge you therof after my power, but and yf ye haue anye suspcion vpon me: gyue me it not. Good frēnde Reynawde sayde the kyng I dyd but iape with you. For I knowe well yeur trouth and well ye haue shewedit vnto me, god thake you, And therfore I haue graunted it vnto you, and yet I doo

End

The booke of the four

And I wylle ye be lorde aboue me  
and of my lande.

**H** And whan Reynawde bider-  
ode the curtesye & the good-  
nes of the kyng: he chakid hym right  
muche, & he sent thoroough all the lond  
and made come all the masters ma-  
sons and carpeters and many other  
crafty men in suche werke, so muche  
that they were well two hundred bider-  
ode the labouters, and whan al hys  
tyme was redy: he made theym to  
byulde there a stonge castell, wher-  
of the great hall was syt made and  
after many chambres and than the  
great towre. And wha the doungeon  
was wel closed: Reynawde made af-  
ter all the castell to be closed rounde  
aboute w double walles hie & thick  
of hard stones, & many tourres vpon  
that it fered no sauyng of no syde  
of it, & made to this castell fourte ga-  
ges and no mo, and also he made the  
portcolysse falsehayes & barbac-  
nes well defensable so that it myght  
be no better. Whan the castell was ac-  
complisshed: Reynawde and his bre-  
thern were therof ryght glad, for it  
sewed them that they were assured  
from theyr enemys. And wha king  
yon knew that the castell was ac-  
complisched and full made: he went  
to see it. And whan Reynawde wist  
that the kyng came: he went agayns the  
hym and welcomed hym ful honest-  
ly & made hym go up to the great tourre  
of the fortres, bresake he shold see  
the compas of the castell rounde ab-  
oute at his ease, for the great tourre  
men myght se all. The kyng behide  
well the tyme werke y was so plea-  
sant and so strange wryth all and

the fayre fountayne that was in the  
middes of it. And thā he called Rey-  
nawde & sayd to hym. Good frende  
Reynawde how shall this castell be  
called: for me semeth it ought wel to  
haue a noble name, for y greate beau-  
tie wherof it is garnysshed, syr sayd  
Reynawde it hath no name yet, & yf  
it please you ye shall gyue it a name  
as it shall lyke you best. Certes sayd  
the kyng the place is pretie and fayre  
& I wyl that it be called Mountaw-  
ban, and than the kyng made to be  
knowen thoroough all his londe, that  
who wolde come dweland enhabite  
in the sayde castell, whyche was as  
great as a towne, he shold be free  
of all maner of dutes the space of  
ten yeres.

**T** han whan the folke of y coun-  
try knewe the freedome of the  
castel: ye shold haue see comis  
there knyghtes, gentylmen, burges  
yonge and olde, yeomen and folke of  
all maner of craftes so that this ca-  
stell was so peopled of all maner of  
folke that in all the countrey was no  
towne so wel peopled, for there dwel-  
led v. hundred burges al riche men  
& there were wel l. tauerners, and  
xvi. c. men of craftes besyde all other  
folke, & shold to speake Mountaw-  
ban was so well garnysshed and so  
riche wryth a little while y it was great  
meruayle for to see, and wryt is that  
the kyng yon laued Reynawde with  
so good a loue, for bresake of the  
greate worshynge of hym that he  
gave to hym valency and all the  
lordeshyp that was wrythe a thou-  
sande marke of good rente, moche  
wryt set, and whan the barons saw  
them

that the kyng leched Reynawde so  
Wel: they were wroth for it and had  
enuye upon hym, and they came to  
the kyng and sayd to hym, syz take  
wel good heed what ye doo, for mou  
cauoen is ryght stronge & so is Rey  
nawde such a knight that none bet  
ter is not in all the cremenarie of the  
Worlde, and ys it happe by any wise  
that he be an angred vpon you: he  
shall mow lyghtly beare to you and  
to all your foike ouer greate dom  
mage. Lordes sayd the kyng ye saye  
trouth, but Reynawde is so gentyl &  
so cuttoys of himselfe that he shall  
neuer thynke vpon no trayson nor  
to no shame in no maner of Wyse.  
Syz sayd than an olde knyght that  
stode before the kyng, ys ye Wyll be  
leue me: I shall tell you how ye shall  
awapes be lorde and mayster aboue  
Reynawde al the tyme of your life.  
Fcrend sayd the kyng tell me thys I  
pray you. Syz sayd the knyght gyue  
him your syster to his Wyfe, so shall  
she be well marped, for Reynawde  
is well a nobis genyalmā of al soure  
lydes: and thervp ye shall be assured  
that he shal neuer be angry ne wroth  
with you. Fcrend sayd kyng you ye  
gyue me good counsell, and I shall  
doo it as ye haue counselleed me, but  
I pray you that ye purchase this ma  
ter. Syz sayd the olde knyght syz I  
know your wyll in thys behalfe:  
I shall doo my best for to bryng the  
mater & conclusyon effectuall. Af  
ter these wordes thus sayd: the king  
returned agayne to Bayarde with  
joye deuysyng with the olde knyght  
of the mater wherof they had spo  
ken togidher.

**T**he first day of the moneth of  
May, Reynawde went from  
his castel of Mountawban to Bay  
arde for to see kyng pon & tooke A  
larde his bocher with hym. And whā  
the kyng pon wiste of it: he came to  
hym agaynst, & receyued Reynawde  
with great ioye and kyssed hym full  
sweetely. And after the kyng tooke  
hym by the hand and went vp toge  
ther to the hall of the palays and so  
forth to the chambre of parments  
Whiche was hanged right rychelyc.  
And than the kyng called so; þ chesse  
so to playe at it with Reynawde,  
And as they were playing together  
there came in the olde knyght that  
had charge of the kyng for to make  
the mariage of Reynawde, and of  
the kynges Syster, whiche knyght  
was called Godescav of Molins, &  
whā he was come afore the kyng: he  
sayd. Heare lordz what I wi: tel you,  
to nyght as I was in my bed a slepe  
me semed that I saw Reynawde the  
sonne of Aymon þ was set hyghe in  
a chayre and all the people of thys  
Realme enclyned theymselfe before  
him. And þ king gaue to hym a spe  
hawke me wed full fayre and good,  
and me semed also that than came a  
great boze out of the woodes þ made  
an ho ryble noyse, so that no bodye  
durste not approachyng hym thre  
men assayled hym, but they coulde  
not hurt hym and passed by theym.  
And whan Reynawde sawe that: he  
lighted vpon Bayarde and came a  
gaynst hym and faught with hym &  
hurted hym sore, and than I woke  
out of my sleape, and whan the olde  
knyght hadde sayde so: then rose

The booke of the four

a doctour that was called bernarde  
the whiche was ryght wise & a great  
clerke and sayd, fayre Lordes yf ye  
lyst to herken: I shall expowone & de-  
clare vnto you the sygnyfication of  
this dreame. Wyt it that the chayre  
Where Reynawde sat betokeneth the  
castell that he hath buylde, and the  
people that bowed hemself to warde  
hym signifeth þ folke þ are come  
to d'Well there. And the gyft that the  
kyng gaue to hym: betokeneth that þ  
king Son shal gyue him his sister to  
Wyke, þ Wilde boore sygnyfieh som  
great prince christe or Paynyme that  
shall come to assayle kyng yon, and  
Reynawde shal deafe hym by force  
of armes, and the same is the sygny-  
fication of the dreame of Godfray &  
I indygne for to speake should coun-  
sell that the mariage shold be doon  
of Reynawde & of the syster of kyng  
yon. For they shalbe thus both right  
Well and richely wedded, and than þ  
kyng ans wered thou haste spoken  
Well and wylsely. Whan the clerke  
had declared the betokenyng of the  
dreame of tholde knyght Godfray þ  
kyng yon sayd that touchyng thys  
marriage the thinge was Well agree-  
able bat o hym. And whan Reynawde  
understode thys Warde: he sayd to þ  
kyng, Sþr grameroy of the fayre gift  
that ye doo to me, but and if it please  
you ye shal haue a lytle pacience vnto  
the tyme that I haue counselle  
With my bretherne & my colyn maw-  
gys. Brother sayde Warde ye haue  
sayd yll. What refuse you of the king  
so great a gift as he giueth you now  
yf ye Wyll beleue me ye shall fulfyl  
the kynges wyls incontynent for to

me and to my bretherne it shall plea-  
se Well. And whan the king gaue  
you not his syster but a symple Da-  
moysele yet ought you to beleue hym  
and doo after his Wyll. Brother said  
Reyna Wde, it is not the kyng tyme  
that ye haue giuen to me good coun-  
sell and true, and I promysc you I  
shall doo it syth that ye doo counsel  
me so. And than Reynawde turned  
hymself to Warde the king and said  
to hym. Sþr I am all together redye  
to doo all that ye Wyll, and than Rey-  
nawde rose vp and the kyng tooke  
hym by the hand and made his sister  
to be affaunced vnto hym.

**T**han wha the mariage was  
made accorded, & made sure  
of the one parce & of thother: þ kinge  
yon came to the châber of his sister,  
and found her helsy aboute a penoun-  
cel of a spere, that she made ful fayre  
for þ knight Reynawde but she durst  
not tell it. The kyng salued her as  
soone as he sawe her, and the noble  
mayde rose vp anon against her bro-  
ther and made hym due reverence  
ryght manerly. Fayre syster sayd the  
kyng I haue doo marye you Well  
and hyghlye. Whan the pucell under-  
stode hym: she began to chaunge her  
colour and bowed her body to hym,  
and sayd no worde of a longe whyle.  
And whan she had the power for to  
speak: she sayd to the kyng her bro-  
ther, Sþr to whome haue you geuen  
me. Fayre syster sayd the kyng I  
haue gruen you vnto the best knyght  
of the Worlde, it is Reynawde the  
sonne of Imon the noble knyght &  
valyaunt. Whan the noble Damoy-  
sell

self vnderstode that it was to Reynawde to whome her brother had inarrayed her she was ryght glad of it, for he loued Reynawde of a great loue and sayd to the kynge. Sir I wyll doo withal my heit your comandeinent and your wyll. Tha the king tooke her by the hand & brought her to the palays, and said to Reynawde afore al his baros. Holde heire woz thy knyght Reynawde I gyue you my syster to your wyfe and spouse. Sir sayd Reynawde a thousand graciees of so fayre a gyft that ye gyue to me presentlye, for it apperteyneth not so great a gyft to so poore a knyght as I am, than tooke Reynawde the pucell and fyaunced her, and sware. And the kynge wolde make no taryng therat, but tooke þ pucell by the hande, and brought her to the churche Well honourably, and the byshop of Boerde was wedded the. And whan Reynawde had his wyfe espoused: he sente for hys bretherne & for his cosyn Hawgys that were at Mountawban, the whiche made great Joye, and made all Mountawban for to be hanged wþt ryche tapissery. And than they mounted their horses all couerted wþt sendall and Wente to Bordewis, and met with Reynawde and hys wyfe by the Way wher as great Justinge was made afore the ladyes.. And after the Justyng was doone: they came all to Mountawban, and whan they were come there: the Joye began for to be greate in the castell as god had descended there. For to say trouth. viii. dayes lasted the feast, & many great gyftes were presented and gauen to

the lady. And whan the feast had endured as longe as I tell you: The kynge þon went againc to Bordewis ryght glad of the mariage, that he had made of Reynawde and of hys syster. For he thought wel that Reynawde shold helpe hym agaynst al men, and he sayd trouth. For after þ the mariage was ones made: there was no baron in all Gascoigne þ durst looke vp, and yet ther were some that wolde not deo theyr deuoyre to the kynge, but Reynawde made them well come foorth for to doo the kynges commaundeinent accordyng to theyr lygeaunce wolde they or not. For Reynawde was both loued and doubted through all the lande of Gascoigne. ¶ But now leueþ heire the history to speke of Reynawde and of his bretherne and of Hawgys. And retourneth to speke of the king Charlemayne that went to saynt James in Galice for to do penaunce for hys synges.

¶ How the king Charlemayne made a vyage to saynt James of Galice. And how at his comyng agayre he knew how Reynawde and hys bretherne were in the Realme of Gascoigne in a ryght sturge eastell calld Mountawban. And how þ kinge Charlemayne sente word to the kynge þon of Gascoigne þ he shold yelde to hym his enemys, that is for to understand. Reynawde Alard Guycharde and Rycharde, whiche be the sonnes of Aymon and in case that he wolde not: he shold com be speghem in his lande afore x. monethes came at an ende. Wherof the kynge

The booke of the four

kyng Yonans wered that he wolde  
doo nothynge for hym in this behalfe  
And howe after that kyng Charle-  
mayne was returnd to Parys with  
his felowship. Roulande his newe  
arryued at Parys the whiche þ king  
made knyght, and after he sente him  
to reyse a syrge afore Copleyne that a

Sarasyn had besyged that was cal-  
led Escoutrawode the whiche Rouland  
conquered. And after he wroth how  
Rynawode wanne the Croune of  
kyng Charlemayne, for the good re-  
nyng that his horse Bayarde made  
at Parys.

Capi. vii. fol.



**D**o sheweth the history that  
Charlemayne was at Parys  
and came to hym a deuocyon for to  
go in pylgrymage to saynte James  
tu Galice. And so he departed out of  
Parys and tooke in hys compayne  
Ogyer the dane and the duke Ray-  
mes of Bavyere and many other ba-  
rons and great lordes. Whan they  
were vpon theyr Waye: they dyd so  
muche by theyr Jurneyþ þ they cam  
to saynt James in Galice. And whā  
they were arryued there: The kyngc

went streyght to the churche and of-  
fered afore the auter. x. marke of fyne  
Golde. And whan he had offred and  
doone his deuocyon: he tooke on hys  
waye agayne and came with hys fel-  
lowship to Bordes. And in his  
cominge thither: he looked ouer the  
tuer of gicond not ferre thence, and  
saw the castel of Mountawban that  
was vpon a roche so fayre & so wel  
made and so well shytte wryth fayre  
walles and thycke in the forme as I  
haue tolde you afore. And whā that  
Charle-

Charlemayne sawe it, he behelde it well a longe whyle and than sayd. A good lorde ponder is a fayre castell strong and wel set. I see well that the kyng Pon hath made it of late, for it semeth yet to be all newe, and it can be none other wise sych that he hath buldred it in suche a strong place, but that he thynketh to make warre to some body. And than he called to hym a knight of the lond and sayd to hym tell me howe ye call that castel. Sy; sayd the knyght the name is Moun-  
tawban. He had great lust to speake, for ye he had keped his peace: there had been none other thynge of it, but he had suche woordes that afterward bare great harme to hym selfe, and to manye other. For he tolde Them-  
perout that Reynawode and his bres-  
ebren the sonnes of Aymon had doo  
make the castell, & was called Moun-  
tawban. And how that the kyng Pon  
had geuen to Reynawode his sy-  
ter to his wife.

**W**han Charlemayne vnderstoode these wordes: he was ryght angry for it and wroche. And wist not what he shold saye, and helde hym self a great whyle that he spake not, and whan he had mused a lytle, he sayde to his folke, fayre lordes I shall tell you a wonder. For I haue founde myne enemyes in this lond, that ben the fourre sonnes of Aymon. Nowe vp Ogryer and you duke Hay-  
mes, lyght on horsbacke incontinent, and seke so muche kyng Pon that ye fynde hym, and tell hym in my behalfe that he yelde to me againe the fourre sonnes of Aymon that be mine

enemyes them whiche be hach wry-  
tawen and borne out agaynst me. And that he fynde me knyghtes for  
to bryng them onlye in to my lond  
for I am delybered sych that I haue  
founde them: for to hange them or  
slep them: quycke. And ye he wyl  
not doo so: desye you hym on my be-  
halfe. And tell hym that wryth in this  
tyme or fourre monethes I shalbe wryth  
in his lond of Gascoigne wryth all  
my Hoste, and I shal destroy and o-  
uerthrowe all his townes and castel-  
les, and ye I maye take hym: I shal  
punysshe hym wrythout any mercy.  
Sy; sayd Ogryer we shal doo yours  
commaundement, but we shal take  
wryth vs bances and hostes che whi-  
che been ryght and sage, and Charle-  
maine said that he was concerte and  
incontinent they went on theyr way.  
And wente aboue to vnderstante  
where kyng Pon was. And so long  
they asked asker hym that they sounde  
hym at Mounawban cuen at the  
foote of the roche. For the king Pon  
went agayne to Bourdewys and Rey-  
nawode conuercyd him. Whan Ogryer  
sawe Reynawode and the kyng Pon:  
he knewe them well. And inconten-  
tence he salued the kyng, and sayde  
to him. Sy; god geue you good lyfes  
and longe. And the kyng rendred  
to hym his salute, and after sayde to  
him. Of whence be you? sy; sayde Og-  
ryer. We been of the sweete Fraunce.  
And also we be sence unto you. And  
we are of Charlemaynes folke, nowe  
heare vs if it please you. Sy; said the  
kyng ye be ryghte welcome. Nowe  
tell on what ye wyl saye. Sy; sayd  
Ogryer, Themperout Charlemayne

he booke of the four

sendeth to you worte by vs that ye tell the Empetoure from my behalfe  
yeilde agayne vnto hym his enemys that I shall so fairelyt all my londe  
the whiche ye haue withdrawen into your landes and ye lende to hym an  
hundrede of your men for to condurke  
and bryng them wþ hym vnto  
Fraunce. And if ye refuse to doo this:  
We by his commaundement defye  
you of his behalfe. And within these  
iii monethes he shall be in Gascoigne  
and shall take all your landes and  
shall be syge you with in the citie of  
Bordeus. And if he take you he shal  
punyshe you in your body. Now haue  
we sayde our message, and if it please  
you ye shall gyue vs an answere.

**O**gyet sayde the kynge, it is well  
it roucheth that I haue receyned  
the fourtounnes of Armon, whiche  
bene wþchye knyghtes, and so haue  
I receyned theym because they bene  
þrue and valiaunte in armes, and also  
that they haue holþe and socoured me  
at my greate need. For I was dylert  
and vndoone for euer, if they had  
not bene. And for the greate good that  
they haue done to me: I haue gyuen  
my syster Germanye to Reynawde  
for his wyfe. And therfore I shalld  
be to cruell and eke well mischaunt if  
I shalld now take them into the han-  
des of their enemys mortall sith, that  
they haue dosone to me so good servysse  
I haue leuer to be dylert and dye  
an euill deach than to yelde them or  
suffre that they haue anye harme nor  
shame to my power. For namely the  
kynge Charlemayne shalld than hol-  
de me for a soole & wel nyce. And ther-  
fore Ogyet if it please you ye shall

**T**han whan the king had sayd  
thus: Reynawde spake after  
and sayde. Ogyet I merayll greatly  
of the kynge Charlemayne that will  
not leaue vs in peace. He cast vs out  
of Fraunce poore & dylerted wherof  
I am ashamed, & as ye knowes I wol-  
de be reformed with reason to the say-  
enge of his barons, but it pleaseþ him  
not. And so he casted vs out of Mount-  
ainarde shamefully, so that we wist  
not wher we shoulde goe. And yet is  
suffyseth hym not, but he wylle caste  
vs out of plonde of Gascoigne wher-  
of he dooth great synne. For yet am  
I redy for to doo his wyl in reason &  
ryghte. And I tell you well that if he  
refuse this by his pryde: I wyl well  
that he knowe that I and mi bretherne  
are not suche that shall be taken as  
lyghely as he weeneth. And I promys  
þe you that oþ euer he hath vs: I shal  
make hym more than x. tynes angrie  
and wroth. For this that he dothe,  
he dothe it but of pryde. Ogyet I wyl  
well that kynge Charlemayne knowe  
þe king yon of Gascoigne hath gy-  
uen to vs leue to builde a Castel that  
hath to name. Mounteban, the whi-  
che is strong and impenable, & yet I  
haue knyghtes with me that shall not  
fayle me at my need, and tell to dinge  
Charlemayne that sith I cannot haue  
no peace nor accorde with hi: þe I shal  
doo to hym all the domage and harme  
that shal be to me possyble for to doo.

Reynawde

**B**einawde (said Ogier) ye speare not wylslyp, weene yeto a-  
bashe vs wth wordes: ye shal not so,  
but whā ye shal see the Hoste and the  
great powre of Charlemayne to ge-  
ther ye shal be soze abashed, and at  
the ende ye shall be full wrothe and  
soze, ye knowe well that the Empe-  
rour Charlemayne made you knyght,  
and ye slew his newwe Berthelot,  
and therfore think not to finde peace  
toward him, and ye weare to be assu-  
red bycause the kyng yon hath made  
you to chose a Castell, but well I wil  
that he knowe that he shal repence  
for it full soze. For aforo eys mone-  
thes be past: we shal be in the middes  
of his lande, and shall destroy all his  
Realme, and we shal bennne bothe  
Castellies and townes. Ogier saide  
Reynawde I swere to you vpon my  
sayth that whan kyng Charlemaine  
shalbe wth his hoste in to this land:  
he shal wth hym selfe boone a-  
gaine in Fraunce wth his folke. And  
Whan he shal see the hard Justyng  
and Sharpe warre that I and my bre-  
thren shal make against him: he and  
ye shalbe soze abashed of it, and some  
of you speakeþ nowe hye, that whan  
the deed shal come to profe: he shall  
be full lowe. Reynawde (sayde than  
Ogier) I wyl hyde nothinge from  
you. The kyng Charlemayne hath  
so great a powre and is delibered for  
to besiege Bordesys, and if he maye  
take you he shal punyssh you cruel-  
lys, nowe doo as ye wyl. I haue tolde  
you al my message, and I goo againe  
to kyng Charlemayne. Whan he had  
sayde these wordes: he returned to-  
ward kyng Charlemaine and shewed

Unto hym what kyng yon and Re-  
ynawde had saide. And whan the kyng  
understoode the same: he shooke all  
for anger & saide, now shallic be seen  
how kyng yon and Reynawde shal de-  
fende Gascoigne against me, & than  
Went forth Charlemaine and passed  
the rver of Gyronde, & rode so longe  
that he came to Bayys, and the daye  
after he called al his batons that ther  
should come to him. And whan ther  
were all come: the kyng helde hys  
counsell and saide to them. Lordes I  
haue sent to you to tell you the great  
shame that the kyng yon of Gasco-  
igne doth to me. For he holdeth the  
foure sonnes of Iymon my mortal  
enemys in dispise of me, & ye knowe  
what damage they haue doone to me.  
For they slew my newwe Berthelot.  
I dyd banishe them out of Faunce,  
than made ther the castell of Moun-  
taynforde wthin my land, and I qua-  
sed them out of it. Nowe been they in  
Gascoigne wth the kyng yon  
that saith he shal defend them against  
me, and he hath geuen his sister  
to Reynawde, Wherfore I praye  
you all that ye wyl helpe me that I  
be auenged.

**A**nd whā Charlemaine had said  
this: there was none of the ba-  
tions that answered to him any  
worde, for they were wryte of the  
warre that they had made so long a-  
gainst Reynawde. And Charlemaine  
saide that no bodye answered to him  
no thing: he called to him the Duke  
Natnes and Ogier the Dane and the  
Erle Guydellon, and saide to them.  
Lordes what counsel doo you geue

The booke of the fourre

grue to me in this matter. Syr sayde the Duke Haymes, yf ye Wyll beleue me I shall grue you good counseyl. Suffce youte hoste to teste hys eyue yeres, bycause that your folke is wety of the warre, so shall they teste them selfe a lytell. And whan they shall be fresshe: than shal ye now make warre at youte Wyll, for every manne shall than come to it with good wyll. And whan the Emperour vnderstoode this counseyl: he was soe an angred for it that he wente almoske oute of hys witt, and as he wold haue sayde a penst the duke Haymes: there came a yonge gentylman of greate beautye, and broughte in his company xxx. faire squiers well arrayed, this yongelynge came to the palay and went vp, and whan he came afore the Emperour he made hys obaysance to hym sui! curtellye, frend sayde the kyng ye be cyght Welcome, what wende broughe you hither and what be you? syr sayde the squier. I am called Rowlande of breayne and I am the sonne of youte sister and of the duke of Mylou.

**T**han wban Charlemayne vnderstoode Rowlande speake thus: he was right glad of him and tooke him by the hand and kissed him many times, a sayd to him, ye be righte Welcome. I wil that ye be made a knyghte to morowe in the mornynge & ye shall assayre your selfe vpon Reyna Wde the sonne of Iymon. Syr said Rowland I shall do your commaundement and I promyse you Reyna Wde shall not be spared of me, and he shal not bere aware nethinge of yours. He slewe my colyn Berthelot wherof I am ryghte

soy, and therfore I shall auenge hys deach yf I may by ony maner, o: elles Reyna Wde shall slea me. And in the mornynge the kynge Charlemayne dowbed hys newewe Rowlande to a knyghte with muche Joye and with great honour, & as the feast was a dinge: there came a messenger that said to the Emperour. Moste hys & moste puissaunce prince, your menne of Loyne recommende them righte humbly to your good grace, & they dor you to wot that the sarasyns haue besyed them, and haue hurtte them ryghte soile. For they haue brent and destroyed all the country. Wherefore they besche you ryght humbleye that ye come for to helpe & socoure them if it be your pleasure, o: elles they are but dead, and vterly destroyed.

**A**nd when the Emperour vnderstood these cydnynges: he bowed his head toward the erth, and beganne to chinke a litle. And whan Rowlande saw his uncle that mused thus in him selfe: he said to him, wherof be ye so dismayed. Geve me some parte of your menne. And I shall goe reyse the syge of Lolyne. And whan the Emperour heard Rowland speake soo: he was ryghte gladde of it, and embrased and kyssed hym full sweetlye and sayde to him, fayre newewe biesled bee the houre that euer ye were borne. For I knowe for certayne that ye shall keep me from payne and trauayle, and in you shall be my teste and my comforde. And I Wyll that ye goe there. And than he gaue hym twenty thousand men of armes well horsed and well arrayed. And whan they

they Were wel apparetled, Bowland  
lygheed vpon his horse and sayde to  
hys vncle the kinge. Sir I comende  
you to god. Fayre newew said Char-  
lemaigne I haue taken to you my me-  
n in your keeping, I praye you that ye  
will keep them well, & do so muche  
that ye get worship, & god be with  
you. Sir said Bowlande be not dis-  
mated, for at my retourne if it please  
god ye shal know how that we haue  
doo. And whan he had saide thys  
worde he tooke leaue of his vncle &  
went on his waye with his folke, &  
they rode so longe by their iourneys  
that they came to Loloine all by nigh-  
te, & put their busshement nigh  
their hoste, & as they were nigh the  
hoste: they met with certeine sarasins  
that came againe with a great prate  
of oxen and sheep and of men & wo-  
men that were their prysoners, and  
made them suffre great martyrdome

**W**han the frenshemen sawe their  
ennies: they saide in this ma-  
ner, lordes oure lorde hathe sence vs  
hyder. Heere bene the traytors sa-  
rasins, that so sore we haue desired  
for to fighthe with them. Now shall  
it be seene what we shal do with the:  
put vs amonge the, for at this how-  
re they shall be ouerthowen, whan  
they had spoken ymough: they made  
none other taryinge, but spurred  
their horses and ran vpon the sara-  
sins by great strengthe, so that in a  
lycie whyle they had them dyscomfis-  
ted so shatpelye that they slew them  
all, and recovered all the prysoners  
& the bestes. ¶ And shortly to speake  
whan the hoste of the paintimes hea-

de the noisse of the frenshemen: they  
moued theim selfe, & lyghted vpon  
their horses, & vpon the frenshemen  
And whan the frenshemen sawe the  
come: they went agayne to their bus-  
hement as well as they could, and  
beganne to chasse theim.

**A**nd whan Bowlande sawe  
that it was time to set vpon:  
he yssued oute of his embusshement  
with his folke, and went and smore  
vpon the sarasins so harde that he  
casted to the erthe agreate parte of  
theim. And to speake shortly: the ba-  
tayle began so cruell & so fell that it  
was picke to see. For ye shoulde haue  
seen so many speares broken, & so  
many sheldes in two, & so many sa-  
rasins lying dead on the grounde: so  
that with paine men might goe by  
for the deade men that laye so chiche  
one vpon other, & Bowlande spur-  
red his horse with the spurres & wete  
& smore a sara in that was a kynge  
& the chiche of the sarasins hoste with  
so great mighthe that he ouerthrew  
him to the erthe, but he slew hym not  
of that stroke, but taryed vpon hym  
and gaue to him such a stroke with  
his swerde vpon his helme that he  
made him all astonyed. And whan  
Bowlande sawe hym also euyl arat-  
ed: he bowed hymselfe & tooke hym  
for his prysoner, and dyd serte hym  
againe vpon his horse & brought hym  
with hym. And whan the sarasins  
sawen their lorde taken and sawen the  
wundres of armes that Bowland  
made and of the frenshemenne: they  
put theimselfe to syghe full shame-  
fully. And whan Bowlande sawe the

The booke of the four

Saracins seethus: he cried wryght a hyghe voice. Lordes goe after theym to they flee al, and if they scape vs: it shal be to vs a greate blame towarde myne uncle the kyng Charlemayne, and we shal be holden toz cowrtes, wherfore I pray you lette not one escape, soz ye shall haue theym lyghtly syd that I holde in my hande theym kyng. Whan the stenshemenne heard RoWlād speke thus: they said free knight be not dysmaited of no thyng, soz we make no doubtz that none of theym shal lase, but they shal be taken or slayne. Lordes sayde than the kyng Sarasin that RoWland had taken that had to name Elsco; lawde. They bene all mine, I praye you that ye kylle theym not, soz they ben all ynoch discomfited, siche that ye haue taken me, but gyue theym truce, and haue me to kyng Charlemayne of it please you. And yf ye may doo so much that Charlemaine pardone me the great offence that I haue done to him: I shall holde fro hence forz all myne heritage of him & yf all my lygnage shall be obeysaunce vnto his will, and of this ye may beleue me. By my heade sayde RoWlande ye speake curteously, & by my faith saide Matines Elsco; lawde saych wyl, and we shall doo so, they gaue truce to the saracins and tooke their wale againe to Charlemayne & brought Elsco; lawde with them and so long tyme rode that they came to Paris. And whan the kyng Charlemayne knewe that his newewe RoWlande was come againe to Paris, and that he had dyscomfited the saracins and brought prisoner with him kyng Elsco; lawde: he was right glad of it, and anon he mounched on horsebacke, and came ayenst his newewe RoWlande. And whan RoWland saw him: he lighted down from hys horse, and wenc and kist hym selfe to the feete of kyng Charlemayne his uncle. And anon he made him to rize vp, and kyssed him sweetly: And than RoWlande said to him. Sir here I deliuer vnto you the kyng Elsco; lawde, that we haue taken. He hach tolde vs that he shal make himselfe a christen man and that he & his lignage that holde their landes of you, yf ye will pardone him youre ylle wyl. Newewe sayde the kyng Charlemayne there is no crut in him, and therfore I wil keep me from hym. Than commaunded the empereour that Elsco; lawde shoulde be broughte to prison, and that he shoulde be wel kept and that he shoulde haue all his will of meate & drinke. And after whan Elsco; lawde was put in prison: the kyng Charlemayne dyd calle to him the Duke Naymes and sayde to him what chynke you by my newewe RoWlande, what dyd he whan the bacayl was assembled. Sir sayde the duke Naymes, of RoWlande nederh nos to speke, soz newer siche that god was borne, of the vrgin Marie: such a knight was not seen. For he alone hath ouercome the saracins by bys great prowess. And yf he had a horse that might beare him whan he were armes: I swere by my faith that ye shoud newer haue empes, but that he shoud bring him to your metteye by force of armes. So muche he

is prue and valyaunte. The kyng Charlemayn swore by his head that he was right glad therof. But tell me sayde he to the duke Raymes: Where might menne fynde such a good horse as ye speake of? Hit sayd the duke Raymes yf ye will beleue me: I shal geue you good counsayll. Make to be cryed with a crompet vpon Mounte marty: that ye wyl see renne al the horses of your hoste, And he that shal renne best: shal wan yourt crowne of golde, and fyue hundred marke of fine siluer, and a hundred roiles of sylke. And all thus ye shall moue knowe the best horse of your realme. And whan ye shall haue seen him: by hym, and gyue hym to your neuere Bowlande, and after gyue ieuue to all yourt barong vnto the feast of saynt John the baptyst next commyng. Duke Raymes (said the Emperour Charlemaine) ye gyue me good counsayll, & I shal doo thus as ye haue devised. Then the kinge Charlemayne made to be cryed vpon Mounte marty: cwynctus as the duke Raymes had deuised, and did make the listes for the horses to renne in. And whan thys was done: he made his crowne to be sette at the ende of the listes, and also the fyue hundred marke of siluer and the hundred roiles of sylke, and this hanging: a reman went to hys countrey in Gascoyne, and as he passed thorough Mountawde he recomyned to Reynawde and to Hawgys all the chyng that menne wold doo at Paris. And how Bowlande was come to the courte. And how he had dyscomfited Escoufawde the kyng

sarasyn, and howe the kyng Charlemayne wold haue the best horse of all his realme, for to gyue hym to Bowlande, and shewed the sayd reman the price that the kyng had set. And also howe the Emperour Charlemayne gathered his hoste for to come to Mountawde. And howe the courte of þ horses shold be made at saint Johns time next commyng.

**A**man whan Reynawde vnderstoode this worde: he began to laugh and after he said to Hawgys, Losyn by all halowdes of god, Charlemaine shal see the best curme of the Worlde, but he shal not knowe that I shal haue his crowne. For I wyl goe there vpon Bayarde to see howe he shal proue himselfe at this tyme. Soys sayd Hawgys ye shal not doo so yet, but and if ye wyl goe theras suffice that I bere you compayne, so shal you be more sure, & haue welch þe knyghtes wellaimed. Gladly sayde Reynawde siche that ye wyl doo so whan it was tyme for to meue towarde Paris: Reynawde called to him Bayarde, Gupharde, and Bycharde his bretheren and Hawgys hys Losyn and sayd vnto theym. It is tyme that we goe to Paris. Take knyghtes chosen and put oure seise in the waye. Soys sayde his bretherne out commaundemente shal be done. And whan they were all appareyled: Reynawde came to his wyfe and sayde to her. Lady I praye you that ye doo keep wel my castel, and I shal come sone againe. Soys sayde she comandeþ you knyghtes that they ben not oure of the waye, and I proue myse

### The booke of the four

myself you is the king you my brother  
came himself: he should not come in  
nor none other unto the time that ye  
be come again. Now go god be with  
you. Than cooke Reynawde leue of  
his wife, & sette himselfe toward the  
waye and his folke & wene to Paris  
And whan they were come to Orlé-  
aunce, & had passed the riuer of Loire  
menne alased theym of whens they  
were: And Hawgys that spake for  
them all answered. Lordes we bene  
Bournoys that goe to Paris for to  
assaye our horseys for to win the price  
that the kinge hath set upon. Ye  
god will so consentre. Than by sayre  
Wordes they passed forthe & so long  
they rode that they came to Melym  
but they entred not within the towne  
but lodged theym selke in a great ba-  
ley, and there they sojourned theym  
selke and their horseys four dayes.

**T**han whan came the even of  
sainte Joban: Reynawde called  
Hawgys & saide to him. What  
shall we do to morrowe shall be the  
course of the horseys wherfore I say  
that it is couenable that we goe ly-  
to night at paris, cosin saide Haw-  
gys pe say wel & wisely. Nowe lette  
me do a littel and please you. Than  
cooke Hawgys an herbe & stamped  
it vpon a stonye with the pomel of hys  
swerde, and tempered it with water  
and rubbed bayarde therwith so that  
anon he became all white in suche  
wise that they that had seen him be-  
fore: knewe him not, & after he enoun-  
ted Reynawde with an oyneymente  
that he bare alwaies with him a in  
continence he became to the age of

xx. yeres. And whan he had thus at-  
ned Reynawde & his horse: he tooke  
hym & brought him afore his breth-  
ren & afore the other knyghtes & said  
to them. Lordes tel me how thynke  
you haue I not wel transfigured him:  
Shall not they myre come againe and  
not be knownen: Behold bayarde how  
he is wexen white he shall leue the  
price for age.

**T**han whan the barons sat  
Reynawde & bayarde so cut-  
ned: they bega to laugh & were great-  
ly merueyled how Hawgys hadde  
thus disfigured them. whan Haw-  
gys had transfigured Reynawde &  
bayarde and himself also: Reynawde  
mounted vpon bayarde and Haw-  
gys vpon morel, & cooke leue of their  
folke. But Reynawde at his depar-  
tyng sayd to his brethen, haue no  
fere for me. for I shall not be knownen  
ys god wyl. Than wente Reyn-  
awde on his way, & his folke wepe  
for him, for Reynawde wene in such  
a place where he hadde manye en-  
nemys. for ys Charlemayne had con-  
ne take him: al the golde of the wrold  
had not sauied him, but he shold haue  
caused him to be hanged. And whan  
they departed: Alarde sayd to Spaine  
gis I pray you for god that ye haue  
my brother Reynawde for recon-  
meded, for if it were not for the trust  
that I haue to you, I shold not suf-  
fre that he shoulde go to partys for al  
the golde of Spaine. And than Rey-  
nawde and Hawgys wene on theyz  
waye. Now shall I leue a littel to  
speke of them. And shall retorne to  
the kyng Charlemayne that was as  
the

Darys with his folke.

**C**hatlemaine sawe his barons  
that were all come, and than he  
called the Duke Naymes, Ogyer the  
Dane, and Foulques of Morillon  
and said to them. Lordes I praye you  
that ye take an hundred knyghtes wel  
armed and goe to warde the waye of  
Dyleaunce and beware that none goe  
by but ye knowe their names & that  
they bene well aduised, for I doubt  
me soze of Reynawode, that he shall  
come, for he wench well him selfe to  
be ouer subtyll, and yf it came in hyg  
head: he shold come sone hytherward  
Syr sayde the barons we shall doo  
gladly your commaundemente, and if  
Reynawode be so folishe that he come  
hytherwarde: he shal not escape vs,  
but he shall be deade or taken and  
brought aforze you. And thachey cooke  
leue of Chatlemayne and wence to  
make them ready nere their horses, &  
after mounted on horsebacke with an  
hundred knyghtes well armed and  
rode the waye to warde Dyleaunce,  
and arrested themselfe in the myddes  
of the Waye, fourte myles out of Pa  
cys (and there they were a longe while  
that no bodye passed by) and endured  
great hungry and churke. And whan  
the duke Naymes sawe that they were  
there for noughe: he sayde to Ogyer.  
Syr Ogyer by my saythe the kyng  
Chatlemayne maketh vs lyke foole  
and holdeth vs for nice and misarde  
that he maketh vs to tary heire about  
noughe. Syr sayde Ogyer ye sate  
trouche, and God confounde me yf I  
tary ony lenger. And whan they wol  
be haue comen againe abacke: the duke

Naymes saue come a farte Reyn  
awode and Hawgys. Tha said Nay  
mes to foulques of Morillon, yonder  
I see :emanyng two menne on horse  
backe. And whan that Fouques saw  
them: he cried with an hyghe voyce,  
by my faiche heire commere Reynawode  
Nowe can he not escape by no maner,  
but he shall be banged. By my saythe  
said the Duke Naymes ye sate trouche,  
for the horse ycometh aforze: is much  
lyke Baiarde the horse of Reynawode,  
yf he were of a nocher coloure. Whan  
that Fouques vnderstode these Wor  
des: he sette handes to his swerde and  
came ayenst Reynawode ryghte nere,  
and when he was well nyghe them:  
he behelde them. And whan he sawe  
that it was not Reynawode: he was all  
abasshed and dreyfe hym selfe abacke,  
and Reynawode and Hawgys rode  
furthe they wayes. And whan  
the Duke Naymes sawe that they  
came furthe he went ayenst them and  
called Hawgys and sayde to hym,  
what ben ye: and whether go ye? Sir  
saide Hawgys I am borne of Peter  
and my name is Touset. Freend said  
the duke Naymes canne not reueil me  
nothi. g. of Reynawode the sonne of  
Aymon the worthy knyght: yea saide  
Hawgys by my faiche, he hath ridden  
with vs two miles, and he is not pas  
sed two miles behinde vs. At that hor  
te Reynawode spake not, tha said Nay  
mes what is he: that is with you that  
holdeth him soill and that saith  
no Worde? I beleue that he hath so  
me euill thought, sir saide Hawgys  
it is my sonne, and he can not speake  
no frensh. For he hath bene nourisched  
in the grete Bretaine. Whan the  
duke

The booke of the four

Duke Naymes vnderstoode this: he sayde to Reynawde tell me vassell knowest thou no cydyinges of Reynawde the sonne of Iymon: and Reynawde answered to him in this wise. By my fayth no poynt frenche graunt Brecaine horse a Paris cloyth gane- ra my. And counterfettered thus hys longeunge, because the duke Naymes shold not knowe him.

**T**han Whan the duke Naymes heard Reynawde speake th' enpl: he began to laugh. And after saide to him againe, a hundred deypl: les haue Well caught thee to speake so good frenche, vassell I wote not what thou sayest thou arte more lyke a foole than abisshop. And so Naymes leit him in peace. And than Reynawde and Hawgys rode so longe that they came to Patrys tyme yngonghe for to doo theyz enterpysse. And at the ente of the towne: they mette with an euill rybaude, vnto Whome GOD geue yll aduenture. For he knewe Reynawde. And as soone as he sawe him: he beganne to cry with an high voice, heire commeth Reynawde the sonne of Iymon. Whan the folke vnderstoode the cry: they wente thar May. And Whan the pl rybaude saw com so many folke: he was yet more hardye than he was afore, and wente afore the other, and tooke Reynawde by the bridle of Bayarde. And Whan Bayarde sawe that: he loked his forefoote and smote the rybaude vpon the brest, that he brast the herre in his heyle, and casted him all dead to the erthe. And whan the people saw the stroke: they began all to laugh, and Bayard

went sooth, & Hawgys after that ther were not knowen: & passed through the towne to the market. And Whan ther were comen there afore the lodges: they founde all the Innes full. Wherof Reynawde was maruailed. And so they lyghted at a cordeners house, that was of the deuilles side. For by him was almoste Reynawde and Hawgys taken, and deluyerd to Charlemaine that his bretherne shalde not haue holpen hym of no chynge. Whan they wote lyghted and lodged where it is sayde, & that their horses were well dressed: Hawgys dyd doo make a bedde for Reynawde and tooke a chyd of solke, and sered it well and came to Bayarde, and bounde hym the mowes of the feet theret. Whan well streyte. And the hoste behelde well this, and after said to him. Why haue you thus bounde this horse: he shall not conne well goe. But tel me what knyghte is he that oþerch the horse: For if he had of age more than he hach: I shold wene to knowe him. For he is muche lyke Reynawde the sonne of Iymon. Sayz saide Hawgys I haue bounde thys horse thus because he wyl syght, and the reman that ryderch vpon him is my sonne. Now haue I telled you that, that ye haue asked me. Certes answered the hoste youre sonne is a fayre knyghte, but I beleue ye mocke me. Nowe shall ye heare a greate misaduenture that happed to Reynawde and also vnto Hawgys. For thus as Hawgys spake with his hoste: he named Reynawde. Ha syt sayde the hoste ye haue sayde ymough, ye need not for to abyde it ony more. For it is Reynawde

uatode without ony doubt that slewe  
Berthelot the neuewe of the kyng  
with a chesse boorde. I shal tell it to þ  
kinge afore ihat I slepe.

**A**nd whan Reynawde vnder-  
stood this: he shooke al for an-  
grie. And rose frō his place and tooke  
his swerde & saide, hoste ye haue mis-  
saide. For I never sawe Reynawde,  
nor I wot not what he is, holde yore  
peace said the hoste I knowe you well  
By my head ye are Reynawde the so-  
ne of Aymon. And whan he had saide  
these wordes: he wente ous of hys  
house. And whan Reynawde sawe þ:  
he wente a good pace after his hoste  
and smote him so greate a stroke with  
his swerde upon his head that he clo-  
ue him vnto the reech. And whan  
Hawgys sawe this, he was ryghte  
sory for it, and saide to Reynawde.  
What haue you doone: haue you loste  
your Wyte: but if God thinke vpon  
vs we bene lost and shamed. I can not  
doo thereto sayd Reynawde. But how  
soneuer it goethe he hath his rewar-  
de. And than Hawgys came forth-  
with to the stable and sadled Bayar-  
de. And made Reynawde to mounte  
vpon him, and after himselfe lyghted  
vpon Horell, and went ous of the lod-  
ges. And whan the wyfe and the chil-  
dren of the hoste sawe thys that Rey-  
nawde had doone: they began to crye,  
But Reynawde and Hawgys were  
soone ous of their waye, so that none  
wyste whers that they were become  
and wente and put them selfe amon-  
ge the other in the presc, and they  
were never knownen. But Bayarde  
wente haltinge, and wente to the gare

of saint Martyne, and there they a-  
bode all the nighthe. And whan it was  
day: they wente with the other to the  
chyche where the kyng hearde his  
mass. And whan the servys was  
done: the kyng came ous of the chur-  
che, & mounted vpon his horſe, & all  
the other barons with him and came  
vpon the riuer of Sayne in to the me-  
adowe, and Reynawde and Hawgys  
wente with them, but Bayarde wene  
ryghte sore haltinge. And whan the  
kyng was come there: he comman-  
ded that his crowne shoulde be sette at  
the ende of the lystes, and the fyue  
hundred marke of syluer, and also  
the hundrede cloches of sylke, and in-  
continent the Duke Raymes and  
Dgier did as the Kings had com-  
maunded. And whan all was appa-  
rallled: Thenne shoulde ye haue scene  
knighthes leape on horſebacke. For  
everie man crowed to haue gotten the  
prise, and the kyng commaunded to  
the duke Raymes and to Dgier, vnto  
Guydellon of Burgoyne and to Ry-  
charde of Normandy, that they shoud  
take a hundred knyghthes well armed  
and that they shoulde keep well the  
feaste, that no noysse nor no styrke  
were there made, and that none shoud  
wonge the other, and they dyd his  
commaundement. And thenne the  
knyghthes that shoulde renverbegane  
for to beholde Reynawde that was  
mounted vpon haltinge Bayarde,  
and so they beganne for to laughe and  
scorne with him. And sayde in Iape  
the one vnto the other, this felawe  
shal winne theprise. And the crow-  
ne of fine golde, and saide beware  
that his lors smite you not, and than  
the

### The booke of the fourre

the other sayde he shall wynnne the de-  
uill, and an other knyght sayd to Reyna-  
wode, ye haue wel doone. Wec kni-  
ght for to haue brought youre horse  
heere, and if god destinech him: ye shal  
wynnne the prysse this day. Reyna-  
wode understoode full well the greate wo-  
des that men said to him wherof his  
herte swelled high, that if it had not  
be for doubt to haue lost the prysse: he  
wolde haue begon the stife, and ther-  
fore he helde his peace, and made no-  
ther noise nor wrode against it.

his nosechzels and bare his head up  
and made a long necke, and tooke his  
course so fast that it seemed the erthe  
should haue sonken vnder hym, and  
within a whyle he was passed all the  
other horses a ferre wape so that men  
coulde not see hym for dust that he re-  
lesed. And whan chei that tooke heed to  
the courses sawe Bayarde ten thus:  
they were greatly abashed with all, &  
sayde the one to other beholde chei  
whiche horse renneth fast and lyght,  
and but late he haled soze, he is the  
best of all other that been heere.

**R**an whan thempetour vnder-  
derstoode the great wordes þ  
the knyghtes sayde to Reyna-  
wode: he was wroche for ic, and he said so high  
that it was well heard of all. I com-  
maunde you upon paine of my grace  
that ye saye no shame nor ill wrode  
to no maner of knyght. For if ye  
doo ye shall anger me soze. But Rey-  
nawode cared not much of that it was  
said to him. Whan the Duke Nay-  
mes and Dgyer sawe that it was ey-  
me for to renne: they made to swone  
the crompettes. Then euerye man  
putted hym selfe for to renne. And  
whan Hawgis sawe that euery man  
ran: he lighted on foote and unbound  
the foote of Bayarde. But or euer  
he was unbounde: the other were wel  
ferte, and whan Reyna-  
wode sawe that  
it was tyme for to renne after the o-  
ther: he spurzed his horse, & said to ba-  
yarde, we been ferre behynde ye my-  
ght wel adide. For if ye be not soone  
before: ye shall be blamed, whan Bay-  
arde heard his maister speake thus: he  
understoode hym as well as thought  
he had been a man. Than he grylled

**R**ed whan thempetour sawe  
this: he called to him Richard  
of Normandye, and sayde to hym,  
sawe ye euer so many good horses to  
giche as heere ben now: but þ whiche  
passteth them all, God howis he well  
like bayarde the horse of Reyna-  
wode: if he had the heares of Bayarde: I  
should saye that it were he hym selfe,  
and he that syteth vpon hym is also  
lyght and prue. Thus wycethas  
Reyna-  
wode hath doo so muche that  
Bayarde hath ouercome all the other  
horses. And whan he was at the end  
of the lystes: he tooke the crowne and  
put it on his armes, and the syluer and  
the cloche he left alone, for he day-  
ned not to take them. And whan he  
hadde taken the crowne: he returned  
agayne towarde the kyng Charle-  
maine all faire and a sofe pace, whan  
the kyng sawe hym come towarde  
hym, he sayde to hym all laughyng.  
Freend abyde a lytle I praye you, for  
þt ye wyl haue my crowne ye shall  
haue it, and I shal geue you for your  
horse so greate hauoyze: that ye shall  
haue

neuer be poore. By God sayde Reynawde these wordes shall nought auayle you, now haue I well begyled you, for I go doo marchandise elsewhere and I holde you for a chylde. I haue so often angred you & of youre men I haue so many slayne. I am Reynawde that beareth away your crowne, seke els where for a nother horse that ye shall giue to Rowland for to ouercome Bayard, for ye shal not haue bayarde nor also your crowne. And as soone þ he had said this he spurred bayarde wþth hys spurres and went so fast a way that it seemed that the tempest had chased hi. And whan the kyng Charlemayne vnderstode thys þ Reynawde had sayd to hym: he was wode angry for it that he wylste not what he shold doo so that he myght not of a greate whyle speake a worde. And whan he had recouered his speche: he began to crye with a bye voyce, nowe after lordes after, for it is myne enemye Reynawde the sonne of Aymon. And whan the knyghtes heard thus crye the kyng Charlemayne: they spurred theiþ horses wþth þ spurres and went after Reynawde, but their goynge auayled them nought. For Bayard was ferre from them with in a whyle so þ they wylst not where he was become, and Reynawde cam to Hayne and passed ouer it al at his easle with swymyng, for Bayarde was well wonke thereto, and also he had passed it afore with more great haste. And wha that Reynawde was thus passed the ryuer of Hayne: he lyghed from Bayarde at the banke of it. Thus hanging: the kyng Char-

lemayne and his knyghtes that folo wed after hym, came to the ryuers syde, and began to call Reynawde & sayd to hym. Ha true man, soone yelde me my crowne agayne and I shal gyue thee. x. cymes as muche as it is Worthe, and I shal gyue thee truete two yeres, so that thy selfe and thy bretheren shal moþ go in ardeyne to see your mother the which desirereth soþ to see you, and there is no knyght in my lande that shal say contrary to it, by god sayd Reynawde as for these wordes auayle you noþig, for ye shall neuer haue agayne your crowne. I shal sell it and shal pay my knyghtes wþthall, and the charbonel that thus shyneth shal be set hye vpon my pauylpon to the ende that they þ shall go to saynt James in Galye may see it the better, and ye shall be blamed of your knyghtes that ye haue loste your crowne by the horse Bayarde. Whan Charlemayn hearde hym speake thus: he wylst not what he shold say for angr, & keþt himself stiþ like as he had ben dead. And whan Reynawde had sayde so: he mounted agayne vpon Bayarde and put hymself to the way, but not the ryght way: but rode throughe a lytle pache whiche he had passed aþfore tyme.

**N**ow shal I tell you of Hawgys how he dyd for to come out of Parys þ was mounted vpon his horse morell. Whan he wylst that Reynawde was passed Hayne: he is sued out of Parys and passed the ryuer ouer the brydge as soone as he myght. And whan he was wþthout:

B.I. he

The booke of the sonne

he began to looke after Reynawde & as he rode he looked a trauersle and sa we Reynawde, so called he after hym as hie as he could, cosyn thinke to tyde fast, for to tary heire no good shall come to vs, cosyn sayde Reynawde ye saye well and we shall doo so. And so they tooke theyr waye to warde Myllon. And Whan Alarde saw his brother come and Hawgys: he sayd to his folke. Lordes we may well come out of our busshement, for I se come my brother Reynawde & Hawgys. Alas sayd Richarde I see them come wþt greate hast. I fere me muche that men chale them. Now light we al on horse backe and yf they haue mystre of vs: let vs go helpe and succour them. And they answered all we ben all tedy, & whan they came out of theyr busshement: there came Reynawde and Hawgys that sayd to them lordes thynke to make hast. For the longe taryenge might doo to vs harme because that I byrge wþt me the crowne of Charlemayne, the whiche Bayarde hatþ made me Wynne by his pro. Well. And whan Alarde vnderstode his brother speake thus: he was so greatly in Joye that he wylle not what he shold say but colld & kys sed his brother Reynawde wþ greate Joye. And than incontineþ they put themselfe to the Waye and so longe they rode þ they came to Dyleaunce and passed the ryuer of Loyre wþt all diligencie, and after they made so muche by theyr Journeys: þ they came to Mountawban Whole and glad, thanked be god.

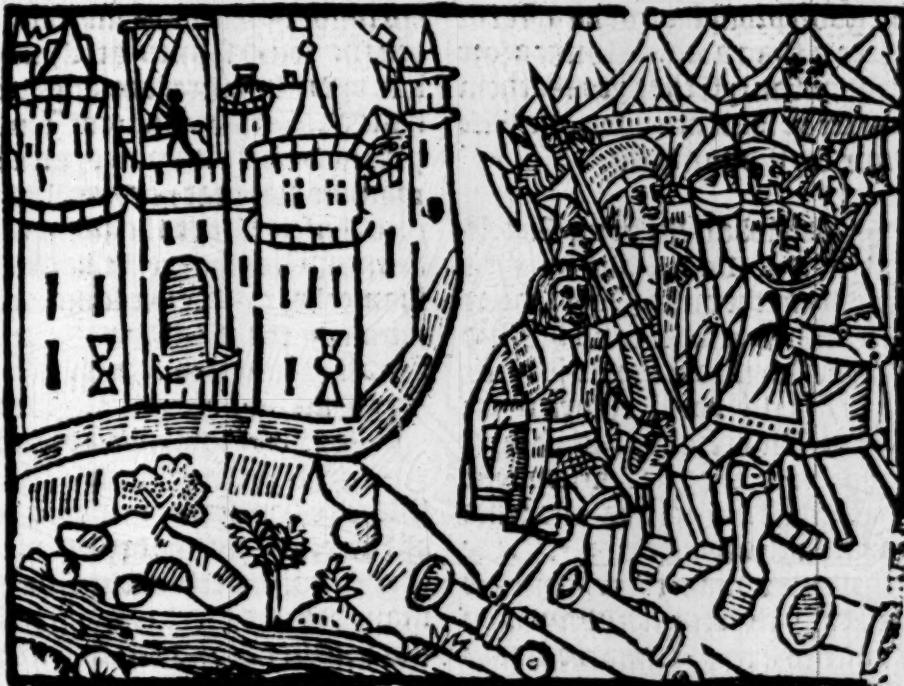
**T**han whan they were at mōs Mountawban: the lady came them agayn & recyued them ryght gladly, and mad e them ryght great cheare and all the folke of the Castell were ryght glad of the comynge of Reynawde and of hys bretherne, and also kethim how he had doone in his vi age, lordes sayd Reynawde wel god gramecy. I was knowen of myne hoste þ whch wolde hake betrayed and accused me, but I solde it to him ful decrete, I cloue his head to þ teeth and Went out of hys house by night and put vs in the p̄se of the other, but ye wyl never folke so wel scor ned as we were, for the folke of char lemayne mocked me and Bayarde, wherof the king was angry, & thus they leit me in peace. And whan the tumpetes began to blowe for to be gyn þ course: they that shold renne deparced incontinent, and I boode be hide well the shotte of a bow: and I tell you well for certayn, there were well twenty thousande horses. And whan I saw me behynde: I said to Bayarde that it shold be greas shame to hym þ he abode behynde, but god gramecy and Bayarde I ouer rauine them al. And bare awaþ the p̄ce, and of it I haue brought wþt me the crowne of þ kyng char lemayne wherof he is ful sorry. Wha thei of Mountawban vnderstode these wordes: they were ryght glad. But heire I leue for to speake of Reynawde and of his bretherne and returne to speake of the king Char lemayne that was at p̄cys ryght so rye for hys crowne that he had loste.

**C**how

**C**how the kyng Charlemayne trée  
into Gascoyn with his hoste. And  
how he besiegde Reynawde and his  
bretherne within þ Castell of Mou-  
tawban. And how Reynawde wan

the first batayle of the king, the whiche  
the Mowland conduyted & Diphier  
and the bishop Turpyn.

**Capitulum. viii.**



**R**at this party sheweth þ hys  
scoþy that whan Reynawde  
had wonne the crowne of  
kyng Charlemayne: The  
kyng abode all wrothe and soþe an  
angred, and he caſted all his barons  
& sayde to them Lordes I pray you  
that ye counſell me how I ſhall may  
auenge me of Reynawde þ ſonne of  
Aymon. For ye know how he hath  
angred me. I promife you but that I  
may haue my crowne againe: I ſhal  
wert mad al quicke. For my courage  
felleth me that he ſhall doo breke it &  
he ſhal put the carbonel þis theron  
upon his paullron, bycaufe þ folke  
that go to ſaint James ſhall ſee it

to my great byſupere ſhame. Sir  
ſayd Mowland þt ye wil auenge you  
well of Reynawde: go we upon him  
and we ſhall exyle and deſtroye hym  
and his lande, and þt the kyng Gon  
of Gascoyn may be taken: ſo make  
iuitice of hym in ſuiche wylle that it  
may be remembred perpetuallye. He  
ue w ſayd the kynge ye ſaye well and  
wysely & it ſhal be doone as ye haue  
aduysed me, & I promife you that I  
ſhall never haue Joye till þ I be a-  
uenged at my wyl. Sir ſayd þ duke  
Raimes leue this angre in peace, ye  
know how Reynawde is your en-  
emy & prayſeth you nothinge, but &  
ye wyl I ſhall gyre you ſuiche cou-  
ſel.

K. II.

ſel

The booke of the fourre

Tell that Reynalnde shalbe brought  
to distruccion and his bretheren and  
Maugys also. Syz doo that your  
barons be redy at candelmas nexte  
comyng and that euery one of them  
make good prouysyon of armes for  
vit. pere, & than abyde so longe afore  
mountawbancyll that ye take them  
and after ye shall auenge your selfe  
at your wyl upon them.

**T**han whan the kyng Charle-  
mayne vnderstode the good  
counsell that the duke Haymes had  
gyuen vnto hym: he lyft vp his hed  
and sayd. Haymes it is not y fylle  
good counsell y ye haue giuen to me  
and I Wyll it bee doone as ye saye.  
And than the kyng Charlemayne  
dyd doo make his letters and lense  
them through all his empire. In the  
whiche letters was conterned that  
euery man that was accustomed to  
beare armes & to go to warre shold  
come to hym at the feast of Candel-  
masse nexte folowynge well garnis-  
hed of armes for the space of. vii.  
pere, for to abyde at syege afore  
mountawban. Whan y barons kne-  
we y kinges wille: euery man made him  
selfe redy as well as he coulde and  
came to Parys, and presented them  
to kyng Charlemayne & to hys ne-  
ueus Roialnde, and by cause of the  
great numbre of folke that were com  
there, they myght not lodge al with  
in Parys: but they lodged wþout  
the towne vpon the riuer of Saine.  
Whan the kinge saw that all his ba  
rons were come: he made them al to  
come before hym & sayd to them, lo  
des ye all knowe right well (at the

left the molte party of you) ho we I  
haue overcome & subdued. xl. kinges  
in my dayes, the whyche are ali to  
me obeyssaunt, excepte y kyng Eros  
of Gascoyn that hath wþtdra we in  
his lande my enemies mortall, that  
ben the fourre sonnes of Iymon, ye  
know well the great dishonour thei  
haue doone to me, wherof I me co  
playne vnto you & praye you & com  
maunde you that ye come wþth me  
into Gascoyn for to helpe me that I  
be auenged of the greate harme and  
shame that these fourre sonnes of Ii  
mon doo to me, for by your oþre ye  
ben all beholden ther unto.

**T**han sayd the erle of Mantuel,  
Syz we shall not goe there at  
this tyme. Ye know well that  
that we ben come out of Spayne  
but late, wherof we ben yet all wea  
rye. And also in this felawshyp ben  
many princes and barons that haue  
not ben yet in theyr countrey nor seen  
theyr wifes and children, and ye wil  
y, that we go into Gascoyn vpon the  
kyng Pon, & vpon the fourre sonnes  
of Iymon: And I tell you that the  
two wondres y I receyued in Spai  
ne be not yet whole, and therfore we  
may not goe into Gascoyn at thyg  
tyme. But yf it please you ye shall  
doo as a good kyng and a sage, and  
shall shew we that ye loue your folke,  
for ye ought to kepe them as youre  
selfe. Wythdra we your hoste vnto  
Wytsunday nexte coming and grue  
leue to all your barons to goe to  
their places for to rest them a while,  
And whan the tyme shall be come &  
that your pleasure is to call theym:  
they shall than be all fresshe and re  
dy

ope to fulfil your commaundement  
With all diligence. Whan the kyng  
Understode these wordes: he was wro  
the and ware by saynte Denys of  
Fraunce, saying in thys maner, if I  
Should be dysshertyed I shall goe  
now into Gascoyne, and I shall take  
wyth me all the younge folke of my  
hoste: the whiche I shall put in good  
arape honestly, and I shall gyue the  
all that they shall need, though he  
Shuld abyde behynde as weke men  
and feynre. **S**ayd the duke May-  
nes ye say well, for thys younge men  
Shalbe ryght glad for to assayle them  
selfe. Therfore wyl I doo it sayde  
kyng Pon be delstroyed, and whan I  
Shall haue Reynawde and hys bre-  
theren, and Hawgys the cheere take:  
I shall departe y lande of Gascoyne  
to these younge knyghtes for theyz he-  
rytage. This hangyng that the kyng  
Charlemayne sayd these wordes: a  
Spye that longed to Reynawde was  
in thys compayne that understode  
all that sayde is. And whan the spye  
had hearde all together well: he put  
hymself to the way, and dyd so much  
by his Journeys, þ he came to mou-  
taban, where he founde Reynawde  
his bretheren, and Hawgys. And in  
contynent that Reynawde saw him  
he deniaunded of hys what tydya-  
ges bryng you fro Patys and from  
the courte of kyng Charlemayne?  
**H**y Lorde sayd the spye, wyt it that  
kyng Charlemayne is greatly wro-  
the with kyng Pon and agaynst you  
and against your bretheren, & against  
Hawgys. He hath sente for all his  
subiectes in his Empyre, but none

wolde haue comen w him into Gas-  
coyne. And then he sware Saynte  
Denys þ he shold come into thys  
partyes, and shold bryng Wyth  
hym none other but al younge knyghtes.  
To the whiche he shal gyue all  
Gascoyne, And sayd that he shal  
besyge Mouca Wban, and shal doo  
to be cast downe the great towre, and  
shal set al Gascoyne in a fyre and  
flame. Than sayd Reynawde to his  
folke, be not discouraged of nothing  
for I shall see how Rowlande and  
Oliver shal bear themself agaynst  
me and mi bretheren. And than went  
Reynawde into the halle. And found  
his bretheren and Hawgys with his  
knyghtes, and sayd to them. Lordes  
I bryng you ridynges. Now wyt  
that the kyng Charlemayne cometh  
to besyge vs, and bryngeth with him  
all the plissance of Fraunce.  
**N**o we let vs thynke to receyue him  
Well, for he shal haue more to doo  
than he wendh, brother sayd Alard  
haue no doubt, for they shalbe well  
receyued, for as longe that we shall  
lyue and shal see you ryde vpon bay-  
ardc: We shall not fayle you, nor wee  
shal not be a ferde to be taken noz ill  
handled. For no man alue is worth  
you, nother of goodnes nor of pro-  
wes.

**T**hys hangyng: Charlemayne  
was aduyled and thought  
vpon the counsell that the Duke of  
Nantuel had gyuen to him. And af-  
ter he called his folke & sayd to the  
Lordes I gyue you leue, and let you  
wyt that at Easter I shal holde my  
counsell generall, and it please you.

The booke of the four

Now keep that ye faile not to come  
than well apparcled and redy, for I  
wolde not leaue for no thyng, but þ  
I shal goe see the kyng Pon. And  
þt he yede me not the fourre sonnes  
of Ayuon: I shall doo to hym with  
out doubt somuch shame that I shal  
make his berde to be cut of harde by  
the chynne. And also I shal take the  
crown of Gascoyne from his hed  
and I shal make hym come a foote  
after me beggynge his bread. And  
Whan he had sayde these wordes:

The barons tooke leaue of Charle-  
mayne, and wente intoþeir coun-  
trées, but at þeir departing: Char-  
lemaigne sayd to them. Lordes teme-  
þre Wel your selfe that ye come at þ  
terme þt I haue set. For I shal be unto  
you þt haue chose that I shall not come, a  
þt I cuercome agayne from Gasco-  
gne: they shal repente it full soore.

Shortly to speake: Bycharde wente  
into his duchy of Normandye sala-  
mon into Bretayne. Godfray into a  
utmon, Hughe the olde and Dyls-  
ers into Spayne, and Bretons into  
Bunayne. And all the oþer euertiche  
into hys oþre countrey.

Whan it was time for to come a  
ȝayne to the courte at the ter-  
me that the kyng Charlemaigne had  
set: every man made hym selfe redy  
as well as he coulde for to come to  
the courte as they were expreslye  
charged they shalldoo, fyrt came  
þere Bycharde of Normandye and  
brought wþt hym manye a noble  
knÿght, and presented hym selfe to  
þe kyng Charlemaigne cuyt  
at saynt Denys. After came Saia-

mon of Bretayne, and brought wþ  
him of hys barons a fayre company  
and presented hym selfe to the kyng  
at saynt Denys. After came Dyls-  
ers of Spayne which brought with  
him well x. thousand knyghtes wel  
armed, and well garnysshed of vþ-  
tayles. For in all the hoste of Char-  
lemaigne was none so well arayed  
as they were of all thynges. And  
presented hym self in this maner at  
saynt Denys vnto the kyng Char-  
lemaigne. Than came Godfray the  
Egle of Ayuynon and brought with  
him all his power and a fayre compa-  
ny and foyson of vþtayle. And pre-  
sented him and his folke to the king  
Charlemaigne. And after came Pon  
thus out of Almayne, and brought wþ  
hym a fayre compayne of men of ar-  
mes. For he had wþt him the of Is-  
lande and of Iemony, and wel three  
thousand archers, þt wþtch for no  
doubt of death wolde never flee þt  
barayle. And presented hym selfe  
and hys felawship to the kyng char-  
lemaigne, þt wþtch he receyued ry-  
ght honourably. Than after came  
the good bishop Turpin, and brou-  
gat wþt hym a fayre company and  
well encwred to the warre, and pre-  
sented hym self to the kyng Charle-  
maigne, þt was ryght glad of hys  
comyng, for the bishop was a good  
true man. And þt king Charlemaigne  
trusted muche to hym for his great  
fydelite, and also for the great pros-  
pes that was in hym.

**A**l the great Lordes that hel-  
de þeir landes of the kyng  
Char-

Charlemayne came to Parys & presented themselfe and they men to þ kyng Charlemayne that receyued them with great Joye and was glad to see aboue hym so fayre a compaニー of good men of Warre, but I tel you that whan the hoste was assem-bled at Parys; there was so great a deth that it was great pitie, for the ralour of Whiche was solde for four-ty shelynges and twenty pence and þt the kyng had taid there any le-ger, there shold haue ben so greate a deth that all the small people had ben all dead for hunger. But the king Charlemayne began for to make hys mustres, for to know how much people that he had. And whan the mustres were made: they found that they were well. xxx. thousande knyghes that had they syrl berdes besyoe the olo knyghes that were well an hundred thousand. And whā that this was doone: the Empre-  
rour Charlemayne called Roulard his newe w<sup>e</sup> before him and sayde to hym. Fayre newe w<sup>e</sup> I recomende to you myne hoste, and I pray you that ye wyl conduyc it by good maner. Syr sayd Roulard I shal doo ther-  
in my deuoyze after my power. Thā made to be take to hym the oxyflame, and departed out of Parys, and they did so muche by smal Journeys that they came to Blore, and than Charlemayne made to be cryed that all the bytaylers of the land shold goe w<sup>t</sup>th vitapple after the hoste. And þt that they brought that were worth a peny: they shold haue two for it. And whan that thys greate armee was come to Blore they passed ouer

Gyronde and Wente afor the great castell of Mountawban. And they lodged themself there rounde about the place. And then the frenche mē began to say the one to the other, by myne oþe there is a fayre castel and a storghe and but þt wee get some o-  
ther parte, heere shall we wynne but a lytle.

**H**And whan the batayles were ordyned rounde about mountawban: Roulard began for to say to the kyng Charlemayne. Syr me semeth that wee shold nowe gyue a lawe to Mountawban. And the kyng answered, I wyl not that my folke haue any dommage, but syrste I wyl knowe þt the castel wyl holde or yelde vp. For þt he wyl be gyuen vp: I wold not that anye batayle shold be doone to it. And than incō-  
tinent he sent a knyght mounted vi-  
pon a mewle all unarmed, the wh<sup>e</sup> he came vnto the gate of the castel, and whan they þ kept the gate sawe that it was a messanger: they ope-  
ned to hym the gate, and the knyght entred into the castel. And as he was come in, he found the stewarde with an hundred men that Wente aboue visityng the watches and the bat-  
des. Incōtinente the knyght salued hym, and the stewarde rendred hym agayne hys salute and sayd to him. What be ye Gentyl man, and what seke you heere w<sup>t</sup>thine: I pray you tell me. What folke are yonder w<sup>t</sup>thout so fayre a company. Syr sayde the knyght they ben the folke of the Empre-  
rour Charlemaine that is come for to besyge the castel of Mountawban.

The booke of the four

Mountawban, and I am one of his knyghtes that am come heere for to speake with Reynawde from þ King Charlemayne. Than the Kwardre tooke the knyght by the hande and led him before Reynawde the sonne of Iymon. And whan þ knyght saw Reynawde: he made reuerence to him and after sayd to hym, Reynawde þ Imperour Charlemayne sendeth to you Warden by me, that yf you wyl yelde your selfe to hys mercy, & gylle to hym your brother Richardre to doo his wyl of hym: he shall haue mercy of you. And yf ye Wyll not doo so: he shall doo lawte your Castell, and yf he maye take you by force: he shall make you for to be hanged, or dyc a truell death.

**T**han whā Reynawde vnder-  
stode these troynges þ Char-  
lemayne sente to hym: he b. gan for  
to smyle and sayd. Freende go tel the  
kyng that I am not the man þ shal  
doo any treasō. For if I shold doo  
it, he him self shold blame me for it.  
But and yf it please hym, my bre-  
therne. Hawgys and my self ben at  
his commaundement, and we shall  
gyue our selfe to hym as to our so-  
uerayne Lorde, our lyes lawe and  
our membris, and we shall yelde to  
hym the Castel al at hys Wyll. And  
tel the kyng that he shall doo well  
and wylly to take such kynges  
as w. ben. And yf Charlemayn  
refuseth this: I haue myne hope so  
faste to our Lorde god that wee shall  
not set moche by the kyng, nor of  
his great hoste. The messenger vn-  
derstode well the answere that Rey-

nawde had doone to hym: and in con-  
tyment he refourued to Charlemayne  
and shewed to hym all þ Reynawde  
had sayd wodre by Wodre. Whan the  
Emperour vnderstode the wordes  
of Reynawde: he began for to thynke  
a good w.yle, for he knew that Rey-  
nawde sayde out wyl. And than he  
sent for the Duke Maymes and O-  
gier the Dine and sayd vnto them.  
Lordes, Reynawde sedeth me wodre  
that he shall doo nothynge after my  
wyll. And for this cause I wyl that  
the castell be assayled forthwith. Sir  
sayd the duke Maymes me semeth  
as I haue vnderstante þ Reynawde  
offreth to you fayre, and yf ye Wyll  
belue me: ye shal take hym to mer-  
cy wyrth hys brethern. For ye knowe  
well that they be folke that may doo  
to you good seruice. And yf Rey-  
nawde be once in peace with you: ye  
shall be the better beloued and more  
dred therfore. But sith that your wil  
cannot accorde to the same: we maye  
not doo thereto. To assayle the castel  
I counsel it not. For ye see that the  
Castell is fayre and ryght stronge,  
and Reynawde hath hym in a good  
company of good men, and he and  
his brethern, & Hawgys ben suche  
knyghtes as ye knowe, yf ye dos  
assayle the castel: they shall yssue out  
at the fause posternes, and shall doo  
to you so great a dommage of your  
folke þ ye shall be wrothe for it, but  
and yf ye Wyll beleue my counsell: ye  
shall besyege the Castell so nypge  
that no man shal not come out nor  
entre in but he shalbe take, and thus  
ye shall now haue the Castell by fa-  
miliyng. For by no lawte ye shall  
not

not haue it.

**C**harclemayne understande well that the duke Haymes spake wel & wysely and sayd to hym. I wyl that it be doonethus as ye haue deuyled it. And thā he made cryethrough his hōle þ euer man shoulde lode hym self eyn night by the Castell, and he himselfe commaunded that his pavillion shoulde be pight as nigh the gate as coulde be doone. After thys was cryed ye shoulde haue seen Wyth in a little Whyle moe than ten thousand pavillions rounde aboute the Castell of Mountawban. Whan the hoste was al lodged: Bowlande departed out of the hoste well with two thousand knyghtes wel arm'd & wel horsed and all yonge men of pyme berde, whiche were very frenshe born of the douce fraunce, and went at þ other side of Mountawban, in a place whiche is called Balancon where was a riuer great and deape, in the whych was fylle ymough, and thre he dyd pycche his pavillion. And so full he was of great pryde: that he bad set the dragon aboue vpon hys pavillion, and did doo make the lodges of his felaues rounde about him. And they were in such a grounde where as they myght see from thens the woodes and the Ryuers and all the countrey, and Mountawban that was vpon the great roche well closed, & behelde the two great ryuers, that is to wit Gyround and Dordone, that enuyronned Mountawban.

**B**owlande saue the place so stronge that he meruayled greatly, & sayd to hys folke. Lordes I meruayle me soze of thys castell, & I meruayle not yf the sonnes of Aymō make warre agaynst mine uncle Charlemayne sythe that they haue so good and so stronge a place, for to wiche draw theym selfe. For I promyse you that Mountawban shal never be taken of vs, ye say not well sayd Mlyuer. For we tooke Well by force Lezonne, & also we overthrew downe the great towre and the doungeon of Sernoble, wherof I saye þ we shall well haue Mountawban, And yf Reynawode and his bretherne come not and yelde them selfe: they shalbe in daunger of death. I promyse you sayde Bowlande that they shall doo no thyng of that ye saye. For I promyse you that the gentyl Reynawode shal make vs so soze as ferde that the mooste hardy wolde be at þarys. Reynawode is prie and coragious, and his brethern in lyke wise, and also they haue within þ castell many noble and worthy knyghtes. Wherfore I say and I am of opynion, that as lōge as they haue byrde they shal never be taken. Whā þ pavillion of Bowlande was dyssed and pight by: Bowlande behelde the riuer and saw that it was full of byrdes, than he sayd to the Bishopp Turpin and to the other Barons, See howe we are lodged in a good place. Let vs goe in these Ryuers to let flee our fawcons. Soz sayde the Bishopp Turpin, goe in the name of God. Then lyghted Bowlande on horsebacke and tooke with hym

### The booke of the foyne

hym wel. xxx. knyghtes, and no mo. And they tooke their hawkes, & robe the moste parte of them vpon mus-  
les all unarmed save ther swerdes and came and spoyled them alouge the ryue spde, & tooke many byrdes vpon the water, in so great quantite that they laded a horse wythall, the bysshop Turpyn and Olyuer, Wente not therre but abode behynde for to keep the hoste, and they were before p-  
entes where they made two auncient knyghtes to recoute and tel how the great Cwy was taken and by-  
stroyed, this hangyng: Was a spye in the hoste of king Charlemayne, that longed vnto Reynawde, the Whyche he had sent therre for to know whac they wroght, and whiche they dyd & all the sayte of Rowlande, and inc-  
tinent the spye departed out of the hoste and Wente to Reynawde, and shewed to hym how Rowlande and Olyuer were gone to spoylunge th-  
eys Hawkes vpon the ryue, and wyth them thyppe of the best of the hoste.

**R**han the spye had recoun-  
ted these tidynges to Reynawde, he was of it ryght glad. Than he called his bretherne & Maugys his cosyn, & tolde them how Rowlande and Olyuer and. xxx of the beste barons of Charlemayne were gone to hawking vpon the ry-  
uers in the plaine of Balanc. what oug-  
it we to doo sayd Reynawde? Cosyn sayd Maugys we may well kill the if we wyl, for they ben well yroude & solythe, remembre ye not wel that a mellerger tolde you a moneth

a goe that Charlemayne had left all olde knyghtes of his Realme, & had taken of the yonge, & that he had di-  
parted all Gascoyne to the yonge bachelers of Fraunce: And by thys do-  
ban Rowlande & Olyuer ben moun-  
ted into so great pryde that they trou-  
in al the woldre is no man that dare  
assale them nor looke vpon them am-  
gely. But and ys ye wyl beleue me I  
shall tell you such a thyng, that  
shal make them wrothe & sor. And  
tha reynawde made sondre his horse  
& whiche he never herde solomed but  
& it was need, for Whan men hearde  
it: every man ran to his armes for  
to arm hym. And inconyncut Reyno-  
wde and his bretherne, and Maugys  
made themselfe to be armed. And Whan they were al armed and  
well apparcled: Reynawde lyghted  
vpon Bayarde his good horse, and  
spurred hym wyth his spurres, so  
that he made hym to lepe wiþ thyng  
foote of length. Ha good horse sayd  
Reynawde: how ye make your selfe  
to be beloued. And how wel I misse  
you this day. Let vs go assayle these  
vnhappy folke of the kyng Charle-  
mayne of Fraunce, and make we by  
suche a maner that we need not re-  
tourne wyse, and therof I praye  
you all.

**A**nd whan Reynawde sawe  
that his folke was wel appa-  
rcled, he wente out with his men at  
a false posterne, that they of the  
hoste coulde not see them. And they  
were wel in his company about fourte  
thousand wel horsed and wel ar-  
med, And a fader conduyted them  
through

Through the thickest of the forest, & Reynalde sayd to the foster, bryng me thou into the hoste of Rowland Without sayle, the foster answered to hym that he wolde doo it gladly. Than brought he them streyght to Balancion. And whan Reynalde sawe the pauplions: he shewed them to his folke, to whome he sayde, be holde what sayre gayne we haue founde heire yf weare dare set vpon them. Sayr sayd his men, let vs goe to it hardelye, for we dursle well al sayle the deuyl, whan ye be with vs. **N**o we shall I tell you of the bysshop Turpin that was abid to keep the hoste, wherof he had great feare because he wylt well agaynst whom he had a doo, and had a great suspcion and heaued vp hys head, & saw the Rauens & the Dawnes flee about vpon the fortresse. And from thens they tooke theyr syght ouer Rowlades pautilion. And made great noise. And so was he aferde, for he wende that it had be some euill token, and he behelde towarde the woodes that were great, and saw anon hys enemys, wherof he was sore afayde y almooste he was besyde hymself. Than he called Ogyer the Dane and sayd to hym, free knyght for goddes loue goe arme your selfe, and let our folke be armed, for heire comen our enemys. Now ben well Rowlande and Olyuer gone for nought that ar gone to the chasse and haue lefft theyr hoste thus in great daunger. I beleue that thei shal not sayle but they shal repente it sore. Whan Ogyer hearde Turpyn speake in thyg maner: he was very sore an angred, so went he

in his pauplion and made hym to be armed incontynent for to moue the hoste. And whan that the frenchemen hearde the trumpettes blowe: they put themself in ordeneunce nobly. Thys hanging: Ogyer was armed and mounted vpon hys horse Grayforde, and founide that a great parte of them was armed and al redye. Than Ogyer said to them Lordes thynke to defende you well, for we ben assayled.

**R**eynalde was abashed whan he sawe the hoste that moued so: and sayde vnto hys folke, Lordes we ben dyscouered, but yet vncertheit lese let vs go to it and assayle them they answered that they were all ready for to doo so. And whan that Reynalde vnderstode these wordes: he sayde vnto Hawgys. Sayre Colyn take a thousande knyghtes, and abyde heire within this wood. And if yee see that we need of more helpe: come than and succoure vs. Gladly sayde Hawgys your commaundemente shalbe doone. And wha that Reynalde had sayde so: he spured Bayarde with his spurres, & wente into the hoste, & passed the playne of Balancion, & the fyrt that he recoured it was Emery the erle of Nicol, and smote hym so that he shoued his speare thoroouge the bodye of hym and fell dead to the erth. Then sayd Reynalde ye shal abyde y bargayne. false Gloton, ye dyd a gracie folye whan ye came cuer into Gascoyne. And whan that he had sayde thus: he set hys hande to his swerde. And began for to make so gracie occysyon of

The booke of the four

of knyghtes that none can tel it. And whan Reynawde saw his enimies so strongely abasshed: he began for to say, Where is Bowlande and Ogier that so sore hath threatned me and my folke, and saying that we be strayours: But and they saye so afore me: I shold shew to them that they say not well nor trouth. whan the bishop Turpyn vnderstode this that Reynawde sayde: he sayde to Reynawde, ye nother saye well nor trouth, and thā he spurrd his horse with the spures, and went agaynst Reynawde, and gaue eche other so great strokes through theiř sheeldes that they brake bothe theiř spores al in peces. But neyther of theiř fell downe. And whan Reynawde had broken his spore: he set his hande to his swerde and gaue so great a stroke with it to the Bishop Turpyn vpo his helme that he made bothe the mā and the horse to rele sore. And whan Reynawde saw þis bishop in þis plighe he sayd to him, fether be ye the same Turpyn that prayseth your selfe so sore: By my faith we semeth it were better for you to be in some charche to syng some masse then for to be heere, wenting to greue me.

**T**han whan the bishop Turpyn vnderstode the reproche that Reynawde made to hym: he trowed well to haue gone oute of hys mynde for it. And set handes to hys swerde, and went vpo Reynawde. And then was the hoste moued of one partye and of the other. Shorly to speke: there were so many spores broken, so many a knyght ouerthowen-

and so man̄ horſes dead: that it was great pitie for to see. There was Ogyer the Dane that had his sheeld afore hys brest, and his swerde in his hand and sat vpon Brayforde the whiche smote Rycharde the brother of Reynawde so great a stroke: that his horſe fell downe to therth. Whā Rycharde salwe hym selfe a ground: he rose vp agayne quickly as a knyght prue and valyant. And tooke his swerde in his hande, and Ogier passed beyonduſ for to folow his course and began to crye the baner saynt Denis. Whā Reynawde saw his brother Rycharde cast on ground: he was wrothe for it. So spurrd he hys horſe Bayarde, and went agayne Ogier the dane, a Ogier against bi. and gaue eche other great strokes vpo theiř sheeldes. Reynawde smote Ogyer by so great force that the horſes gyrd nor þe peytrall myght not help. But that Ogier muste falle downe sadle and all to the grounde.

**W**han Reynawde saw Ogier at the erth: he tooke Brayforde by the bryde, and sayde to Ogier, ye haue doone cupill for to haue casted downe my brother afore me, ye knowe that ye be of my lignage and my cosyn nyghe, ye shold helpe and defende vs agaynst all men. And ye doo worse than the other, wherof I say it is no bede of a cosyn but of an enemy, neverthelesse take your horſe agayne vpon suche condicione that ye shall doo to me a pleasure at a nother time if I haue need, the whiche thinge God forbede, cosyn sayde Ogier ye speake as a good mā, and promise

promise you that ye Ieaple of this, that ye saye: punyssh me so; ic, Reynawode ycelved him agayne hys horse, and helde the sy; op to Ogier. Whan he tygheed agayne vpon hys horse brayfode. And wyt ic that Ogier sich dyd muche for Reynawode and ye aidyd hym again vpon his re-ward at the roche mountebon, wher of he was rebuked of Charlemaine shamefully. Whan Ogier was sette on his horse again: he set hand to hys swerde & entred amonge the thickest of the gascoines, & began to hew the so soze that he made them all to flee afore him. Whan Hawgis saw that all the battayles were thus medled togidher: he cam out of the wood, and came to Balancon and put himselfs & his folke among the greatest prece and began to cleave and hew so hard heades legges and armes, that none durste abyde longe afore him. And than the strenghmen were so soze and werye that they mighre no more and were all dyscomfited at the passage of the ryuer, than they dyd put thermy selfe to flight, and the gascoines chassed them all beating a longe mile, & after returned to the hoste, and tooke al the hauoyz that they founde there, and Hawgis came to the pavillion of Bowland and tooke the dragon of golde that was set vpon the said pavillion, and they passed through Balancon, and so returned to Mounteban with grete ioye. And wha they were come: there they disarmed them selfe & eate right wel. For they had well mister therof. Whan they hadde eaten at chesc ease: Reynawode made bynghe the booye afore him. And after

dealed ic am ong his folke. And keepe to him no: one peny. Whan Reynawode had thus departed all this goodes: Hawgis went vpon the great towre of Mounteban. And dyd set the dragon of Bowland vpon the same, so that the folke of chesc of bothe sides of the castell myght see it. And whan Charlemaine saw the dragon vpon the towre of Mounteban: he wende that Bowland his neuew had taken Mounteban by force, but the chinge went wel oþer wise. For Reynawode and his brotherne had discomfited al the folke of Bowland and had brought with them al theyz hauoyz and the dragon of the sayde Bowland they had set vpon the towre of Mounteban.

¶ How Reynawode and his brotherne were berrayed and sold to the kinge Charlemayn by the king yon of gascoyn that sent them in the playne of Valcoloutes all without armes but their swerdes, and were mounted vpon mules, and were cloched with mantelleg of scarlet fured with ermine. Fro the whiche they escaped by the wylle of god, but they suffred muche payne and great traunyle, for they were greatly hurt and soze woodded, but of h king Charlemains party abode there dead felques of Mortillon and manye other barons and worthy knyghtes, wherof the kinge Charlemayn was wroche and soray.

¶ Capitulum. lx.

The booke of the four

of knyghtes that none can tel it. And whan Reynawde saw his enimies so strongely abasshed: he began for to say, Where is Rowlande and Ogier that so sore hath thretened me and my folke, and saying that we be traytours: But and they say so a sore me: I shold shew to them that they say not well nor trouth. Whan the bishop Turpyn vnderstode this that Reynawde sayde: he sayde to Reynawde, ye nother saye well nor trouth, and thā he spurred his horse with the spurres, and went agaynst Reynawde, and gaue eche other so great strokes through theyz sheeldes that they brake bothe theyz speres al in peces. But neyther of theym fell downe. And whan Reynawde had broken his spere: he set his hande to his swerde and gaue so great a stroke with it to the Bishop Turpyn vpon his helme that he made bothe the man and the horse to rele soze. And whan Reynawde saw þis bishop in þis plight he sayd to him, fether be ye the same Turpyn that prayseth your selfe so sore: By my faith we semeth it were better for you to be in some churche to syng some masse then for to be heere, wenting to greue me.

**T**han whan the bishop Turpyn vnderstode the reproche that Reynawde made to hym: he trowed well to haue gone oute of hys mynde for it. And set handes to hys swerde, & went vpon Reynawde. And then was the hoste moued of one partye and of the other. Shorly to speke: there were so many speres broken, so many a knyght overthowen

and so mani hōzles dead: that it was great pitie for to see. There was Ogier the Dane that had his sheild a fore hys brest, and his swerde in his hand and sat vpon Brayforde the Whych smote Rycharde the brother of Reynawde so great a stroke: that his horse fell downe to therth. Whā Rycharde salwe hym selfe a ground: he rose vp agayne quickly as a knyght prue and valyaunt. And tooke his swerde in his hande, and Ogier passed beyonde for to folow his course and began to crye the baner saynt Denis. Whā Reynawde saw his brother Rycharde cast on ground: he was wrothe for it. So spurred he hys horse Bayarde, and went agaynste Ogier the dane, & Ogier against hi. & gaue eche other great strokes vpon theyz sheeldes. Reynawde smote Ogier by so greate force that the hōzles gyrdyn nor þe peytrell myght not help. But that Ogier muste falle downe saddle and all to the grounde.

**W**han Reynawde saw Ogier at the erth: he tooke Brayforde by the brydle, and sayde to Ogier, ye haue doone euyll for to haue castle downe my brother afore me, ye knowe that ye be of my lignage and my colyn nyghe, ye shold helpe and defende vs agaynst all men. And ye doo worse than the other, wherof I say it is no bede of a colyn but of an enemy, neuerthelesse take your horse agayne vpon suche condicione that ye shall doo to me a pleasure at a nother tyme if I haue need, the Whych the thinge God forbede, colyn sayde Ogier ye speake as a good man, and promise

promise you that ye Ieaple of this, dealed it amang his folke. And keepe  
 that ye saye: ge punyssh me for it, Reynawde yeelde him agayne hys  
 horse, and helde the syrop to Ogier. Whan he lyghted agayne vpon hys  
 horse brayfode. And wyt it that Ogier sich dyd muche for Reynawde  
 and ye aidyd hym again vpon his re-  
 ward at the roche mountayn, wher  
 of he was rebuked of Charlemaine  
 shamefullly. Whan Ogier was sette  
 on his horse again: he set hand to hys  
 swerde & entred amonge the thickest  
 of the gascoynes, & began to hew the  
 so soore that he made them all to flee  
 afore him. Whan Hawgis saw that  
 all the batailles were thus medled  
 togidher: he cam out of the wood, and  
 came to Balancon and put himselfe  
 & his folke among the greatest prece  
 and began to cleave and hew so hard  
 heades legges and armes, that none  
 durste abyde longe afore him. And  
 than the stensmen were so soore and  
 werye that they myghte no more and  
 were all dyscomfited at the passage  
 of the ryuer, than they dyd pur thermy  
 selfe to flight, and the gascoynes cha-  
 sed them all beating a longe mile, &  
 after returned to the hoste, and tooke  
 al the haudyz that they founde theris,  
 and Hawgis came to the paullion  
 of Rowland and tooke the dragon of  
 golde that was set vpon the said pa-  
 ullion, and they passed throught Balancon,  
 and so returned to Mountawban with greate ioye. And wha they  
 were come: here they disarmed them  
 selfe & eate right wel. For they had  
 well mister therof. Whan they hadde  
 eaten at their ease: Reynawde made  
 byngt the bofyd afore him. And after  
 to him no: one pena. Whan Reynawde  
 had thus departed all this goodes:  
 Hawgis went vpon the great tow-  
 re of Mountawban. And dyd set the  
 dragon of Rowland vpon the same,  
 so that the folke of thoste of bothe si-  
 des of the castell myghte see it. And  
 whan Charlemaine saw the dragon  
 vpon the towre of Mountawban: he  
 wende that Rowland his neuew had  
 taken Mountawban by force, but  
 the chinge went wiþ other wise. For  
 Reynawde and his bretherne had  
 discomfited al the folke of Rowland  
 and had broughte with them al theyz  
 haulyz and the dragon of the sayde  
 Rowland they had set vpon the tow-  
 re of Mountawban.

¶ How Reynawde and his bretherne  
 were betrayed and sold to the kinge  
 Charlemain by the kynge von of gal-  
 coyn that sent them in the playne of  
 Valcoloutes all without armes but  
 their swerdes, and were mounted vpon  
 mules, and were clothed with  
 mantilles of scarlet furred with er-  
 mine. Fro the Whiche they escaped  
 by the wylle of god, but they suffred  
 muche Payne and great traunyle, for  
 they were greatly hurt and soore wou-  
 ded, but of hys king Charlemains par-  
 ty abode there dead felquis of Mor-  
 tyllon and manye other barons and  
 worthy knyghtes, wherof the kinge  
 Charlemain was wroche and soray.

¶ Capitulum. ix.

L. i. Notes



**D**o we must we cel of Rowland  
and of Oliver, that came a-  
gaine fro hawking vpon the tuer  
Wych theyr felowes, and bescmyn  
they were ryghte gladde that they  
hadde so well chased and taken a  
greate quanticie of byrdes, and thus  
as they came agayne: they met Wych  
vamp Ramvault the free knyght that  
tolde them by a great angre, ye haue  
taken manye byrdes see that ye be  
good marchauntes & selle your prop  
weal. For a promyse you ye shall ne  
uer selle your chace and hawking so  
deare as it hath caue you. And ye  
haue taken byrdes: I let you wyt  
that Reinald & his brether haue  
taken knyghtes, and horses, and  
whan ye see yowre dragon vpon the  
greate towre of Bruncabwan, ye

oughte we to be than glad & thanke  
muche therof: he loute sonnes of It  
mon. For all tho that seen it seethes  
of an heyght: they ween that ye haue  
gotten the castell by force. Whan  
Rowland vnderstood these wordes:  
it lacked lityll that he wente oute of  
hys mynde, he lyghted downe from  
hys mule, and lete hymselfe vpon  
a stone, and bega to thinke and muse  
soze, and so dyd Oliver in lyke wise,  
and Whan Rowlande had thoughte  
ynough: he called to hym the dyshop  
Turpyn, Ogier the dane, & Richard  
of Normandye and sayd to theym.  
For god fayre lordes what counscyll  
gyue you me vpon hys deed: For I  
dateneuer more kynde my selfe before  
my vnde the kyng Charlemayne,  
for I feare me to soze of eyll reporte  
and

and that menne tell of me otherwysse  
than the trouth. And he said to the  
byshop Turpyn. For goddes loue  
goodfader in god geue me leaue to  
departe, for I wolde goe into the holy  
londe to see the sepulture of our lord  
for to warre therayenst the saracins  
for siche this myshappis thus come  
to me: I wyl no more beare armes a-  
yens thisten men. **S**ayde the by-  
shop Turpyn, be not dysmayed for  
nothinge, for thys is but an vse of  
warre, such a chyng befalleth ofteyn  
to manye one, I promise you that ye  
shall haue or thre dayes been past  
as many of the folke of Reyna Wde  
as he hathe of yours. **S**ir said Row-  
lande ye geue me good courage and  
I promise you that to your prudence  
I shall arrest my selfe. Whan Row-  
land had said thise wordes: the bys-  
hop Turpyn & Ogier dyd so muche  
that ther made him iight a horseback  
and they went togheter all to warde  
Charlemayn, & wit that after Row-  
lande came mo than a hundred yonge  
gentilmen all a foote by cause they  
had lost their horses, and whan they  
were come to thoste of Charlemain:  
they went steyghie to the paulliton  
of the duke Haymes, and whan Row-  
land entred within he was ashamed  
and abode there two dayes that he  
came not out, & durst not goe to the  
couerte nor loke no man in the face but  
helde himselfe in the saide paulliton  
as a man all abashed of the great so-  
towch he had at his heart. whan Row-  
land & Olyuer was bus abide  
in the duke Haymes tent, this han-  
gynge: Turpyn came to warde kinge  
Charlemayne in hys tent. Where

he entred Witchin & saluted the kyng  
right honourably, and the emperour  
rendred to him his saute, and after  
sayde to him. Damp byshop ye be  
welcome. **S**ayde said Turpyn god be  
your keeper, & I beseche you to yaelo  
me, yf I tell you any thing that shal  
displease you. No wyl haue y said  
the king whac ye wyl. For nothing  
that ye can tell, canne no dysplease  
me. **S**ayde the byshop Turpyn,  
wote that the fourre sonnes of Aymon  
haue discomfited vs. And haue take  
with them al that we had in our ten-  
tes, bothe horses and harneys and al  
our paullions and namely the draz-  
gon of Rowland beside a greate num-  
ber of prisoners, and they haue slain the  
moste party of our folke.

**T**han wha the emperour vns-  
derstode this that Turpyn  
had tolde him: he was a long while  
as a man all forcened. And than he  
swore saint Denys by greate angre,  
and said. Now haue ye found that ye  
went telling & the great pride that ye  
had ye haue wel found. At this hou-  
te he did send through al his hoste by  
expresse wordes: that evertylde and  
baron shold come incontinent afore  
him in his tente for he wolde keep  
parlyament with them. Whan the  
princes knew that commaundement  
of the king: ye shold haue seen them  
come with greate haste toward the  
king, and whan they were all assem-  
bled within the kinges paulliton: he  
stoode vpon his feete & said to them  
in this maner. Lordes I haue sent  
to you for to shew unto you that  
to vs is happed of newe. Now wit

The booke of the four

that the four sonnes of Aymon haue  
discomfited all youte knyghtes that  
Rowlande my newe w had with him  
at Baliancon, wherof I am ryghte  
wroch and sorwe, for I wolde I had  
lost a greater thinge, and that thys  
were not happed, but a thynge that  
can not be amended: must be suffred  
and borne as well as men may, I re-  
qure and beseche you all my lordes  
and freendes vpon the othe that ye  
haue made to me that ye wll coun-  
seyl me truelye howe I shal be tu-  
led in thys matter, and howe I  
myghte haue thys lastell of Moun-  
tawban, whan the kynge had thus  
spoken: there was none so hardore  
that euer durst saye one Worde but  
onely the Duke Naymes of Bauter  
the prie and wylle knyght. Syz said  
the Duke Naymes, ye aske counsel  
for to beseige Mounabwe, but no  
manne that hache any reson in his  
heade: oughre not to counseyl you  
the same, for wylle the daunger is  
there greate because that Guynard  
the lord of Berne knoweth of it,  
and so dooth Godfrey the Lord of  
Porcy that are good knyghtes and  
soydred for theyz Worshynes, and  
also the kynge von that is at cholou-  
se, the whiche shall come all to helpe  
and succour Bernewd: by cause they  
be of his alliance, and also they know  
that he is one of the best knyghtes  
of the wylde. And they knowe well  
also that Reynald gyuertheo vs mu-  
che to doone, and so I tell you if they  
set themselfe togyther: they shal giue  
you ynowgher to doo, and shall maye  
beate to you a great dommage. But  
and ye wil haue good counseyl, and

belue me: I shal gyue it to you truelye. Syz sende worde to kynge von,  
that he withdraw not nor keep your  
ennayes within hys londe, but that  
he yeeld them in to your handes for  
to doo with them your pleasure and  
your commaundemente. And yf he  
wyll not doo so: ye shall destroye all  
his londe and no mercy ye shall haue  
upon him. Naymes saide the kynge,  
nowe gyue you me good counseyl,  
and I wyll that ye haue saide: be  
doone incontynence. Than the kynge  
made come an Heraude of hys, and  
sayde to hym. Nowe goe lyghelye to  
Tholouse, and tell kynge von on my  
behauife that I am entred into Gas-  
coyne accompanied of the twelue  
peeres of Fraunce with an hundred  
thousand kyghting menne, and with  
Rowlande, and Olyuer, and tell  
hym that by saynt Denys of Fraunce  
þe yeelde me not my enmyes, that  
been the four sonnes of Aymon:  
that I shal waste and destroye all  
hys londe, nor to hym shall abyde  
noþer cyte nor lastell, but it shal  
be ouer tho Wen to the earth. And  
yf I canne take hym: I shal take  
from hym hys crowne, so shall he be  
called kynge ouer tho Wen. Syz  
sayde the Heraude your commaun-  
dement I shal doo without batyng  
of one word, euen as your good grace  
pleaseth to commaunde me, and thus  
departed the Heraude from the hoste  
of Chatlemayne, and tooke hys way  
to warde Tholouse, there he founde  
the kynge von of Gascoyn in his pal-  
lays with a right fayre company, &  
assone that he saw the kynge: he knew  
hym well, so made he than to hym  
the

the reuerence, and said to him in the  
Emperours behalfe the thing worde  
by worde wherof he was sent there.

**A**nd whan the kyng yon vnder-  
stoode the Heraude that spake  
so: he bowed hys head towarde the  
earche, and began to thinke a longe  
while, and said not a word. And whā  
he had thus longe mused ynoughē:  
he said to the messāger. Goodfreend  
ye muste tary heere a scuen nyght I  
praye you, and than I shall tell you  
my wyl, and what I purpose to doo.  
Syr saide the Heraude I shall abyde  
With a good will sith that it please  
you. Than wente the kyng yon in to  
hys chambre and eyght earles with  
him, and comaunded that the doores  
should be well shette, and than they  
set cheim all vpon a benche. And  
whan they were al set: the kyng yon  
tooke the Worde and said in this ma-  
ner. Lordes I beseche and require v-  
pon the faith that ye owe to me that  
ye geue me good counsayll to the ho-  
noure of me, not at my will: but by  
reasōn. Nowe wite that the kynge  
Charlemaing is entered within my lōd  
With the tuelue peeres of Fraunce,  
and Rowlande and Oliuer, with an  
hundred thousande men. And he sen-  
deth to me Word, but if I deliuer vñ-  
to him the four sonnes of Aimon: he  
shall not leaue me nother citie nor  
towne, but he shal cast all to the earth  
and shal take the crown fro my head,  
and so shal I becallad a kynge ouer-  
thowen. My fader heide neuer no-  
thing of him and no more shal I, it is  
better to die with great worty: than  
to liue in great shame.

**T**han whan the king yon had  
thus spoken: there rose vp a  
knight named Godfraye that was  
neue to king yon and sayd to him,  
sir I metueyll me that ye aske coun-  
sayll for to betray suchē knightes as  
ben the four sonnes of Aimon, Rei-  
naude is your man and your carnall  
freend, ye know what good he hath  
doone to you and to your londe. It is  
not longe a goe that he dyscomfited  
Marcyl the puylaunc Sarasin and  
chased him well fourte mile, and smot  
of his heade and presented it to you,  
and ye haue promysed and sworne to  
him that ye shal defend and keep him  
by ayenst all menne. Mine vncle is  
ye chynke to fayile him and wil not  
holde that ye haue promised to him:  
let him and his brecherne goe out of  
your londe in to some other countrie  
to seeke theyr aduenture. And hapely  
they shal serue some lorde that shal  
doo to them more good then ye wyl  
doo, and also I praye you my deare  
lord and vncle as much as I can: that  
ye wil doo nothing that turneth you  
to blame, nor to dyshonour, nor that  
can be caste by maner of reproche to-  
ward your frendes. That spake the  
olde earle of Ansom and said. Sir ye  
wil that we give you counsayll, if ye  
wil doo that we shal counsayll you: ye  
shal doo wel for your selfe. Nowe say-  
on hardely said the king that semeth  
you best to be doo, for I wyl doo as  
ye shal counsayll me. Syr sayde the  
earle ye haue wel heard saye, and so  
it was trouth, that Benes slew the  
earle Lohier, wherfore Charlemaing  
sente for him and made hys head to  
be smyten of at Parys, and at that

### The booke of the four

time Reynawd and his brethern were verye yonge, and of them was none mercy on made. And afterwarde whan they were great: the kyng wold amende ic to them. For the thynge touchech them, but they had the here so full that they wold take none amedes, and lasted they hate longe, wherof euer syth hathe come greate hirnes and euylls. For Reynawde sle we Berchelot the neve we of the kyng with a chesse horde, for I know not why I shoulde hyde anye chynge fro your knowledge, ye knowe well that Charlemaine is so myghty a kyng that he never vnderooke war, but he came to his aboue of it. Wherfore I doo geue you counseyl that ye yeelde Reynawde and his brethern and Hawgis to the kyng Charlemayne, and thus shall ye be delyuered of a greate thoughte, and of a greate daunger. And after thys speake the erle of Robandes and sayde, syr yf ye wil doo this that the erle of Ansem conseilleth you: yee and we shall be craytours. For Reynawd is your man, and so muche ye haue loued him that ye haue giuen hym your sister to his wife. And whan he came in these marches, he came not lyke a knave: but he came to you as a noble knyghte true and Worþy. For he brought in his fela wship fourtchoulande men well arm'd and well horsed, and said to you afore vs all oþer he tooke of his spurres, that he had warre with the kyng Charlemaine. Neuerthelesse ye receiued him with goodherce, and after made of him at your wil. And for you he conquessted man batailles, and did so much

that he delyuered you from the handes of your enemyes. And therfore syr I tell you that ye be not Worþy to calle your self, ne to bere the crowne vpon your heade: if for feare of deach ye betay such knyghtes as are the fourt sonnes of Symon. For ye haue not yet loste nocher Castell noz towne, if ye doo it otherwysse: ye shal be taken and holden for a craytoure. After spake Inchony the olde erle & sayde to the kyng. Syr beleue not this counseyl, for suche counseyl he gyueth you now wherof ye shall be betrayed at the last. For I know better chyntre of Reynawde than anye man that is heere, ye must vnderstoode sir that Reynawd was sonne to a man that had but one towne, and was so proude that he dapyned to sette noȝ obeye his lord the kyng of Fraunce but sle we Berchelot by his greac pride and outrage. Wherfore the kyng Charlemaine chased hym out of the realme of Fraunce. Now it is happed so that he is in Gascoyne, and ye haue gyuen to hym great landes, and because he hathe your syster to wife: he is become so proude that nonc maye dure afor hym. And he setch not a peny nocher by you nor by your courte. Wherfore I sylvere to you by þ head that I beare, if he may by any wise he shal take the lise from you for to haue all the realme to him selfe. Wherfore I aduise to you by rightwysse counseil: that ye yeeld him and his bretherne to Charlemayne. And ye shall doo as a wise kyng, and so shall you please the great warch of the kyng Charlemayne of Fraunce. After spake the duke Guymarde of Bayon

Bayon and sayd to the kyng. Sir  
I tell you that the earle Anthony ly-  
eth fally, and giuereth you evill coun-  
seyl, for Reynawde is sonne to the  
duke Simon of Aldeine, which is of  
ryght great lygnage. And Chatle-  
mayne made to slea the duke Ber-  
nes of Argemount their uncle by great  
wronge, and Reynawd tooke therof  
vengeaunce vpon Berthelot by good  
reason, and that more is it was his  
body defendinge. Wherof I tell you  
that no kinge is not worthye to beate  
any crowne nor to haue honour that  
wil do treason for cherening of a no-  
ther lorde. And after spake Guymard  
an olde knyghte and sayde. By god  
Guymard I beleue that ye haue lost  
your lfe, to counscill the kyng you  
for to beate our Reynawd, ayenst the  
great king Charlemain, for to make  
al the lond of Gascoyne for to be de-  
stroied, wherof ye shold care but lit-  
telle, if the realme were wasted and  
the kyng brougthe to shame, so that  
ye had laude and prasing. Than said  
Guymard thou list fally, and if we  
two were in an other place than here:  
I shold shew thee that thou were an  
olde doted and a foole. For I wolde  
not conseyl the kyng you, but al thing  
that concernech his honour, and pro-  
fite also of his realme.

**A**fter spake one named Sir hec-  
tor, an auncient earle & said to  
the king. Sir ye aske counseyl  
of lufe that can not counsell thei  
selfe. For it is all other wryte thenne  
Guymarde hath. And I ensure you  
that it ye lose in this matter: he shal

lese theþþ noþþing. Sir ye knoþþ  
that Reynawde is a knyghte good y-  
nough. But by his greate pþyde: he  
hath made warre with Chatleman  
for he slewe Berthelot his neewe  
by his outrage. Now he is come in  
Gascoyne, and ye haue gyuen him  
your lster in matþage, wherof ye  
dyd great folþ, and ye made hym the  
castel of Mounþawban vpon the stro-  
gest grounde that is within your  
realm. Now is come the kyng Chat-  
leman that hath besieged him, wher-  
of I counseyl you that ye accorde  
with the kyng Charlemain, and de-  
liver your selfe of Reynawd as soo-  
ne as ye may. For it is better that ye  
lese lour knyghtes, than al your real-  
me, take from him your lster and gi-  
ue her to another that is a greate  
gentilman than is Reynawd, and  
that haue no lufe enemys as is  
Charlemaine, and fynde some mea-  
nes to yelde Reynawde and his bre-  
therne to the kyng Charlemain. And  
this ye shall well may doo wi. houe  
blame yf ye wil doo that I haþ cou-  
seil you. Freend said the kyng you. I  
am ready to doo that whiche ye shall  
counseil me aboue al other þþben heere

**T**han whan the kyng you of  
Gascoyne saw that þþ moþe  
party of his counseil accorded to that  
he shoulde yelde Reynawde and his  
bretherne to king Charlemaine he be-  
gan to weep righte tenderly, and said  
in him selfe that no body could here it,  
by god Reynawd I am soze charged  
for you, nowe shall departe my lufe  
for you, for ye shall lese the body, & I  
shal lese theþþ þþ lufe of god & of his  
mo,

the booke of the four

nother, for I shal never synde mercy  
in hym, for to be tray siche a knyght  
as ye be. But I tell you that G D  
Shewed that day for Reinawode a fay-  
re miracle, for the chamb're where the  
counseil was kept that was al white:  
ch Junged colour & became al blacke  
as a cole. Lordes sayde the kynge  
yon, I see well that I muste yeelde  
the fourt sonnes of Iymon, sith that  
the most parte of you accordeþ ther-  
to, and I shal doo it, sith that that ye  
counseyl me so. But I wot wel that  
my soule shal never haue therof no  
pardon. And shal be therfore taken  
all my life as a Judas, and than they  
left the counseyl, and were ouce of  
the chamb're. And whan the kynge  
was come out of the chamb're: he set  
him downe vpon a benche, and be-  
gan to chynke soze. And as he was  
in this thought: he began for to weep  
soze for greate pittie that he had. And  
whan he hadde thoughte and wepte  
ynough: he called his secretary, and  
saide to him. Come for the syr Peter  
and write a leter fro me to the kynge  
Charlemaine, as I shal tell you. It  
is that I lende him salutacion with  
good loue. And yf he wyl leaue me  
my londe in peace: I promyse hym  
that afor ten dayes been passed. I  
shall deliuer vnto him the fourt son-  
nes of Iymon and he shal find them  
in the playne of Galcolouts, clothed  
with scarlet, furred with cimpres,  
and rydynge vpon mules, berynge  
in their handes floutes, and Roses  
for a token, for because þat menne  
shall better knowe them. And I shal  
make them for to be accompanied  
of eyghte earles of my realme, and if

they scape from him: that he blame  
me not for it. Than sayde the secre-  
tary, sy; your commaundement shal  
be doone, the whiche cooke anon pen  
and ynke and wrote the letters word  
for Worde as the kynge had deuised to  
hym. And when they were wryten  
and sealed: the kynge called hys stu-  
arde and sayde to hym. Now make  
you ready on horsebacke, and goe to  
the syege of Mountawban, and re-  
comende me vnto the kynge Chat-  
mayne, and gyue hym these letters.  
And tell hym yf he wyl quyte my lon-  
de: I shal doo this that is of reason,  
and none otherwyse. Sy; sayde the  
stuarde I shal gladly doo yout com-  
maundement, doube not for it, than  
went the stuarde in his house, and  
made him readye on horsebacke, and  
rode out of Cholouse, and cooke the  
heraude of the kynge Chatlemaine  
with him. And whan they were com-  
vnto Mountawban: they founde the  
Emperour Charlemaine in his pa-  
uyllion, wher the stuarde lyghed  
down, and went within and salured  
the kynge Chatlemayne fro the kynge  
yon of Gascoign, and presented him  
the letters fro his behalfe, and sayde  
vnto hym. Right myghty Emperour  
the kynge yon lendeþ you Worde by  
me that yf ye wyl ensure his lond: he  
shall fulfil the tenout of this letere,  
and otherwyse he wyl not.

**W**han Chatlemayne vnderstood  
these rydynges: he was ryghte  
gladde, he cooke the letere of  
the messenger, and called Rowlande  
to him & Duyuet, the bishop Tur-  
pyn, the duke Haymes, Ogier the  
Dane

dane, and the xii. peers of Fraunce, it unto you. Wryt that I sende him and said to them. Sayre lordes be not salutacion and good loue, and that it displeased, goe out of this paullion, for I wil talke with this messenger priuily. Syr said they al with a good will. And than they wene all out of the paullion, and whan they were al gone: Charlemayne opened the lettres and red them all alonge. And he found therin that whiche he most desyred in this worlde, that was the treason as it was ordeyned, whan Charlemaine had red the lettre: he myghte be no gladder than he was. And of the great Joye that he hadde of it he began to smyle. Syr sayd the stuardes yf ye see oughe in the lettre that please ih you nor: blame not me for it. For I know not yet what it is. Than sayde Charlemaine to the stuardes. Your lorde the kynge yon speakech ful curteously, and if he doo that he dooth me to Wryt: he shall be well my good freend. And so shall I doo to hym great worship, and that make hym a great man, and also I shal defende hym ayenst all men. Syr sayde the stuardes of this that ye say: ye shal glie me sureties yf it please you. Than said Charlemayne, I wyl doo so gladiye. This ys were vpon the sonne of the vyrgyn Mary and also vpon saint Denis of Fraunce whose man I am. Hys ye haue said all ynoough answered the messenger of king yon, and none other surety falle of you.

**T**han Charlemain called his chamberlayne & said to hym make a lettre to king yon of gascogne in my behalfe, as I shal deuyse

**T**han whan the messenger of the king yon was gone: Charlemaine made come before hym Foulques of Morillon, and Ogier the dane, and sayd to them. Lordes I haue sence for you. For I wil that ye wyl knowe a littill of my secretes,

Bis

The booke of the four

But I tell you vpon your faiche that  
none other shall know the same but  
only we vs thre vnto the tyme that  
the dedoe be accomlyshed. Syr sayd  
Ogier ys ye thinke that we shoulde  
discouer youre secrete: tell it vs not  
And if ye truste vs: declare hardelye  
your pleasure. Lettes said the empes-  
toure to Ogier, ye be well worthy to  
knowe al, for I know you for a good  
and a trusty knight. Sic said Ogier  
your good gramersey. But I tell you  
that I wyl not know nothyng ther-  
of, but that ye take kynde mine othe  
therupon. Lordes said Charlemaine  
I take it. Nowe shall ye goe to the  
plaine of Walcolours with thre hū-  
dred knighthes wel armed, and whan  
ye shall come there: ye shall finde the  
four sonnes of Simon. And thus I  
commaunde you that ye bryng them  
to me other dead or quicke, Syr said  
Ogier I saw them never but armed,  
howe shall we know theym: Ogier  
said Charlemaine ye shal well may  
knowe theym. For eche of theym  
shall be clothed wryth a manell of  
scarlette furred wryth ermynes and  
shall beare roses in theyr handes.  
Syr said Ogier that is a good co-  
ken, and we shal doo your comman-  
demente. They made none other ta-  
ctyng but departed from the hoste of  
the kynge Charlemaine as pruelye  
as they myght doo. And rode to the  
plaine of Walcolours, and pue them  
selve in a busshement wryth in a  
woode all of setwyn trees, vnto the  
tyme that the four sonnes of Simon  
came to the playne of Walcolours.  
Ha god whye knewe not Reynawde

and hys bretherne this mor: all trea-  
son: for they Wolde not haue come  
therere vpon mules: But they shoulde  
haue come therere vpon good hōsles,  
and well armed, as prue and worthy  
knighthes that they were. But god  
had not remedied it: chys Reynawde  
and his bretherne shoulde haue been  
soone taken in a litle space, for they  
were in daunger of deach. Whan O-  
gier ydane & Foulques of Morillo  
were in their busshement: Foulques  
called his folke and sayde to theym.  
Fayre lordes I oughe well to hate  
Reynawde, for he slewe myne uncle  
by great wronge. Nowe am I come  
to the poynt that I shall be auenged  
on hym, and I shall tell you howe.  
Nowe wryt ic that the kynge son of  
Gascorn hath beryayed the and they  
shall come hyther anon all wharmed  
sauft their swerde. And therfore I  
praye you all that ye chynke to smite  
well vpon them, then shall I know  
who louerth me best. Doo so that  
none of them scape, and ye shall be  
well my good frendes, and I shall  
loue you well.

**N**ow shal we telle you of the  
kynge son that was at Thos-  
louse. Whan he had receyued the let-  
tres of the kynge Charlemayne: he  
called to hym his secretary Godras  
and said to him. Looke what this let-  
tre sayeth. And the clerke bakte in  
continent the seale, and beheld the te-  
noute of the lettre, and sounde howe  
Reynawde and hys bretherne shoulde  
be beryayed and liuered to the deach, &  
whan

Whan the clerke had redde the letter: made halle for to fulfil his promise.  
 he began to weep soze tenderly, and And incontinenche lyghted on horse,  
 if it had not be soz doubt of the king: bache, and tooke in his company a  
 he wolde gladly haue receted it, and hundred men wel attaied, and tooke  
 whan kinge pon saw his secretarye his waye to Warde Mounteban.  
 weep: he saide thus to him, keep wel And as soone as he myght: he came &  
 upon youlyfe that ye hide no thinge entred with in at the gate fletcher.  
 fro me, but tell me all that the le- And whan he was within: he made  
 tter conceieth and what the kynge his folke to lodge them in the borow  
 Charlemayne wryteth to me. By my And he went vp to the palays as he  
 fayth said Godras. It is a soze thing was wont to doo whā he cam there.  
 for to reterset. Nowe lighelyc sayde The whan his suster the wife of Res-  
 the kyng pon, tell me what the kyng naud witt of the coming of the king  
 Charlemayne sendeth me, sy: sayde pon her brother: he came ayenst him  
 Godras, I shall tell ic you gladiye. and tooke him by the hand, & Wolde  
 And than he beganne to shewe to haue kisst him as shē was accus-  
 kyng pon howē Charlemayne sente ed to doo whan he came there, but  
 him worde, that yf he wolde doo as the king full of euell treason turned  
 he had wryten vnto him: he shoule hys face a syde, and sayde he had the  
 encreace his power of fourtene good tooth ache, and Wolde not speake  
 castelles more than he had. For the with her but lycell. But he sayde that  
 surete wheros: he swereth vnto ycu men should make him a bedde ready,  
 vpon our lord god, and saint denys For he Wolde test him selfe a lycell  
 of Fraunce his patrone. And he sen- And whan he was layde: he began  
 deth you fourte mancelles of scarle- soze to chinke, and saide to him selfe.  
 furred with ermines, that ye shall Ha good lord, what haue I wrought  
 geue to the faute sonnes of Aymon, ayenst the best knyghtes of the wold  
 for to were theym, & thus they shall that I haue betrayed so fally. Now  
 be knownen. For Charlemaine will shall they be hanged to morow wch-  
 not that none take any harme, but on- our faure. I pray god to haue mercy  
 ly the fourte sonnes of Aymon. And and pitie vpon them: Now maye I  
 he dooch you wryt that his folke are well saye that I shall be lykened to  
 with in a bushement within a woode Judas from hence forthe, and I shal  
 by the plaine of Valcolours, that is haue loste the loue of god and of hys  
 to wryt foulques of Ozyllon and master, and also myne honour. But  
 Ogier the dane, with thre hundred I must needes doo ic lich I haue pro-  
 men wel horsed and well armēd that mysed ic so, and the wyl of my bat-  
 abiden there fourte sonnes of Aymon, touns is such, for thus they haue cou-  
 the whitch ye shoule deliuer in to their celled and haue made me do ic. Wher-  
 handes. Whan the kinge pon vnder- of I am ful soze dis pleased.

The booke of the four

**A**Lthus as the king yon thow  
ghce in the greace treason that  
was thus machyned vpon the  
louesounes of Aymon: there came  
in Reynawde from hunting, & al his  
bretherne with him, and had taken  
four wild bores sore great, and whan  
Reynawde was within Mountaw-  
ban: he hearde the noyse of the horses  
and wende that it had been straunge  
knighthes that were come vnto him  
to take wagis. And than he asked of  
a yemā what folke were these straun-  
ghes that were come in withou leue:  
Syr, said the yeman they ben the fol-  
ke of king yon that is come Within  
for to speake with you of some ma-  
ters. But me semeth by his folke þ  
he is not well at ease of his persone.

the kynge yon heard the trumpettes  
that chus sowned so soze that the chā  
bre where as he laye shooke of it: he  
atose vp from the bed and cam to the  
wyndow, and said to him selfe. Ha  
what euyll haue I wrought ayenst  
these knighthes: Ias hōwe make ye  
Joye ayenst so greace a combrance  
the which I haue purchased to you:  
I haue betrayed you right falsly, as  
a wycked and vntre we kyng that  
I am. For a man that betrayed hys  
freend: ouȝt neuer to haue honoure  
nothir in this Worlde nor in the oþer  
but oughte to be lost boþe body and  
soule. For he hath forsaken god: and  
hache gþuen hymselfe to the deuyll.  
And whan he had sated that: he retur-  
ned agayne vpon his bed sore vexed  
at the hearte and euell at ease more  
than any man myght be. Than Reyna-  
wde and his breþerne came vp to  
the palace, where ther soud the king  
yon, and whan he sawe them come:  
he rose ayenst them, and tooke them  
by the hande and saide to Reynawde.  
Be not merueyld that I haue nos  
embraced nor kyssed you: for I am  
soze laden with great euyll. And it is  
wel fourtene daies gone that I could  
nothir eate nor drinke aþyng  
that dyd me good. Than saide Reyna-  
wde sit ye be in a good place where  
ye shall be tended vpon ryghe well  
with goddes grace. And I and my  
breþerne shall serue you to oure po-  
were, gramerþ saide the kynge yon.  
Than called he his stuard and sayd  
to him. Go and bring me the mantel  
leg of scarlet furred wyth ermynes  
that I haue doone make for my dere  
freendes. Incontinence the stuard

**T**han said the good Reynawde.  
Ha God why hach my lord  
traueyld himselfe so muche for to  
come hither: for I wold with a good  
will haue gone to him. And after  
whan he had that saide: he called to  
him a seruaunce of his and sayde to  
him, goe set me my horne Boudiere.  
For I wyll make feast and Joye for  
the coming of my souerain lord, and  
incontinent it was broughte to him,  
and Reynawde tooke it and sayde  
to his breþerne, Now take eche of  
you his owne and let vs make feast  
for the loue of king yon. Than they  
tooke eche of them his horne and be-  
gan to sowne all fourte at ones right  
high, and made so greace noyse that  
the castel sowned of it. For they ma-  
de so great Joye for the loue of kynge  
yon that it was mtrueyill. Whan

ord the commaundement of kyng  
yon. And as soone that he was come  
agayne: the kyng made the fourte  
theren to pur the fourte mantelles vp  
on them, and prated them to Were  
chein for his loue. Sir saide Blarde  
this is a gladde presence and we shal  
were them for the loue of you with  
very good will. Alas if they hadde  
knowen how the thing was brought  
abouce, they shoulde not haue borne  
them, but they shoulde haue doone al  
otherwise. Alas and what sorowful  
harme they hadde of this, that they  
were thus cloched. For that were the  
tokens and recognysaunce wherof  
they Were in dasiger of death, if god  
had not holpen them of his pitie and  
mercy. And whan the fourte sonnes  
of Aymon had their mantelles on: the  
kyng yon behelde them, and had of  
them great pite, and began to weep.  
There was his frere Warde that the  
crayson well wist, that saide not one  
word for fere of king yon. And whan  
the merre was ready: Reynalode pra-  
yed muche the kyng that he woulde  
eate. For he made him to be scrued  
ryght wel. Whan they had eaten: the  
kyng yon rose rpon his feet, and to-  
ke Reynalode by the hande, and said  
to him. By ffre brother & my frend.  
I will tell a counseyl that ye know  
not. Nowe wyt that I haue bee at  
Murebenten, and I haue spoken  
with king Charlemayne the which  
charged me of treason, by cause that  
I kepe you in my realme, wherof  
I haue presened my gage afore all  
hys compary, and no man was there  
so hardy that durst speake ayenste  
that, that I sayd. After this we had

many wordes togither, among whiche  
we spake of good accord and of  
peace, whereof at the laste the kyng  
Charlemayne was conente for my  
loue for to make peace with you, in  
the maner that foloweth. That is to  
Were that to morrow erly pe shal gos  
to the playne of Malcoloures ye and  
your brethre al unarmed but of your  
swerde mounted vpon youte mules  
and clothed with the mantelles  
that I haue givyn to you, and that  
ye shal beate in your handes Roses  
and floures, and I shal sende with  
you eighte of myne eacles for to goe  
more honourably, therwhichben al of  
my lygnage. And there ye shal finde  
the kyng Charlemaine, and the duke  
Raymes of bauyere, and Ogger the  
Dane, and all the twelue peers of  
Fraunce, and there Charlemayne  
shall gyue you succrie. And ye shal  
doo to him reverence in such maner  
that ye shal cast your leise to his feet  
and there he shal pardone you, and  
he shal gyue you agayne all your  
londes entierly.

**T**han sayde Reynalode, sy; for  
godz mercy. For I haue greate  
doubte of the kyng Charlemaine  
by cause he hateth vs to death as ye  
know. And I promysse you if he hol-  
dethe vs he shal make vs to die a  
shamefull deach. Good frend saide  
the crayeoute kyng yon, haue ye no  
doubte at al. For he hath lwoyn  
to me vpon his faith afore al his ba-  
ronye. Sir answered Reynalode we  
shall doo your commaundementes,  
ha God sayde Blarde. What saye  
you my brother: ye knowe well that

¶.i. kyng

The booke of the four

Kynge Charlemayne hath made his  
sch many tyme that if he may take  
vs oues by ony maner of meane: he  
shall bringe vs to a shameful deth.  
Now I meruaple me greatly of you  
faire brother, how pe wil accorde so  
to goe put your selfe and vs in to his  
handes, al unarmed as a poore mis-  
chaunte. Neuer haue god mercy v-  
pō my soule, if I goe there wil houe  
mine armes, nor without to be as ic  
apperteyneth, brother said Reynawd  
ye saye not well. God forbed that  
I shold mistrust my lord the kyng  
yon of any thing that he telleth me.  
And than he turned hym towarde  
the kyng yon and sayde to hym. Sit  
without any fauce we shall be there  
to morowe early in the morynge,  
whatsoeuer happeneth of it. Fayre  
lordes said Reynawd god hath hol-  
pen vs wel that we haue peace with  
the kyng Charlemayne to whome  
we haue made so longe tyme so mor-  
tall a warre, whi lich that my Lord  
the kyng yon hath made thys peace:  
I am content to doo to him as much  
truerence as to me is possyble. For  
I am delibered to goe naked in my  
small lypnen clothes to the Mounte  
saynt Michael. And whi Reynawd  
had sayd this word: he toke leaue of  
kyng yon and went in to the cham-  
bre of the faire lady his wife, & foud  
there his other two bretren that  
were with her, & whi the lady saw  
her husbonde come: she came ayenst  
hym and tooke him betwenn bothe her  
armes by great loue and kissed hym  
Lady sayd Reynawd I ought wel  
to loue you by great reason. For your  
brother the kyng yon hath cravalled

him selfe right soze for me, and hathe  
be soze blamed at the couer of Char-  
lemaigne for me, but he hath done so  
muche blessed be god that he hathe  
made my peace with the king Char-  
lemaigne. And that Roialand and O-  
liver. Nor all the twelue Peeres of  
Fraunce myght never make: he hathe  
graunted vs againe all out landes.  
And all thus we shall be tiche, and  
shal liue al our life in rest & peace, &  
so shall we now helpe, and gyue che  
hauoyre that we haue vnto the poore  
knightes that haue serued all they  
lyke truely and wel.

**T**han sayd the lady. I thanke god  
greatly therof with al my hert.  
But tell me where the concor-  
daunce shall be made, and byde it not  
from me if it please you. Lady sayde  
Reynawd I shal tell it you without  
any fauce. Wit that to moro we we  
muste ryde to the playne of Walco-  
lours, & ther the peace shal be made  
but I and my bretren must goe thither  
without armes but onely oure  
swerde, and upon mulcys, berynge  
roses in oure handes. And ther we  
shal fynde the duke Raymirs of ba-  
uyere & Ogyer the Dane & al the xii  
Peeres of Fraunce, that shal receiue  
oures, whi the lady vnderstood these  
wordes: she was so sore an angred  
thereof that almost she had lost her  
wicke, and saide to Reynawd. Soz  
if ye wyl beleue me, ye shall not goe  
one sore therre. For the plaine of Wal  
colours are so daungerous, for therre  
is a roch ryght hyghe, and therre ben  
fourte grete woodes rounde aboue,  
if ye will beleue me ye shall take a  
daye

day for to speake with Charlemaine  
heere in the medowes of Mountrou-  
ban, & ye shall goe there mounted vp-  
on bayarde and youte bretchen with  
you, & there ye may conferme youre  
peace, or elles continew your warre  
& take two thousande knyghthes and  
spue theym to Hawgis youte colyn  
whiche shall keep hem in a bushe-  
ment vpon the ryuage, if it happe  
you to haue need, for I doubt me so  
of treason, wherfore I pray you that  
ye keep your selfe well sure. For I  
dyd dreame to nyghe a dreame that  
was fereful & metueilous, for me se-  
med that I was at the windowes of  
the great palace, and sawe come out  
of the greace wood of Ardyn well a  
thousande wilde bores, that hadde  
greate and horribble reech, the whiche  
slew me and rented my body al in  
peeces, and also I saw that the great  
cowre of Mountrouban fel downe to  
y grounde, & moreouer I saw a shoc  
of aduenture, that smot my brother  
Blarde so harde that it perced his  
body through and through, and that  
the chapel of Saint Nicolas which  
is within this castel fell downe to  
the eartche, and all the ymages that  
been in it wepte for greace pitie. And  
the two aügelles came downe from  
heauen that haged my brother Rich-  
arde at an apple tree, and then the  
saide Richarde criyd with an hyghe  
voice. Fayze brother Reynawde come  
and helpe me, and Inconfinement ye  
Went there vpon youte horse bay-  
arde, but he fel downe by the waye  
vnder you, wherfore ye myght not  
come rime enough, wherof ye were  
ful sorry. & therfore good sy; I coun-

seyle you that ye go not there.

b**L**adye sayde Reynawde holde  
your peace, for who that beleueth  
ouer muche in dreames: he dooth a-  
renst the comandaunce of God.  
Than said Blarde by the saythe that  
I owe to god. I shal neuer sette foote  
there, nor I nother saide Richarde,  
Alas saide than Guycharde, yf we  
must goe there: lette vs not departe  
thicherwarde as men of councylle:  
but let vs go there lyke as ytre and  
woorthyn knyghthes, having eche of vs  
his armes vpon him & wel & horse-  
backe & not vpon mules: on that our  
brother Reynawde be well mounted  
vpon bayarde, which shal may beare  
vs al fowre at a need, by god sayde  
Reynawde yc shal say what ye wil,  
but I shal go there as I haue saide  
what so ever happeth, and than he  
Went out of his chambre & came to  
king yon, and said to him. By god I  
metueil me muche of my bretchen,  
that wil not go with me, because they  
haue no horses with them, and yf it  
please you ye shall giue vs leau to  
take eche of vs a horse & ye shal keep  
stil your eyghte eatles with you, and  
we shal go there as ye haue coman-  
ded vs, I wil not doo it said the kyng  
yon, for the kyng Charlemaine dou-  
teth you to sore and youtre bretcherne  
and your hostes, & also I haue giuen  
hostages & surrenes that ye shal beare  
no maner of harneys with you, but  
onely your swerdes as I haue tolde  
you afoore, and that ye shal ride vpon  
mules, & not vpon horses. And yf  
ye go there otherwysse arrayed: Char-  
lemayne shal thinke that I wyll be

The booke of the four

etaye hym, and so shall he destroye al  
my lande, char shall be the paymente  
that I shal haue for you, I haue cra-  
uallled my selfe full soze for to bring  
you and your bretherne at one with  
Charlemaine, & therfore go therre yf  
ye will, and if ye wyl not leaue it.

**T**han said Reynawd, sir syth  
that it is so: we shal go therre.  
And than he wente from kyng yon  
in to his chambre again, and founde  
his wife that noble lady, Alard and  
Richard that asked him how he had  
doone, & if they shold haue his good  
horse bayarde with theym: By God  
said Reynawde I can not haue leaue  
to doo so, but my bretherne doubt  
you not, for the kyng yon is a true  
prince, and if he shoulde betray vs:  
he shold be soze blamed for it, for he  
shal make vs to be conduyeed by ey-  
ght of the moste great erles of his re-  
alm, & god confounde me yf I sawe  
euer ony euil doone by him. Sir said  
hyg bretherne we shal goe gladly w  
you, sith that ye wyl haue vs needes  
to doo so. Whan they were thus ac-  
corded herro: theri wente to bed & slept  
vnto the daye appeared, and whan  
Reynawde sawe the daye: he rose vp  
and saide to his bretherne. Arise sirs  
and make vs redy for to goe therre as  
we shold goe, for yf Charlemayne  
be sooner to y plaines of valcolours  
than we: he shal hapely be angry for  
it. Hyg sayde hyg bretherne, we shall  
soone be redy, & whan they were all  
redy, they wen to the churche of saine  
Nicolas for to heare masse, & whan  
it came to the offryng: Reynawde &  
his bretherne offred many tycheys,

reg. And after the masse was done:  
they asked al after theyr mules & incō-  
tinent they mounted vpon, & in their  
celowship were eyght earles, y wch  
che knewe all the maner of treason,  
& whan they were all mounted they  
tooke on theyr way but the fourt so-  
nes of Symon were good to kno we  
by the oþer, for they had on greace  
mancelles of scarlet furred with er-  
mynes, & bare in their handes roses  
in tyme of peace & also their swerdes  
for they wold not gyarde them. Now  
god be wth them, for if he keep them  
not: they bene in waye of perdyson  
& never to come againe to Mou: aw-  
ban. whan the kyng yon sawe them  
thus go: he fell downe in a swoone  
more then fourt times, so; the greac  
sorowe that he had at his hearte, for  
woul be it that he had betrayed them  
so: yet had he great pitie of them, but  
this that he had doone. euyl counseyl  
had made him doo it. And than he be-  
gan to make the greatest soow in the  
Worlde, & said, ha good lord whac  
haue I doone: dyd euer man so greac  
treason as I haue doone: nay verely  
for I haue betrayed the best knygges  
of the wold, and the moste worthye  
and crue.

**T**han sayde his folke. Hyg ye  
do not wel to make suche a  
sorowe, for Reynawde is very wise  
& he shal it perceiue rygde soone. Ha  
god sayd the kyng yon, were it as ye  
saye, so; I shoulde be more gladde  
than yf I had wonne tenne of the  
best cytys of Fraunce, for Reynaw-  
de is my freend and my brother. Ha  
Malwys ho w shal ye be soroy wha

ye shal know this matter. Reynawde did great sorwe, whan he Cooke not your aduysc in this chyng, for yf he had knownen of it: ye shold not haue suffred him to go there. Lordes sayd the kyng yon I poore wreche, whether shall I become, yf the fourte sonnes of Aymon die: for Hawgis shal slea me without mercy, and also it is well reson, for Who that betrayeth a nothc and principally his frend carnall: ought not to lyue nor haue euer any worship, but his folke tolde hym vp incontinente and began to recomforde him by many greate reasons that they layed afore him.

**D**o we begynnech the piceous hystory of the fourte sonnes of Aymon that wente to theyr deathe by the meanes of the traytore kyng yon. And bycause of the treason that he comited ayenst the fourte sonnes of Aymon: he losse the realme of gascogne the name & the dynyte therof, for never sich that yme was no kyng crowned in Gascogne. Now shall I tell you of Reynawde and of his bretheren, than rode Reynawde and his bretheren toward the plaine of Valcolours, and as they roode thitherwarde Alarde began to syng tyghte sweetly and Joyfull a news songe, and Guycharde and Rychard dyd in lykewise, but I tell you that no instrument of musike sowned never so melodyously as the thre bretheren dyd syngynge to gicher, alas what pycy was it of so noble and so worthy knyghtes that wente singing and makyng Joy to their deathe, they were as the swans that syngeth

that yete that she shall die, Reynawde went behynde them soze chynkyng, hys head bowed down towarde the earth, and behelde hys bretheren that rode forth makyng greate Joye, and he sayd, o god what knyghtes be my bretheren that ther been none suche in all the world, nother so gracuous: And whan he had saide this: he sette his handes together and heued them vp towarde heauen all weeping, and saide in this maner, good lord by thy gloriouse and blessed name that diddest cast daniel out fro the ipons, & delyuered Jonas fro the fylches heip and sauad saynt Peter whan he cast hymselfe from the sea for to come to the & pardoned Mary magdalene, & and made the blinde to see, & suffred passion & deache upon the crosse for our sinnes, & pardoned Longus þ smot thee with a spere in to thy blessed side, wher fro thy blessed bloud fel in to his eyen, and incontinente he recovered his syght therby, and by thy resurreccyon, keep this day my body if it please the fro deth and from prisyon, and allis my bretheren for I wote not whete that we goe, but me semeth that we go in greate peryl. And whan he had synysched his oþyslon: his eyne wexed wete agayne for perte that he had, least his bretheren shold haue any harme for loue of him. For it pleased him not wel, that they were so bare of their armes.

**T**han whan Alarde saw his brother Reynawde that had his eyne ful of teeres, he sayd to him Ha brother what ayleth you I haue sen you in tyme greate perill & aboure

The booke of the fourre

a harde werke, but I sawe you never  
make so yl cheere as ye doo now, for  
I haue seen you weep at this houre.  
Wher of I meruail me greatly, for I  
wote wel for certayne þ þe weep not  
without some great occasion. Than  
sayd Reynawde. Fayre brother me  
ayleth nothinge. By þ faiche that I  
owe to you sayd Alarde þe weep not  
for nothynge. This is the daie þ we  
sholde be at one with kyng Charle-  
mayne, so pray I you for god my de-  
ce brother that þe leue this sorow, &  
let us go forth mereli and bere out a  
good facz as longe as we ben alþue,  
for after that a man is ones deceasid  
it is no more spoke of him. And this  
I praye you breþherne þat þe syng  
with vs. For ye haue so fayre a voice  
that it is a great pleasure for to heare  
þou syng, whan þe be wyllinge to it.  
Broþher said Reynawde with a good  
wyll, syrh that it pleaseþ you. And  
than began Reynawde for to syng  
so melodiouslly: þ it was a great plea-  
sure for to here hym. So longe rode  
the fourre sonnes of Aymon the lycell  
pace of their mules, syngyng and  
deuisinge amouge themselfe: that  
þey came to the playne of Walco-  
lours. Now wyl I tel you of the  
faction of the valey, for wote that if I  
telleþ you not: þe shoulde not maye  
know it. There is a roch right hie &  
noyous to goe vp, & it is enuironned  
rounde aboue with fourre great for-  
stes ryght great & thycke, for the last  
is therre a dayes Journey to ryde  
thruh it, & ther be fourre great tresses  
all aboue it soze deep, Whereof þ gre-  
test is named Gyronde, the other is  
called Dordon, the thyde is named

Roze, & the other Balancou, & there  
is noþer castell noþ to winc by. xx.  
mile nigh about it. And therfore the  
treason was therre deuyled, for þys  
playne of Walcolours was ferre fro  
all folke, & there was a way crossed  
in fourre, the one waye was towarde  
Fraunce, the other in to Spayne, the  
other in to Galyce, and the fourth in  
to Gascoyne. And ac cuery one of  
these fourre wayes: was layde a bus-  
hement of v. hundred men wel hor-  
sed and armed for to take Reynawde  
and his breþheren quicke or deade, for  
thus had they sworne it, & promised  
to kyng Charlemayne. Than come  
therre Reynawde & his breþheren with  
þeyr felawshyp of eyght erleþ, that  
the kyng yon of Gascoyne had take  
to them, the whiche wist well al the  
misterie of this treason. And incon-  
tinent Ogier the dane saþe theym  
fyreþt of all, the whiche was all aba-  
shed, and sayd to his folke, fayre loþ-  
des þe ben my men my subiects and  
my freeþids, þe knowþ that Reynawde  
is my cosyn, & I oughte not to see his  
death noþ his domage. Wherfore I  
pray you all that ye will doo him no  
harme at all, noþ to none of his bre-  
þherne my cosyns. They answered  
al, that þey shoulde doo his comman-  
dement with a good Will. This ha-  
gynge: Reynawde and his breþheren  
passed by & wente in to the myddes  
of the playne.

**T**han wha Reynawde and his  
breþheren were come there, and  
found no body: þey were of it soze a  
bashed. Indaþer whan Alarde saw  
this: he called his brother Rycharde  
and

and sayd to him. what is this fayre  
brother I se well that we ben betrai-  
ed, for I se you chaunge your colour,  
how think ye? Brother said Richard  
I doubt me soze for Reynawd, haue  
no doubt said Blarde. for we shall  
haue no thyng but good. My brother  
sayd Rychard I promyse you all my  
heart shaketh, no; neuer in my daies  
I had not so great feare, for al my he-  
res ryse vp, wherof I doubt me soze  
that we ben betrayed, & that more is:  
I shold not be aferde yf Reynawde  
were armied & set vpon bayarde, and  
we also, for thus as ben now we be  
halte discomficed. And whan he had  
saied thus: he spake to Reynawde &  
said, Brother why doo we raty hcere  
sich that we haue foud no body with  
whome we shoulde speake: for if. xx.  
knyghes wet here armied: the shold  
haue vs where they wolde maugre  
out teech as bestes, leing þ We haue  
so many enemies in Fraunce, ye wold  
not beleue this that we told you, and  
also youre wifre at Mountawban,  
Wherof I scare me soze that ye shall  
haue no leiser for to repente you of it.  
For if our cosin Maugis had be heer  
with vs & that ye had your good hors  
baird: we shold not doubt Charle-  
maine with al his puissance of a  
straw. I pray you let vs go hence, for  
I promise you it is foly for to abide  
here long, for I know wel þ Char-  
lemaine hath made vs to come here  
as bestes clothed with scarlet, nor I  
can not beleue none other, but that þ  
kinge yon hath fallys betrayed vs.

**C**rees fayre brother ye saye  
trouch sayde Reynawde, and

I perceyue me well of it now let vs  
goe backe againe all fayre & softe, &  
as they Wolde haue returned: Reyn-  
awde behelde a side & sawe well a  
thousande knyghtes armied comyng  
a greate pace ayenst them, & Foul-  
ques of Morillon came aforne al the  
other, wel horst his shidle aforne his  
breast & his spere alowe in the rest the  
greate wallop ayenst Reynawd for he  
was the man in the Wozide that he  
most hated. whan Reynawde sawe  
com Foulques of Morillon: he knew  
him wel at his shidle, & was so an-  
gred so; it þ he wist not what to doo.  
A god what shal we poore siners doo  
I se wel þ We must die this day with  
out doubt. Brother said Blard what  
late ye: by my faiche said Reynawde  
I se heete great sorow. Heere cometh  
Foulques of Morillo for to slea vs,  
& whan Blard had sen them coming:  
it lacked litell that he woxed madde  
& fell downe almost for greate angre  
that he had of the same, & whan Guy-  
charde & Richard sawe this: they be-  
gan to make great sorowe. For they  
scratched their visages and pulled  
their heares. And whan Blarde was  
a litell assurcd: he sayd. Ha fayre bre-  
therne Guycharde & Richard, now  
is the day come that we shall die al  
throughe mortall treason, for I know  
wel that Reynawde hath betrayed  
vs; and certes I wolde never haue  
thought that any treason shold haue  
entered with in so noble a man as he  
is, he made vs come here a renst our  
willes and maugre vs, bycause he  
knoweth well the treason. Ha Rey-  
nawde the Sonne of Simon of Ar-  
vincie, and who shal euer criste anye  
man

The booke of the four

man, whan ye that are our brother,  
and that we take for our lord, haue  
brought vs hitherto maugre vs to our  
death, and haue betraised vs so fally  
O Rychard said Alarde d'Alve ouce  
yours swerde, by god the traytoure  
shall die with vs. For wel oughte the  
traytoure to die that haue procured  
so mortall a treason, whan Alarde  
had sayde this: they all three dyd set  
hande to their swerdes and came to  
Ryngawde, for to slea him prefuleynge  
& soye an angrys as lyons, for they  
crouched for veryc certaine that Reyna  
wode had betrayed them, whan  
Reynawde sawe them come thus: he  
made semblaunce to defend hym self,  
but laughe them by greate loue, a  
las said richard what had I thought.  
I woulde not slea my brother for all  
the good in the worlde, and so sayde  
Alarde and Guphard, for they were  
sore repented of this that they had en  
terpryzed for to doo, and they began  
all for to weep for pitie and cast their  
swerdes downe to the earthe and  
killed Reynawde soye weeping. And  
Alard sayd, Ha good Reynawde why  
haue you betrayed vs so? We be no  
ther nor manes nor Englishe nor al  
maines, but we be brethen of one  
fater and of one mother, & we holde  
you for our lord. For god brother  
Reynawde tel vs of whence cometh  
this treason, we ben com of so noble  
kinne of Berarde of Bouylton and  
of Dyon of Nantuell and of the duke  
Benes of Argemont, & never none  
of our lignage thought no treason, &  
how haue ye doon so that haue procu  
red it now ayenst your naturall bre  
thren, certes it is a great fault to you

**B**rother sayd Reynawde I haue  
more greate pitie of you than  
I haue of mine oþn selfe, for I haue  
brought you heere ayenst your wyl  
and if I had beleued you this mis  
happe had not come to vs. I haue  
brought you heere, & I promise you  
I shal bringe you againe from hens  
wiche godys grace. Recomende oure  
selfe to our lord, and chynke for to  
defende vs wel, & feare not the deach  
for our woship. For ones we muste  
die withoute fayle. But it is good  
to get woship. Brother said richard,  
Shall ye helpe vs? yea said Reynawde  
doubte not therol. And whan he had  
that sayd, he turnede to ward the ear  
les and sayde to them, fayre lordes  
the kyng yon haue sente you with  
vs: for to condupre vs, & vnder the  
sueris of you we be com heere to lese  
our liues. And therfore I pray you  
þ ye wyl helpe vs, Reynawde (sayde  
the earle of Ansom) It is not for vs  
to bargaine heere long, but let vs all  
slee for to saue ourselfe and we may,  
than saide Reynawde by my head ye  
be all traytours, and I shal smite of  
all your heade. Brother said Alard  
What say ye so longe, for they bene  
well worthy for to die, siche that they  
ben traytours. And wha Reynawde  
vnderstod that word of his brother:  
he sette hande to his swerde & smote  
the earle of Ansom so great a stroke  
vpon the head that he cloued hym to  
the harde teech, and it was well rea  
son, for it was he that couldeyle this  
treason to the kyng yon, that was  
the rewarde that he had for the fift,  
whan the earle of Ansom was thus  
slaine: the other seuen began to flee,  
and

and Reynawd ran after, but he could not renne fast: for his mule was to soze lade of the Weyghte of his body, so that the beast fel doowen vnder him. For Reynawd to say the trouth was so bygge made and so greate that no horse might beare him but only basarde. For as it is said Reynawd had xvi. leete of length & was wel shap of body after the greate ness.

the deuill. Freend said Reynawd pe say well and wisely, and they dyd as Alarde had deuised. And whan they were confessed thone to thother: Reynawd said to his brether. Lordes let vs doo suche a thing, wherof we shall get worshippe, sith it is so that we may not scape: lette vs kylle the that come first vpon vs, and we shal haue auantage vpon thother, & goddes curse haue him that shal kynne himselfe.

**T**han whan Reynawd saw him self a grounde he stood vplight, lye with his mule and sayd, ha Basard my good horse that I am not on your backe armed of al peces, for ouer that I shoulde be ouercome: I shoud sell my death ful dety. Alas none ought not to complaine my deh sith that I haue purchased it myselfe. Brother said Guychard what shall we doo: heere be our enemies euene by vs, if ye thinke it good: let vs aduenture to passe ouer this ryuer and goe vpon that highe roch, and so we shal may saue our self. Goe foole goe said Reynawd what saye ye: ye wot wel that our mules myght not renne before the horses, what shoulde auayle vs for to flee sith that we might not saue our selfe: Lettes I shoud not flee for all the worlde. I haue leuer die with my woship: than I shoud liue with great shame, for he that dieth in fleeing: his soule shal never be sauied. Thus as Reynawd spake to his brother Richarde: Alard saide to hym brother Reynawd lette vs ryghte from oure mules a foote and syue our scise the one to thother to chende that we be not ouercome by

**T**han whan Alard hearde Reynawd speake thus: he colled him with his armes and killed him al woeig & said to him. Brothes we be two & two, I pray you y thone fail not to help y other as longe thare like is in oure bodies. Brother saide thother we shal help you with al our might & than thei went & kissed Reynawd by great loue, & after whā they had killed eche other: they tooke of their mancelles & wrapped them aboute their leste armes, & tooke theyr swerdes in theyr hādes & begā to cry & called theyr badges & tokens. Reynawd cried mout a vntā. alard sayne nycolas. guychard. balācen. & y gētil Rychard. Ardeyn, which was y badge or toke of their fachet aymō. whā foulques of morillon saw the fourte sonnes of Armd coming to Ward hi al unarmed & vpon mules so boldly: he was all abashed of it. Than he began to cry & sayd Reynawd Reynawd ye are come to your death, and I promise you he y moste louich you hath betrayed you, that is the kyng yon, but haue pacē, for I shall see

The booke of the four

to your necke an halter. Now haue ces of the best that ye haue, and pus you not your horse Bayard, the whi- theym in a feeld well armed, vpon che ye haue ryden vpon wrongfullly, good horses, & we soure shal syghte now shal you be auenged the deache with them unarmed as we ben vpon of Betchelot that ye slew. Reynawd knyghtes well armed and well horsed may ouercome me and my brethren though what shal ye doo: wil ye defende or we haue no harneis vpon vs: we yelde you: but yours defence shall be pardon them our deache, and ys god not worshyp to you. And ys ye make a: wyl that we shold ouercome them: ny semblaunt to defende yours selfe: that ye shold chan leete vs goe free I shall sica you incontinent.

**F**oulques sayde Reynawd ye speke well lyke a beast, and crowpon that I shal yelde me quicke to Charlemayne or to you: I shal syghte of your heade & the helme withal if I can rech to you, ye know well howe my swerde cutteth. By god Foulques sayd Reynawd ye are greatly to be blamed for to haue gyuen the counsayll for to make vs to be betrayed by the kynge pon, for it is the louest crachte that a knyghte may for to doo treason. But doo as a gentleman ought to doo, to the ende that men say not that it is treason, ys ye will leete vs goe: we shal be all soure ready to become liegemen of y king Charlemayne, and I shal gyue you my horse Bayarde, the whiche I gaue not for all the golde in the world, and also I shal gyue you the strong castel Mouawban, and if the kyng Charlemayne makeh warre ayenst you for loue of vs: We shal sette you with syue hundred knyghtes well armed and well horsed euer moze, and if it please you ye shal saue vs our liues. And ys ye will not doo this: doo another chyng that I shall tell you for to keep you to bee not called a trapour. These xx. knyghts.

theym in a feeld well armed, vpon good horses, & we soure shal syghte with them unarmed as we ben vpon our mules, and ys your xx. knyghtes well armed and well horsed may ouercome me and my brethren though we haue no harneis vpon vs: we pardon them our deache, and ys god wyl that we shold ouercome them: that ye shold chan leete vs goe free where we Wolde, it is that I require you for goddes loue and for yours worshyppe and no more, and ys ye doo not so: ye shal be taken for an yll knyght all dayes of your lyfe. By god Reynawd. said Foulques your preaching shal not awayle you no chyng, for I haue leuer to haue fodd you now in this atape, than that I had wonne an hundred thousande marke of syne golde. Nowe is yowt cosyn the wyse Pawgys ferre from you, he can not giue you no couiseyle at this houre, and also all your folke be well ferre fro you, they shal not giue you socoures, and also I know the goodnes of my me and that they haue promised the king Charlemain that they shal not fayle to assayle you too; they, by my saych sayd Reynawde and we shal defende our selfe also to oure power. Than said Alarde to Reynawde, brother what o denaunce shal we keep: brother (said Bainawd) we shal keep soure two and two: ye and Guycharde shal be behynde, and I and Rycharde shal make the forward, and leete vs syue Weltharde I pray you, for the time is now com that we must needs doo so, and make we that chyng that shall

halfe lette in perpetuall memory to  
 them that shalbe astre vs, sith that  
 by no wylle we may not scape. faire  
 bro: her saide Alarde to Guycharde,  
 ye were wel deceiued for that ye cre-  
 wed that Reynawde had bereated vs.  
 I promise you he wold not doo it for  
 all the golde of the Worlde. By my  
 saych said than Guycharde to Alard  
 I am now wel whole, sith that our  
 deare brother Reynawde shal be to  
 our helpe, for as longe as he shal be  
 a liue: we shal defende our selfe, but  
 not astre, for though I might chose  
 I wolde not liue astre he were dead.  
 And whan he had sayed thys: they  
 medled themselfe amouge theyz ene-  
 mies. Shorly to speake of the four  
 sonnes of Aymon assembled wel a-  
 yerk thre hundred good knyghtes,  
 but their courage were never thelesse  
 therfore as longe as they had lyfe in  
 the body: but that they shewed vnto  
 their enemies a knyghtes face, whan  
 Foulques of Morillon sauwe Reyna-  
 wde come: he spurred his horse  
 with the spurres & bare his spere a  
 low, & went & smot Reynawd by the  
 maner of scarre that was aboue  
 his arme so great a stroke that hys  
 spere entred throught his thygh and  
 overthrew bothe hym and his mule  
 to the eartche. Whan Alarde saw the  
 stroke: he cried sore and sayde. Alas  
 we haue lost Reynawde our brother  
 that was al our hope and our succour  
 now may we not scape, but that  
 we shall be dead or taken, and it is  
 better that we yeide vs prisoners at  
 this tyme: than to defende vs anye  
 more. for sith it is so: ure defence  
 shall helpe vs nothinge ayenst so

many folke. And whan Reynawde  
 vnderstod the wordes of his brother,  
 he cryed to him with a loude voyce  
 and sayd. Sic vpon you giuerc whas  
 is that ye say? I haue no harme yet,  
 but I am al whole as ye be, chakred  
 be god, and yet shal I helpe me full  
 dere or I die. And whan Reynawde  
 had saied this: he rose vp quickelepe  
 and tooke the spere with bothe his ha-  
 des, and pulled it ouce of his thyghe  
 with great greef, and astre set bande  
 to his swerde. And sayde to Foul-  
 ques of Morillon, knyght if ye will  
 doo like a good man: lighc a foore as  
 I am. And ye shal knowe what I  
 can doo. Whan Foulques of Morill-  
 on vnderstode him: he turned vpon  
 hym soore an angred, and thought for  
 to haue smitten hym on hys heare,  
 but Reynawde drewe a litle asyde,  
 and wente and gaue vnto Foulques  
 liche a stroke vpon hys helme: that  
 nochet yron nor stel myght nof saue  
 hym, but that Reynawde cloue hym  
 in to the harde teeth and felled him  
 deade to the eartche. And whan he  
 sauwe hym deade: he sayde vnto hym.  
 Nowe unhappy Traytoure that thy  
 soule may haue no pardone, but goe  
 to the pyt of heile. And whan he had  
 saied that: he tooke the horse of Foul-  
 ques of Morillon the whiche was  
 right good, & lighc vpon it in coni-  
 nent and tooke his swerde & his spere  
 that Foulques of Morillon had shou-  
 ed throught and throught his thyghe  
 & than he sayd to his bretheren. Be ye  
 al sure that as longe as I am a lyue:  
 ye shal haue no harme, but the fren-  
 chemen shal saye that they haue an  
 ylle neyghboure of me. And wryte  
 whan

The booke of the four

Wban he was an horsbacke: he was not well at ease, because that the sy- toppes were to shorte for him. But he had other chinges to doo, than for to make them lenger. And whan he was caus set on horsbacke: he mide his horse to renne and held his spere alo we, and went and mette with the earle Ingenon by suche maner that he pur bochyon and wood through the brest of him so that he must fall down dead to the horse to the groun d afore his foote. And after Benawod set hande to his swerde, and smote a knyghte such a stroke that his helme might not saue him, but cleued hym to the teech. What shall I tell you more? Nowe wit ic that at that time Benawode slewe wych his owne hedes fourte earles, thie dukes and sixe knyghtes, and after he bega to crye Mounche Wban with a hye voice. And after his crye: he went & smote Roberte the lord of Dygeon that was sonne to the duke of Bur- gosne so that the head with the helme he made it lepe to the grounde, & af- ter he slewe a nother sterke dead, that came to rescue the said lord.

**A**nd whan Rainawode hadde doone this noble provesse: he behelde about him, and crowed to haue seen his bretzhen than, but he saw none of them. wherof he was soze abashed. O god sayd he Where are my bretzhen gone? no we be they wel ferre from me, we shall never come togither again. And than came there Alarde that in likewyse had wonne a horse, the sheeld and the spere, so he had slaine a knyght, and

had taken his hors, but he was soze hurte. Neuerthelesse he came & held side with his brother, and Guycharde and Guycharde came soone at th: o- ther side. Than Alarde saide to Reyna Wde. Brother be al sure that we shall never faille you to the deth. And whan the fourte bretzhe were all am- bled togither againe: they began to make so gret distruction of frenshe- men, that none durste abyde theym. For all they that they hycce: scaped not th: death. whan the frenshemen sawe this: they were meruailed, and said the one to the other. By my soule this passeth all oder wunder. I crow that they ben no knyghtes: but that they be deuils, now let vs make to thea salwe both behinde and be- fore, for if they liue long: they shall do vs greate hurte. And whan they were hereto accorded: they canne all vpon the fourte sonnes of Iymon so harde that they parced them woulde they or not. But Reyna Wde passed through them al and brougtes him selfe out of the prese, and Alarde ac- ter hym. And Guycharde retourned fleeing toward the toche Mounchro, and Guycharde abode there on foote, for the frenshemen had slayne hys mule vnder him, and had wounded him with two speres well deep into the flesh and was taken for prysoner and they bounde him bothe hande and boote, and layed him vpon a litel hors ouerthwarte, like as a sacke of corns so wounded as he was, and I promyse you men might wel folowe him by the trase, because of the bloud that came oure of his bodye, and so leed him so shamefullye as that is may

had be a theef and went all betynge  
vpon hym, saying to hym that they  
led hym to Charlemayne, the which  
shuld make hym to be haged for to  
auenge the death of his deere newwo  
Berthelot that he loued so muche, þ  
Whiche Reynawde slewe so shame-  
fully playng at the Chesse.

**A**nd whan Reynawde saw þ  
hys enemyes led his brother  
Guycharde so shamefully: he waxed  
almolte madde for angre, and called  
his brother Alarde to him and said,  
Fayre brother what shal we doo? see  
how shamefully they fare with our  
brother Guycharde, þt we suffre the  
to bryng hym forth of this facyon:  
we shall never haue Worshyp in our  
dayes. Brother sayd Alarde I wote  
not what we maye best doo for to a-  
byde or for to goc to them. For I tel  
you that we be no mo but two, and  
they be so great nombre of folke that  
wee can doo nothing agaynst them.  
O god (sayd Reynawde) what shall  
I doo if the king Charlemaigne make  
my brother to be hanged? I shall ne-  
uer be at my hertes case, nor I shall  
neuer come to no courte, but men  
shal pounte me with the synger, and  
shall saye see yonder is the sonne of  
Aymon that let his brother to be ha-  
ged to the pyntree of Boutfaucon,  
& he durst not succour hym. Leutes  
sayd Reynawde to Alarde, brother I  
had leuer dy fyft, but if I shuld res-  
cue our brother fro death. Brother  
sayd Alarde now set your selfe afore  
& I shal folow you & after my power  
I wyl helpe you to rescue hym. And  
whan Reynawde heard þ: he cast his

sheeld behinde him, and abandon-  
ned his body ali boldly as a Lyon,  
and cared not how the game shoud  
go, for ye saw never Wood men he w  
in a forest, nor make so great noyle  
as Reynawde made with his swerde  
amonge his enemyes for he cutted &  
hewed legges and armes by suche  
wyle that no man shoud belieue it,  
but they that see it. Thus made Rey-  
nawde at that time þ the ftenhemē  
must needes make him way to passe  
wher her thei wolde or no. And man  
made hym way for the loue of Ogier  
for they kne we well that the four  
sonnes of Aymon were his cosyns.  
And whan Reynawde was passed:  
he sayd to them that led his brother  
Guycharde. Let goe the knyghte ye  
yll folkes, for ye be not Worshype to  
touche hym, and whan they that led  
Guycharde sawe come Reynawde:  
they were soze afraedy that they put  
them selfe to flight & left Guycharde  
free and sayde the one to the other.  
here cometh the ende of the wold.  
And whā Reynawde saw that they  
fled: he sayd to Alarde. Goe ye fayre  
brother and vnbinde Guycharde our  
brother and set him vpon this horse  
and gyue hym a spere in his hande, &  
come after me, for the craytours be  
dyscomfyted. Brother sayd Alarde.  
I shall goe where it please you, but  
I tell you þt we parte one from the  
other: we shall never come together  
agayne syng that we be so ferd & so  
yll armed, but let vs keep together, &  
helpe thone thoþher. Brother sayde  
Reynawde ye say well & wisely, and  
we shal doo it. And than they wente  
boþe together to Guycharde, & vn-

The booke of the four

bounde hym, and made him mounte  
on horsebacke þe heide at the necke,  
and the spere in the hande. Now goe  
thare the thre brethren together, and  
the fourth fifteth agaynst a greate  
nombre of folke, that was the valy-  
aunt Richard, that was the moste  
Worthy of all after hys brother Rei-  
nawde. But men had slaine his mu-  
le vnder hym, and was wounded  
ryght soore. But he had slayne fiftie ex-  
iles, and well. xiiiij. knyghtes, wherof  
he was so sore trauayled and so we-  
ry, that he might not all moste defende  
himselfe no more, but went rounde  
aboute the roche. And than came ge-  
rarde of valcome that was colyn to  
Foulques of Morillon the whyche  
he had founde deaþ, wherof he made  
great sorow, & sayd. Ha gentyl kni-  
ght it is greate domage of your deth.  
Cerdes he that hath brought you to  
this deth he is not my freend. Now  
shal I auenge me if I maye, & than  
he came to the roche. And whan he  
saw Reynawde in so greate grecce; he  
spurrd his horse with his spurres  
& bare his spere alowe & smote Rei-  
chard through the mantell of scar-  
let, that he wrapped aboute his lifte  
arme so harde that the spere entred  
fere in his bodye so muche that he  
brought hym to the erth, and as he  
dreyfe hys spere agayne: the guttes  
of Richard came out of þe body into  
his lappe, & the woude was so greate  
that the lyuer and the lounges appe-  
red. Than began Gerarde to crye.  
Now are dyscoupled þe four sonnes  
of Iymo, for I haue llaȝne Richard  
the hardy fighter, all the other shall  
soone be slayne or taken, yf god giue

me helth. And I shall bryng them  
vnto the kyng Charslemayne, that  
shal make the to be hanged at Wout-  
fawcon as soone as he hath them.

**T**han whan Richard was  
come a iytie to his ese: he rose  
up quickeley vpon hys feete, & cooke  
hys bo welles with bothe his hedes  
and put them agayne into his belyc  
and after set hande to hys swerde, &  
came to Gerarde and sayd to hym in  
great angre. Thou cursed man thou  
shalt haue thy rewarde anon for that  
ye haue doon to me, for certes it shal  
not be vmbrazed to Reynawde that  
ye haue slayne his brother, and wha  
he has sayde thus: he smote Gerarde  
through the quyras, and throught þe  
sheelde so greate a stooke, that he he-  
wed the sholdre and the arme with  
all from the body & felled hym down  
dead to the erth afore hys feete, and  
than sayd to him. Certes Gerarde it  
had be better for you that ye had not  
come hytherwarde, for to the kyng  
Charslemayne now shal ye not beare  
your bole that ye haue slayne one of  
the four sonnes of Iymon. And  
whan he had sayd that: he fel downe  
in a swoone, and whan he was come  
agayne to hymselfe: he began to  
willye after hys brethren, and com-  
plained them soore, sayinge. O Rey-  
nawde fayre brother this daye shall  
departe our compaȝe. For I shal ne  
uer see you, noþer ye me. O Castell  
of Mountawban I comende thee to  
god that he wil by his mercy & pitie  
bringe agayne your lordes sauþe and  
sounde of his body. Ha king yon of  
Gascoyng, whiche haue ye betrayed

ys: and taken vs to the kyng Char-  
lemayne: certes ye dyd therin greate  
syn, and alhamfull fault, and after  
he sayd all weeping. O father king  
of glori, and lordc of al the wrold,  
succoure this day my poore brother-  
ne. For I wot not whare they ben,  
nor of me they may neþher haue he-  
lpe nor succors, for I am all redy  
for to dode.

**D**owe shall I tell you of Rep-  
nawde of Alarde, and of Gui-  
charde that faught strongly agaynst  
theyz enemies, as worthy knyghtes  
that they were. But all theyz great  
kaytes of armes shoulo auayled the  
noþinge yf they had not come to a  
narrowe wap of the Roche, Where  
men myght not come to them but a  
foxe. And whan they had be longe  
there: Reynawde began to say to his  
brother Alarde, Brother whare is be-  
come our brother Richarde that we  
saw not of a good whyle a goe: now  
chynke none other but that we shall  
neuer see him, for I left him hecre bi  
thys lappyn tree, whan ye and I had  
so much to doo. I praye god yf he be  
dead that he haue his soule. Now I  
wyl wot ridinges of hym yf it be pos-  
sible. Brother sayd Alarde yf ye wyl  
believe me ye shall abyde heere, God  
pardon him if he be dead, for we mai  
not helpe him the perill is to greate  
and I beleue that we shoulo dy afors  
that eue were come. ha brother sayd  
Reynawde shall we sayle to our bro-  
ther Richarde the good knyght and  
Worthy: Than sayde Alarde, What  
will ye that we shall doo thereto: for  
as to me I knowe no remedy to it.

Iias sayde Reynawde ye speake so  
lyshly, for I shoud not doudre for fe-  
re of death to wit whare he is bocom  
And if I shoud goe alone, yet shal  
I understand some ridinges of him.  
Brother said Alarde I promise yow  
if we depart the one from the other:  
We shall neuer see vs agayne toge-  
ther. Brother sayd Reynawde other  
dead or all quicke, I shall finde him  
Whare so euer he be it maye none o-  
ther be, and whan Reynawde had  
sayde these wordes: he spurred hys  
horse wþth his spurres, and cam at  
the other side of the roche. And wha  
they that had chased Richarde thereto  
for to flea him saw Reynawde come:  
they smote hemselfe to flight, & than  
Reynawde wente a lytle moxe up-  
warde upon the roche, and founde  
thare his brother Richarde that laye  
nyghe dead upon the ground, & helde  
his bowelles betwene his handes,  
and about him were a great numbre  
of solke whiche he had slayne. Whan  
Reynawde saw hym dead and so soze  
wounded: he had of it so great sorow  
at hys heert that almoste he fell down  
dead to the grounde but he tooke co-  
rage and cam nigher his brother and  
lyghted downe from his horse & kis-  
sed hym soze weeping and sayd. Ha  
fayre brother it is great pitie & dom-  
mage of you and of your death for  
certes neuer man was worse you,  
for yf ye had come to mans age ne-  
uer Bowlande nor Olyuer Wcre so  
þre in knyghethode as ye shuld haue  
be. Iias now is lost our beauty and  
our yowþe thorough greate synne.  
O good lordc who shoud euer haue  
thought þ onyc treason shoud haue

The booke of the four

entred into the hert of the king pon:  
Alas my brother Rycharde Woe is  
me for your death, for I am cause of  
it. Alas chys daye in the mornynge  
Whan wee departed out ofoun-  
tawban we were fourre bretherne al  
good knyghtes, now are we but. iii.  
that ben perillously wounded and al  
unarmed. Nowe God forbed that I  
should scape sythe that ye be dead v-  
pon the traytours. But I pray god  
that I may venge your death vpon  
them or euer I deceasse. For I shall  
set thereto my good will, & if god will  
it shalbe so. Euen thus as Reynawde  
made mone ouer hys brother: he be-  
halde behynde hym and sa we come  
his brethern Alarde and Guycharde  
all discomfyted, that cryed vp Reynawde. Brother what doo you: com  
anon and help vs for we haue great  
need. And whan Rycharde heard the  
voynce of Alarde: he opened his eyen,  
and whan he saw his brother Reynawde  
afore hym: he sayd to hym. O  
brother Reynawde and what doo you  
heere: see ye yonder that roche which  
is so hyghe and so stonge, where as  
ben manye small stones aboue, yf  
we myght doo so muche that we cli-  
med vp there: I beleue that we shold  
be safe from our enemies, for it can-  
not be but our colyn Hawgys kno-  
weth our disease by thys: and he shal  
come to succour vs. Brother sayde  
Reynawde wolde god we were there  
now tell me my fayre brother howe  
feele ye your selfe & thinke ye that ye  
maye succour healthe: yea sayde Ryc-  
harde yf ye scape and els not, for the  
sore that I haue, I myght well

dye for sorowe.

**A**nd whan Reynawde heard  
Rycharde speake thys he was  
ryght glad of it. So cailed he Alarde  
to him and sayde. Brother take Ryc-  
harde vpon your shielde, and lede  
hym vpon the roche, and Guycharde  
and I shall rowme the waye a soze  
you, brother sayde Alarde, doubt not  
I shall doo my power. And than he  
lighted downe and cooke vp Rycharde  
and layde hym vpon hys shielde, and  
after he lighted againe on horsbacke  
and Reynawde and Guycharde leyd  
hym with his brother vpon the horse  
necke, and after put them selfe afore  
to breake the p[er]ce of the frenche-  
me. And they did so muche that they  
came to the roche. But wyt it well  
that Reynawde made there so great  
saytes atmes, that all hys enemys  
were incuaylled with all. For he  
slew at that tym[e] wiþ thys knyghtes,  
that never wylde boore, nor sy-  
gne, nor Lyon, nor were dyd p[er] Reyna-  
wde made there of his body. But  
so to say the crouthe: Reynawde set-  
ted nought by his lyfe, and icoparde  
himself al together, for he was as a  
man desperate. And whan they were  
come to the roche, Alarde set downe  
his brother Rychard to the erib. And  
began to defende quicly, but I wot  
not how they myght endure, for they  
had nother lastell nor fortresse, but  
onlye the roche.

**A**ll thus as the three brethern  
defended theymselfe wiþ  
greate woe. Than came there Dgier  
the

the dane and hys folke, and had in his company Magon of Frise with well a thousand knyghtes, & cyped upon Reynawde. Lettes knyght ye shalbe dead. Wee haue swozne your death. This day is the departyng þ ye & your brethern shall suffre death. Ye did as fooles whan ye beleued the kyng þon, for he hath put you all to death. Whan Iarre saw so great folke come: he was soze an angred, and sayd to Guycharde. See howe great a sorow is heere afor us, and the great nombre of foike that be re dy for to slea vs four knyghtes. certes þ we were syue hundred wel ar med yet shold not we scape, for they ben wel armed and a great quantite of knyghtes. Hertly sayd Butchard heere is a mecuylouse compayne, but þ God helpe vs nowe: Wee ben com to yende of our dayes. It is no great dommage of me nother of Richarde, but the great dommage is of Reynawde that is the best knyghte of the Worlde. And whan Iarre and Guycharde had spoken cogyder: they wente to Reynawde and kyssed him full soze weypynge. and sayde vno hym. O brother Reynawde giue vs a gyfte þ it please you for the loue of oure lord God. Lordes sayde Reynawde what thynge aske you of me: ye know wel enough that I can not helpe you of no thing, and thys day muste I needes see you dye before min eyen.

**B**rother sayd Iarre, Herke whac we wyl tell you, and þ it please you ye shall doo it. Say on hardely sayde Reynawde. Brother sayde A.

Iarre men saven comenly that it is better to doone one harme: than two. I say thys bycause þ if ye dye heere: it shalbe great dommage, & the losse shal neuer be recouered agayne, for none shall auenge your death, but though we dye heere and not you: it shalbe no great dommage, for ye shal auenge vs wel, and therfore we pray you sweet brother for al the pleasautes that ye Wolde doo elli to vs, þ ye wyl goe your Wayes, and we shall abyde heere. And whan þ death shal come: we shall take it a Worlde. This that we say ye may well doo: for ye be well horsed, and ye shal wel sauе your selfe maugre the frenche men, þ they goe to Mountawban, & whan ye be at Mountawban: lyght vpon Bayarde wel armed, & bringe anon wþt you our cosyn Hawgys for to succour vs. Brother sayd Reynawde, ye speake to folyslye. Certes I Wolde not doo so far all the golde of the worlde. I shold be soze bad and full vnykynde þ I dyd so, for I coulde not spyll my selfe soneer than for to leaue you in so great perill. Other we shall all scape: or els we shal all dye together, for the one shal not farle the other as longe as we may lyue, now God that suffred death and passion sake vs. Thus as Reynawde spake to hys bretherne: came the erle Guymarde to whome God gyue curi aduenture, and sayd to Reynawde, knight ye be take and ye must dye wþt shame vpon thys roche. whan ye beleued the kyng þon ye dyd great folys. He wrought great treason whan he dyd sell you to the kyng Charlemayne that ha

## The booke of the fourre

teth you so muche, for ye loued hym  
more, than ye dyd your cosin Daw-  
gys. He hath well rewarded you for  
the great loue that ye ought to him,  
tell me Reynawde whether ye wyl  
yeeld you or defede you: Lertes sayd  
Reynawde now speke ye for nought,  
I shal never yeeld me as longe as I  
am a liue. Reynawde sayd than, O-  
gyer what wyl ye doo? Wee cannot  
helpe you of nothyng, other gyue  
your selfe vp: or defende your selfe,  
Ogyer sayd Reynawde, by hym that  
made the worlde I shal never yeeld  
me. I was never no cheele and ther-  
fore wyl I not be hanged, I haue le-  
uer dye like a knyght than to hange  
lyke a cheeke. Lordes sayd Guimard  
let vs sawte them, for they shall not  
may kepe longe agaynst vs. Lordes  
sayd Ogyer ye maye well sawte the  
if ye wil, but bi my soule I shal doo  
the nothyng, for they ben my cosins  
nor I shal not helpe them. For ye  
shall take them well wþthout me.  
Lertes sayd þ frenche men, we shall  
than assayle them wþrthely. Than  
Ogyer drewe hymselfe and all hys  
folke a syde, wel the length of a bow  
shot, and began to make so great so-  
towe as though he all the worlde had  
finisched afore hys eyen, and all hys  
folke was for Reynawde hys cosyn  
and for hys brethern, and thus  
as he made his mone: he began for  
to saye. Ha sayre cosin Reynawde it  
is great pitie of your death. And I  
vnhappy man that am of your kynne  
suffre you to dye afore myne eyen, &  
yet I cannot helpe you, for I haue  
it promysed to Charlemayne, nor I  
ought not for to breake myne oþre.

But the historie telleth that Ogyer  
duaange hymselfe greatly that day,  
And through his purchase the fourre  
sonnes of Iymon scaped. For ye he  
wolde haue put Payne to it: they  
should not haue scaped by no maner  
but as men sayd. True bloud maye  
not lye.

**B**efore the roche were fourre Er-  
bles, for to sawte the fourre Son-  
nes of Iymon, and made them ino-  
the a doo. For they folke sawte the  
in fourre partyes. Wherof Reynawde  
kepte the two partes: and Iararde &  
Guycharde kepte the other twyne.  
For Richardde lay downe vpon the  
erth sore wounded, as I tolde you a-  
foxe. And yet was Guycharde woun-  
ded soore throughe the thye wherof  
he had bled so longe þ ye was feyn  
and fell downe to the erth. And wha  
he sawe that he myght no more de-  
fend: he began to cal vp Reynawde  
and sayde. Ha Reynawde sayre bro-  
ther, let vs yeeld vs I pray you, for  
I noþ Richardde maye no more helpe  
you. Brother sayd Reynawde what  
say you: now shewe wel that ye be  
ferdfull, but I let you wyt that yf I  
troued to scape other for Golde, or  
for Syluer or for Cittie or for Castel-  
les, or my horse Wararde that I lo-  
ue so muche: I shold haue yeeld me  
prisoner to daye in þ morwyng. For  
ye wot well that yf we be taken that  
all the golde that is in all the Worlde  
saue vs not fro hangyng, or some  
other shamefull deaþ, and therfore  
I wyl not yeeld me by no maner of  
wysse. A man that wyl be valgaunte  
ought

ought to defende hymselfe for to be  
whole. ha richarde succour vs for  
the loue of Iesus, for we haue well  
misfre: we ben nother Normans nor  
Brictons, but we ben all of one fa-  
ther and of one mother. Now ought  
we well to helpe eche other with all  
our power for our worship, for other  
wyse men shold say that we ben ba-  
stardes, and of an pyl father. ye saye  
trouthe sayde Guicharde. But ye  
wolde not beleue how feble I am,  
for I am wounded to the deach.  
Lettes sayde Reynawde, I am sorry  
for it, but I shall defende you as  
longe as life is in my bodi, who had  
seen than the noble knight Reisawd  
take vp the great stones, and cast the  
vpon hys enemys: ye Wolde not  
haue sayd that he had not be wounded  
nor trauayled of nothing. Whan Ri-  
charde (that lay a ground thus woun-  
ded as I haue tolde you aboue) saw  
and heard the great noyse that they  
that sawed the roche made: he tooke  
up his head and sayd to Reynawde.  
Brother I shall helpe you. But cut  
me some of my sherte, & I shal binde  
my syde and woulde so that my bo-  
Welles may not yssue out of my bei  
and than I shal set me to mi dffence  
and shall helpe you with al my hert.  
Than sayd Reynawde, nowe are y  
well worthe a true man. And whan  
Guicharde vnderstoode hym: he  
was a shamed and tooke agayne  
strength in him beyonde hys power  
and came to the dffence and sayde w  
a high voice Ogier fayre colin what  
doo you to your lynage? Lettes it  
shalbe a great shame to you yf ye suc-

cour vs not, for the faute that ye do  
to vs: shall be layde unto you in  
euery place Where ye goe, to let vs  
dye thus We that ben your kynnes-  
men, the best of all the Worlde, saue  
Reynawde & ye shall doo like a true  
man, and as for vs other: it maketh  
nother lesse nother more. Whan O-  
gier vnderstoode these wordes: he was  
sory for it, that no man might more,  
and Wolde haue grue a great thyng  
for to haue deliuered them. And said  
that he Wolde doo wyth all his herte  
all that he might doo for them. And  
tha Ogier spurred Brayforde with  
his spurres and came to the roche  
w a staffe in his hande, and sayde to  
the that sawed the roche: Wrythdraw  
your selfe a litle tyll I haue spoken  
wyth them a litle, for to wyt whe-  
ther they wyl give them selfe vp or  
no. for it is better that we haue the  
quicke than dead. Sir sayd the fren-  
che men We shal doo your commaū-  
dement. But wee leaue them wyth  
you to keep in the name of the kynge  
Charlemayne. ha god sayd Ogier I  
neuer thought treason, nor I shal not  
begyn yet. And than he came more  
nighe the roche than he had be, and  
called to hym the fourre Sonnes of  
Aymon, and sayd to them. Fayre  
colyn rest you, and take agayne your  
brethe, and yf ye be hurt: wraphpe vp  
your woundes, & make good garnis-  
hinge of stones, & so defende youre  
selfe nobly of al your power, for if y  
king Charlemayne may haue you: ye  
shall neuer haue pardonne, but he  
shal make you to be hanged & stran-  
gled, and therfore ye muste needes  
hope.

### The booke of the fourre

Repe your selfe well. For I promise  
you of Malwys know of it: he shall  
come to soccoure you, thus shall ye  
scape. & other wyls not. Cosen sayd  
Alarde, ye shall haue of it a good re-  
warde yf euer we may scape, ye saye  
true sayde Reynawde. For yf I mai  
scape bi god that suffred death & pas-  
syon for vs vpon the Crosse, all the  
golde of the world shal not saue him  
but I shall slea hym wyl myne own  
handes, for I hate hym much more  
than I doo a straunger. For he that  
should helpe and defende me agaynst  
all men it is he that doth me harme  
Cosyn sayd Ogier I maye not doo  
thereto, so helpe god my soule. For yf  
kyng Charlemayne made me were  
afare all hys barons that I shold  
not helpe you in no maner of wyls.  
And of this that I doo, I am sure yf  
the kyng Charlemayne shall come  
me no thanke. Brother sayd Alarde  
Ogier tell eth you trouth. And also  
it was well trouth that Ogier was  
repreued therof for treason, for char-  
lemaigne called him traitour afare al  
his barons. Than Reynawde bothe  
the wondres of his bretherne as wel  
as he could. But the wondre of ry-  
charde was so greefully to see that it  
was pitie to beholde, for all the en-  
cayles appered oute of hys bodye.  
And whan he had lapped theym al:  
Alarde wrapped the wounde that  
Rycna wde had in the thyghe, and  
whan they had rested themself a little  
Reynawde stode vp and went vpon  
the roche for to gather stones to de-  
fende them self. And garnysshed ther  
wtheyr defencce whare his bretherne  
should stande. Whan the frenchemen

sawen yf Ogier the Dane made there  
to longe a solournyng: they began  
all to call and cewe. Ogier ye make  
therc to longe a Sermon, tell vs yf  
they wyl yelde them or no, or yf they  
shall defende themselfe. Raye sayde  
Ogier as longe as they haue lyfe in  
theyr bodyes. By my soule sayde the  
frenchemen than go we saue them  
este agayne. Than sayde Ogier I  
promise you I shal helpe them with  
all my power. Whan the Erle Guy-  
marde hearde Ogier speake so: he  
wente to hym & sard. We commanide  
you in the kinges name of Fraunce  
that ye come to the batayle wyl vs  
agaynst the fourre sonnes of Aymon  
as ye haue promised and sworne, &  
for doubt of you many a lord is here  
in your company that wyl not fy-  
ght. Lordes sayd Ogier for god mer-  
cy, ye know wel al redy they ben my  
cosyns germane. I pray you let vs  
withdrawe our selfe abacke, and let  
them be in peace, and I shal gyue  
eche of you large goodes, Ogier said  
the frenchemen we shall not doo so,  
but we shall bryng them pysoners  
to the kyng Charlemayne that shal  
doo with them hys pleasure, and al-  
so we shall tell him what ye haue do-  
one. Wherof he shal conne you lytle  
thanke all his life. And after whan  
Ogier vnderstode these wordes: he  
was soze an angred & sayde by great  
wrathe. By the sayth that I owe to  
al my freendes if there be ani of you  
so hardy that take Reynawde or any  
of this brethern for to deluyer them  
to kyng Charlemayne I shal smyte  
of his head, what some euer come af-  
ter it. Ogier sayd yf Erle Guymarde  
We

we shal not leue therfore for to take them ryght shordly. And whan we haue them: we shal see who shal take them from vs: for we shall well can shew this to the king Charlemain. And than they began to sawe the roche agayne. Wit it that Reynawode & hys bretheren defended themself full nobly. But whan Reynawode sawe this great multytude of folke that came for to sawe them: he began to saye. Ha Ma Wgis my fayre cosyn where are ye now that ye knowe not thys my shap: for ye wolde come a non to helpe vs: but ye knowit not, wherof I am euill concerte. For I was a foole and ouer hasty that I spake not to you of thys matter as soone that I came heere. Ha Bayarde yf I were vpon your backe I shoulde never entre in this roche for feare of the frenchemen, but y king Charlemayne shoulde lese heere of the best knyghtes of his company, & whan he had sayde this: he began to weepe full tenderly for the loue of his bretheren, y he saw so soore wounded and so werye. Than the frenchemen sawed them selfe as stronge agayne & I promise you if it had not be the greate provis of Reynawode: they shoulde haue been take at that time by fine force. Whan the sa wtinge was finisched: Reynawode set himself vpon his defence, for he was so wery that if he had gone he shoulde haue fallen do wne to the erthe, so weke he was and that was no meruayle: for they had so soore trauayled him, & had suffred so many tormentes and terrible sawtes that it was wunder y they coulde endure so longe.

**H**ad whan Ogier the Dane saw his cosyn so soore tormented: he tooke himself to wepe tenderly. And thus as he wept: he bethought him selfe of a great wyldeome & called to hym a knyght of hys that was named Gerarde & sayd to hym, haue for god mercy of me, and but yf ye doo ihat I shall tel you: I am dis honourid for euer more. Syr sayd Gerade tell me what it please you for it shall be doo though he I shoulde lose my life. Gramercy sayd Ogier, now shall I tell you what I wyl that ye doo, take wych you xi. knyghtes of the best of my felawship, & go ryghtly to y mout hys, & kepe your self therpon, & beholde towarde Moun tauban all y right way that no body come but ye see hym, for yf Bayarde yf may hit by any way the misfortune of his cosyns: I promise you y he wyl come to succoure them, and shall gyue vs muche a doo, so that y moste hardy whiche soore affrayed, syr sayd gerarde this y ye haue said: shal be well doone, and than he tooke xi. of y best knyghtes of his company & wet to the mount hys, where they made not well theyr watche for the profite of the frenchemen. Ye ought here to wit y Ogier foud this maner to send his me forth, but only y Reynawode and his bretheren shoulde not haue a doo with so many folke, and thought not of that that happed.

**B**ut now leueth heere the hystory to speake of the four sonnes of Aymon that were in the roche moutbrō. And also leueth to speake of Ogier the Dane, and of thother folke that Charlemayne had sent, & returneth to

## The booke of the four

to speake of Godarde the secretary of  
the king. Pon that had red the letters  
where the treason was conteyned al  
playnly.

**C**howarter that Godarde the secre  
tary of the kyng Pon had rehersed

al the treason of Mawgys, that the  
kyng Pon had doone to his colins.  
Mawgys broughte suche a succoures  
to Reynawde and to his brethren, þ  
he sauied them fro death bi his greas  
wydome.

**C**apitulum. x.



**N**ow sheweth the hystory that  
when Godarde saw Reynawde  
and his brethren go to theyr death  
thorough so false a treason: he had  
of it great sorow and pitie, and he  
was ryght soroy for it, for two pyn-  
cipal causes, wherof thone was for  
his mayster the kyng Pon, that had  
wrought that shamefull treason:  
and the other was for the great pitie  
and damage þ it was for to make die  
so pitiouly suche worthy knyghtes  
as the fourre sonnes of Iimon were.

So began he to weep pitiously, and  
thus as he wept, came there Maw-  
gys the colyn of the fourre sonnes of  
Iimon that went to the kechyn for  
to haue the meate, for the kyng Pon  
wolde eat, to the whiche men made  
good cheere, by cause they kne w not  
the treason that he had doone. Whan  
the clerke sawe Mawgys: he called  
 hym, and sayd to hym. Ha Mawgys  
howit is þt with you: for if god put  
no remedy in you re haue loste that  
things

thyng þe mooste loue in thys worlde  
that is Reynawde and hys bretheren  
for the kyng eon hath betayed the  
shamefully. And than he shewed to  
hym all the treason, whan Hawgys  
understode these wordes: he was all  
out of his wittes & sayd to the clerke  
Godarde for god go a waye fro me,  
for all my limmes shaken for angre  
nor I cannot stande vpon my feete,  
for mi hert telleth me that Reynawde  
and hys bretheren ben dead. Certes  
sayd Godarde ye sai trouth. For the  
letter sheweth that Ogier the dane  
and foulques of Morillon are set  
in a busshemet with a great numbre  
of folke in the plaine of Walcolours  
and Reynawde and his bretheren are  
gone thyther al unarmed by the cou-  
sell of kyng Eon, and thus they can-  
not defende, but they muste be dead  
or take. Wha Hawgys understode  
thys: he was sorry for it that he fell  
downe in a swoone to therth, and at  
the fallynge that he made he brake all  
hys browes. And whan he was com-  
agayne to himselfe, he was so sorry þ  
he wylt not what he shold doo. So  
tooke he a knyfe and wolde haue shou-  
ned it in hys breste, but he myght not  
for Godarde tooke hym by the hand  
and sayd to hym. Ha gentyll knyght  
haue mercy vpon you, kyll not  
your selfe, for your soule shal be dāp-  
ned for it, but light a horsbacke and  
take Wyth you all the men of armes  
that ben within and the good horse  
bayarde that renneth so fast, and goe  
therre as your colyns ben gone as  
soone as ye may. And whan ye com  
therre, ye shal see anon yf ye can helpe  
them or not, for yf they ben alye yf

shall succour them ryght wel. Godarde sayd Hawgys your coulde is  
right good, and tha he began to weep  
and said. Ha noble knyght Reynawde  
it is great dommage yf ye be dead,  
but I make my vowe to God that if  
ye and your bretheren be dead: I shall  
neuer live two dayes after you. And than Hawgys without any noysse  
or onysse wrode to be made of this to  
kyng Eon nor to his syster the wife  
of Reynawde: comande all the sol-  
diours of the castell to be redy in ar-  
mes lightly, and whan the knyghtes  
understode hym: they tooke theyr ha-  
ueys on in contynent as they were  
wōt to doo. And whan they were all  
armed thei came al to the lowest part  
of the palays and presēted themself,  
and whan Hawgys saw them: he  
shewed to them all the treason that  
the kyng von had doone to Reynawde  
and to his bretheren.

**T**hen whan the knyghtes of  
Reynawde understode thys:  
they begā to make liche sorow that  
it was pity for to see, & wylched after  
the noble knyghtes that were gone to  
theyr death, & were sore desperat that  
they wolde al most haue killed them  
selfe. For the one wylched after Reynawde  
& the other after Warde the  
other after Gischarde & other as  
ter Richarde, & sayd. Ha valiant &  
proue knyghtes it is great domage of  
your death, for certaynly al þ world  
shal be þ worse therfore. Alas & who  
shall giue vs now the lare armes &  
the good horses þc were wonte to  
giue vs, thus as they were making  
this great sorow: Hawgys sayd to þ  
palfrai

### The booke of the four

palstrainer þ kept Bayarde, freende  
goe and set the saddle vpon Bayarde  
and I shall bryng hym to Reynawde,  
þy sayd the palstrainer. I may not  
doo it, for Reynawde my mayster cō  
maunded me whan he Went that I  
Should not suffre nobody to lyght v  
pon it till he were come agayne, whā  
Hawgys vnderstode the answere of  
the palstrainer: he was wroth, and  
smote hym wyth hys fysle so greate  
a stroke that he cast him at his foote  
afore hym and after Went hymselfe  
to the stable wherc Bayarde was.  
Whan Bayarde saw Hawgys: he be  
gau to shrinke hys eares and smote  
with his forfeete so stronge that no  
body durst go nigh him, but the pal  
strainer that tended vpon him, and  
Whan Hawgys saw that Bayarde  
plaied so he tooke a staffe and smote  
bayarde vpon the head so þ he made  
him kneele to þerth. And whan bay  
arde saw he was so curstly dealed v  
all: he was aferde least he should be  
yet more shrededly handled and so  
he helde hymselfe styll, & Hawgys  
caste the saddle vpon hym and bridled  
hym. And wyt it that whan Haw  
gys was vpon bayardes backe: he  
was wel lyke a valyaunt man and  
a hardy knyght, for he was one of  
þ farrest knyghtes of the worlde and  
one of the best, and the moste subtyll  
of the worlde. And whan Hawgys  
and al his folke were al redy aholde  
backe well armēd: they went out at  
the gate fawcon. And they myght  
well be aboue fyue thousande men  
well horsed and well armēd, and bi  
hondred good archers þ never wold  
go backe for no doubtē of death by

any maner; and they set themselfe to  
the way, not by the ryght waye: but  
wente throughe þ Wood al a couerte  
wyth great diligence, and alwayes  
Hawgys went wisshyng after reyn  
awde and after hys bretherne, for  
he wylste not yf they were dead or a  
lyue, and sayd to hymselfe. Ha Reyn  
awde God be thys day wyth you, &  
keep you & your bretherne fro death  
and fro pryslon. But now yf the frē  
the men keep not themselfe wel: they  
shall haue suche a neyghbour and  
so cruell that they shalbe sorwe wery  
of it and shall sore repente. Now  
shall wee leue to speake of Haw  
gys þ brought succours to Reynaw  
de to the playne of Galcolours: and  
we shall shew of Reynawde and of  
hys brethern þ were at roche Mount  
bieng full of wo & sorw, for they sawe  
themselue in great perill. It thus as  
Reynawde dyd rette himselfe vpon  
the defensē of the roche and thought  
in hymselfe what he myght doo: he  
turned his sighte to warde the wood  
and saw come Hawgys wth his folke  
þe shalde at the necke the swerde in  
the hande and mounted vpon Bay  
arde, wyt it that bayarde wente not  
the lytle pale but wente lyke a swa  
lowe, for at euerye lepe that he made  
he lept thichty foote of grounde. And  
whan Reynawde sawe Hawgys  
come with so great folke & so fayre  
a company: al his body shewēd all  
sooeynlyc for great ioye, and forzag  
all the great sorwes & torment that  
he had suffred all the daye and sayde  
to his brethern. Brethern be metye  
and be not dysmayed of nothynge,  
for here cometh Hawgys to succour

us with great nombre of folke, now he sheweth well that he is out kynsman and a good freend, blessed be he of god that hath tolde him the daunger that we were in. Brother said Alarde is it crouth that we shall haue helpe anone? *ea* said Reynaude by the faiche that I owe to you. Lertes said Alarde uol we complaine I not. And whan Richardde that lare Wyth his bowelles betwenn his handes vnder stooode this word: him seemed that he dreamed this that he heard which his b; ethern said, for he was al readie broughte as one that had lost hys braine, by cause of the great sore that he felte and forced himselfe so that he tyghed himselfe vpon his buttocke but it was with great paine, & sayde to his brother Reynaude me semeth that I haue hearde named Hawogis or elles it is come to me by a visyon, brother said Reynaude by my saythe we haue socours of Hawogis that bringeth to us at the power of Mouatawhan. Brother said Richardde for god shew me hym. And than Reynaude tooke him betwene his armes and shewed him Hawogis that came rydynge vpon Bayarde as faste as tempest, whan Richardde sawe Hawogis: he was so gladde that he fell in a swoone betwene his brothers armes. And whan he was come againe to himselfe: he said. Nowam I whole for I felte nother yll norther sore, brother Reynaude said Alard, what shall we doo: for if the frenshmen perceiue the comming of Hawogis: they shal flee, and I wolde for no good that they shold doo so, for I Wolde that we were firsste auenged vpon theym

for the great hurt that thei haue doon to us, but let us doo one chyng that I shall tel you. Let us goe downe to the foote of the roche and begynne the battayle, & while that they shal fight with us: Hawogis shal be come, and by all thus they shal not scape us, brother said Reynaude ye say well and we shal doo so, & than Reynaude, Alard and Guicharde wente downe to the foote of the roche, and the litell Guicharde bod aboue vpon the roche for he coulde not moue nother helpe himselfe.

**R**eynaude came downe from the roche with his two brethen, and whan the frenshmen sawe them: they began to late thone to other. Here cometh the sones of Aymon that will yeeld themselves prisoners, now let us not kylle them but take we theym for to bringe them aliaue to thempetour Charlemayne. And whan they had sayd this: they began to cry. Reynaude but yf ye wyl die shortly: yeild your selfe and if ye doo it with good will: we shall ali praye Charlemain that he haue mercy vpon you. Whan Ogier heard them speake thus: he wend it had be crouth that Reynaude & his brethen wold haue giuen themselves vp as prisoneers. So was he full soray for it, and spurred brayforde with the spurres & came ayenst Reynaude and his bretcherne and saide to them: knyghtes I holde you nowe for fooles that ye haue left your roche that was the sauing of your life, this day shal ye be hanged with great shame, and yet I can not help you, for I shold be bla-

the booke of the fouré

med of Charlemain. Ogier said Rei: ye wold graunt to it, your facher left  
na wode we ben not such fooles as ye you in ffaunce for a pledge ac saynt  
Wene, but I will that ye flee. For by  
the faiche that I owe to the olde ky-  
mon my facher ys ye carye any whyle  
heere ye shall not be wise, for if I can  
reche vnto you. I shall shewe what  
I can doo.

**T**his hanging:that Reynawd  
spake to Ogier: Ogier be  
helde to Warde the ryghte waye that  
came to the wood & sawe folke come  
to Reynawd that Haugis brought,  
and was all afore mounted vpon  
Bayard that came fast. And whan  
Ogier sawe come thus the folke of  
Reynawd in great numbre: he knew  
them well, & was ryghte glad of it, &  
his herte rozed in his bely for Joye,  
and righced himselfe vp in his saddle  
Wel haile a foote & sayd to his folke.  
Fayre lordes what shal we doo: the  
deuyll hath tolde Mawgis that we  
be heere, he cometh ryding vpon ba-  
arde & byngeth Wyth hym a fayre  
company, certes if we were xx. thou-  
sande yet were we not able to fyghte  
With them, and ye shall see thys day  
that the lorde we shall returne vpon  
vs. This hangyng came Mawgis  
Wyth al his felowship, & there wher  
he saw Ogier: he came to him and  
sayde. Ogier I holde you for a foole  
bycause that ye came heere to werke  
treason. I chalenge of you Reynawd  
and his bretherne, and am come heere  
to be theys surte. By god Ogier it  
longerh not to you for to betray thus  
Reynawd & his bretherne, for ye be  
of his lignage but ye haue yl shewed  
it to him, your facher wought never  
treason, & I metuayll me so; he we

you in ffaunce for a pledge ac saynt  
Dmers to Charlemain, whose man  
ye are, payng to hym euery yere foute  
peny weyghte of golde. Ogier ye be  
deslended of damp Richard, of Rou-  
sillon, of Don of Rancuel, of the du-  
ke Benes of Bygremounce, al these  
were bretherne & good true men and  
fatchful knyghtes, and Jimō of dor-  
don Was they; brother and is facher  
to Reynawd, this knowe ye well and  
ye will be oþer than was your ly-  
nage wherof I desy you to the deach  
for I haue you vterely. Whan Haw-  
gis had sayd this worde: he spurred  
bayard with his spures & smot O-  
gier in the shidle so harde that the  
shidle no; his hatneyss could not saue  
him but that he made him a greate  
Wond in his brest, and of that strok  
flough the spere in peces, whan O-  
gier sawe that he was so sore an an-  
gred for it that he woxed almost mad,  
& wold haue gon vpon Mawgys but  
be myght not. For whan bayard smel-  
led his lord: he ran myghtely toward  
him, wold be o; no, & whan he was  
comie before Reynawd: he kneeled be-  
fore him, & Mawgis lighced to him  
& came to Reynawd & kissed him ful  
swetly, & after he killed Ilarde, and  
Gauharde, & than said, where is the  
lytel Rycharde: For men helde hym  
for one of the most hardy of the world  
Cosyn sayd Reynawde he is there a-  
boue sore wounded that I wote nos  
whether he be dead o; alþue, cosyn  
sayd Mawgys can not he moue him  
selfe: it is not tyme to speake so long  
said Reynawd, but let vs se who shal  
doo best, & gyue me mine armes, with

a good will sayde Hawgys, & than Reynawde armed hym and lyghted vpon bayard the shidle at the nekke and the spere in the hande, and whā he had sayd this: he spurred Baiard with his spurre, & lepte at cuerie hym me. xxx. foote of length. Whan Reynawde sawe hym selfe vpon bayard: he was ryghte gladde, for he crowed neuer to haue set vpon his backe a gayne, and whan he sawe hym selfe thus horsed & armid with his o'one armures: so held hym selfe more sure, than that he hadde be in the mayster towre of Mountawian, and than he made a course and ranne vpon Ogier and smote hym so hearde that he made hym lyghte fro the saddle, and bare hym fyslye to the grounde. And whan Reynawde sawe Ogier a groud: he lyghted a foote and tooke the horse of Ogier and brought it to him agat. &c, and helde the stroppe and made Ogier to lyghte vpon brayford againe, and than Reynawde said to hym, Losynge Ogier now haue ye the rewarde of tho goodnes that ye did vnto vs, but certes this that ye haue don ye did it as a traytore and an ill kynsmanne, therfore keep you from me for I desse you, and by him that made the worlde I shall spate you no more, for ye are sauandzed.

**C**losyn Reynawde sayde Ogier and we shall keep vs fro you doubt ye not. Who than hadde be in that place: he shoulde haue seen howe Reynawde had medied hym selfe vgoriously among the frenshemenne, and myght well saye that he was a

knight prue and valyaunt. And thā came Hawgys vpon a nother hōsle that he had recouered and spurred hym with his spurres, and came to y earele Guymard and smote him i hōtughe the sheld so that he shoued his speare through and thōugh his boodie, and seid him douare deade to the earche. And Whan he had gyuen that stroke: he cryed Mountawian cleare mount, and as: er he laid in this maner, tree knyghtes smote vpo this frenshemen that wolde lea the best knyghtes of the world, they haue wel shewed great wox: hīnes Whan they be com hicher in great numbre for to fighthe ayenst foute knyghtes vnatmed, but they shall repente theym of they bargane right soze or that vwo howres been a goe, and therfore leye strongly vpon theym and as harde as ye can, for if Ogier scape vs: We be dyshonoured, and than began the styrke fell and cruell & many a frensh man was cast down to the earch. For they might not endure the great māueylles of armes that Reynawde and his bretheren made. And whan the frenshmen sawe that they could not withstande no lenger: and sawe the great doommage and hurtē that Reynawde, his bretheren and Hawgys bare to theym: they put theymselfe to fighthe & Ogier with them toward the riuer of Dordonne, and Ogier passed it ouer vpo his horse brayford, and Whan he was come at the other syde of the ryuer: he lyghted a foote, and Reynawde callid in a scorne and sayde to hym. Ogier I trowe ye be become a fyssher, haue ye ecles or lawmens: I gyue you iure to chuse

O.ii. Whe-

The booke of the four

Wherther ye Wyll come again at this syde: or that I goe to you at that syde, and yf ye come agayne at thys syde: I shall keep you safe from all men but of me onelye, or elles make me sure scom Charlemaynes folke and I shall iuste with you, and after said to him. Ye whoreson false knaue ye haue falleſt your faych to Charlemayne, for ye be my cosyn germaine And howe had ye the herre for to see vs be murdered in youre presence and that ye defended vs not ayenſte all men, and ye come your ſelue for to ſlea vs by treason. Lettes Ogier ye haue doon amys greatly. But thankeſt be god ye leauie with vs behynde you a good pledge. For heire abydeſt with vs ſouleſes of moryllon, and the erle Gutmar, the whiche ſhal neuer make vs no warre and more thā vi. hundred of your frenſh knigheſs, euill tidings ye ſhall beare of them to Charlemaine and to Rowlande, and ye ſhal giue them an ill reſouning of your men. And goddes curse haue they if they make not you to be han ged as a cheef by the necke.

**T**henne Were the frenſhemē ſore abalſhed whan they heard Reynawde reproue Ogier ſo, wherof they were gladde and ſaide togither wel finde ye now to the reward of your goodnes, if ye wold haue doone your deuoure: the fourte ſonnes of Aymon had be taken. And whan Ogier ſaw himſelf thus reprouēd of the one part and of the other: he was ryghte ſory for it. And than they leſte him upon the ryuer ſyde of Dordon,

and abode wyrh hym but x. meyne. And whan Ogier ſaw that all his compayne had leſte hym: he knewe wel that they dyd ſo for diſpice, than ſayde he all by hymſelke. Fayre God of heauē I am wel worthy to be ſerved thus. And the prouerbe maye well be reherted for a trouche, that ſaych. Often happed enyl for a good turne. Whan Ogier had ſayd this: he cryed a ſaide to Reynawde. O mad beſte ye blame me wrongefully and without a cauſe, for ye and your brethern ſhould haue be hanged by this without any pardonne, no; Hawgys hadde never come heire tyme y noughe, wherof ye haue called me traytoure, but ye lyſe fallye. For I never dyd treason no; never ſhall ye God wyll. ye haue alſo cailed me ſiſher, nowe oughte I well to were mad all quicke whan ſucha glucon dooth to me ſo great ouerage, but by the faythe that I owe to all my freendes, but if I feared other than you: I ſhoulde goe gyue you ſuſhe a ſtroke chozouſhe the ſheeld that ye ſhoulde ſayde it is a ſtroke of a mayſter. Than ſayd Reynawde, Ogier ye ſpeake wel at your eafe, for ye ſhal doo nothynge at all of that ye ſayſt leaſt your hymnes ſhould be hurt by my berde ſayde Ogier I ſhall. And than he broched brayfode wyrh the ſpurreſ and put hymſelke to ſwyme ouer the ryuer. And whan he was come to the playne grounde: he made hym ready for to louſte as were as he was. And whan Reynawde ſaw Ogier ſo yll arrayed for to fyght: he had pyte therof, and ſayde to hym. Cosin I haue at this yowre no Wyll for to fighſt

fyghe, and therfore goe your Wayes  
againe, for this daye ye shall not be  
defoyled by me, nowe knowe I well y  
pe haue holpen me. Reynawd (sayde  
Ogier) mocke not with me, ye haue  
called me traitour before mani knigh  
tes, if I went my Way again: menne  
migh say to Charlemain that I had  
betrayed him fasslye. My spere is yet  
al whole, it were a greate shame to me  
but I brake it vpon you or vpon one  
of your brethren. For foulques and  
the eacle Guimard shoud complain  
in helle vpon me, and of the other part  
I shoude haue none excuse towarde  
the king Charlemain if I went thus  
awaye, for ye haue well slaine fourte  
hundred knyghtes of ours, wherfore  
I saye coz a conclusion that I shal not  
goe my waye, but that I medle first  
with you, for ye wot well that if I  
went thus my waye: the king Char  
lemaigne shoud beare me some dishon  
oure for it, and he shoude haue rea  
son to also he shoude make me to be  
headed, and therfore I wil fyghe with  
you, for certes I haue leuelt die chan  
to returne thus to him, and yf God  
hath ordeined that ye shall smite of  
my heade: I pardone you my death.  
for if I came ouercome you: I shall  
bringe you to the king Charlemaigne  
What someruer come of it.

**A**nd whan Reynawde hearde  
Ogier speake so: he wered all  
mad for angre and saide by Wrathe,  
Ogier I defy you to the death & keep  
you fro me, & you of me said Ogier.  
And whan they had defied eche other  
so Reynawde spurrd Bayarde and

Ogier brayforde their good hōses  
and ranne the one vpon the other so  
strongly that the earth trembled vnder  
their fete. And whan came coz to  
late the speres alothe; they hytten eche  
other so harde that they brake thei  
speres, and after their speres were  
broken: they recoured eche other with  
thei sheldes and gaue eche other so  
greate strokes that they both fel down  
to the earth ouer their croper of chry  
hōses and were soore wounded. And  
Whan the two good knyghtes sawe  
theimselfe at the grounde: they rose  
up quickly and sette hande to thei  
swerde and began to make so harde  
medllyng that it was meruayle. But  
herke of thei hōses. Wit that whan  
Bayarde and brayforde sawe thei  
maistres at the grounde: incontynene  
they wen the one to the other, and be  
gan to bytten eche other and cast thei  
feet the one vpon the other. Whan  
Ogier sawe that: he was ful soray for  
it, for he knewe wel that bayard was  
the stronger, so ranne Ogier thither  
the shelde at his necke and hys  
swerde in his hand, for he wold help  
his good hōse Bayford, for he was  
afearde that bayarde shoude haue  
kylled hym. Whan Reynawde sawe  
thys: he cryed and sayde, What is it  
Ogier that ye wyll doo: it is not the  
werke of a knyghte to smite a beaste,  
and well me semeth that ye haue po  
roughe to doo of me wyrhout ye bete  
not my hōs: Than Reynawde smot  
Ogier so greate a stroke vpon his  
helme: that he fel hym downe vnto  
the grounde, but the stroke fylled a  
syde & hys asunder al liche as i roghte  
well an hundred maylies of hys

D.iii. flau

The booke of the four

flankarde, and wounded hym sore  
Upon his hyppe, and yf the swerde  
had not tourned within Reynawdes  
hande: Ogier shold never haue ea-  
ten breade, and whan Reynawd had  
giuen to him that stroke: he saide to  
him. Ogier le: alone Bayarde: for  
ye haue ynough a doo with me. I be-  
leue that I haue appaerted yowre hel-  
me, for I se your visage that is sore  
pale. And whan Ogier felte himself  
hurtte: he wexed almost wood for an-  
grie, and retourned to Reynawd with  
his swerde Loystyne and sayde. A  
cortexine that so muche I haue loued  
thee and certes it is well reason, for  
ye be a good swerde and in manye  
places ye haue well holpen me & ma-  
ny a proude man ouerthowen. And  
whan I went with y<sup>e</sup> king Chatle-  
maine at Elbroughe in Almayne,  
Rowlande, and Oliver dyd assaye  
theyr swerdes at Perris, and I smot  
after for to assaye you. And ye but-  
ted therof wel half a foot and ther  
I brake you Wherof I was ryghte  
sorye. But for the goodness that I  
know in you, for to amende againe  
therfore ye be called corren, and but  
if ye auenge me now of this glutton:  
I shall never haue no trust to you.  
And chā he smot Reynawd vpon hys  
helme so hard that he made him tee-  
le. And whan Ogier sawe Reynawd  
thus arrayed: he sayde to him, by god  
Reynawde I haue yeeld you againe  
that ye had giuen me, we be no we  
quite, wylle begyn a fleshe: by my  
sayche saide Reynawd yea, for I de-  
sire more to syghe than I doo any o-  
ther thyng. And than they went and  
camme the one vpon the other and be-

gan an nother medlyng, but than  
came there, Alarde, Hawgys, and  
Guycharde and all theyr folke. And  
whan Ogier sawe theim come: he  
was wrothe and sorye for it, and so  
wente he againe vnto brayforde hys  
good horse and lighced vpon him,  
swymmed agayn ouer Dordon and  
whan he was ouer: he abode styll at  
the riuer side and lyghced downe to  
the earrhe, but he had no sadle vpon  
hys horse, for the girthes brake whā  
he joustled wth Reynawde. Whan  
Reynawde sawe Brayforde saddel-  
lesse: he called to Ogier, and sayde  
Ogier come fetche yowre sadle, for ic  
shali be to you a greate shame yf ye  
tide thus, and chanke our lorde that  
ye be chus departed frome me wthouute  
any more harme. for yf we had tary-  
ed a liccill lenger togidher. I wolde  
haue brought you into sucha a place  
wherē ye were never, for the kyngo  
Chatlemaine your lord shold never  
haue rescued you in tym. Reynawde  
saide Ogier, ye chretien me of feare,  
it longeth not to a good knyghte to  
threaten one so, but I wot well that  
yf ic had not be your folke that haue  
succoured you: I wolde haue brought  
you to kyng Chatlemaine or euyer.  
Ogier saide Reynawde ye haue well  
sayde that ye be a good knyghte  
that passed the riuer of Dordon, for  
to come right wth me: but shall ye  
tary there for me tell I passe ouer at  
the other syde vpon my horse bay-  
arde, yea vpon my loule said Ogier,  
and yf ye doo ic: I shall saye that ye  
be the best knyghte of the worlde.  
Whan Reynawde vnderstoode that  
wryde: he spurred bayarde wth the  
spur.

spurres & wold haue passed ouer dor-  
don, but Hawgis, Alard, and Gui-  
charde letted him, and wolde not suf-  
fre hym to goe, but tooke hym by the  
byrdell, and Alarde saide to hym  
Ha sayre brother & what is this that  
ye wil doo: ye be ouer hastys, for who  
that dooth you good: he leseth well  
his time, ye knowe well and Ogier  
had not be: we shold haue been dead  
this day, and the succours of Haw-  
gys had helped vs but litell. Lette  
Ogier be in peace I praye you, for  
there is not a better knyghte in the  
worlde than he is one, and than cri-  
ed Alarde to Ogier. Faire colyn goe  
to god, for ye haue well holpen vs,  
whan Alarde had spoken to Ogier:  
he returned hym to his brother Reyna-  
ude and saide to him. Faire bro-  
ther me semeth it were good that we  
shold turne backe againe for to wit-  
howe oure brother Richarde dsothe  
that abide: h upon the roche Mount-  
bron so wounded as ye knowe. Let  
goe our enemies with shame knough  
for we haue damaged them tighe-  
sore. Than called Ogier to Reyna-  
ude, and said, ye haue discomfited vs,  
but by my fathers soule, we shal com-  
againe so greate soike vpon you that  
we shal beare to you greate harme  
and so shal we take the roye, the  
whiche ye shal not dare defende.  
No whiche al sayre said Reyna-  
ude, for we haue suche a castell where  
we dare wel abide the kinge Char-  
lemaigne, and you at anye houre that  
ye come, and also I tell you for cer-  
tain that or euer three daies be passed  
ye shal never take vs for all that  
ye can doo. And how sooneuer the ga-

me goeth, the losse hath euer be vp-  
on you vnto this time. And also ye  
shall beare no good tidinges to the  
king Charlemaigne. And whan Ogier  
had spoken knough vnto Reyna-  
ude: he spurred braford and went  
after his folke that hadde lefte him  
and he rode so longe that he came to  
Mountbandell and lighted downe  
before the rence of the kinge Charle-  
maigne. And whan Bowland and Os-  
liuer sawe come Ogier thus woun-  
ded and making so euill chere: they  
crowed that there hadde be a battaille  
and that Ogier had taken Reynaude  
and his breeches, and so they dyd  
call the Duke Raimes, Salomon  
of Brecen, Richard of Normandye  
and the earle Guidelon. And whan  
they were all assembled: they saide  
the one to the other. Poore vnhappy  
and what shal we doo: this day shall  
we see hanged the fourre sonnes of  
Aymon, they be cosing to vs al, and  
if the king Charlemaigne maketh the  
to be hanged: we be dishonoured for  
ever. And whan the king Charle-  
maigne sa we come Ogier: he said to  
him, Ogier whare ben the fourre son-  
nes of Aymon: haue ye taken them,  
or slaine them, or remysed them for  
prisoners: he saide Ogier all sayre  
and folkyre, Wit it that they been no  
children: but they are the best kny-  
ghtes of the worlde, and they be al yngue.  
I tell you sir that we founde them in  
the plaine of Walcolours, all fourre  
clothed in scarlet furred with cum-  
bres and vpon mules, and bare in  
their handes floutes, and roses, wel  
hath the king of Gascoigne kepte  
his couenaunt to you, for he hath set  
them

The booke of the four

theym forth in such maner as he pro-  
mised to you, but the Worchynes and  
the provenes was such that they chau-  
ged theym mures to good horses and  
recovered both sheelde and spere. And  
whan Reinald had gotten a horse:  
he slew foulques of Lhoydon first  
of all, and mounted upon his horse,  
but at the last they found a roche cov-  
uen after the maner of a caue that is  
a strong place, where they defended  
themselfe a longe while, and Richard  
one of their bretherne had ben slaine,  
and the other three should haue be-  
other taken or slaine, and if Hawgis  
had not come thare to succoure them  
mounted upon bayard and broughte  
with him. v. thousande knyghtes  
which haue discomfited vs and haue  
slaine the Erle Guymarde.

**H** I said chempaour Charlemain,  
ne is it true that they been so  
scaped: sir said Ogier, yea vere  
lye, whan the king vnderstoode that  
Reinald and his bretherne were sca-  
ped: he was right wroch & ful angry  
for it and said. A good lord of glo: ye,  
how am I shamed for fourte glori-  
oses this werties me soze, but no  
forze let them doo the worst that they  
can for if they haue scaped me now  
they shal not scape me another time,  
sir said Ogier wryt it, but if Haw-  
gis had not be: they coulde not haue  
scaped, Goddes curse haue he for it  
said Charlemaine and an eyll yere,  
for often hathe he holpen them agenst  
me, and so I wote well that yf I  
helde Reinald and his bretherne  
wryt in my prisyon. Ha: Wgis should  
delyuer them oute, and therfore I

hate him to deach, wherof I pray our  
lorde that I die not till I be fyft a-  
uenged of it, sy: saide Ogier by the  
latch that I owe to you. Reinald  
gaue me so greate a stroke that the  
corner of my helme fel downe wryt-  
all to the eache, and I promyse you  
I was wel glad wha I was escaped  
from his handes, for of three thou-  
sand that we broughte with vs: there  
are come againe but three hundred, &  
the surples is all slaine other taken.  
Whan Rowland vnderstoode theyse  
wordes: he shooke al for angre & said  
by great wryche. By god sy: Ogier,  
ye were soze hardy ye had not felow-  
es that dyd so well as ye dyd, but by  
saint Peter the apostle I sawe never  
so strong a cowarde as ye be, nor ne-  
ver came oute of Denmarkke a good  
knight. Ha whoreson coward kyrif  
howe haue ye anye eyen that dare be-  
hold upon a man: but another thing  
theres is, for ye haue spared them, for  
they ben your cosins and your fren-  
des. Now be the king blamed, but yf  
he maketh you to be he wren al to pe-  
ces, for they shold haue ben takeyn  
ye had not be.

**T** han whan Ogier sawe hym  
selfe so repreued: he wred al  
mad of the great iniury that Rowland  
hadde saide to him so, and answered  
boldlye and saide. Damp Rowlande  
ye lye fally of that ye say. For I am  
not suche as ye tell. And heete is my  
pledge for to defende me this quarell  
ayenst body to bodye, for I nor none  
of my kinne dyd never amyng ayenst  
Charlemaine, but of all fraunce I  
am one of the best and cruest knygh-  
tes

that be in it, and of a better kinne I  
am come than ye be Bowlande, Ge-  
rard of coussillon was mine uncle  
he kept me of a litell childe, & Dron  
of Mantuall and the duke Venes of  
Ayremont these three were brethren  
the whiche were all myne uncles.  
And Omyng of ayremont was  
my father, and also the bishop Tur-  
pyn and Richarde of normandy ben  
my kinsmen, and thus are they four  
sonnes of Simon of my lignage, now  
good syr Bowland tell me your lyg-  
nage for I knowe yourte hyghnes.  
For by sainte Denis of Fraunce, I  
shall defend me ayenst you with my  
swerde, and so shall I shewe to you  
yf I be true or no. Bowlande was  
than wonderfullwrch wha he heard  
Ogier speake so: and vaunced him  
selfe ayenst him and wold haue smit-  
ten him. And whan Ogier sawe him  
come: he set hande to his swerde  
eyne, and said to Bowland. Beware  
ye be not so hardy for to set hande vp  
on me, for by the fayche that I w  
to hym that, begare me I shall make  
thy heade to flee fro thy bodye, yf ye  
come anye neter. Whan Charle-  
mayne sawe these two barons moue  
themselue so sore the one ayenst the  
other: he was ryght soray for it. And  
than rose the duke Haymes of bau-  
cre & the earle Aymerye, and sayde.  
Syr Bowland what wyl ye doo: by  
my heade the thynge shal not goe as  
ye crowe, for Ogier is not suche as  
ye make him, and yf the kyng were  
not: the thynge shoulde goe otherwise  
than ye wisten, Ogier is suche a kni-  
ght as al the world knoweth, nor in  
his lignage was never no man bo-

ne that made treason, but he is the  
best knyghte in all Fraunce of all sy-  
des. But we meruelle howe Charle  
mayne suffreth you to take so greate  
a pryde vpon you, and if he suffreth  
it: we wyl not doo so for no thynge  
that can come of it. Whan Charle-  
maine sawe this greate noysse betwenn  
hys barons: he was ryghte wrothe &  
sayde to Bowland. Faire neuewe let  
this alone, for it longeth not to you  
to saye so, and betwene thys and to  
morrowe I shal enquire of thys ma-  
tere. And yf Ogier hath doo amys  
in any thing ayenst me I shal make  
hym abyde it full deare, for all they  
in the worlde shal not keep him but  
shall make him be headed for it. Sir  
said Ogier I wyl well, but there is  
in Fraunce no man so prue ne so har-  
dy, that shal say that I haue doone  
treason ayenst you nor ayenst anye  
other, but that I shal syghte ayenst  
hym in the quarell, and shal shewe  
to him that he lieth fally, but and it  
please you to heare me: I shal tell you  
the trouthe of the marter, wyt it syz  
that whan I came to the roche Mouie  
bron whare the four sonnes of Ay-  
mon were, and sawe that we were so  
great numbre of folke ayenst fourte  
knyghtes all unarmyd: I promyse  
you that I holp them not, nor I was  
not ayenst theym, but wytchydre we  
me a syde and lette the other syfie  
with them, and I stode byl and be-  
helde vpon the greate sorowe. For  
I sawe dye my fleshe and my bloud,  
and I myghte not helpe them of no  
thynge, nowe haue I tolde you all the  
trouthe and all that I dyd. And yf ye  
fynde otherwyse than that I tell  
you

The booke of the four

you afoore all this noble barons: I  
Wyll be sore punyshed. But by the  
saych that I owe to god, yf euer I  
 finde me in any place where I maye  
help them: I shall helpe them with al  
my power, yf I shold lose my heade  
for it. For all the wold ought to hate  
me by cause I fayled theym at their  
need, for they ben my cosyns, and ye  
lyz haue doone so muche to them that  
it shoulde suffise you, for they be not  
so muche gyltyn of that they be char-  
ged of, as men make semblaunt: but  
by the virgin Marye as longe as I  
shall lyue I shall not fayle theym of  
that I may doo, ouer hasti was Bow-  
land for to haue smitten me wrong-  
fully, and without anye cause, but I  
will well that he knowe that yf he,  
sawe Reynawde mounted vpon his  
horse bayard: he shold not take him  
for a rybawd, nor he shold not dare  
abyde him bodye to bodye for all the  
golde of spayne. Whan Bowlande  
hearde Ogier speake thus: he sayd to  
him, by god Ogier ye haue praysed  
him minche, and ye make hym wun-  
derfull hardye, but I praye god that  
I maye once fynde hym vpon bayard  
hys good horse all armed fro heade  
to toe, for to knowe yf he be so val-  
aunt as ye make him. Wit that god  
hearde the prayer of Bowlande, for  
Bowland not long after that: sound  
Reynawde vpon bayarde, and I  
tell you that Bowlande helde hym  
not lich for no rybawd nor for knacie  
but tooke hym for the best knyght of  
the wold. But the history leueth  
nowe to tell of the kynge Charle-  
mayne of Fraunce, of Bowland and  
of Ogier the dane, and of the xlii. pe-

res of Fraunce that been at the siege  
afore Mounteban, and returneth  
to speake of Reynawde, that was yll  
at ease for the loue of Richard his  
brother that was wounded to deach  
in the toche Mounteban.

**D**ow sheweth the history that  
after Reynawde had discom-  
fyted the frenshemen: he returned a-  
gain toward toche Mounteban where  
he had left his brother Richard thus  
wounded as ye haue heard. And whan  
he was come there and sawe his  
brother so horrible wounded: he could  
not keep hym from weeping, and said  
Alas what shall I doo whan I haue  
lost my deare brother the best freend  
that I haue in the wold. And after  
he had sayde that word: he fel to the  
grounde from Bayarde in a woun.  
And whan Alarde, and Guicharde,  
sawe theyz brother that was faille:  
they beganne to make theyz mone of  
Richardes pitteously. And whan Rei-  
nawde was come agayne to himself:  
he made great sorwe with his two  
brethren Alarde, and Guichard, vpon  
Richardes their brother that laye  
vpon the earthe with his bowelles  
betwene his handes. And this han-  
gynge: came Dawgis vpon brykar-  
te his good horse the best that menne  
wyste after bayarde, and held a peice  
of a spere in his hande. And whan  
he saue Reynawde make suche a so-  
towe: he was right sorwe for it. And  
whan he sawe Richardes thus sore  
wounded: he was wrothe and hadde  
great pyte for to see the wound that  
was so greate, for men sawe the liuer  
within his body. Thenne sayd he to  
Rey-

Reynawode, sayze Cosyn take heed what I shall saye and leue this so-  
towe, ye knowe well that ye be all  
my cosyns and therfore we ought to  
perforce oure selfe for to socoure the  
one the other whan it is need. I ha-  
ue socoured you manye tymes, and  
wot it that all the harme that Char-  
lemaigne bethen to me, it is al through  
your occasion, he sleid my fachet but  
late, wherof I beare yet at my herte  
greate haunynge, that was your un-  
cle that died for your loue that know  
ye well. But yf ye wyll promise me  
afore all youre batons for to come  
wytch me in to the tente of the kyng  
Charlemayne and helpe me to salut  
hym for to auenge vpon hym the  
deach of my saide fachet yf we can:  
I shall deliuer to you Richardde eynyn  
now whote and sound wythout any  
soze. And whan Reynawode under-  
stoode these wordes: he came vnto  
Mawgys, & kissed hym in the brest  
all weeping and said to hym. Righte  
sweet and sayze cosyn for god mercy  
Deluyer to me ayen my brother Ryp-  
hard whote yf it please you. And yf  
ye wyll that I doo any thyng for you:  
comauand me, and I shal doo it with  
righte good herte. For ye wot wel that  
I dyd neuer any thyng that was a-  
yinst your wyll, nor there is no man  
in the Worlde, for whome I wolde  
doo so much as I wolde doo for you.  
Whan Mawgys sawe Reynawode  
weep so tenderly: he had greate pite  
of it and sayde to hym. Nowe be not  
dynayded of no thyng sayze cosyne,  
for ye shal haue Rycharde whote  
and sounde inconuenience. And than  
lyghed downe from his horse, and

toke a bottell wth white Wine and  
washed þ wounde of Rycharde ther-  
withall ryghte well, and had a way  
all the bloc d: that was abour. And  
be not mertayned wher he gatte all  
suche thynges as appetreyned vnto  
this cure: For he was the subtileste  
nygromancier that euer was in the  
worlde. And whan he had doone so:  
he toke his bowelles and put theyn  
agayne in to his bodye, and than he  
toke a nedell and a thred, and sewed  
up the wounde full maysterly & hir-  
ted not Rycharde, and after he tooke  
a salue. Wherof he anoynted all the  
wounde, and as soone as the wound  
was thus anoynted: it was as whol  
as though he had neuer be hirre in  
that place of his body. And whan he  
had doone al this: he tooke a drynke &  
gave it to Richardde for to drynke, &  
whan Richard had dronken it he to-  
ke lyghtly vpon his feste al deliuered  
and quyre stc to his disease, and sayde  
to his brotherne, wher is Ogier go-  
ne and his folke, are they scaped stc  
vs? brother answered Reynawode we  
haue dyscomfyted theym, God gra-  
mecye and Mawgys that came for  
to succoure vs, for other wyse we  
shoud haue ben al dead, & so he hath  
saued vs and our lyues at thys tyme  
now ought we well to loue him more  
than our selfe, brother sayde Rychar-  
de ye saye trouth, and after Alarde  
sayde to Mawgys, sayze cosyn heale  
me I pray you, for I haue a greate  
wounde in the thie. And I also sayd  
Reynawode for I am hirre righte soze,  
and I also sayd Guyhard, for god  
des loue gyue vs healtch vnto al vs,  
than sayde Mawgys vnto theym,

The booke of the four

be not dismayed my sayre cosynes, brought to Reynawde Bayarde hys  
for I shal helpe you all anone. Than  
cooke Hawgis of the White wyne,  
Wherof he had washed the woun-  
des of Richard, and washed their woun-  
des of them all and after anoynted  
them sweetly and anon they were all  
whole. And whan they were al gat-  
nyshed: they made Richard to sylle  
upon a horse, and put them self to the  
way for to returne againe to Moun-  
tawban. And thus thei went on their  
waye: a spye departed fro the felo-  
ship of Reynawde and came to Moun-  
tawban, to the king yon and sayde to  
him. Sir I bringe you tydynges.  
Now wit that Reynawde and his  
brethren been scaped fro the plaine of  
Malcolours wher that he had sente  
them, and they haue dyscomfited O-  
gyer the dane & al the folke of Char-  
lemaigne, and also they haue slaine  
foulques of Morillon and the earle  
Guimard, & so many of other knigh-  
tes that I can not tel you the nombre.

good horse, that was cause of all the  
harme that was doon there of the o-  
ther parte. Alas vnhappy my schaue  
said than the kynge yon and what shal  
I doo: if I abide Reynawde, Hawgis  
Blard, Guycharde and Richard: I  
am deade without doubt, for all the  
Worlde canne not defende me ther-  
fro. And also it were well tyght, noz  
Reynawde shoud doo but well yf he  
slew me cruelly. For I haue wel de-  
serued deach, for neuer Judas ne the  
Emperour Heron of Rome made so  
great a treason as I haue doone that  
wolde haue brought to a cruel deach  
the best knyghtes of the Worlde, that  
been the fourte sonnes of Almon for  
the thretning of a prince. And whan  
he had said these wordes: he bega to  
make great sorowe, and saide. Ha  
sayre sister Clare, this daye shall de-  
parte our loue, ye shall neuer se me  
more. This day shal I for sake Gas-  
cayne, for I shall neuer come again  
therin. And than he cried with an  
high voice. Now go hence faire lo-  
des for goddes sake, be lyghely ready  
for the need of it is nowe come, and  
leste vs goe bringe with vs the best  
knyghtes that I & ye haue and if we  
may doo so much to gree the woode of  
p serpēt whiche is a great forrest: we  
shal be safe ynowgh, & we shal mare  
scape at out ease. For we shall lode  
our self within an abbay of saint La-  
zare, and we shal take such habyte as  
the monkes there haue. And by all  
thus shal we may be saued. For I  
know so much goodnes in Reynawde  
that whan he shall fynde vs shozne  
as monkes: he shall doo vs no  
harme

**A**nd whan the king yon vnder-  
stoode these ridinges: he was  
sore abashed of it that he woyst  
not what he shold saye, and after he  
said. Alas how goeth this: here ben  
evil tydynges, how may this be: dyd  
they fynde the busshemente of the  
kyng Charlemaigne: Soy, sayde the  
spye, yea certaynly and shoulde haue  
been curstely handled if their cosyne  
Hawgys had not socoured them, &  
for p socours that Hawgys brought  
with him: Ogyer was dyscomfited &  
all his folke of Charlemaigne, so that  
fewe of them scaped. For Hawgys

harme. Than was there a spye that was called Pyg wade that was so great that he had well xv. fote of le- gthe, and went as fast as anpe horse coulde trot. This Pyg wade had wel heard all that the kyng Pon had sayd, & wroce it in a skinne of Parche ment, and wante lightlye ought of Mounte Wban at the gate called the gate lawcon, and passed throught the wood of the serpent in a litle while and met with Reynawde, his bre theren & Hawgis that came agayne to Mountawban, that brought with them a great multitude of prysoneris and Pyg wade that great cheeke wat ched upon them. And anon he ranne as fast as he might to Mouthendell and went into the pavilhon of Char lemayne and called Bowlande and sayde to hym. Syy I shall tell you suche tydynge, wherby ye shall get good yngage, yf ye Wyll beleue me, and I shall tell you a thyng wherof ye shalbe ryght glad. Good frende sayde than Bowlande, thou art wel com to me, & what ridinges bringest thou to me I praye thec: Syy sayde Pyg wade, wyt it that the kyng Pon sleeth a way all unarmed, he and al hys folke and hath Wyth them no ther somet nor rule, but onlye they best horses, and they go into þ Wood of the serpent into a house of religiou, whiche is named saint La zare, & he himselfe is delibered to take the habit and to be come a mo ke. By my sayth sayd thā Bowlande I shal go meet wi: them anon with fourre thousande knyghtes, and I shal auenge Reynawde & hys bre therne vpon them, and I shal make

them to be hanged as traytours. For I neuert loued traytours nor neuer shall and God Wyll. Syy sayds pig wade yet is there more, for I haue found Reynawde, his bretheren and Hawgis that came ouer the ryuer of balancon, that bringeth with the many prysoneris of your folke. And yf ye Wyll fynde theym: ye muste go that waye. Frende sayd Bowlande ye haue deserued a great reward, for ye haue brought to vs good tydyn ges. Than Bowlande called to hym Olyuer, and sayd. Olyuer my good & true felaw, lyght vpon your horse quickly, and byng Wyth you Gidelou and Richard of Normandy & ye syz Ogier of Denmarke ye shall come with me, if it please you, and ye shall see the great prowesse of Reynawde the sonne of Aymon, and we shal take with vs but fourre thousand men, and yet Reynawde is fwe thousand well horsed and well arrayed. And thus we shal mowe syght with them wout any auantage. Certes sayde Ogier I shall goe there to see how ye shall haue hym. And whan ye haue takeo hym: I promyse you to lende you a rope yf ye haue need of it. And whan they had al deuised thei mounted on horsebacke, and tooke theyz waye. And the greate rswade guided them stright to the riuer of Balancon, and the kyng of Galestin rode than throught the woodes of þ serpent Wyth his folke, and he rode so longe that he arived at the mona stery of saint Lazare. And they prayed the abbot of the place so muche þ he made them monkes in the devils name. This hangunge: came there

The booke of the four

Rowlande and Olyuer wþþ theyz  
folke that entred anou into the ab-  
bay. And whan the abbot saw them  
he came them agaynst, and al the co-  
uent singyng Te deum laudamus.  
And whan they had songe: þ abbot  
sayd to Ro Wlande. Syr ye be ryght  
welcome, Wyll ye haue any thyng þ  
we may doo: lord abbot sayd Row-  
lande We thanke you with all our  
herte. But wþt that we seeke heere  
the fallest traytour of the worlde, þ  
men call the kyng Ron of Gascoyn  
þe whþch is heere within, for I wil  
hange hym lyke a cheefe.

**T**han answered the abbot, ye  
shall not syz and please you,  
for he is become our monke, and al-  
so he hath taken the habite, and ther-  
fore we shall defende hym agaynst  
all men. Whan Rowlande heard the  
abbot speake so: he tooke hym by the  
hood. And Olyuer tooke the priour  
that was nyghe and they shoued the  
so pretely agaynst a piller of marble  
stone that theyz eyen lepte out of their  
heads. And than Rowland sayd to þ  
abbot. Now mayster monke delyuer  
to me lyghely that devyl the king yon  
Whiche is the brother of Judas, or  
els I shall make an ende of you, for  
I haue sworne that he shal never doo  
treason more. Whan the abbot under-  
stoode this that Rowlande sayde to  
him: he and all his monkes fled awaie  
from him. And whan Rowland sa-  
th: he set hande at his good swerde  
Durandall, and curred into the clo-  
stre, wher he founde the kyng Ron  
kneeling before an Image of our la-

die, and was clad with the habite of  
religion, and the hode vpon his head  
And whan Rowlande sawe hym: he  
knew hym well. for he had seen him  
with his uncle Charlemayne. Than  
he tooke him and layde to hym, syz  
monke in the Devils name conne þe  
well your lesson, atysle vp with sorow  
we and come with me to see the  
kyng Charlemayne. for he shal ma-  
ke you to be haged as a traytour pro-  
ued euill king and a felon. Where be  
the fourre sonnes of Aymon that ye  
should haue delyuered vnto Char-  
lemayne: þe shalbe paied for the trea-  
son that ye haue doone, and I with  
mine handes shal auenge Reynawde  
and hys brethern vpon you, & whan  
he had sayd this: he made the kyng  
Ron to be set vpon a horse, and blin-  
ded his eyen wþh a cloute that he  
myght not see nothyng. And than  
gaue him the monkes hode vpon his  
head. And thus sat in the saddle the  
face to warde the horse tayle, and the  
backe for warde. The king yon made  
none other thinge but that he wyl-  
shed styll after Reynawde and hys  
brethern and sayd. Alas and that I  
dyd greit harme, whan that I confe-  
ted to this mortall treason, nowe  
ought I well to dye ten tymes þf it  
might be so. for I haue wel deserued  
death. Whan the king yon had sayde  
this: he sayd to one of his priuy cou-  
sell þ he herd nyghe him, how wel he  
saw not. Freend go to Mountawba  
and tell Reynawde that he come to  
succoure me, for he is my man, and  
that he take no heede to mi trespass  
and euil dede, but to his feaunchise,

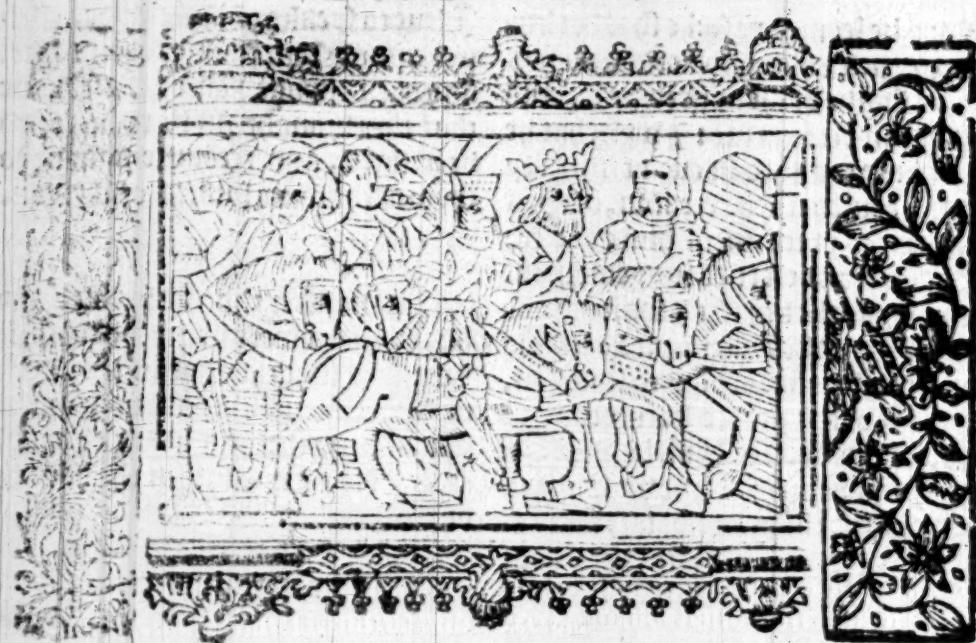
for

For & he let me dye so: he shal be ther-  
of rep̄cued & blamed euermore, & hys  
yssue shalbe dyshonoured by it. And  
ys he can recouer me: I wyl that he  
make my conge to becut of Wherby  
I dyd consent to the treason, or elles  
my heade, ys it semeth him good so  
I haue well deserued it ayens hym.  
Syr sayde the kynge I shall not goe  
there, for I wot well that Reynawd  
wyl not set one foot out to saue you,  
bycause of the greace harme that ye  
wolde haue doon to hym, he shal sayd  
the kynge yon, for I knowe so much  
by hym that he shal not saie there a-  
yensit. Syr I wyl than goe to hym  
With a good wyl lych that it please  
you, and god grue that Reynawd his  
bretherne and Hawgys wyl come  
and helpe you, for I knowe wel that  
ye haue greace neede of it but ys god  
helpe you. Thys hangyng: Olyuct  
sayde to Rowlande, Rowlande good  
sela w myne, what shal we doo with  
this vnappy kynge freends sayde  
Rowland we shal lede hym to mont-  
fawcon, and we shal leue Balancon  
at the ryght hand. And this they did  
for to fynde Reynawd and his bre-  
therne, for Rowlande was sore wyl-  
lyng to fynde Reynawd, his breth-  
ren and Hawgys theyz cosyn, good  
lorde sayde Ogyet the Dane by thy  
prise and mysety cord graune to Bow-  
lande his prayet and his wyl, that  
is that we may fynde Reynawd and  
Hawgys, for to see how Rowland  
shall bete himselfe, and ys he shoulde  
take them or no, for I knowe well  
thai none shal put downe hys pzyde  
but onelye Reynawd. ¶ Buc heere

I leue to speake of Rowlande, Oly-  
uet, and of Ogyet, and of their folke,  
and of the kyng yon of Gascoyne  
that they brought Wyth them so; to  
be hanged, and recouer agayne to  
shew of the soute sonnes of Aymeris.

¶ Howe after that Reynawd and  
his bretherne were garnished of their  
woundes that they had in the plaine  
of Valcoloutes: they went agayn to  
Mounabwean. And howe they res-  
cued the kyng yon from the handes  
of Rowlande.

¶ Capitulum. 51.



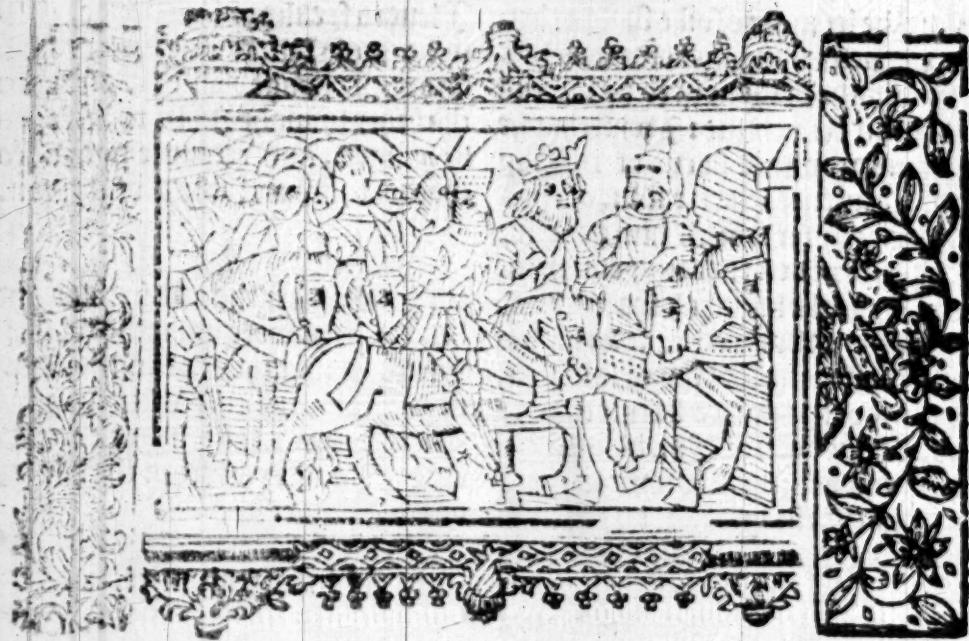
**T**his partye sheweth the he-  
lthy, that whan Reynawd and  
his bretheren were wel whole of their  
Woundes by the helpe of Hawgys  
that had healed them: they put them  
selfe vnto the waxe againe towarde  
Mountawbā. And whan they were  
come there: my ladye Clare went a-  
vnest the, and broughte with her two  
chyldryn, yoncer and Amone, that  
had weor and scratched theyr sweet  
vysages so soze that there appered  
of them nocht evyn nor mouthes,  
awares theyr wist not wherfore they  
dyd so, for they were verre yonge.  
And she also was all dysfigured for  
weepynge, and of great lamentacions  
that she made, for she wist well how  
her brother the kyng yon had betra-  
ed Reynawde her housbond and his  
bretherne, and wende that they had  
been dead. But whan she saw them  
come: he was never so gladde. And

the two chyldryn ran at their fathers  
feete, and wolde haue kyssed them. And  
whan Reynawd saw that: he shoued  
them a way with his feete so stro-  
lye that he had almosle brok them.  
And the ladye Wolde haue taken him  
in her armes and kyssed hym: but he  
wold not suffre her, and sayde to her.  
Ladye goe ouce of my syghe to your  
brother that felon, cruel and false  
traytore, for ye shall never haue my  
loue again, for it hache not holden in  
him, but that we shoulde haue be-  
deade by this tyme of God and oure  
colyn Hawgys had not succoured  
vs, nowe goe after hym all a foote  
and without compaunce, for ye shall  
not take nothynge of myne and as  
an evill woma[n] ye shall goe your  
wyses for ye be the syker of the kyng  
yon, the greatest traytore and the  
victuest kyngs of the worlde, and I  
shall angre yon chyldryn, for I feare

me

me lest they shold be traytors as they, vnde. Sir for god mercy sayd the ladi, I haue swere to you vpon al halowes that I had doubt of your goynge, and many times I dyd tell you of it, through the occasion of the dreame that I dreameid that night, and I tolde you that ye shold not beleue the king my brother. And not withstanding that he was my brother, I doubted this þ is be fallen syth. Sir for God I cry you mercy, for in this I am nothinges giltye, and so God haue mercy of my soule. For I loue moche better þ leaste of your foote, than al king þ on my brother, nor all the lande of Gascon. And whan she had sayd this, she fel do wne in a swoone vpon the feete of Reynawde. And whā Gutcharde sayde the Ladie in a swoone, he tooke her vp & sayde to her. Madame be of good cheere and make ioye, for we haue made youre peace. And than Alarde and Guycharde tooke her by the handes, and brought her to her husband Reynawde & whan Reynawde saw her, he went and tooke her by the chyn and kisid her. And than began the ioy and the feaste ryght great at Mountawban. And they wasshed their handes and went to they, meate. And thus as they sat at the table, there came in þ messenger of the king þ on, that cam to Reynawde, and whā he was afore Reynawde, he sayd to hym. Sir the kyng þ on sendeth you wrode by me that ye com to succour him, for other wyle he cannot scape the death. For Rowland and Mynner lederh him for to be hanged at Mountawcon, and doo thys syz yf it please you for god and beholde not his eupill wpl, but take heed to your goodnes, for oure

mystre of it, and at þende: the green he is knowen. By my sayth sayd Alarde ye saye well. And than wente the thre brethren unto Reynawde and dwew hym a syde, and after Alarde sayd to hym. Farre brother for goddes loue be not thus angrye, for ye knowe þ my Lady hath no culpe at all the treason that her brother þ king þ on hath doone to vs. For if ye wold haue beleued her, we shold not haue gone thether. Wherefore we praye you that ye wyl pardon her. Than sayd Reynawde, my brethren for the loue of you I grant þ same and I pardon her myne euill wyl presently. Whan the brethren vnderstoode him, they were ryght glad, and came to the Lady Clare, and sayd to her. Madame be of good cheere and make ioye, for we haue made youre peace. And than Alarde and Guycharde tooke her by the handes, and brought her to her husband Reynawde & whan Reynawde saw her: he went and tooke her by the chyn and kisid her. And than began the ioy and the feaste ryght great at Mountawban. And they wasshed their handes and went to they, meate. And thus as they sat at the table, there came in þ messenger of the king þ on, that cam to Reynawde, and whā he was afore Reynawde, he sayd to hym. Sir the kyng þ on sendeth you wrode by me that ye com to succour him, for other wyle he cannot scape the death. For Rowland and Mynner lederh him for to be hanged at Mountawcon, and doo thys syz yf it please you for god and beholde not his eupill wpl, but take heed to your goodnes, for oure



**T**his partye sheweth the history, that whan Reynawd and his bretheren were wel w hole of thei woundes by the helpe of Hawgys that had healed them: ther pue theym selfe unto the ware againe towarde Mountawba. And whan they were come there: my ladye Clare went a-yeast che, and broughte with her two chyldren, yonnet and Amonet, that had weor and scratched theyr sweet visages so soze that therre appereed of theym nother eyen nor mouches, alwares ther wist not wherfore they dyd so, for they were verye yonge. And she also was all dysygured for weeping, and of great lamentacions that she made, for she wist well how her brother the kyng yon had betraied Reynawde her housbond and his bretherre, and wende that they had been dead. But whan she sawe them come: he was never so gladde. And

the two chyldren ran at their fathers feete, & wolde haue kyssed them. And whan Reynawd saw that: he shoued theym a way with his feete so stroglye that he had almolte broste theym. And the ladye Wolde haue taken him in her armes and kyssed hym: but he wold not suffre her, and sayde to her, Ladye goe oute of my syghee to your brother that fellon cruell and false traytoure, for ye shall never haue my loue again, for it hath not holden in him, but that we shoulde haue be deade by this tyme if God and oure cosyn Hawgys had not succoured vs, nowe goe after hym all a foote and without compaunce, for ye shall not take nothyng of myne and as an eyll woman ye shal l goe youre wayes for ye be the syker of the kyng yon, the greatest traytoure and the untrustiest kyngs of the worlde, and I shall angre yowt chyldren, for I feare me

me lest they shold be traytours as theyr vncle. Sir for god mercy sayd the ladi, I shal shewe to you vpon al halowes that I had doubt of your goynge, and many times I dyd tell you of it, through the occasion of the dreame that I dreameid that night, and I tolde you that ye shold not beleue the king my brother. And not withstanding that he was my brother, I doubted this þ is be fallen syr. Sir for God I cry you mercy, for in this I am nothinge giltye, and so God haue mercy of my soule. For I loue moche better þ leaste of your soule, than al king þ on my brother, nor all the lande of Gascoyn. And whan she had sayd this, she fel do wine in a swounie vpon the feete of Reynawde. And whā Guicharde saw the Ladie in a swounie, he tooke her vp & sayde to her, Madame discomforst not your selfe so sore, let Reynawde saye hys wyl, for ye be our owne Lady and our syster, now be of good cheere, as long as we be aliuie we shal not sayle you and thoughte our brother Reynawde sayle you we shal not doe so, but we shal serue you wþt all our hert. Brother sayd Rycharde let vs doo one chyng, go we pray our broþer Reynawde that he pardon my ladi our syster hys euill wyl, for she is not gilty in the mater. And þs we wolde haue beleued her, we shold not haue gone one soote out of thys place, and now we ought to shewe the green and the russet Mantelles of ermynes the good horses and paþstrys that mi ladi did giue vs more oftener than did Reynawde, now let vs rewardre her for it for she hath

mystre of it, and at þende the frends beþ knownen. By my lappys sayd Blarde ye saye well. And than wente the thre brethren unto Reynawde and drew hym a syde, and after Blarde sayd to hym, Fayre brother for goddes loue be not thus angrye, for ye knowe þ my Lady hath no culpe at all the treason that her brother þ king yon hath doone to vs. For if ye wold haue beleued her, we shold not haue gone theþer. Wherfore we praye you that ye wyl pardon her. Than sayd Reynawde, my brethren for the loue of you I grant þ same and I pardon her myne euill wyl presentely. Whan the brethren vnderstoode him, they were ryght glad, and came to the Lady Clare, and sayd to her, Madame be of good cheere and make ioye, for we haue made youre peace. And than Blarde and Guycharde tooke her by the handes, and brought her to her husband Reynawde & whan Reynawde saw her, he went and tooke her by the chyn and killed her. And than began the ioy and the feast ryght great at Mountawban. And they wasshed their handes and went to theyr meate. And thus as they sat at the table, there came in þ messanger of the king yon, that cam to Reynawde, and whā he was afore Reynawde, he sayd to hym, Syr the kyng yon sendeth you wodre by me that ye com to succour him, for other wyls he cannot scape the death. For Rowlad and Dwyer ledeth him for to be hanged at Mountawcon, and doo thys syr, if it please you for god and beholde not his euill wyl, but take heed to your goodness, for oure

The booke of the fourte

Lord pardenne Mary Magdalen  
and longis of their sinnes. He kno-  
weth well þ he hath deserued death  
for the great faute that he hath doon  
to you, and þt ye slea him: he pardon-  
neth to you his death.

**O**ddes curse haue he sayd. I.  
larde that shall set hys foote  
chicherwarde, nor that shal bye him  
agayne though he myght be had for a  
straue, but goddes curse haue Rowl-  
land þt he hageth him not as a tray-  
touer approued. Wha Reynawde had  
heard this that the messenger sayd:  
he looked downwarde and studied a  
good whyle that he sayd no Worde, &  
whan he had thought long ynough:  
he bega to wepe beholding his bire,  
therue, for a good herte can not lye  
wha it cometh to a ned. Than sayd  
he a good reason as a noble knyght.  
Lordes sayd Reynawde to hys bire;  
theren & to his knyghtes. Now heare  
what I wyl say to you. Ye knowe  
how I was disherited at paris wro-  
gefully upon a feast of Pentheroste  
that Charlemayne helde open court  
and full in hys palays. Where was  
a compani of great lordes. For there  
ware. vii. hundred knyghtes all gen-  
tilmen bothe of name and of armes  
and a hondred what of Dukes and  
of Erles, and more than fourte score  
bysshopes, and many barons, & that  
eyme was slayne the duke Benes of  
Ayremount myne uncle that was  
so good a knyght as men knew wel.  
I dyd aske righe for him to Charle-  
mayne afore all hys courtie: wherof  
the kyng rebuked me and called me

all to nought, and greate iniurye he  
sayd to me. And whan I sawe that þ  
kyng repreuced me thus: I was wro-  
the and right angry for it, & I beheld  
upon my bretheren and kneue theyz  
stomackes, and saw myne enemys  
before me, so nedes not that I shold  
haue sought them els wher. And it  
suffised them not of that I had be-  
outraged by Charlemayne: but that  
Berthelot outraged me of newe, he  
and I playinge at the Chesse, wher-  
of I tooke þ chesse boorde and smote  
hym with it so greate a stroke vpon  
hys head that I slew hym afore my  
feet. And Lewes a nother newwof  
Charlemayne wolde haue slayne my  
brother Richarde and had burte hym  
all redy full soze. But I smote hym  
in suche wise with my fyf þ I felde  
him downe dead afore me to theerth,  
& whan Charlemayne wylst of it: he  
Wolde haue made me to be killed &  
hewid into peeces, but my kynsme  
Wolde not suffre it, for there was  
greet medlyng so that many strokis  
were gyuen. And whan the medlyng  
was ended: I mounted vpon Bay-  
arde & my bretheren I made to mount  
also thone before & the two other be-  
hynde me, and thus rode we al foute  
vpon my horse bayarde, & so rame  
to Ardeye, wher I dyd buylde a  
castell. And there Charlemayne ca-  
me and besiegged me, and made s. We-  
re mi good father Simon þ he shoul-  
de never helpe vs with none of all  
his goods, and that he shold be vt-  
terly ayenste vs and in lyke wise he  
forclosed me fro all my kynsme þ  
none of them was not so hardy for  
to haue shewed to vs þ least fauour  
of

of þ worlde. Fayre bretherne ye kno  
we wel the great pouertie that we ha  
ue endured so longe time. And whan  
I sawe that I wylt not whare to go  
I came into thys lande Wyth suche  
a felawship as ye knowe, & I spake  
to the kyng Yon and shewed hym  
howe I had warre agaynst Charle  
mayne, and he shewed me great loue  
and made me great honour so that he  
gaue me his lyster to my wylle, and  
with her a duchy, & builded Moun  
tawbā for me. And of the other parte  
my chyldren are hys newewys, wher  
of thone beareth his name, þ is you  
net, and ye see them here, and I haue  
saued hym hys realme and all hys  
londe, and all his rebelles I haue  
made come to seeke mercy of hym, &  
I foud him never in faute, but Char  
lemayne is so gret and so myghty a  
kyng, and also ye kno we well that  
he hath ouercome and dyshonoured  
many good men, and for fere of him:  
the kyng Yon bittayed vs, wherof  
he is not to be blamed ouermuche, se  
yng that agaynst Charlemayne no  
thinge hath powr. And therfore þ  
the kyng Yon deliuered me to char  
lemayne: it was by euyll counsell þ  
some of hys barons gaue hym, for  
god made never so good a man, but  
that, that he misdoeth by euyll coun  
sell somtyme. And how can I leaue  
hym whan I haue nor mystrusted hi  
afore time: me semeth that I ought  
to shew hym goodnes agaynst felo  
nye. Therfore I pray you all that ye  
wyll make you redy, for I wyll goe  
succour hym. For it were great repro  
che to my chyldren that theyz uncle  
should be hanged as a theef, and it

were to vs a great dishonour, for he  
is our lord, and if he had doone euill:  
we ought to doo well agaynst it, and  
also we ought not to forget the bne  
faytes that the kyng yon hath doo  
ne to vs, and I promise you that the  
faute and the treason that he hath  
doone is not come through his ma  
lyce, but through euyl counsell. For  
þt it had be onylc by hys moyson: I  
wolde see the hert from the bodye of  
hym, but I wot wel nay, for Char  
lemayne is of so great power that e  
very man feareth him. And therfore  
I tell you that I wil goe rescue him  
from Bowlande if I can Wyth all  
my power. By my fayth sayd Alard  
ye shal than goe wythout me, for I  
shal not put my feet there, for a tray  
tour ought never to be holpe noz suc  
coured. Nor I sayde Guicharde I  
shal not goe there. & e shal sayd Ri  
charde and it please you, syth þ Reyna  
wde Wyll haue vs to doo so, for  
he is our Lord and our wile, & ther  
fore I pray you fayre bretherne that  
ye wyll obey him. Whan Reynawde  
had concluded that he shold goe for  
to rescue the kyng Yon agaynst the  
wyll of Alard and of Guicharde: al  
the Gascoynes that were there be  
gan to crye and sayde, blessed be the  
houre that euer Reynawde was  
borne. For no man ethely is w  
þt hym of goodnes and of prowes,  
and than they sayde to Reynawde.  
þy We shall giue vp to you all the  
lande of Gascoyne, and shall mea  
you the Lord of it. For there shall  
be never none other lord in Gasco  
yne but you as longe as ye shall lyue  
so that for god ryght weet þt that

ye

ye suffre not the kyngē yon to bē h̄d  
awaye to Charlemayne, for it were  
a great shame to all them of the rea-  
me of Goscōyn that men had hanged  
they; kyng. By mi soule sayd Reyna-  
wde ye say trouch. And than he cooke  
his horne and blewe it th̄ tyme so  
stronglye that he made all Mounta-  
wban to sowne Witch it. And incō-  
tynent Without abydinge thei of the  
towne Wente and armed them and  
came before Reynawde, and whā thei  
were all redy: Reynawde lighted up-  
on bayarde, the syde at the necke  
and the spere in the hande, and they  
were well in hys felawship syx thou-  
sand men on horsebacke, and well  
a thousande a foote. And whan thei  
were out of Mountawban: Reynawde  
spake to his folke and sayd to them,  
Lordes remembre you that your lord  
is in great daunger and in perill of  
death, and but if we fight stronglē: he  
is dead without remedye, wherfore  
I pray you all that ye doo this daye  
that, that shall turne to our Wor-  
shyp. And whan Reynawde had said  
these wordes: he wente agayne to-  
wardes hys brether and sayd to the,  
Fayre brether ye know that Row-  
land hateth me to death & not throu-  
gh my defaute: but only through en-  
uye. Wherfore I pray you that ye at-  
tende vpon me thyḡ day: and ye shal  
see me doo as a good knight, & thyḡ  
day the pryde of Rowlande must be  
leyde or els mine a doone. Whan Al-  
arde hearde his brother Reynawde  
speake so: he sayde to hym. And wher-  
of care your be sure and certayn that  
as longe that lyfe is in our bodyes:  
We shall not sayle you, and with this

wordē they put them to the waye.  
And Reynawde tooke two thousand  
knyghtes and gaue them to Alarde  
and Gutchard & sayd to them. Fayre  
brether ye shal make the forwarde &  
keep your men in good ordenaunce,  
I & my brother Richarde shal make  
the teregarde, syz sayde Alarde We  
shall doo it well yf god wyl, and thā  
they rode forthe so longe yf they sawe  
the folke of Rowland neygh them, &  
whan Alarde aperceyued them: he  
made hys mete tary and sent wordē  
to Reynawde that he shoulde make  
haste to come, for they had founde  
theyr enemies. And whan Reynawde  
wiste of these tidinges: he made hys  
folke to ryde hastely and came anon  
to Alarde his brother, and whan he  
saw his enemies: he put his folke in  
array, & deuised his batayles honest-  
ly as a good capitayne of warre.

**T**han whan Rowland saw so  
great folke: he called to hym  
the bishop Turpin & Guydetton of  
bawyer & sayd to the. Lordes nowe be  
holde, I se yonder many folke armē  
mighty yf be Reynawde and his bre-  
therne wherof the renome is so great  
and of theyr colin Hawgr̄s the sub-  
till knyght: Syz sayde the Bishop  
Turpyn, yea they be tho bery, and  
also I tell you they make themselfe  
to be well kno we whersoeuer they  
goe and I tell you that wee cannot  
saue vs, but that we muste medle w  
the. Whan Ogier sawe Reynawde:  
he joyned & heued his hādes toward  
haauen and sayd. O god blessed thou  
be that hast suffred Rowlande to  
fynde Reynawde his bretherne and  
Hawgr̄s, certes who that gaue me

at thousande marke of golde I shold  
not be so glad, for Bowlande hath  
nowe all his delyre, and certayne I  
am ryght glad that we haue founde  
them. Nowe shall I see how he shal  
beate hym selfe ayenst the valiaunce  
Reyna wth his bretcherne, and Haw-  
yngs, & whan he had said this he cur-  
ned hym selfe to Warde Bowlande and  
said to him Bowlande nowe haue ye  
that ye haue desired so longe, and I  
am glad that it is come so, for nowe  
shai I see how ye shal take them. For  
it yec. in take them a liue & byring the  
to Charlemain he shal con you great  
thankes for it, and so wth bayaroe be  
your owne that ye haue so soye desi-  
red, and the warre shal be thus fyn-  
yed. Ogyer Ogier said then Bow-  
lande, chese ven repoches that ye tel  
me. But by saynt Devys of traunce  
ye shal see or eyn: Who shal be mai-  
ster of vs two. Bowlande said Ogier,  
now shal it be seen what ye can doo,  
Whan Bowlande knew that he muste  
haue medling wth his enemys: he  
ordeined all his battarie as he coulde  
wel doo, and after he let hym selfe in  
ordenaunce or battaile the best that he  
myght. And whan Reynawde sawe  
that Bowlande ordeyned his battaile  
les he called his bretcherne and sayde  
to them. Lordes heete come the fren-  
shemen, yonder is Bowlande, Oly-  
uer, and the Duke navies of Baul-  
eue, and Ogier the dane, ye shal abyde  
heete for to make the tregarde and if  
we haue mystre of helpe: come and  
helpe vs. Syr sayd Hawgys ye ma-  
ke to longe sermon, delyuer you for  
we tary to longe fro sawyng vpon  
our enemys. Losyn sayde Reynawde

ye say wel, and ye speake lyke a good  
knygthe. For yet haue I not better  
knygthe than ye be one whan I see  
you armed by me. Nowe chynke to doo  
well, for I goe syrst of all to; to ouer-  
thow the prude of Bowlande that is  
sogreate as euery man knoweth, &  
I pray you al that euery man doo his  
patee wth all his power.

**A**nd whan the bretcherne vnder-  
stood that Reynawde wthde goe  
vpon himselfe vpon Bowlande: they  
began al thre to weape & said. A bret-  
cher, & wth ye that ye and we be deade  
all acoues: For ye can slea your selfe  
no better than to vnuer your selfe vpon  
Bowlande, For he is ouermiche  
prude and valiaunce, & also he can not  
be hurt wth yron, but we pray you  
that ye will assay your selfe vpon the  
other and lec rowland alone. Lordes  
sayde Reynawde ye haue spoken ful  
wel, I know well that Bowlande is  
bardyng & prude, and that his matche is  
not in the world of knyghthode, but I  
am in the ryght, & he is in the wrong  
Whiche shall nowe turne hym to a  
great hatme, and therfore I wyl not  
refuse, but that I shal goe ayenst him  
but and if he wil peace: he shal ha-  
ue it, and if he wil haue warre, he shal  
lynde me redye to receyue hym ther-  
to. For I haue leuer dye than be long  
sycke. Now I praye you speake  
no more ofte, but see þt ye beate your  
selfe well ayenst our enemys, for we  
haue to doo ayenst many a noble kni-  
ght. Losyn sayde Hawgys thynke to  
assapple well. For ye shal be succou-  
ted ryght wel. Than the worthy and  
valiaunce knyght Reynawde went  
afors

The booke of the soure

afors all the other. Whi his sheld at  
the necke, and his spere in his hande  
lycinge vpon bataerde. Whan to W-  
lande sawe reynawd come with his  
folke well ordene: he shewed it to D-  
liuer and said. Selaue what thinke  
youb that folke: see how they come  
towarde vs in good arraye. Certes  
towlande sayde Dliuer, reynawd  
knoweth more of warre than any o-  
ther knyghte that liues, and the most  
gracious. For there is none so poore  
a knyght in the worlde if he come to  
him, but he shal be ryghte Welcome  
to him, and vs he come a foote: he hal-  
let him anon on bo;sebacke. And vs  
he be yll appointed: he shal anon a-  
take him as et his estace. Is not this  
a great goodnes of him: ye be my sou-  
le saide to xlante, and he dothe Wel,  
For if he did otherwyse: he myghte  
not abyde longe ayenst myne uncle  
Charlemayne. And me semeth sayde  
apen Dliuer, that he hath well thre  
tynes mo folke than we haue, wher-  
of he myghte well get vpon vs, but  
vs we take better heede, for they been  
Wel subtilly folke. Dliuer sayd tow-  
lande ye saye trouthe, but ye knowe  
well the Giscouynes ben cowardes  
of very kynde, and can not abyde no  
stroke of swerde, but that they wyll  
hee lyghtlye away, that is true sayde  
the bishop Turpyn, but they haue  
wiche hem a good guyde as any is  
in all the Worlde. And wit it by: tow-  
lande, that the valyaunce man: cau-  
seth his folke to abyde ryghe hym.  
For a worthye capitaine is the myz-  
roun a ensaumple to the other for to  
doo well. whan towlande heard this.  
he were almost mad, because men

prayed Reynawde and his folke so  
muche, and with his he spurred his  
hors and went before all his folke  
well the shoc of a bo;we fette, and cas-  
me ayenst Reynawd. And whan Rei-  
nawde sawe Rowland come alone:  
he saide to Blarde. Fayre brother be-  
ware vpon as muche as ye loueme:  
that ye moue not, no; your folke, but  
abyde sti;le here till that I haue Jous-  
ted with Rowland that cometh a lone,  
and therfore I wyl no man helpe  
me ayenst him. Whan Reynawd had  
sayd this: he spurred bayard with the  
spurres and came ayenst Rowlande  
so fast that they that saw it wend y  
Bayard had floughe in the ayer. For  
the smallest lepe that he lept was of  
xx. foot fette or more. And whan he  
was come nigh Rowlande as for to  
haue Jousted: Reynawd lighted downe  
a foote, and pyght his spere in the  
erthe. And bound bayarde therat, by-  
cause he shold haue byde there sti;ll.  
And vngy;re flamberge hys swerde  
and came before Rowlande & presen-  
ted it to him & kneeled afore him and  
killed his foot, & said al wepig, damp  
Rowland I cry you mercy for the pi-  
tie that our lord had on the crosse up-  
on his mochel whan he comed her  
to saynt John that ye will haue prie  
vp me, ye know wel that I am your  
kinsman & how be it I am poore: yet  
shal I be & my brether your me. And  
also I shal give you bayard & shal ma-  
ke you lord of Mounteban, so yit  
will please you to purchace our peace  
with the king Charlemaigne your un-  
cle, and if it please you for to doo so: I  
shal make al my brether to graunce  
the same, and I shal forsake fraunce  
all

at my lyke. And I promise you that I shall goe into the holye lande Wyth Maugys and my bretherne, for to make Warre agaynt the Sarasyns, & yt ye thinke that I say wel: bringe it aboute yl ye canne. For yf ye doo it: ye shall haue a felow and a seruaunt of me.

**B**owland had great pitie whā he heard Reynawde speake in this maner, and began to weepe ful tenderly; and after sayd to hym. By god Reynawde I dare not speake of it, but if so be that ye Wyll deliuer unto him Maugys. Alas sayd Reynawde, I shold never doo þ for to dys for it. For Maugys is no man for to be giue away for to haue peace. And thā he rose vp & toke his swerde and hys sheilde. And came to Bayarde and mounted vpon hym wþhout stropes, & than he tooke his spere in his hand. And whan he was wel apparelled: he went agayne to Bowland and sayd to him. Bowland w̄t that I shal never more cry you mer cy for feare that I haue of you, but I haue cry you mercy for to beare you worship because that ye be of my kin, but sith that I see þ ye be so prouide that ye will doo nothyng for me nor for my prayer: I shal now deale resonably with you, to the ende that ye shall not now reporte nor saye to the other Barons and knighees of Fraunce, that Reynawde the sonne of Aymon hath cried you mercy for scarte. The cause is such, ye haue wyth you a great company of folke, and also I haue of my syde men ymough thanked be god, and if our folke allebie together: it cannot be other wise,

but that great harme shal fall of bo the sides. But and ye will: we shall fyght we two together for them all without any help of other, and if ye ouercome me: ye shall bringe me to Chatlemayne, þ shall doo hys plesaunce of me, & if I can conquerre you ye shall come wyth me to Edouartaban vnder condicion þ ye shall haue nother euyll nor shame, nomore thā shall my owne person.

**S**hall ye doo this that ye haue sayde: sayd Bowlande: ye w̄one faut sayd Reynawde. By my h̄d sayde Bowlande ye shall make me sure therof fyste. Certes sayde Reynawde wyth a good Wyll. And thā Reynawde swore it unto him vpon his parte of paradyse. Reynawde sayde Bowlande I wyl goe take leue of my felaw Oliver, for I haue promised him that at the batayles þ I shall vndertake: he shal now make them himselfe if it please him. Goe thā sayd Reynawde & make it shorte. And than Bowlande wente agayne to hys felawes. And whan he was come to thā: Hector the sonne of Dodon, Oliver and Ogyer the dane as ked of him sayinge. Sir Bowlande what saith Reynawde, haue ye spoke with him: ya sayd Bowlande, and what thinke you bi him. Certes said Bowland, Reynawde is a sage knighe & well taught, for he hath tequy red me to fyght with him vnder to bode, and that out folke be styll of the one syde and of the other. Bowland sayd Oliver, ye shal doo in this your pleasure, for other yee or I must fyght with him, but I cancul that

The booke of the four

that ye goe there, for as longe as I  
shall lyue I shal not be enemp to Rey-  
nawde only for his warchynnes. For  
Reynawde is a knight of gret hon-  
our. Whan the bishop Turpyn,  
Hector the sonne of Dedon and the  
other Erles hearde this: they began  
to say, Rowland what is that ye wil  
doo: For gods mercy doo it not, for  
Reynawde is of your lynage and of  
ours, and if ye bringe him to deatc:  
we shal never loue you after. Syz le-  
ue that offte that Reynawde giueth  
to you and make your folke to assem-  
ble with the folke of Reynawde, for  
it is better that they be take of youre  
folke, than that the one of you two  
were dead: wylle ye that it be so sayde  
Rowland: yea syz yf it please you.  
Lette said Rowland it please me  
right well and than he sayd to al his  
folke, Lordes thinke to defende you  
Well, for it is now need therof. Syz  
sayd the other haue no doubt of no-  
thyng, for we shall doo wel your co-  
maundement, and than they put the  
selue in ordeneance. And Rowlande  
began to crie mount ioye saynt De-  
nys, and whan came to setting on  
With speres: ye shold haue seen tha-  
many a knight brought to grounde  
manye horse that ranne maysterles  
thorough the feildes so much that it  
was great pitie for to see so greate a  
destructiō of knyghtes as was made  
there. Whan Reynawde saw the two  
hostes myste assemble together: he  
spurred Bayarde with the spures  
a put himself amoung the thickest of  
frenche men, and smote a knight so  
harde in the breste y he ouerthrew  
bothe horse and man to the grounde.

and after smote another so soze that  
nether for sheld nor for quyras or  
steele he let not but that he thownd the  
pren of his spere thorough and thow-  
rough his bodi, and fell dead to the  
erth, and wit at that stroke he brake  
his spere and Reynawde set hands  
lightly to his swerde, and began to  
crys Mountawban as lowde as he  
coulde. And than he made so greate  
slaughter of frenchemen: that none  
durst abide afoze hym, but fled from  
him as fro þ death. Shold it to speake  
Reynawde did so much thorough his  
stregh, & thorough the bigne knight  
hode of his bretheren: that he brake þ  
kynde bataile of the frenche men,  
wolde they or no.



**W**han the licell Rycharde, the brother of Reynawde saw þ the frenshemen were put a backe: he beganne to crie on heighre Ideyne, as much as he myghte, and puchim selfe in to the greatest p̄ycle amoung hys enemies, and beganne to make so great herting of folke that it was wunderfull to see. For Reinaud fought not, for to lote the better vp on him. And theune Rycharde that thought hym selfe never wety of ḡuyng of strokes: began to calle vpon his brother, and said. Reynawde faire brother wherben youre greate strokes gone that ye were wunt for to gyue vpon youre enemys. As smite nowd vpon them, for they been almost ouercome, make that the frenshemen full of pride mocke not with you, and so make we suche a chinge that it be spoken of it vnto Parys. Whan Reynawde hearde Rycharde speake thus: he beganne to smile, and after he smote bayard with the spurres & began to smite better thenne he dyd afore. Who that had seen than his greate strokes departe: he myght wel haue said that no carpenter smot newer so wel in wood: as Reynawde did vpon the helmes of steele, and vpon the sheldes of the frenshemen. And whan the frenshemen saw that the discomfiture tourned vpon them: they began to call Rowlande, and sayd to him. Ha Rowland what doo ye? Why come ye not and helpe youre folke? For they be dead, but if ye succouere them. Whan Rowland vnderstood that word, wherof he was wrothe, and right soþ. And whā he saw his folke so soþe handled: he began

to cry Mourioye saynt Denys. And after spurrd his horse, and entred in to the mede. And went heere & there crying Reinaud wher be you gon? See me heere I am all ready for to doo the battaile of my body ayenst yours that ye alake of me. Whan Reynawd hearde Rowlande that called thus after him He put flamberge into his sheth. And tooke a speare in his hand and came there as Rowland was said to him, Where are ye Rowlande be ye a fearede of me that ye haue waited so longe for to beware youre selfe from me, and you of me said Rowlande. And thenne they spurrd their horses and dyd joust the one ayenst the other. And whan the frenshemen and the Gascoignes sawe that: they withdrawe themselfe fro eche other, for to behold the Jousting of the two worthy knyghtes, for to say the trouthe: there were not two other such in all the wrold.

**A**nd whan Salamon of Breyayne, and Hecco the sonne of Dedon saw that the Jousting of Reinaud and of Rowlande was begon: they set themselfe to weep ful redely, & came to the Duke Raimes, to the bishop Turpyn and to Olyner, and sayd to them, Howe lordes may ye suffice þ one of the best knyghtes of the wrold, and him that we ought to loue best be slayne and dead before your lertes said þ duke Raimes that shall be great sorowe to vs for to see. And than he came to Mauer & said to him. I praye you that ye goe to Rowland, and tel him from vs al, that he ought not to fight with

M. i. Rep.

The hooke of the four

Reynawde with the swerde. But let  
him take a speare and breake it vpon  
Reynawde for to acquire his fayre.  
For yf he stac Reynawde: we shal ne-  
uer loue him after. Lordes sayd then  
Ogier let them alone, ye knowe not  
Reynawde so well as I doo. Rey-  
nawde is no childe to be made a feare  
so lyghtlyc as ye crove. Lette them  
lyfte hardely they two togither. For  
by the fayre that I owe to you. Bow-  
lande shall be all werye or euer he  
reurne agayne. And he shal be as  
fayne to leue the batayle as shall  
Reynawde. And ye shal see that Bow-  
lande wolde he had not gone there for  
the best citie that themproure Char-  
lemaigne hach. Ogier saide Ector ye  
speake of it as for enuye, certes yf he  
shuld figh with Bowlande: ye shoulde  
well saye otherwile. And than he  
saide to Olyuer. Good syr lette thyg  
batayle be defterred yf ye may by a-  
nye wile. Lordes saide Olyuer with  
a good wyl syth that ye will haue it  
so. And than he went to Bowlande &  
sayd to him al that the barons hadde  
sayde. Fela w myn answere Bow-  
lande, god confounde hem, for they  
take away this day the desyre of my  
uncle Charlemaigne. And than he tur-  
ned him toward Reynawde, and sayd  
to hym. Syr Reynawde ye haue as-  
safed of my swerde: and not of my  
spere. Bowlande sayde Reynawde if  
ye leue yores swerde I shal conne  
you no thanke nor grameryc for it.  
For I feare you not of no thyng, but  
let vs make an ende of our batayle.  
And to whome god gyueth the victo-  
rye: let him haue it. Bowlande Wolde  
not doo so, but dydlyke a currcou

knighe, and he dyd as the barons  
had sente him worde. For he tooke a  
spere and ranne vpon Reynawde as  
much as he myght. And whan Rei-  
nawde sawe he wold none otherwile  
doo: he ranne also with a spere vpon  
Rowlande, and caught eche other so  
wonderful hard that they made they  
speres to flee all in peices, and whan  
they had broken their speres: they re-  
countered eche other with theyr shel-  
des so stronglyc that both theyr hoy-  
ses, that is to Wit Bayard and Mel-  
antes stakered, and were all astonis-  
ed ther wicheal. But with that stroke  
Rowland and Melantes Wereboch  
felled to the grounde on a heape, and  
Reynawde passed forth by the cringe  
with an high voyce Mountabanan.  
Wherby I tell you for certayne that  
Rowlande neuer felle downe for no  
stroke of spere: but onely that tyme,  
but it was no meruaile. For he could  
not holde hym selfe by the cloudes  
whan his horse had falled hym.

**T**han whan Rowlande sawe  
hymselfe thus ouerthowen: he  
was not wel concerte and rose  
in contiente and tooke his swerd in  
hys hand, and came to Melantes for  
to cutte of his head, and began to say  
ayill courser who keepeth me that  
I kille the not: not sith that thou hast  
let falle thy selfe throughte the stroke  
of a childe, I shall never trust thee.  
So helpe me god Rowlande sayde  
Reynawde ye doo to Melantes great  
wronge. For it is longe sith that he  
eat any meat, and therfore he can not  
trauayll lyke bayarde for he is more  
strong

Strong than is your horse, and than  
Reynawode lyghed downe fro bay-  
ard by cause that Rowlande was a  
foote. And whan bayarde sa w<sup>e</sup> hys  
maister a foote: he ran upon Rowlan-  
des the horse of Rowlande & smot hym  
with his hinder feet so great strokes  
that he hadde almost broken his ch<sup>r</sup>,  
Whan Rowlande sawe that he was  
wrothe for it and came towarde bay-  
arde, for to haue smyce of hys heade.  
And whan Reynawode sawe that: he  
sayd to Rowland. What wyl ye doo?  
it is no worshyppe to you to smyce a  
beast, and y<sup>e</sup> wyl doo any fayre of  
armes: come to me & not to my horse  
for I shall g<sup>e</sup>ve you strokes y<sup>e</sup> know-  
ghe so muche that ye shall be wery of  
it or we departe, but keep wel that I  
slea not you & leue Bayard in peacc.  
For there is not in all the w<sup>e</sup>orde an  
other so good a beast. For he did shew  
it well whan he wan the crowne of  
Charlemayne your uncle in youre  
presence, and y<sup>e</sup> he doth helpe me: he  
doth but his deuoyre that a good hor-  
se ought to doo, but turne your sheeld  
towarde me and ye shall see howe  
Flamberge curseth. Reynawode Rey-  
nawode sayd Rowlande, threten not  
so much. For before chys day be com-  
at an ende: ye shall see a chyng<sup>e</sup> that  
shall not please you ouer much.

**R**eynawode was not contente  
whan he vnderstoode the yle  
wordes of Rowlande, and shooke al-  
for angre, and incontinent ranne up  
on Rowlande and gaue hym suche a  
stroke vpon his helme: that he all to  
brused it, and the stroke滑ed vpon  
the sheeld so that he cut of it a great

quareer, and of the courser of steele als  
so, but he cut nochinge of the fleshe.  
And whan Reynawode hadde gyuen  
Rowlande that stroke: he sayde in  
maner of a mocke to Rowlande,  
What saye ye by my swerde, doo it  
cut well or no? for I haue not missed  
at that stroke, nowe keep you well fro  
me, for I am not suche a childe as ye  
take me for. Whan Rowlande felte  
that great stroke that Reynawode had  
gyuen to hym: he was all meruayled  
of it, and wchd<sup>r</sup>e we hymselfe a  
backe for he wold not that Reynawode  
should haue recouered a nocher stroke  
vpon hym sodenly, and sette hande  
to Durandall his good swerde and  
ranne vpon Reynawode, and Rey-  
nawode helde his sheelde ayenst it, and  
Rowlande smot in to the sheelde so  
great a stroke y<sup>e</sup> he cloue it by the mid-  
des chrough and chrough, & the stroke  
descended vpon the helme and dyd it  
no harme. And whan Rowland had  
made that stroke: he said to Reynawode  
Wassal<sup>r</sup> ye be no w<sup>e</sup> quite, for I haue  
yelde you againe that ye lended me  
ryghte nowe. Nowe shall I see who  
shau begynne agayne. By my soule  
sayd Reynawode wbole fall haue I  
now y<sup>e</sup> I feyne me nowe. For I dyd  
but playe afore, nor your strauchysse  
shal never auaylle you ayenst me but  
that I shall bryng<sup>e</sup> youre pryde all  
downe to the erthe. Reynawode said  
Rowland y<sup>e</sup> doo this that ye say:  
ye shall werke meruelles. And all  
thus as they wold haue begon again  
the batayle: so came there Maugis  
& al his company, & said to Reynawode  
Losyn mounce vpon bayarde, for it  
wete to great a losse y<sup>e</sup> you or Row-  
land

The booke of the four

lande were deade, & ther came Ogyer & Olyuer and made Rowland to light agayne vpon his horse. But wist well that Ogyer had not be so gladde yt one had giue to him a great cyrie: as he was be cause that Reynawode had cast downe Rowland & his horse. And whan they had recouerted Rowland: he began a sore batayle and a cruell, and so fell that it was pytie for to see, for the one hewe the other without anye mercy. And whan Rowland sawe that the bataile was begon, again his herte dyd swell for angre by cause that Reynawode had ouertho wen him to the ground, so beganne he to cal as hyghe as he myght. Where are ye gone Reynawode the sonne of Aymon, goe a side and lette vs parsonyshe our batayl for men knowe not yet whiche is the best knyghte of vs two. Sayde Reynawode ye haue the courage of a knyghte that wyl conqueire honour, but and we syghte heires togþer our folke shal not suffre it. But lette vs doo one chyng that I shal tell you. ye be well horsed and I am also, let vs bothe wythe ouer the ryuer and goe to the wood of serpente. For ye canne not wyþre no better place for to syghte, and we shal not be therre deþparted thone fro the other of our folke, but we shal maye syghte therre togyþer tyll the one of vs two be discomfited & ouercome. Lettes sayde Rowlande ye haue well spoken and I graunt it as ye haue said, and thaþ they spurrad their horses for to goe to the wood of the serpent, but Olyuer tooke heed to them, & tooke Rowland by the byrdell, and wichelede hym to haue passed ouer the ryuer vpon batayl that ran as the Winde, and walloped so harde that he made al the erthe wher he passed to shake vnder him, & as he ran in this maner: he looked abore him & saþ the kyng vpon þer was auyronned with well foynt score knyghtes that keþt hym for feare of Reynawode, lest he and his breþherne shoulde haue rescued hym, these knyghtes ledde hym þa mesurly as þe haue heade abore. And whan Reynawode sawe the kyng: he was gladde of it and sayd. Ha good lord blessed be thy name, whan ye haue graunted me so fayre aduenture, and with this: he set hande to his swerd and spurrad batayl with the spurres and cted as highe as he could, lettes goe the kyng vpon euell folke that ye be. For ye be not worthy to ley hande vpon him. And than he entred Wyþ in them and smot a knyght vpon his belme so crudely that he cast his head to the harde teeth, and ouerthrew him dead to the eare. And whan the other sawe Reynawode amoungem them: they put themselfe to syghte, and said the one to the other. The deuyll hath brought this cruell man heire nowe, lettes vs flee, goddes curse haue he þ shall abide him, for the soule of hym that wilfully suffreth him selfe to be slaine: shall never come to the myghte of god. And than they put themselfe into the thickest of the forest, and lette behynde them the kyng vpon that they lodged as a prsoner. And Reynawode came streyght to hym and vnbounde hym and vnlopped hym, and after sayde to hym

Ha euell kynge, how haue ye the here  
 for to be ray vs so fasslye as ye haue  
 doone me and my bretherne dyd we  
 euer any thing that was in your dis-  
 pleasure? It is not longe on pou, but  
 that we shold haue been all hanged  
 by this, but I shal smite of your head  
 euen anon, and shal auenge me and  
 my bretherne vpon your body. Whā  
 the kynge yon sawe Reynawde that  
 hadde delyuered hym: he kneeled a  
 downe before hym and sayde to him.  
 Lettes noble knyghte it is well rea-  
 son that men lea me. Wherof I pray  
 you for god that your selfe will take  
 the lyfe fro me, and cut of my heade,  
 and lette it be doone by none other,  
 and pulle out my tonge wherwch  
 I spake that treason. For I haue  
 well deserued greater martyrdome,  
 and all this made me do the erle of  
 Insom, and the erle Anthony. Now  
 lea me: for god, for such an evill man  
 as I am oughte not to liue longe. I  
 haue much leuer that ye kill me with  
 your swerde than that cruell kynge  
 Charlemayne shold make me to be  
 hanged. Now lyghe hysayde Reyna-  
 wde, for ye shal be well payed as  
 ye haue deserued. — But heere leaue  
 I to speake of the kynge yon of Gas-  
 coyne and of Reynawde that been in  
 the wood of the serpente, wherof that  
 he taryed after Rowland for to fighthe  
 with him, as he had promyzed vnto  
 hym: and shal recourne for to spead  
 of Rowland and of Olyuer that spa-  
 be vnto their folke for to tell theym  
 a parte of their bessenes, & howe they  
 had be dyscomyted.

**I**n this parte sheweth the his-  
 torie that after Reynawd was

departed from the bataylle for to goe  
 fighthe body to booy ayenst Rowlande  
 the neue we of the king Charlemain  
 in the Wood of the serpente: Row-  
 land, Olyuer and Ogier the Dane,  
 fought ayenst Blarde, Gupcharde,  
 and the leuell Rycharde, ayenst Haw-  
 gys and ayenst thei folke, and the  
 bataylle was there so sharpe and so  
 full of one partie and of the other, so  
 that greace herte and scathe was  
 there made of both partes, but at the  
 laske the dyscomyture turned vpon  
 Rowlande, and vpon his folke. In  
 so muche that Rowlande and Oly-  
 uer Were constrainyd by force for to  
 goe backe againe all dyscomyted,  
 for the thre bretherne and Hawgys  
 made ayenst them so greate effoire of  
 armes that they gat the pryce that  
 daye. And thus as Rowlande Wen-  
 te backe againe all dyscomyted: he  
 bare his heade i. w. for he was a sha-  
 med that he had be so rebuked. And  
 than Ogier saide to him, Lord Row-  
 lande who hath a rayed your sheside  
 of this facion? I see your horse herte  
 in the thyghe and vnder the croper,  
 he was felled vpon the ryght syde &  
 you also, it is wel seen on your syde,  
 I crowe that ye haue founde Reyna-  
 wde the sonne of Aymon, haue ye  
 brought hym with you? Wherof haue  
 ye put hym? Whan Rowland vnder-  
 stood the reproche that Ogier made  
 vnto him: he wroter almost madde  
 for angre. So tooke he hys swerde  
 and ramme vpon Ogier for to haue  
 smitten him vpon the head. But whā  
 that Olyuer saw this: he tooke Row-  
 land by the bridell, and the erle Gui-  
 dellon tooke Ogier, and thus ther

### The booke of the four

Were departed , and thus as they were departed, & that Rowland went on his waye , came there after hym the litle Richard the brother of Reynawode, that began to calle as hie as he might damp Rowlande ye goe to warden a waye, returne agayne that I may see your Sheelde, and lette vs haue a course we two togyther. Knight and Wered Rowland. I grauntee thereto by my faith . And than they spurred their horseis with their spurres , and Rowland came ayenst Rycharde so harde that he ouerthre we hym and his horse with all in a hepe to the grounde. And whan Richard sawe himselue thus a grounde: he rose vp quickly and came to his horse and lighed vp againe without anye strop. And whan he was on horse backe he set hande on his swerd and defended him selfe nobly against hys enemy Rowland.

**W**han Rowlande saw thys, and what he knewe that it was one of the bretherne of Reynawode: he had so great ioye of it that him semed that he had been in Paradyse, and incontinent he beganne to crye Mountioye sayng Denys. And said, vpon him nowe my scandes, for yf he scape vs: I shall tell it to the king Charlemayne. And whan that the knyghtes men saw that Rowlande wold haue taken Richard: they sette al vpon him , so that they smote hym wryth more then fourte swerdes al at once, and it happed so that his horse was kylled vnder hym, and he ouerthrown to the etche. And whan that Richard saw his horse dead a ground:

he was tyght soray for it, and rose vp quickeleye vpon his feete, and smote the etle Anthony so greate a stroke with his swerd that he wounded him tyght sore. Humble the breton sawe that: & he smote Richard, and Richard recovered vpō him with such a stroke that he kelled both horse and man to the etche. And with this: Guidellos came from behynde and ouerthre we Richard fro the arsons of hys saddle to the grounde. And whan Rowland saw Richard at the ground: he came to hym and sayde. No we yeld you and abyde not that we slea you , for it were great domage, syr sayd than Richard the yongest sonne of Simon to you Rowlande I shall yeld me & to none other. So I can not yeld me to no better man than ye be one. And with this he Cooke him his swerde, & Rowlande receyued it with a good wyll and made the litle Rycharde to ligh upon a mule. And thus they hadde hym prysoner. Alas and what a domage shall it be yf the prys Rycharde behanged: he is well lyke to be, but that god & Hawgys deliuer hym, all this myshappe sawe a seuaunce of Richard. And whan he saw that men ledde thus his master Richard: he spurrd hys horse with the spurres and auentured him selfe to passe ouer the riuere, and came ligh telye to Reynawode and saide to hym. Syr I bringe you euell tydylnges wryt that Rowlande leadeth wryth hym your brother Rycharde for prys sonet well shamefully. Whau Reynawode vnderstoode these wordes: he was sore angry for it, that he had al molte lost his wyfe , and after he sayd

sayde to the yemon, come hither tell me my frend, are they that leden my brother ferre hence? Syr sayd the yemon, yea, it is not possyble that ye shoulde ouertake theim. And whan Reynawode vnderstod this: he was more angry thā in he was before, and fell from bayarde in a swoone to the erthe. And whan he was come again to hym selfe: he behelde afoore hym. And sawe his brother Blarde come with his folke that came after Reynawode by the trase. For they wende that Richard hadde be gone to hym longe afoore them. And whan Blarde sawe Reynawode make such a sorow: he came than to hym and sayde in thyg maner. Ha fayre brother, and what eyleth you? It longeth not to such a knyght as ye be for to make so great a sorow as ye doo. Blard sayd Reynawode, ye haue doone ful yl, for I haue left my brother Richard with you to keep hym, and ye haue lost hym, for Bowland ledeth him with hym as prisoner, and he is all ready so ferre broughte that we can not succour hym, whan Blard, & Gylchard vnderstode these cydynges: they beganne to make suche a sorow that it was incuriaile for to see the lamentacion that thei made, alas sayd Reynawode, what is he that haþ parced our company? to day in the morning we were fourre bretherne togyther & nowe we been but thre. Ha fayre brother Richard it is greate damage of you, for if ye had liued your age: ye should haue passed all your bretherne saying that ye were the yongest of vs all and yet ye were the most hardye, and through your hardynes: ye are

taken, fayre brother sayd Blarde, all cometh by you that brought hym heire ayenst our wyl for to succour the kynge. Now haue we losse Rycharde, wherof the losse shall never be recovered, for we shall never see hym a lyue. And whan he had sayd thyg: he sayd to Gylchard. Brother drawe out your swerde so shall we cut of the head of thyg cravoure kynge yon cherwiche, for whome we haue nowe lost our brother Richard, brother saide than Reynawode. I praye you for the loue that ye haue to me that ye coulde not the kynge yon for to doo hym anye harme, for he bath yelde hymselfe vnto me, but byngyng hym vnto Mountrawhan, and see that he be kepte sure. And I shall abyde heire Wyth my good horse Bayarde and flamberge my good swerde wythout any other company. So shall I goe in to the paulylion of Chatlemayne, where I shal recouer my brother Richard or a nother prysoner for hym: or elles I shall die with him. And whan he had said that word: he spurred bayarde with the spurres for to haue gone thryther: but Blarde tooke him by the byrdell and Gylchard tooke him with both his armes fro behind for to keep him that he shold not goe, and than Blard said to him, by sayng Peter of ryme ye shall not goe no foore there, for it is better that Rycharde: dye yf it must be so than ye shold dye. And thus as the thre bretherne made theyg mone for Rycharde, came there Nawyses theyg colin þ folowed them, & when he saw his colins make such sorow: he was soore a gast and said to them. Wha

eyle

The booke of the four

eplesch you sayre cosing: it is no too; Shyppe no; t; manet of good kni- ceps, but of Wyman to make such so- tow as ye doo. Losyn colyn sayd Al- lard, I shal tel you What causeth vs to doo so. Wit that Rowlond leadeth Rycharde for hys p̄soner the best knight of the World after Reynawod, and Reynawode wyl goe to the Pa- lyon of Charlemayne, and also ye knowe well yf he goe there: he is but lost for evermore. Reynawod said the Lawgis Ic were no wysoome to you yf ye went there, for your going chyther should not profyce you no- chynge, but goe yowre wyses to Mounawodan, and I shall goe there as ye wold haue gon my selfe, and yf Richard be not dead: I shall bryng him again with me unto you al were he shytte vp in. x. p̄sones matogre Charlemayn. Losyn said Reynawod, I shall become your manne yf ye doo chys that ye sape. Losyn sayde Lawgis I shal doo it without faur, but leue yowre sorowe I shal delyuer him apon to your hādes wholē & sō- de yf it please god: and whan he had sayde so: the brethern serte themselfe to the waye for to returne to Moun- awodā, but so great sorowe was there never made as the thre bretherne made for their brother Rycharde, & thus making their great mone; thei dyd so muche that they came vnto Mounawodan and lyghted fro their horses in the base courte, & aler wet vp to the dungeon & whan the noble lady Clare, þ wife of Reynawod wist that her husbande came: she came a gynst hym right glad and Joyfull and led at eche hande of her bothe her

ponge chyldren. Iimon and pon, and eþer of theym bare a lytell stasse in theyz handes, and began to crye vpon theyz vncle, vassalle, but that ye be no w p̄soner: ye shold haue di- ed by our handes, & they came nyghe hym and saide cursed kinge and vn- true Why haue you betrayed my lord our fader and his bretherne our vn- cles that haue doone to you so good scrupule: sertes ye be well Worþy to dya a shamefull death. Whan Alard hearde his newewes speake of chys maner: he began to weep ful tender- ly. And thus as he wept be killed Al- monet that bare the name of theyz fader, and said. Ha god how ben we broughte lowe and destroyed. And whan that þ lady heard Alard speake these wordes, and saw that he wept: she thoughte well that it was not without a cause, and she sayde to Al- lard. Sayre brother for god tell me the occasion of your sorowe. Ladie sayd Alard With a good wyl. Now Wyf that we haue losse oure brother Rycharde. Rowlonde ledeth hym for hys p̄soner to Charlemayne, but yf our lord sauē hym: we are not lyke ne- uer to see him. Alas I vnhappy whac shall me doo sayd the lady, syth that Rychard is lost: for we shall neuer haue honoure. And sayinge these wordes: she fell downe in a swoone to the erth. And whan that she was come againe to herselfe: she beganne for to make so great sorowe, that all they that were there had greate pycis of her. But heire leuerth the hysto- ry to speake of Reynawode, of Ila- de, and Guycharde, and of the ladie Clare. and of her pongs Chyldren And

And retourned to shewe of Chaton,  
gys the good knyghte that had put  
hymselfe in aduenture and in payne,  
for to delyuer Rycharde oute of the  
handes of the kyng Chatlemayne.

¶ How alcer that Reynawd, Iard,  
& Guychard were returned to Mount  
auban after the bataylie that they  
had by the woode of the serpente they  
made great sorow for the loue of Ri-  
charde their brother, that was in the  
handes of the kyng Chatlemayne.  
And howe he was deliuered by the  
wyte of Maugys.



**N**ow telleth the historie, that  
Whan Maugys was come  
againe to Mountauban; he was so  
much wroth that he myght no mo; for  
þ loue of Richard that was take.  
And be cause that Reynawd and his  
bretherne made therfore so great  
sorow. Inconciumente that he was  
lyghted from hys horse, he went in  
to his chambre and made hym selfe

to be disarmed and after he tooke of  
all his clothes, and put him selfe all  
naked, and chidis doone: he tooke an  
herbe and eate it, was soone that he  
had it: he swelled like a padde, and  
than he tooke an other herbe, & chau-  
fedis and helde it betwene hys teeth,  
and anon he became al blacke as a  
cole in his face os one that is beaten  
with staves, & his eyen reeled in hys  
head

The booke of the four

head as he hadde be oþer dronke or mad , and disguised hymselfe wonderfullly , that he that had well know him aþore , shoulde not than haue said that he hadde be Maþogys . And whan he was thus turned and cunþesayc he tooke a great mantell and a hoode aþcloþed hymselfe therwith and cooþe on his feet a great payre of bootes and the staffe of a pilgrimage in his hande . And thus arrayed : he is sued out of Mounte whan . And wha he was out : he set hymselfe for to goe the way so greate pale that no horse could not haue waloped so fast , ryll that he came to mounþendel , before the rentes of the emperour Charlemayne or euer that Bowlande were come therre againe , and therre he helde him still and spake nothing at all , but looked only upon the kyng and vþoþ his paþyllton . And wha he went : he halced with the one foote , & lened before the kinges tent upon his staffe , and keþe the one of his eyen close . And wha he saw the kyng come ouce of his paþyllton : he nighed hym and said God of heauen that suffred derþ and passion on the crosse , keep you kyng Charlemain fro derþ and from prison , and from cull treason .

**D**illail said the kyng Charlemayn god confounde you for I shal never truste upon such a begger as ye be , bycause of the euþl cheef Maþogys , the whiche hath deþeyued me many times , for whan he wil , he is a palmer a knight or a gryson or elles a heremyte , by suche maner that I canne not be wate of hym

And if it please god & his blessed mother I shal auenge me once vpon him howe that the game goeth . And wha Maþogys heade the Emperour speake of this maner : he answered noþynge , and keþe hym self a great whyle , and after he sayd to the king . Sþr yþ Maþogys be a þeþe all other poore folke be not so . I haue more need of helþe , than I haue to doo any treason , and it is weþl seen on me that I am not the bodye that might doo any greate harme . Sþr I come from Iherusalē , where I haue worshypped the holy graue , and haue doone my oblacions in the temple of Salomon , and yet I must goe to come and to saint James in galyc & God will . But I dyd passe yester daye ouer balancon and ouer Gironde , with x. men my seruantes that I ledde alwaþes by the waye with me for to keep & defende my bodye . And whan I had passed ouer Gironde : I came with my men throughe a wood nigh the Mounte whan , where I met with many þyrganies and cheues þlewes all my men and all that I had they took vs me , and let me goe , and gladded I was whan so fayre I was deliuered of them . And after I asked of the folke of the countrey what menne they were that so hadde slaine my men , and they dyd tell me that they were the four sommes of Armoþ and a greate cheef that was called Maþogys with cheym . And I asked them why they wold set themselfe to so loule a craft & unhappy , seen that they were to greate gentilmen born : and the people of the countrey answerde me that they were constatned for

to doo so dyceruse they had so greare  
pouerise withinne. Whan that  
they wist not what to doo. But I did  
neuer see so cruel a man as the same  
MaWgys is, for he bounde my han-  
des behinde my backe. Whan he had  
robbed me, and thā he bet me so sore:  
that I weened to haue dyed therof,  
and batch arated me as ye see. Sy; ye  
be the best kyng in the worlde and  
ye be the lord of all this land, wher-  
fore I pray you for god that ye Wyl  
doo me ryghte of these four sonnes of  
Aymon and of MaWgys that greare  
theeke. And Whan Charlemain un-  
derstood these wordes: he tyghed his  
beade vp, & said. Pylgryme is it true  
as thou sayest: pe s̄it said MaWgys.  
Nowe tell me thy name said Char-  
lemaine. S̄it said MaWgys, my na-  
me is Gaidon, & I am borne in Bre-  
ayne & I am a great man in my con-  
try, wherfore I require you in the  
worshyppe of the holye sepulcre that  
I haue sought: that ye doo me ryghte.  
Pylgryme sayde Charlemaine I can  
not haue no ryghte of them my selfe,  
for I promise thee if I had them: all  
the Worlde shold not saue them, but  
that I shoulde make them dye a sha-  
meful deache. Sy; sayde then MaW-  
gys, s̄ith that ye can do me no ryghte  
of them: I beseche almighty god  
that is in heuen that i: pleasech him  
for to doo it. Sy; said the barons  
thys pylgryme semeth to be a good  
man and a true as we suppose. For  
it is well seen on him, geue to hym  
your almesse yf it please you. And  
thenne the kynge commaunded that  
men shold giue him twentye pound  
of money, and MaWgys tooke them

and put it in his hooche, and he saide  
in himselfe, ye haue gyuen to me of  
your own good but ye haue doon like  
a foole. I shal rewarde you ryghte &  
wel for it or euer I deparie fro you, &  
whan he had the syluer, he asked for  
some meate for gods sake, and oure  
ladyes, for syche yesterdays he hadde  
not eaten as he said, by my falech said  
Charlemaine thou shalt haue meat &  
drinke ynough. And anon they did  
bynghe him meate, and he sette him  
downe and tooke and eate wel of the  
best. And the kynge saide to him nowe  
eat free good pilgrym. For thou shalt  
be Wel serued, and MaWgys eat styl  
& was wered never a word but beheld  
only the kynge in hys bysage. And  
the kynge saide to him tell me Pyl-  
gryme and hide no chynge from me,  
whi hast thou looked so on me: s̄it said  
MaWgys I shall tel you with a good  
wyll. Wyt that I am a Wel cravay-  
led man, but in no place that euer I  
was, I saw neyther christen man ne  
sacafyn so goodly a prince, ne so cur-  
teous as ye be one, wherof of all the  
pardones that I haue wonne in my  
vyrage makinge, I giue you the halfe  
freely. Certeys pylgryme said the kynge  
and I take it gladlye. And I thanke  
you muche therof. And MaWgys  
gaue hym for a witnesse of the same  
his palmers staffe for to kylle it, thā  
said the barons every chone certain-  
lye sy; the pylgryme hach giuen un-  
to you a verye layre gyfte, ye oughte  
to rewarde him Wel for sc. Sy; said  
thenne MaWgys I aske none other  
rewarde of you for it but that it plea-  
se you for to take my poore gyfte a  
worthe, and that I may rest my selfe  
here

The booke of the four

here a while for I am vertye sycke &  
Wery. And thus as the kyng spake  
to Sha Wgys: came than Rowlande  
and Oliver. and al their folke, that  
brought Richard to a prisoner.

the whiche is the most hardy and the  
most valiaunt of the al in al pointes.

**A**nd whan Ogier & Estor: ffor the sonne of Dedon, and the  
duke Raines saw that Row-  
land wold goe to the paullio of char-  
lemayne with Richard: They came  
to Rowlande and saide to him. Syr  
Rowland howe can ye haue Richard  
so soze that ye wyl yeeld hym to  
Charlemayne: Lordes said Rowland  
What wyl ye that I shall doo with  
him: tell me and I shall doo it. Syr  
sayde they We wyl that ye deluyer  
Richard and ye shall say that it was  
a no: her psoner. Lordes said Row-  
lande yf I canne doo this: I shal doo  
it gladly. And these wordes hearde a  
yoman, that incontinent spurte his  
horse, and came to the kinges tent, &  
said to Charlemayne. Syr I bringe  
you cydynges soze straunge, We  
haue foughthen by the ryuer syde of  
Balancion, where that Rainard the  
sonne of Symon hath keepe his own  
right: Well ayenst Rowland pouer ne-  
uer w, and settech nor a stra w by him.  
And Rowland lost there more than  
he wan. Whan the Empertour char-  
lemayne vnderstoode that Worde: he  
Was abasshed greatlye, and after he  
said to the yoman. Tel me my frend  
howe was yet of my newewe Row-  
land: Sir said the yoman, he fough  
with the four sonnes of Symon, that  
defended themselfe well. But Ro-  
lande hath broughte with him p;ro-  
pnet one of the four sonnes of Symon

**C**harlemayne began than to lepe  
for Joye whan he vnderstoode  
these cydynges, and came out of his  
tent, and behelde and sawe Richard  
that Rowlande broughte, and whan  
Charlemayne sawe Richard: he  
knewe him well incontinence, and  
began to crie for greace Joye that he  
had. By my soule newewe it is well  
seen that ye haue ben there. For elles  
Richard shoulde not haue ben take.  
Lentes sir said Rowlande, well lited  
Ogier to you, for yf he hadde not be-  
the four sonnes of Symon were take  
as well as one, and than said the king  
to Richard. Whosone b, the faid  
that I owe to god, ye shal be hanged  
by the necke, but fyrl yf ye shall haue  
of euil and of tormentes ymough he sir  
said Richard I am in p;ison. I feare  
me not to be hanged as longe as my  
brother shal may lyght vpon bayard  
and that Sha Wgys be alvye, Alarde,  
and Gricharde my ryghte deare bre-  
thern, for yf ye do to me any outrage:  
no castell, ne to don, ne fortreesse shal  
not keep you, but they shal make you  
dye an euell deache on two dayes be-  
passed. Whan Charlemayne heade  
Richard speake so proudlye: he was  
ryghte an angred for it, and tooke a  
stasse with bothe hys handes and  
smote Richard therwith vpon hys  
heade so hard that he made the bloud  
renne out of it to the earche, and whan  
Richard felte himselfe thus woun-  
ded: he vaunced hym selfe, and tooke  
thempetur Charlemayn with bothe

the

hiſ armes by the walle & wakled to  
gibber a longe wyrle, so that they fell  
bothe downe the one hecre, & the other  
ther. And Rycharde rose vp quicke-  
ly and wolde haue tenne vpon Char-  
lemayne but Ogyer, and Salamon  
seasted him and kept him thereto, and  
aferd they sayd to Charlemayne. Syz  
ye haue doone ouermuche amys, for  
to beate a prysoner. Lettes my lordes  
saide Rycharde it is more dyshonoure  
to the kynge to smite me, than it is to  
me for to desende my bodye, but he is  
well wunt to doo liche outages,  
for it is not the kyng that he hache-  
doone, nor it shall not be the last. And  
Whan Hawgys sawe that Charle-  
mayn had smitten Rychard: he was  
soone angred therfore, that he had al-  
most layed vpon him wych his pal-  
mers staffe, but he thoughte yf he had  
doo so: bothe Rycharde and he shoulde  
haue be dead. And whan Charlema-  
yne sawe that Rycharde spake so bold-  
ly: he sayde to hym. Rycharde God  
confounde me, yf ye scape me for all  
your wickednes, for ye shall soone be  
haged by the necke. Syz sayd Rychard  
speake more courteously yf it please  
you. For I shal see you sooner be flet  
quicke than ye shall see me hange, no;  
ye shall not be so hardye to doo so,  
What someruer ye paze, saye or cra-  
ke. Charlemayne sayd, ye shall not  
scape me but ye shall be hanged or  
nyghte, and Wolde God I helde as  
fast yowre bretherne, and Hawgys  
that cheel as I holde you nowe, for  
they shoulde be hanged wych you to  
beate you company, because ye shoulde  
not be aferde. And thus as Rycharde  
stoue wych Charlemayne: he turned

hymselfe and salwe Hawgys behin-  
de hym that helde him selfe shal le-  
nyng vpon bys staffe, and he knew  
hym well wherof he was wel gladde  
for he wylt well he shoule not dye  
lych Hawgys was ther. And whā  
Rycharde had seen Hawgys: he was  
sure of his lyfe, and sayde to Charle-  
mayne. Syz wher shall I be han-  
ged tell me: certes sayd Charlemayne  
at the gybet of Mountabacon & ther  
shall yowr brethern maye see you, and  
Hawgys yowre cosyn. Syz it is no  
reazon that such a man as I am shoule  
be hanged, but make peace with vs &  
ye shal doo wylly, and yf ye doo not so;  
ye shal soone repente it as I rowe.  
And whan Hawgys had heard e all  
that he wolde heare: he made no len-  
ger taryng, but he went ouce of the  
paupillon and sayde no worde, and  
whan he was out of it: he beganne to  
walke so greate a pase that no horse  
myghte not haue folowed hym, and  
passed throughte the wood of the ser-  
pent and dyd so muche that he came  
to Mountabona, where he founde Be-  
nawde and his folke that wayred for  
him. And whan Benawde sawe hym  
come Without Rycharde: he was full  
soory so that he fel downe in a swoone.  
And Alard and Guycharde tooke  
hym vp and saide to him. Fayze bro-  
ther ye doo as a chylde, ye ough: e  
not to make liche a sorowe. Holde  
your peace traytors sayd Reynawd  
for ye haue lost the best anyghte of  
the wold, for I see Hawgys come  
alone, wherfore I beleue that Richa-  
rde is deade, for yf he were a lyue  
Hawgys wolde haue broughte hym  
wych hym. For he never myssed of no  
B. i thing

The booke of the four

thing that he tooke in hand. And whā Alard, & Gurchard vnderstood these wordes: they tooke therot so greate a sorow that they fell both downe in a swoone to the earche, and whan they were come againe to them selfe they made so great sorow that it was pycie for to see. And this hāging:cam there Hawgys. And whan he sawe the great sorow that his cosyns made: he was wrothe for it, and sayde to them. What eylēch you faire cosyns that ye make so euill cheere. Iias Hawgys said Reynawd, what is doone of oure brother Richard. Losyn sayd Hawgys Richard is yet in prison, but that remayne hach saide that he lyall make him to be hāged at the gybet of mōntlawcon, and hache sayde that ye shall not kēspe him longe a liue leste ye and I shoud rescue him, and heere is. xx. l. of money that Charlemayne hache gye me in his paullion and made me haue both mear, and dynke, at my pleasure. Nowe shall it be seen yf ye loue Richard, & if ye be a good knyght or not, for ye must succour and deliuer him by force of armes or elles he shal die, for all the world shal not keep him otherwile therof.

**B**einawd was wel recomforstēd whau he heard Hawgys speake: and after he sayd, siche as it is so y Richard is yet aliue: if I had but my selfe, my bretherne, and Hawgys, yet shoud I keep Richard fro death maw gre the power of Charlemayne, & thā Hawgys without any longe abiding tooke of his cope & his hod, and tooke an herbe a eat it, & anon the swellinge went fro him, & whan he was armēd:

he presented himselfe to Beinawd, and incontinent all his bretherne put them selfe in armes, and anon they tooke their way to xard moun: fawcō. And whan they were come to a bowe shot ynghe fro it: Reynawd sayde to hym folke. Lordes if ye euer loued me: thinke for to doo no we so muche that my brother Richard may be rescued from this thāmelull death. For I promyse you that I hal byng hym with me, or ells I and my bretherne and Hawgys shall die with him. So; sayde his men doube not of vs, for we shal doo oure deuoyre. Brother sayde than Alard, let vs lydēe heere down, and let vs lydēe oure selfe within that bulshe that we see yonder, for yf we were seen: the strenghmen mighē kīle oure brother Richard, or euer they wōlde come. Brother said Reynawd ye speake wōlēly, and than they lyghēdē down a loore, and put themselfe in a bushe: ment within a wood that was nighē moun: fawcō. Beinawd at the ryght side of it. Alard at the left side & wytē him Guichard and Hawgys.

**D**ow they were sent to y plaine of Walcoloutes ye haue well heade, and the paine that Reynawd & his bretherne suffred and than howe they wente and succoured byngē yon of Gascoyn that had betrayed them. And howe Reynawd dyd lyghe wytē Rowlond, wherof he was soze trausylied, and hadde been all ready thre daies wōlout slepe, and therfore ye oughe not to be merueiled yf Reynawd his bretherne and Hawgys fel a slepe, and to say the crothe as soone as Beinawd, his bretherne and māu-

gys were embushed vnder the sarppyn  
trees they fell into so harde a slepe,  
that they forgate Richard. Now god  
for his pycie haue pycie vpon him, &  
keep him. For otherwile he must die.

**D**W shal we tel you of Char-  
lemaine that was in his pa-  
uylio, he calid to him the duke Rai-  
mes and Richard of Normandy and  
saide to them. Lordes what counseil  
gyue you me: ye kno we that Richard  
the sonne of Aymon is of great pow-  
er, I feare me that Reynawde shall  
come to succoure hym, Whan I shall  
sende him for to be hanged, and ther-  
fore I must send company for to with-  
tende Reynawde, his bretherne and  
Mawgis. And thus as the king and  
the duke Raymes spake cogithcer: be  
looked before him & sawe Berenger  
of valoys, and called him and said to  
him. Berenger ye are of my men for  
ye holde of me scotlande & wales, ye  
oughte to come serue me in Fraunce  
with all youre power euer yere once  
whan I haue need. I shall now quire  
you and release vnto you all the ser-  
uise that ye owe me, to you & to youre  
heires for euermore so y<sup>e</sup> will take  
richarde the sonne of Aymon and see  
that he be hanged and strangleid at  
mounesawcon. And yf reynawd com  
there for to rescue hym: I praye you  
that ye wil take in hand my quarell.  
Syz said Berenger I see well now  
that ye loue me but a lytell, Whan ye  
sende me to doo suche a deed, ic were  
to me a great shame y<sup>e</sup> I dyd it, for  
nothyng that is to my dysworshippes  
I Wyll not doo Wyth my good will,

and also ye ought not to counseyl me  
to it nor suffre me to doo so, y<sup>e</sup> haue  
I leuer to serue you as my durye is  
for to doo, than that I shold doo the  
same that ye Wolde put me to. And  
Whan Charlemaine sawe that Be-  
renger wolde not doo it: he calid to  
therle Guydellon & said to him. Gui-  
dellon ye be my man and holdeth Ba-  
uyere of me, and ye oughte to serue me  
at any time that I call you with three  
thousand men, y<sup>e</sup> ye will goe hange  
Richard the sonne of Aymon: I shall  
make you free, and shall giue you the  
citle of Mascon. I wil not doo it said  
therle Guydellon. But I tell you for  
certeine that Richard shall haue no  
harme if I may help him fro it to my  
power. Than saide Charlemayn goe  
oute of my sighte for ye be no good  
men. And than he saide to Richard  
by god y<sup>e</sup> shall ye be hanged in dis-  
pyce of theym. Than calid Charle-  
mayne Ogier the dane, and saide to  
him Ogier ye be my man, ic is the w-  
ed vnto me that ye did the other daye  
treasō ayenst me in the plain of Gal-  
colours for loue of Reynawde, now we  
shall it be seene if ic is true o; not. Y<sup>e</sup>  
ye wyll goe hange Richard: I shall  
gyue you the citle of Lion, and I shall  
gyue you quicke as al the seruise that ye  
owe me & youre heires also for euer-  
more. By the saith that I owe to you  
sir I shall not doo it, for ye wot howe  
Richard is my cosin germayne, and  
I tell you that who so euer shall han-  
ge Richard the sonne of Aymon: I de-  
fie him, and I hal helpe Reynawde  
with al my power. Goe from me said  
Charlemayne, Goddes curse haue  
ye, neuertheles by my bearde sayde

The booke of the soure

he yet shall be hanged. And whan he had saide so: he called to him the bryshop Turpyn and sayd to hym. Ye bryshop I shal make you Pope of Rome yf ye will hange richard, syr said the bryshop Turpyn, what say ye: ye knowe wel that I am a preste, yf I dyd so: I shoulde lese my masse and be reguler, and also ye knowe well that rycharde is my cosyn. Wolde ye that I shoulde commynct treason vpon my kyngmen: certes it were ayenst reason. So help me god said Charlemayne ye leue it neyther for kynged nor for masse, but as a cowarde ye leue it onelye for feare that youte crowne shoulde becat.

**T**han called Charlemayne Salamon of brecon & said to him, Salamon ye knowe wel that ye be my man and that ye holde Breten of me, I shal giue you the duchie of Anfom yf ye will hange rycharde the sonne of Aymon. Syr answered Salamon, if it please you to commaunde me any other thinge I will be readye to doo it with a good will, but this I will not doo. And I tell you for certayne that rycharde shal haue no harme yf I maye. Salamon sayd the kinge, ye be a traytore sith that ye wyll not doo my commaundement. And after this: he sayde Richardre I will that ye knowe well that ye shal be hanged in dyspite of all thy kyngmen. Syr said rycharde perauenture it shal be other wise thanre weene, and than Charlemayne turned hym selfe to Warde Rowlande, and said to hym sayzenewre goe and see that

he be haged I pray you. For it is well reason that ye doo thoffice, syth that all the frenshemen haue faylled me, and also ye haue taken hym, wherfore ye must icesdes hange him, and I shal grue you Loieyn vpon the ryn and so many other countreys that ye shal haue ynough. Sir answered Rowland yf I dyd this: I shoulde be taken for a traytore. For I haue answered rycharde afore that I Cooke hym that he shoulde haue no harme of his boode, and yf ye make hym dye: no man shal never truste me vpon my feith. wherfore I praye the xii. peers of Fraunce that none of them wyll take the charge vpon hym for to see hym haged, for yf he were haged: I shoulde be diffamed. And I promise you that who shal hange Rycharde: I shal goe to Reynawode and shal put my selfe in his pypson, and yf he wyll pardon me hys brochers deathe: I shal help hym vnder my othe ayenst all menne with thre thousande syghinge men. Wel arrayed on horsebacke. Acuse we sayde than Charlemayne the deuyll speed you, yeben al false vnto me.

**A**nd whan Charlemayne saw that he myght not bring his wyll about for to hange Richard: he was so wrothe that he shooke for angre, and rose vpon his feere and said. Lordes ye knowe well that I am the sonne of kinge Pepin and of the Quene Beeche, my fater was mortised in Fraunce, and I fledde in to Spayn to Blaſtre vpon the sea. And there I dyd so manye meruayles of armes that I was made knyghte

and dyd conquerre salten my loue that  
forsoke. xv. kynges bearinge crowne  
for my sake and she came with me in  
to staunce, and than I was crowned  
kinge accordinge to the righe of my  
patrimony, and than I dyd wedde  
the sayde ladie Galyne with rygbee  
great ioye and weend to haue had my  
realm in peace, but the same day that  
I was crowned: the. xii. peeres of  
staunce purposed to haue made me  
dye at christmasse next followynge,  
but our lord sent me an aungell and  
made him to tell me that I shoulde  
goe hyde my selfe, the whiche I dyd  
so and I durst not saye ayenst it, nor  
I wyl not where I shoulde hyde me,  
but god wolde that I shoulde fynde  
Baloo a great cheef, that brought me  
In to a pyce, and this hanging: men  
conspired my death, but Baloo shew-  
ed me al togidher and through his ai-  
de I Cooke myne enuyes, and I pu-  
nished them afterwarde at my wyl,  
and so shall I doo by you, if there be  
any that wil doo contrary to my wil.  
And I am deybered to enquire eche  
of you by this maner for to see who  
shall be false or true to me. Whan  
Charlemayne had sayde this: he tur-  
ned towarde the sonne of Dedon and  
sayde to him. Escoufe come forth I  
haue broughte you to greate honoure  
and we haue nouyshed you ful deari-  
ly, ye knowe that ye holde langres of  
me, yet shal I doo to you muche more  
good than I haue doone, for I shall  
gyue to you theldome of mounfer-  
raunce & of cleremount so that ye will  
goe hang that whoreson Richard, sir  
sayd Escoufe ye wot well that more  
Dedon holdech all the londe that ye

speake of, and I had never nochynge  
therof, but I am seaw with Ro. W.  
lande in armes. And whan I shal be  
lorde of that lond that my fader hol-  
dech in his hand: I shal fulfyl your  
commaundement, by saint Denis of  
staunce ye must goe see that he be ha-  
ged said Charlemayne and I shal ma-  
ke you lord of mo londes. Sy, sayd  
Esterka Wde, is it earnest that ye spea-  
ke: yes said Charlemayne. By my  
head sir said Esterka Wde, ye wolde  
not be with me for to see Richard ha-  
ge for halle of your realm. Whan the  
kinge heard that he was thus repro-  
ued: he tooke a stafte and cast it affer  
Esterka wde, but Esterka wde sterte from  
his place, and the stafte brake in pee-  
ces ayenst a post. And whan the. xii.  
peeres saw that: they wen all oute of  
the paullion of Charlemayne, and  
wha that Charlemayne returned him,  
and saw that none of all the. xii. pee-  
res wolde abyde there with him:  
Than he said to the duke Raymes  
where be my. xii. peeres gone: sir said  
duke Raymes, they ben all gone out  
of your paullion, and not without a  
cause, for it becometh not to suche a  
noble kinge as ye be to smyte his ba-  
rons, for ye shoulde be sore blamed.

**T**han whan Charlemayn saw  
this: he called to him Richard  
of moncolonde & said to hym, come  
to the Rycharde of moncolonde,  
heare what I shal tell you, ye knowe  
well that ye be one of theyn that I  
loue best in this Worlde but ye must  
doo one thinge at my request. It is  
that ye wyl goe hange Richard the  
sonne of Simon at the gybet of mou-

The booke of the fourre

lawcon. Than Richarde of montro-  
londe answered. Hy; I shall doo so  
with a good wyl, for I am your man  
and so I ought not to refuse your co-  
maundemente, but by my soule sy;  
Emperour yf ye will that I goe han-  
ge Richarde: ye shall come with me  
With a thousand knyghtes Well at-  
med, and I shall hange hym whete  
soeuer it please you. And if Reinaud  
and hys brecherne come thereto to  
rescue: I shall icoparde mine owne  
body for to saue yores. Howe see to  
yf ye will doo this or no, for none o-  
thewise wil I not goe there one foo-  
te. Goe from me gloton saide Char-  
lemain, gods curse haue chou.

ye shal be the more dredde and more  
redoubte for cause of theym, and yf  
ye haue once the fourre brecherne and  
Hawgis they; cosyn to youre fren-  
des: therre shall be no prynce in all  
christendom so hardy that dare mous-  
watre ayenst you, and I promise you  
sy; that the more that ye keepe thy;  
Watre ayenst them: the more shall ye  
lose therby, and moreouer they be all  
of our house by they; facher Aymon,  
this kno wye Wel, and therfore I can  
not hate them by no Wyse, Naymes  
sayd Charlemaine, I will no: doo so  
for they all haue doone amys ayenst  
me and so shall I doo hange Richarde  
by the fatche of my bodye, sy; sayde  
the duke Naymes ye shall not doo so  
and god wyl, for he is of greate lyg-  
nage & of our lignage, for we shoule  
neuer maye suffre it no: endure, and  
ye also shoule be blamed ful soore for  
it. But and ye wyl make hym dye:  
I shall gyue you beter counseil: Tell  
me howe sayd Charlemain, &  
I shall doo it, yf it semeth me good,  
hy; sayde the duke Naymes sych is  
please you that Richarde shall dye:  
let him be cast into a deep prison un-  
der the earthe, and make him to be  
keepe surely therin that he scape no  
awaye, and commaund that no meat  
at all be broughte vnto him, and so  
shall he dye for hungre. And ye shall  
not be blamed if ye doo so. Naymes  
sayde the Emperour Charlemayne,  
ye doo Iape with me. I knowe it wel  
Whan ye doo tell me this, ye knowe  
well that Hawgis is to greate a ni-  
gromancer. For I shoule neuer may  
keepe Richarde in prisyon, but that  
Hawgis wylde haue hym out cho-  
rough

**T**he kinge than called to hym  
the duke Naymes, and sayde  
to him. What counseill gyue you? sy;  
sy; sayd the duke Naymes, good if ye  
wyl beleue me, sir ye wot that Rey-  
nawde, his brecherne, and Hawgis  
are the best knyghtes of Fraunce, as  
euery man knoweth well, this warre  
hach lasted tyght longe. For it is wel  
xvi. yeres that it began fyf, and ma-  
ny a noble knyght hath be slayne for  
the same, if it please you ye shall send  
word to Reinaude, Alarde, Guy-  
chard, and Hawgys that they wyl  
become your men, and ye shall deli-  
uer agayne vnto them they; brother  
Richarde alwyue, and that ye wyl doo  
make Reinaude and Alarde of the  
xxii. peers of Fraunce. And whan  
Reinaude & his brecherne shal se that  
ye haue doone to theym so greate woy-  
shyp: they shal serue you with good  
herte, and so that ye shall con them  
greate shanke for it, and I ensure you

rough his craft, and therfore I Wyll not doo as ye say. Then came Ogier the Dane, and said to the Duke Raimes, ye make to longe a sermon, let þ kynge doo with it, as it pleasech him, For the more that ye praye him: the worse shall he doo, but he shall make peace Whan he see that he can no[n]e other wise doo. But this daye shal be seen who loue[n]t richard. And whā Ogier had said this: he went oute of the paullion, and Escoule with him and Richarde of Normandy, the bishop Turpin and Guidellon of Bayere, and made theys foike to be armed, & whan they were armed: they were well. xii. chousande men. And than Ogier began to crie with a hie voice. Now whal it be seen Who shal be so hardy for to leade Richarde the sonne of Aimon to hāgynge. For such shall bring him that never shal come againe, but he be headles, and Ogier went in to the paullion where richarde was, that was bound bo[n]th handes and feet, and was blindfild. And whan Ogier sawe richarde that was thus atayed: he had of hym greate pyte, so went he to him to haue deliuered him, but he aduyled hymselfe, and sayd that he shoulde not doo it, but he wolde tary for to see an ende of it what the kynge shoulde doo therof. And whan richarde hearde Ogier speake: he called to hym and said in þ presence of the duke Raimes and of richarde of Normandy, of Guidellon of Bayere, and of the bishoppe Turpyn, and of rowlante that than happed to com therc. Faire lordes I knowe well that þ is Were at your pleasure: ye wolde let me goe

quyce, and all þroughþ ye haue tra[u]ayled yourse selfe for me, wherof I thanke you right much, but syt that I must needes be broughte vnto the galous: it is beter that I poore unhappy die alone, than that ye shoulde haue anie harme for my sake, wherfore looke that ye lose not the good grace of Charlemayne, and I praye you that ye will goe vnto hym and telle him that he doo his wyl vpon me, for I haue leuer die shorly, than to live longe in sorow. Whan Ogier sawe richarde speake so: he was so sorwe for it that he fell almost downe to the grounde for greate sorow in swoone, and saide to richarde in angre. What sayest thou foole detestable Wylte thou be hanged: for þe said the same that thou sayest to Charlemayne: all the golde of the Worlde shoulde not saue thee, but that thou shouldest soone be hāged by þ necke. I care not saide Richarde, happe as it happe wyl. And than he turned hymselfe toward rowlante and sayde to him. I pardon you syz rowlante heere and alþe god the faiþe that ye haue promised me, and that ye gaue me whan ye tooke me alþe Balanc. And whan Ogier heard this: he wexed almost mad for greate angre, and saide to rowlante. Syz belue not richarde, for he speakeþ as a man that is vexed in his spirites, and not without a very greate cause, but keepe vnto him the fayre þat ye haue promised to him, for it shal be your greate worschyp, þe doo so. Ogier said Rowlante, doubte not. I shall keepe to Richard alþat I haue promyed hym and moze. Whan richarde heard

The booke of the four

hearde that Worde: he called to hym  
Ogier & sayde. Sayre colyn for god  
keep your peace, for I haue seen here  
Sawgis ryght now, and I wot wel  
he hath not forgotten me. For by the  
faith that I owe to you such shal lede  
me to the gybet that shall soone loose  
they; head, and many other mo with  
him. Colyn sayde Ogier is it crouth  
that ye saye that ye haue seen Sawgi  
s heere? rea saide Richard without  
any faute, than saide Ogier, blessed  
be the good lord of these rydinges,  
now haue I no doubt of Rycharde  
sich that my cosin knoweþ of it. And  
than all the xii. peers of fraunce ligh  
ted a foote, and came to kyng Char  
lempyne and sayde to him. Sirs, we

ben all your men stowne to you. All  
that we haue sayde and deou: we did  
it for to see whether we myght haue  
delyuered oure colyn from deathe by  
your good wyll, but sith that it plea  
seth not to you that he be sauued and þ  
ye wyll that he be hanged: we wyll  
not speake no more ayenst it, bycause  
that ye angre your selfe to sore. Now  
sende Rycharde to be hanged by who  
me ye wyll, for he shall not be leeted  
of vs therfor.

¶ How the emperour Charlemain  
sente Rypus for to hange Richarde.  
And how that Reynawde succoured  
hym and hanged Rypus hymselfe.

Capitulum. iiiii.



**T**han sayde Charlemayne, by my faith now ye speake wel and wpselye, & now I pardon you al, and than Charlemaine called to hym Rypus of typlemond and said to him Rypus if ye wil doo so muche for me that ye wil goe hange Rycharde: I shall make thee lord of great londes and ye shall be my chamberleyne all your lyfe. Soz saide rypus I am all tedy to fulfyl your commaundement, for Reynawd slew my uncle besyde balancon, ye speake now wel said Ogyer, ye shall be a cowarde but yf ye auenge your selfe at this tyme. And whan rypus understood Ogyer speake thus: he hought hym selfe the mooste sure for it, and ryghte humbly and currouslie he kneeld down tofore the emperour Charlemaine, and kyssed his feere & after he said to him. Soz I am oþdeyned for to doo you seruice and youte commaundement. If it please you ye shal made me sure that whan I shal come again fro the han- gynge of Rycharde: that none of yore xii. peeres shal not a waite me none cupil curne for it after Ward. By my faych said Charlemayne I Wyll doo so with a good wil. And than he said to Rowiande and to Olyuet, and to al the twelue peeres of france. Lo- des I Will that ye promise him that he shall not be herte by none of you, nor in tyme to come by no maner of wise, by cause I make hym to hange Rycharde. The whiche thinge all the xii. peeres promised hym with a good wyll. And whan rypus hadde taken the oche of the xii. peeres of france for his seruise: he went to his arme- tene, and made him to be armed,

And whan he was armed: he lyghed on horsebacke and came before kyng Charlemain. And whan the Emperour sawe him: he sayde to hym. Rypus take a thousand knighees with you for to keep you, and if Reynawd or Maugis come there: take them and hange them with Rycharde. Sic saide rypus I shal doo yout commaundement. And than the kyng made theym deluyet Rycharde. And whan rypus hadde him: he put him to the waye and mounted Richard vpon a mule, and put a halter at his necke & so led him forth lyke as it had be a stonge chefe, and broughte him before the pauprylon of Charlemayne. And whan the kyng sawe him: he was glad of it and sayde to rypus. Wolde god that all the other sonnes of Aymon were in the plighe that Richard is now in, for I shold wel auenge you and my selfe also vpon them.

**W**han the stenshemen sawe rycharde that was led to han- gynge so vtilaynouslyc: they be ganne to make suche a sorow for hym that it was mirayl, so that none so great was never seen. Rypus rode on his waye and dyd so muche that he came to Bounckawcon. And whan rypus dyd see the Galous set vp: he sayde to rycharde. By god rycharde see yonder is yore last gyngge, where ye shall be hanged by myne owne handes, thygdaye shall be auenged the deache of foulques my uncle that Reynawd slew besides Balancon, þ succours of Maugis is now ferre fers you, for he can not keepe you, but that

### The booke of the four

that I shall hange you now in dyspice  
of Reina Wde and of yore other bre-  
therne. Whan rycharde hearde rypus  
speake so proudly & saw that he was  
so nyghe the gyber, and that he sawe  
no succours cominge of no parte: he  
was soze agast and a ferde, & thoughe  
he Wolde keep rypus with wordes &  
saide to him. Rypus for god haue pi-  
tie vpō me, for I am no man þ shoulde  
be hanged by reason, but I ought to  
be deliuered with you, and if ye Wyll  
deliuer me: I shal giue you two hun-  
dred marke weight of fyne golde, and  
I shal make you a greate lord. Cer-  
tes rycharde said rypus ye speaks for  
nought, for I Wolde not leaue you  
but that ye shoulde be hanged for r. of  
the best cities of fraunce. Rypus said  
Rycharde sith that ye will not haue  
pitié upon my body: haue pitié upon  
my soule, and I pray you as much as  
I can that ye will make a preest come  
to me for to shrieve me, certes said ri-  
pus ye shal haue one with right good  
wyll. And thanne he made come a  
preest, some sayen that it was a bps.  
Shop for to shrieve rycharde, the which  
began to shrieve himselfe and shewed  
to the preest mante moo sinnes than  
ever he dyd in hys dayes, and this he  
dyd for to lenghe the tyme, and to  
see if he shoulde haue any succours or  
no. And whan rycharde sawe that  
his helpe came not: he were almost  
mad, & said to his confessour. Sy; I  
wot not what I shoulde more say, giue  
me absolucion, & he gaue him penaun-  
ce accordinge to the tyme of hys lyfe  
and the confessour went from him  
all weeping. And whan rypus sawe  
that rycharde was confesser: he came

to him and put the halter aboue hys  
necke, and made him moue vpon the  
ladder & dyd shye the cheyne wherac  
he shoulde hange. And whan rycharde  
sawe that his bretherne came not for  
to sauue him: he wende none other bus  
that he shoulde haue died, and deliuered  
hymselfe for to suffice death at the  
houre, and than he said to rypus. My  
steend I pray thee for God that thou  
suffre me a while till I haue saide an  
oyson that I dyd leue in my youch  
to the ende that god haue mercy on  
my soule. I wyl not sayd rypus, thou  
shall haue no lenger respyre. My  
sayde his men, yes, ye shall if it plea-  
se you. For if he may doo so muche þ  
his soule be sauued: he shall praye for  
you in the other Worlde, and for vs  
also. And thā rypus gaue respyre to ri-  
chard, wherof he did like a foole. And  
than Richard turned him self toward  
the east, and began to saye his prayes  
with a good heart and deuoutly. For  
he craved to haue death withoute re-  
myssion, and he sayd in this maner.

**G**lorious Ihesus by thy blessed  
name, that made beauen and  
erthe, and al the elementes that  
been, and went in this Worlde as a  
poore man. And sauued Jonas from  
the bellye of the fylshe. And in Beth-  
leem ressured Lazaron. And deliuer-  
ed Daniell from the pyt of the Ly-  
on. The synnes of the cheele, ye dyd  
pardonne on the Croſſe, where the  
felons Iewes had crucyfied you. Al-  
so to Mary Magdalene her synne  
ye forgave in the house of Symon.  
For she wach there yore ſeete wych  
her

greate deuocyon. Judas the false trap  
toure mutmured throught enuy wher-  
of ye did shew to him that he did great  
folys, and Judas kyssed you by greate  
treason, and deliuered you to the Iew-  
es, wherof he was rewarded after  
his deseruynge. Good Lorde ye crea-  
ted and made our facher. I am of the  
lyme of the earth, and I illumyned him  
with the grace of the holpe ghoste, and  
after ye did abandon to hym the frui-  
tes of paradise, but he brake your com-  
maundemente, Wherby mankynde  
Went to dypnacion, and we all were  
dampned withoute remyssyon, but  
after ye redemed vs by the meryre of  
youre blessed passyon, ye dyd suffre  
greate curyless and greate afflic-  
tions for vs poore synners wthouer  
anie deuocyon. Whan Longys dyd  
shoue the spere in to youre digne side  
the Water ran out of it and also the  
bloude lepte into his eyen, Wherof he  
recouerted his syghe, and ye pardon-  
ned hym hys synnes, whan he called  
upon you for mercie. And also to Noe  
ye let make by your carpenters an ar-  
ke for to saue himselfe, and of every  
beast a couple. In Josaphat good lord  
ye brought your Appostles wherof ye  
dyd make a sayre myracle for wch. ii.  
lyches and syuelous of batyl, ye fed  
syue thousande men all their sylye. O  
good lord, as I doo beleue this that  
I haue sayd stedfastly: keep this day  
my bodi fro death that is so nigh that  
I be not hanged nor put in prisyon, but  
deliuer me from the handes of my  
enemes, that I be not byriuyed nor  
brought to shame by Rypus of typle-  
mond that holdeth me in his gynnes.  
Ha Reynarde my ryghes deare bre-

ther that ye be not heire now with my  
bretherne and with my cosyn Haw-  
gys, ye haue now forgoeten me and lec-  
me heire dis, wherfore I recommende  
me to god of heuen. And than Richar-  
de began to weepe full tenderly and  
sayde to Rypus. Rypus doo with me  
What ye wyll.

**D**o we shall we speake of bay-  
arde, the good horse of Reyna-  
uld, of his bretterne and Hawgys.  
It is trouthe that Bayarde the horse  
of Reynauld the sonne of Symon that  
came of he fery, and thus he vader-  
stoode the Worde whan it was spoken  
as well as it hat be a matine, whan  
Bayarde vnderstoode the noyse that  
the folke made aboute the galoues and  
saw that his master slept fast, he cam  
to Reynauld and smot hym so hard  
with his feete in the myddes of hys  
sheelde that he made hym awake. So  
lepte Reynauld vpon his feete al afrai-  
ed and behelde what it was and loo-  
ked to Ward Bounsta Wcon and saw  
his brother vpon the ladder, so made  
he none other caryng but lighted vp  
on bayarde that ranne as the wynde,  
so as every chise he lepte. xxx. foote in  
a playng grounde. And Bayarde, Guy-  
charde, and Hawgys awoke for ioue  
of bayarde that made greate noyse.  
And whan they were all awaked:  
Hawgys began to crye as hyghe as  
he couldc vpon his horse, the devyl  
speede the curyli beast that thou hast let  
me slepe so longe, and than he lyghted  
quickly vpon his backe, for ther was  
no better horse in all the worlde after  
bayarde.

Whan

The booke of the four

**R**han Rypus of riplermode  
that wolde haue strangled  
Richard saw come his bre  
therne and Ma Wgys: he was so soze  
abashed with it that he wist not what  
he shoulde doo, & he sayde chan to Ri  
charde. richarde ye be deluyered oute  
of my handes, for here comen Reyn  
na wod and Ma Wgys, and all theyz  
puyssance that come to you to succourte  
you, and if it please you, ye shall haue  
mercy on me. For this that I dyd  
for to haue brought you heere: it was  
but for to haue a waye the debate that  
Charlemaine had with the xii. peeres  
of Fraunce, and I knewe well that  
ye shoulde be rescued without any faut  
by youre bretherne and of Ma Wgys  
Rypus saide richarde mocke not w  
me, for heere is to harde a mocke for  
me, and ye wynne not muche by for  
to gabbe me of this facion. By my  
soule saide rypus I mocke you not, for  
it is in good ernest that I saye, ye maye  
see them heere not a bo w shot a ferre  
no: I seeke not to doo you any h.arme  
but go downe to the ladder, and ha  
ue mercy on me I beseeche you for god  
des loue.

**R**icharde was meruelously a  
bashed whan he hearde rypus  
speke, and he turned his heade a syde  
and sawe reynawde that came a good  
pale, and whan he sawe hym he sayde  
rypus I shall never clayme my bro  
ther reynawde for my brother, yf he  
hange you not by the necke to the sa  
me gyber where as ye thought to haue  
hanged me ryghte nowe. This han  
gyng that richard spake to rypus:  
reynawde was ayued and hearde

this that Richard had sayd to Rypus.  
And Reynawde beganne than to cryc  
Wich highe voice, so helpe me God  
Rypus ye be deade, for ye be a cursed  
man, and for youre cursidnes: I shall  
hange you my owne selke at this gy  
bet, so shall you be possessourte of my  
brother Richardes place, for al the pe  
Wer that Charlemayne shal make:  
shall not saue you thersto. This han  
ging: came there Ma Wgis soze chau  
ted & said to Rypus. Ha Rypus thou  
traitour euil man ye haue alwales be  
readye to doo some euil againste vs,  
but siche that I haue founde you beete  
I shall not seeke you no Where elles,  
& than Ma Wgis bare vp his spere for  
to haue perced his body therwith, but  
Reyna wde cried vpon hym, Losyn  
couthe hym not, for I Wolde not for a  
greate chinge that a nocher channe I  
should slea him, for I shal auenge vp  
on hym my deere brother richard, and  
than he drewe oute flamberge and  
smote rypus with it such a stroke that  
he feilded him dead to therch at the foo  
te of the ladder, and after he sayde to  
his bretherne, keep well that none of  
his folke scape but that they be deads  
or taken. And than reyna wde descen  
ded a foote and went vpon the ladder,  
and tooke richarde betwene hym ar  
mes and brought hym downe, and un  
bound hym handes and after he kyssed  
his mothe and sayd to him. Brother  
howe doo ye, seele youre selfe, are ye  
not pl at easse:

**R**other saide richarde I haue  
no h.arme, but let me be arm'd  
I praye you. By sainte Johan  
said reynawde ye shal be arm'd a  
non

none. Brother sayd Rycharde let me haue the armours of rypus of Biplemonde, w<sup>t</sup> a good wil said Reynawde And Incontynente he made Rypus to be had from his harnays and made his brother Rycharde soz to be armes, therwith he made him to lyghte on horsebacke & tooke him his sheeld and his baner. And whan richarde was well aparelled: Reynawde tooke the halter that rypus had put aboue Richardes necke, and put it aboue Rypus necke and after he moued vpon the laddre and drew him al dead, & hanged him there as he wolde haue hanged Rycharde, and with him Wel. xv. mo of hys company such as king Charlemayne loued most. And whan he had hanged them: he sayde to Rycharde. Brother thus manye shall keepe heire Watche in stede of you. Whan this was doone: Ma Wgis came to Reynawde and sayde to him. Cosin tell me who waked you so wel in time as ye were: cosin said Reynawde, by the sayth þ I owe to god I slept as herte as though I had not slept in xi. nightes afoore, but bayarde my gentil horse awoke me, than sayd Ma Wgis. O gracyous Lord<sup>e</sup> of heauen blessed be god that made suche a horse, it is not the first good turne that Bayarde hath wone to you my cosin nor also it shall not be the laste. And ther al went and kissed Bayarde for the goodness that he had shewed vnto them.

**M**e lordes said chā Reynawde what shall we now do? We haue wrought well, syth þ we haue

rescued the gentyll Rycharde whote & sounde, me semeth that we ought to goe to Mountawban, so shall we recomfort Clare my wyfe & my children that ben all euill at rase for the loue of Reynawde and so shall we eate and slepe at our easle, for we haue well need therof, and we shall doo Justyce of king gon that so falsly hath betrayed vs. And after to morow we shal assyple charlemyne that we loue not, and we shall leue syue hundred men within Mountawban, and as many aboue Mountawban that shall succour vs if need be. And thā sayd Rycharde, syr if it please you ye shal not doo so. For ye kno we not the sorow, & the great lanerie, tacion þ the creche me made for loue of me in the hoste of Charlemayne. And I promise you ye ought wel to loue Ogier, Roialand, Estoialande the sonne of Dedon, Richarde of noz mandy, the sayre Guydellon, Salomon of bretayne, and eke Oliver of Uie. For they tooke great debate for me with Charlemyne within his pation, and all this they dyd for the loue of you, for they wēde al for certayne that Rypus shold haue hanged me, & that I shold haue no succours, but and it please you giue me leue that I may shew me to Ogier the dane & to all other our kinsmen that be in Charlemynes courte, for they shal haue great Joyc for to see me scape from the death.

**T**han sayd Reynawde: for soth Ogier dyd lyke a valiaunte man, for me ought for to loue their frendes & help them whā it is need  
S. i. and

### The booke of the foure

and Reynawde said. Brother ylone  
is almoste vnder al redy. I feare me  
soore of you yf ye wyl go into yhoste  
of Charlemayne, but and pe will ne-  
des goe there: take wyth you foure  
hundred knyghtes well horsed and  
wel arm'd, & put the in a busshemēt  
nyghe by where ye goe, and I shalbe  
heere wyth mi folke, and ye shal take  
wyth you Bondy my goodhorne: &  
yf ye need of ony helpe: soune it hys  
as ye can well doo, & I shal succour  
you incontinent. Syr said Richarde  
be it as it please you. And than Rei-  
nawde tooke his horne to Richarde  
& foure hundred knyghtes, and Ri-  
charde tooke on his Way & bare the  
baner of Rypus wyth hym, and he  
did so muche that he came to yhoste  
of Charlemain, & the king stode ar-  
med afore his pavilion, wth his folke  
that kepte the waye of Bouunta-  
con, and they saw come the baner of  
Rypus, as it had be borne by Rypus  
hymselfe vpon his horse.

**T**han whan Ogier saw Ri-  
charde come out: he wende it  
had be Rypus of Rypplemonde, that  
had hanged Richarde, & of the sorow  
that he tooke for it he fell downe to  
the erthe a swoone. And after whā  
he was come agayne to hymselfe he  
sayd, Alas we haue loste Richarde,  
we shall never haue hym a gayne.  
Now it is well scene Richarde that  
ye had few frendes. And wyth this  
he spurred his good horse Brayford  
and came agaynst Richarde, for he  
crouched beryt that it had be Rypus.  
And whan Charlemayne saw that  
Ogier ydane rā towarde Rypus: he

sayd to hys folke goe after hym ba-  
rons I shal now see whyche of you  
is my freend or my foe heere cometh  
Rypus, certaynly he hath doone wel  
his deuoure and hath done me good  
seruice, for he hath made me quite of  
Richarde one of my mortall enimies,  
and now Ogier wyl kill him  
in treason, but and I can holde him:  
I shal doo suche Justyce vpon him  
that it shalbe spoken of it longe time  
heere after. And than spurred they  
horses frenchmen and bouigours  
after Ogier, and Charlemayne him  
selfe went after hym, but Ogier was  
all redy ferre from them, wthoche and  
spers as a lion, & he cryed as hys as  
he coulde. So helpe me god Rypus  
ye be dead, & ye shall haue a rewarde  
of that ye haue doone vnto my colin  
Richarde & I promise you Charle-  
mayne shall not come time ynoughe  
for to sauе you from my spere. Whā  
Richarde heard Ogier speake thus:  
he sayde, haue mercye vpon me my  
fare colyn, for I am Richard your  
colyn and not Rypus, for wee haue  
hanged Rypus in my place, & I pro-  
mise you my brother reuawore hath  
wel auenged me vpon him and ther-  
fore I am come for to shewe me to  
you and to my other kynsmen for I  
wote well y ye shall be glad therof,  
ye make lesyng false trapour of ri-  
pplemonde sayd Ogier, but ye shall  
not scape me so. Whan Richard saw  
Ogier so sore chaufed wth wraethe: he  
sayd vnto him. Colin know you not  
mernay wout fawt sayd Ogier. For  
ye bere the armes & the baner of Ry-  
pus, I haue done so syr said Richard  
bycause y I shalnot be knownen.

By my soule sayde Ogier. I wil see your face naked. For otherwys I wyl not beleue þ, that ye saye. Sayde Richarde, and ye shal see me a non. And than he unbuckled his helme & shewed hys blysage. And whan Ogier sawe him he was right glad and wense and kissed the mouth of Richarde ful sweetly, and tooke him in hys armes many tymes and sayd to Richarde all laughynge. Losyn whiche haue ye doone of Rypus by my fayth sayd Richarde, he is nowe Archebisshop of the feeldes giuyng the bnediction wþt his foote. For my brother Reynawode hath haged hym with his owne handes, & wold not saffre þ none other shold set hande upon hym, but only bymselfe, by my soule sayd Ogier, he hath doone right well. And than he sayde to Richarde, sayre Losin see to your selfe, for heere cometh Charlemayne, and god be with you, & thus returned Ogier. And whan Charlemayne saw Ogier: he sayd to hym, why went ye to warde Rypus afore me? Sayd Ogier if ye were not so nyghe me: I shold smote of his hed. But I dare not doo it for loue of you, god bee to hi, for I make you sur, he shal haue none harme by me. Then sayd Charlemayne, I shal defende him against al men. And than he spurred þ horse with the spurres & came to Richarde weenyng to him that it had ben Rypus and sayd to him, come neare my spacyall fronde Rypus, and take no feare of nothynge. For I shall keepe you against all men. Whan Richarde heard Charlemayne speake thus: he sayde to hym, I wyl that ye knowe

uow þ I am not the false traytoure Rypus, but I am Richarde the sone of Aymon, and I am the brother of Reynawode the balle knight of all the woldes, and of Riarde and of Guycharde, and cosyn to the valyaunte Hawgis that ye loue so muche, þ smote me to day in þ morwyng with a stasse in the head, whercof ye myldyd greatly, and therfore my brother Reynawode hath hanged your tyght welbeloued rypus there as he wold haue lodgedine, and xv. of his felawes with hym for to beare hym felawhyp, now beware of me for I defye you. Whan Charlemayne understande these wordes: he was so soze an angred of it þ none can be more, and spurred his horse and ran upon Richarde, & Richarde agaynst him, and gaue þ one to the other so gret strokis in theyz sheldes þ they brake bothe theyz spres al i peires. And wþ the same they recountred eche other wþ their bodes so mightyly that þ strongest of bothe habandon ned the stropes, but it happed wel to Charlemayne that he abode within thalons of the sadie, but Richarde fell do wne to the erth. And whan Richarde saw himself a ground he was wrothe for it & rose vp quiclye and set hande vnto his swerde, and went and smote Charlemayne vpon hys helme so gret a strok, that he made hym all stonyed withal, but þ swerd lyded vpon þ helme that was good and fine dwone vnto the horse necke so harde that he cut it a sundre, and wþt this strok: he felled the horse sterke dead, and by all thus was Charlemayne brought to þ grounde

S.ii.

And

The booke of the four

And whan Charlemayne saw hym selfe a groudē: he was sore an angred for it, and lept vpon his fecte ryght quyckely and tooke hys swerde in hys hande, and smote Richarde vpon his helme so harde that he made him reele withal, and than begā betwene Charlemayne and Richarde a sore sharpe medyng. And whan they had fought a great wylle together: charlemayne began to crye Mountjoye saynt Denys. And whan Richarde hearde this: he drewhim a syde, and tooke hys horne and sounded it right hys, so that his bretherē heard it wel and so did Hawgys. And than into synet they spured theyz horses, and came towardē Richarde for to succour hym. And than sayd Hawgys, I doubt me that Richarde is taken, but we shall dye al wyllyng, or els we shall haue hym agayne.

**O**ute dylgence made Reynawde for to succour Richarde. And whan he was come where he was: he cryed sodainly Mountawban and Alarde pauerement Guychardē Balacon & Richarde, Arden and Hawgys Went & ranne vpon a knyght that was called magon other wylle Sampson Lordē of Pierrefrit and coughe hym suche a stroke: that he felled hym dead to the grounde, & Reynawde smote vpon another knyght by suche a wylle that he shoued his swerde throughe and throughe his bodye, & Guychardē smote another with hys swerde so syerly that he cleued his head in two peeces, & Alarde smote the fourth knyght vpon his helme so great a stroke þ he caste hym dead tofore hys feete, & after he

ranne vpon another knyght ryghtly arayed and gaue eche other suche strokes that they bothe fell do wne from theyz horses to the erth, & than came there Reynawde þ dyd so muche that the sayde knyght was taken prysoner, whiche was called Hughe of Almayne & brought hym to mountawban. What shal I tel you more þ batayle began to be fell, & so cruel that it was great pitie for to se, so þ one spared not other, but slew eche other as thicke as beastes. And whā Reynawde saw al redy þ the humme was gone vnder & that the nighthe came fast on: he was in a doubt for his bretherē, & sayd good lordē through thy mercy and redempcion, keep me & my bretherē from death and from prison, for the nighthe þ is at hand maketh me to be aferie. And as he spake these wordes: came there king Charlemayne as fast as his horse myght walop agaynst Reynawde, and Reynawde against hym, because he knew hym not, & smote eche other so harde in theyz sheldes þ they made theyz spores to flee in peeces, and recoured together bothe with theyz bodyes & sheldes so mytifully that they ouerthrew eche other to the grounde, and than they rose quiclye bothe at ones & set hande to theyz swerde, & than Charlemayne began to crye Mountjoye Saynt Denys, and after sayd, if I be outraged by one knyght only: I ought not for to be a kynge to bere crowne. Whā Reynawde vnderitode Charlemayne speake: he knew hym well & withdrew he hiselv a side & sayd. Was howam I dyffered it is charlemayne to whom I haue

ue founked, I haue misprised to sore  
for to haue set hande vpon hym. ha  
good lord, it is wel. xvi. peres a go-  
ne that I speake not ones with hym,  
but I shal now speke to hi if I shoul-  
de dye for it, for by reason & ryght:  
I ought to lese the synt, wherfore I  
will make to hym a mendes presen-  
tly, and let him doo wyt me what he  
wyll, and whan he had sayd this: he  
went to Charlemayne and kneeled  
before hym and sayd to him. Sir for  
God I creye you mercy, gyue me cre-  
wes syll that I haue spoken Wyth  
you. With a good Wyll sayd Charle-  
mayne, but I wote not who ye be:  
how be it that ye haue fusted to me.  
I thanke you hūbly sayd Reynalwd  
of that it pleasech you to saye so by  
me. Syr wyt that I am Reynalwd  
the sonne of Aymon, and I creye you  
mercy. And for that perte that vtre  
lorde had vpon the croesse of hys mo-  
ther whan he recommended her to  
saynt John his disciple, I beseeche  
you that ye wyll haue perte vpon me  
and vpon my bretherne, ye knowe y  
I am your man, and ye haue disher-  
ted me of my landes and haue chased  
me out of Fraunce. It is a goe. xvi.  
peres, and by cause of thys are dead  
so many noble knyghtes and bar-  
aunt men and other in so great nu-  
bre that it can not be sayd. for God  
ye see wel what losse that cometh of  
y warre: for a lorde y hath no piti in  
hym hath a hert as hard as a stone.  
And therfore syr I beseeche you for  
god that ye haue merci on me and of  
my bretherne that ben such knyghtes  
as ye know. I speake not these wor-  
des for feare of death: ne for couetyse

of tichesse. for god grameri we haue  
goodes ynough, but I speake it for  
to haue yout loue onely. Syr suffre  
that we haue peace with you, and we  
shall become your men for euermore  
and we shall swere to you sayth and  
legeaunce, and also I shal gyue you  
Moucalban and my good horse bay-  
arde, which is the thing that I loue  
best in this worlde after my bretherne  
and Malwgis. for there is not in  
all the worlde luche another horse.  
And pe thys canoc satissi your mind  
I shal doo yet more, pleseth it to you  
for to pardon my bretherne, and I  
shall swere fraunce for euermore  
that I shal never be seen there. And  
I shal goe to the holy sepulcre in Je-  
rusalem bare foote for the remem-  
braunce of you, and I nor Malwgis  
shal never come agayne into fraunce  
but we shall warre syll on goddes  
enemys as ben turkes and Sarac-  
yns.



**T**han whā Charlemayn heare  
de Reynawde speake thus he  
answercyd hym and sayde. Reynawde  
ye speake for noug̃t, ye dyd an ouer  
great folys, whan ye tooke that hardi-  
nes upon for to speake w̃ me in my  
palays as ye dyd, and yet yee dyd  
worse whan ye slewo my newe w̃ ber-  
eholde that I loued so muche, & now  
ye speake of peace & ye criē me merci.  
I promyse you for certayne that ye  
shall haue no peace with me, but yf  
ye doo that I shal tel you. **S**yr said  
Reyna w̃de what shall thac be tel me  
I pray you? I shall shewē it to you  
w̃th a good wil sayd Charlemayne  
and if ye doo it, ye and your brethern  
shall accorde w̃th me, and I shall  
gyue you agayne your heritāge, and  
yet I shal gyue you enoug̃h of myne

owne. It is that ye gyue me **W**halo-  
gis in my handes for to doo my plea-  
sore with hym. For I hate him more  
than ony thyng in the Worlde. **S**yr  
sayd Reynawde, yf I shold deliuer  
hym to you, what wolde ye doo to hi  
Reyna w̃de sayd Charlemayne I p̃-  
myse you I shold make hym to be  
drawen shamefullly at fourre hōrses  
tayles through Parys, & after thac  
I shold take from the body of hym  
the lymmes one after another, and  
than I shold make hym to be breñs  
and his ashes to be cast at the w̃nde  
And whan he shall be arrayed as I  
tell you: let hym than doo his incā-  
tacions & his magyke as he w̃ll, &  
I pardon hym all that he can doo  
to me after þ. Than sayd Reynawde  
to the Kynge. **S**yr Wolde ye doo ic

In deed as ye say, pe said Charlemayne in good faych. Emperour sayd ReynaWde you not take to wnes ne castelles, golde nor syluer for the taunsom of Daugis: certes nay sayd Charlemayne. Syr sayd ReynaWde than shall we never be accorded to gither. For I tell you so; certeyn that ye had all my bretherne in your prisyon, and that ye were delibered so to make them to be hanged: yet should I not gyue you malwys for so haue them deluyered oute of your handes. Holde your peace than sayd Charlemayne and beware of me for other wyle get ye no peace wych mee. Syr sayd ReynaWde I am soray for it. for we be no men that ought to be castle from your scrupule, and siche that ye defye me: I shal defend me, and our lord shal me doo that grace yf it please hym that I shall not bereake of you. And whan Charlemaine heard this: he was sore angry and rante vpon ReynaWde. and whan ReynaWde sa. we hym come vpon hym he sayd rohi. Syr for god mercy suffice not that I sette hande vpon you, for if I should let my selfe for to be slayne by you: I were well a myschair. Wastayl sayd Charlemayne these wordes auailerth you not for ye muste needes de fende yourself. And thā Charlemayne smote hym with Joyuse his swerde vpon his helme, and the stroke slided downe vpon the shede of ReynaWde so that he kynted quytte and clene a great parte therof. Whā ReynaWde fel so greate a stroke that kyng Charlemayne had gyue hym: he was sore an angred for it. he vaunted hym selfe soorth

and caught the kyng with bothe his armes by the backe, & by the waste in maner of wrastlyng. So he Wolde not smyte hym with his swerde flāberge, and tooke & layd him vpon the necke of his horse batard, so to haue brought hym with hym to Mountawban without any other harme. And whan Charlemayne sawe that he was haddeled of this facion: he began to crye as lowde as he myghte. Mountioye saynt Denys, and than he sayd, ha sayre newe w Rowlaude, where be your Oliver of byenne and ye duke Maymes, and byshop Turpyn, shall ye suffice that I be thus taken and brought as a prisone: and if ye doo so, it shalbe a great shame to you al. ReynaWde began thā to crye Mountawban as hyghe as he coulde whan he heard Charlemayne speake so. And after he sayd, ha my bretherne and ye colyn Daugis come byther, and let vs goe, for I haue gyuen the kyng siche a cheche, that if we canne now bynge him with vs, we shall haue peace in Fraunce fro hens forth on. Than the noble peres of Fraunce as Rowland, Oliver, & the other cam to the succours of Charlemayne, and of that other parte came there for to helpe ReynaWde his bretherne and Daugis, & we four hundred knyghtes well armes. And whan þ valy, sunt knyghtes were assembled to gither of bothe partes: ye should than haue seen a meruylous batayle. For they slewe eche other as beastes and there were so many spres broken, and so manre sheldes clouet and hewed into peices, and so manre helmes

### The booke of the four

helmes vn buckled, and so manye a  
quiccas broken and perced, and som  
ny horses that dre we after theyz gut  
tes a longe in þe feildes, and so ma  
nye a man slayne that it was pyttie  
for to see. And whan Rowland was  
come to the meddle: he Wente vpon  
Reynawde and gaue him so great a  
stroke vpon his helme that he was  
all astonyed therwith, and after he  
sayd to him. Wasell ye haue doone e  
uyll þe crowed to haue brought a  
way the king in this maner of wise,  
ye wot well it is to heaup a bourden  
for to lede of this fation, ye shal leue  
him, and yet ye shall abyde full deere  
for it or ye escape me. And whā Rey  
nawde saw that he was thus repre  
ued, and felte the great stroke þe to  
lande had giuen to him vpon his hel  
met: he was wrothe, and tooke hys  
swerde in his hande, holding alway  
es Charlemaine afore hym vpon  
bayardes necke & came to Rowland  
and sayd to hym. Dam Rowlande  
come forthe so shall ye wyt how fla  
berge cutteh. And whan Rowlande  
vnderstode hym he came vpō hym, &  
Whan Reynawde sawe hym come: he  
let fal downe Charlemayne & ranne  
vpon Rowland. And there began a  
monge them two afters medlyng.  
This hangyng: came Alarde, Guy  
charde and the lytle Rycharde, and  
ranne vpon Rowlande at ones and  
gave hym so muche to doo that he  
miste put hymselfe to flyght Wolde  
he or no. And whan Reynawde saw  
that Charlemaine and Rowland had  
saued them selfe: he was ryght sorpe  
for it, and he sayd to his bretherne.  
þy bretherne ye haue wrought yli,

for þe had be stylly by me. Wee had  
doone a great fayt, for I had taken  
Charlemayne that wee shold haue  
brought wþt vs to Mountawban.  
þy sayde his brethern, we are sorþ  
for it that we dyd not id, but we had  
so muche to doo in another place þ  
it is well to vs þ we be scaped saue  
wþt our liues. But let vs see that  
wee doo well, and sowne our horne  
to the ende ye may gather agayne to  
gether your folke that be so spred  
abrode, for there is daunger þe cause  
of the nyght that cometh so faste on,  
and call agayne your baner for we  
haue wonne more than we haue lost  
and let vs go to Mountawban. Rey  
nawde that was sage dyd as his bre  
thern and Hawgis counselled him  
Whan Charlemayne sawe that Rei  
nawde had withdrawen hys baner: he  
was glad of it, for he saw well that  
his folke was at the wroste hande,  
so made he to sowne the retrete and  
passed Balancon, and did so muche  
that he came agayne to hys hoste.  
And whan he was lyghted downe a  
foote: he sayde to hys folke. By my  
soule it goeth not well with vs, for  
Reinawde hath put vs from þe feild  
þy sayd Rowland, speake no more  
of it for it is not longe on you, but þ  
wee had be almoske shamed, ye dyd  
great folyc whan ye iouisted to Rey  
nawde for þe had slayne you or  
take: the warre had be ended þe hath  
lasted so longe. ¶ Meue now heere  
to speake of Charlemayne & of Row  
lande his newew, & returne to speake  
of Reynawde and his brethern and  
of Hawgis theyz colin and of theyz  
folke.

¶ How

Howe after that Reynawde, hys  
brothern and Hawgys had discom-  
fited Charlemayne, after þ they had  
rescued Rycharde, that Rypus wolde  
haue hanged at Mounfawcon, wet  
agayne vpon hym, and pulled down  
his paullyon, and bare awaþ with  
them the Egle of golde that was ther  
vpon, wherof the kyng was full sor-  
ry for it, so that he wolde haue taken  
agayne hys crowne into the handes  
of his barons sayng that he wolde  
not be no more theþ kyng because  
that they had saylled hym, and had  
habandonned hym for the fourte son-  
nes of Aymon. And sayd to them, þ

they shold crowne Reynawde ther  
with, so shold he be their kyng. For  
they loued hym better than they dyd  
hym. And how Olyuer sayd to char-  
lemayne, that he shold take agayne  
his crowne and that he shold yeeld  
him Hawgys that he had taken as  
he robbed the pavillion. For he abode  
there alone. And how Charlemayn  
ooke agayne hys crowne, and was  
ryght glad of the prysse of Hawgys  
that he hated so muche.



**D**ee ther with the hilloȝ þ whā  
Reynawde the sonne of Aymon  
saw þ the kyng Charlemayne was  
gone agayn to his hoste: he made his  
baner to ride before hym, & railed his  
folke together. And whā he had moul-  
ted þ mountayn of moult a Wcon he

called his folke & sayde to ther. Mi-  
ſtredes put your self in ordenaunce &  
take on your way to Heſtawban &  
I, my brothern & Hawgys shal come  
behinde. For I scame leſt þ frenche  
men þ be so wroth þ we haue discou-  
ted them: so shall solo we soȝ to hurte  
þ

The booke of the four

vs yf they can, and yf they doo : Wee  
shall better suffre the Payne tha our  
folke. I wolde not for no good that  
Rowlande and Oliuer should moc-  
ke with vs, nor that they should fid  
vs in disarraye. By my soule sayde  
Iarde. Brother Reynawde ye spe-  
ke well and wiselye. And thau theyz  
folke put themselfe in ordenaunce,  
and they abode behinde til that their  
folke had passed Balacon. And wha  
the mooste part was passed; he tooke  
threethousande men of the best of his  
folke and sayde to the other, go pour  
wayes to Mountawban. For I wil  
goe & assayle the kyng Charlemayn  
in his paullion, what so euer it hap  
of it. And so shall I shewe his folke  
What I can doo, and that I am a  
man loz to seeke hym and not he me

**A**nd wha Reynawde had sayd  
this; he came to the Water of  
Balacon, and passed ouer with his  
threethousande men. And they rode  
so longe that they came to the hoste  
of Charlemayne, that was wrothe  
more than mesure requireth because  
that he had loste the feelde agaynst  
Reynawde. And whan Reynawde  
came the paullion of Charlemayne  
he sayd to his brothern, and to al his  
folke, I praye you þ ye gouerne you  
wysely. Soþ sayd Richard the hardy  
he that wyl be enhaunced in pryce:  
he ought not to looke so nrygh, but he  
must Ieoparde for to conquerre wor-  
shyp. And whan Richard had sayd  
so: he set hande to his swerde, & spur-  
red his horse with the spurres and  
wente streyght to the paullion of  
Charlemayne, & cut of the cordes &

made it fall downe to the erth with  
the Egle of golde massy that was of  
greate value. Whan Reynawde sawe  
this: he called Hawgis a laide to him  
colin come hyther, helpe me to bring  
a way this Payne, syþ sayd Hawgis  
with a good will, and they lighteo a  
foote & tooke the Egle of golde that  
was so riche þ no man wote what it  
was worth, & Reynawde sayd to his  
folke. My lordes smite now well &  
sayne not your selfe, he that begin-  
neth a game: he ought to see an ende  
of it to his prysyre þ he can. Who  
than had seene the folke of Charle-  
mayne acme them & com out of their  
tentes & ranne vpon the sonnes of  
Aymon he wolde haue meruayled,  
& it was pitie for to see the greate slau-  
ghter that was doone there. Whan  
Hawgis had put the egle of golde  
in sute handes: he wente agayne to þ  
paullion of Charlemayne & he foud  
the kyng & sayd to him. By my head  
þy Imperour, ye haue troubled vs  
soze a longe whyle, but ye shall bye it  
ful deere at this houre your comyng  
into Gascoyne & the death of my fa-  
ther the duke benes of Agremount.  
for I shal giue to you such a stroke þ  
ye shal never make warre to vs nor  
to none other. And wþ this: he barc  
þp his speare for to haue shoued it  
throughe the brest of charlemayn, but  
charlemayn abode not þ stroke, but he  
turned himselfe aside & the spere en-  
tered into the bed of the king wel two  
foote, & whan charlemayn saw this  
he was aferde, & he bega to cry mou-  
tayne saynt denis, & than he said. Ha-  
fayne newly Rowland wher are ye  
now: whan Hawgis heard call Row-  
lande

lande, he looked about him and saw not Reynawde nor his brether, for they had put themself to the way to retourn home agayne.

**O**uer longe taried Hawgys in the hoste of Charlemayne, for Reynawde was all redy passed ouer Valancon, and Rowland & Oliver were all redy come to the callinge of Charlemayne soze afraedy, & whan Hawgys sawe them: he made no len ger taryinge, but gaue the spurres to his horse & went after Reynawde as fast as his horse myght runne. And whan he wolde haue passed ba-  
lacon: he met wþch a great company of the folke of Charlemayne, and Hawgys smote one of them so hard in þþe clid, þþe ouerthrew both horse & man to the erth. And after that he smote the sonne of Hylen þþ Purli so that he cleued his sheelde a sonder & cast him do wne to the grounde w a wounde morta l, & than he cryed Mourawban & sayd. Ha fayre cosin Reynawde where be you, succour me for god, for if ye lose me: ye shal haue harme therat. And than Hawgys thought well that Reynawde was gone, this hangyng: came Oliver throughe the prese and came vpon Hawgys & smot him so harde þþ it abode not nother for sheelde nor for courset of steele, but he made hym a wounde in his breste, and cast hym do wne to the erth.

**W**han Hawgys felte hymselfe thus hurt and ouerthrowen: he was ryght wrothe for it. So rose he vp quickly vpon his feete & tooke hym swerde in his hande & did mer-

uayles of armes, and the nyght was veey darke that almoþe þþ one knew not the other. And whan Oliver saw Hawgys defende hymself so well: he sayde to him. I knoþe not thee knight whom thou art, but and thou peeleþ not thy selfe to me: I shall now smyce of thy head strom þþ shoulders. What is thy name sayd than Hawgys: for and thou be a good man I shall peele me to thee and els not, knight my name is Oliver of Uien. Whan Hawgys heard him named: he knew him well, and sayd to hym, Ha gentyll knight Oliver I yeelde me to you vpon your sayth & vnder such a condycion that ye shall not deliuer me to Charlemayn, for if ye deliuer me in his handes I am dead wþout remedy & he shall make me dye shamefully as a thecke. By my sayth sayd Oliver this wþll I not doo for I dare not hyde you from Charlemayne, but yeelde you and I promise you þþ I shal help you to my powre for to make your apoyntment wþch the king, sir sayd Hawgys, & I yeelde me to you vpon your trouþ and tooke his swerde to hym & Oliver tooke it, & after made hym to be lighted vþo a litle horse, & broughte hym to the pavillion of Charlemaine where they shoud not þþ kyng, bycause he was al afraedy as ye heard afore. And whan Oliver saw that he shoud not Charlemaine: he was soze afraedy þþ Hawgys shoud scape from hym through his incantacions & Wytche crafft, and sayd to him, Hawgys ye know how I haue taken you by armes and that ye are my prisoner, I wþll þþ ye gyue me your sayth trulþ that

### The booke of the four

that ye shal not go out of with in w  
out my leue. Soz sayde Ma wgis w  
a good Wyll, and thus he dyd s'were  
this Olyuet. And whan Oliver had  
taken the othe of Hawgys: he made  
him to be unarmed, and made hys  
woude to be wrapped: and gaue him  
a mantell vpon him and made hym  
tolpe vpon a bed. Now shal we leue  
a litle to speake of Charlemayne, of  
Olyuet and of Hawgys. And shal  
I shew of Reynawde and his brethern  
what they dyd. Whan the host of char  
lemayne was moued, and how they  
wanne the Egle of Golde that was  
of so great value, & how Reynawde  
sayd to his brethern, lordes let vs se  
now for to quyte vs wel, for it were  
not good for vs for to tary heere any  
lenger. And than he made to Witch,  
draw his folke, and made them put  
to the Wye. And as they wence: Riche  
hard sayd to Reynawde. Soz we  
haue gotten a ryche p'oy thanked be  
God. For Charlemayne shall be ma  
ny a longe day wrothe therfore. Cer  
tes sayd Reynawde saye brother ye  
saye trough and also we haue slayne  
a great many of hys folke. Ha God  
sayde than Warde, where is our co  
sin Hawgis: for I se him not heere  
Brother sayd Richard, be not aferde  
for Hawgys, for I belue that he is  
gone to Mountawban afore vs, god  
be with hym wheresoever he be sayd  
Reynawde. For he is right sage, and  
a noble knyght. I wolde not for all  
the Golde in the wold that my cosin  
Hawgis had any harme. [We shal  
leue a lyle to speake of Reynawde  
and hys brethern that are bounde to  
Mountawban glad of theyr p'oyc:

And shall now we speake of Char  
lemayne that was so soze wroche as  
I haue sayde.

Whan Charlemayne was fro  
his harneys: he fel in a swo  
une for the greate angre that he had  
of that he had be thus distressed. And  
whan he was come agayne to hym  
selfe: he sente for the duke Raynes  
the bishoppe Turpyn, Escoufe the  
sonne of Dedon for Salamo of bre  
tayne, Richard of Normandy, herle  
Guydellon and for Ogier the dane.  
And whan they were all gathered to  
gether: the kyng began to shewe to  
them his complayntes in thys ma  
ner. Lordes I haue kepte and mayn  
teyned you vnder mi custioun p' space  
of. xl. yeres and more that no man  
hath not wronged you of a penye, &  
ye haue no neyghbour that dare as  
ke you any thinge. Now me semeth  
because that I am now olde that I  
am but half a man & yet not so good  
as I wolde be, and I maye not be a  
kyng without you: for whan ye saile  
me I am no kyng, ye know well p  
ye haue left me for loue of Reynawde  
wherof I am ryght soray as I maye  
well, for Reynawde hath taken me  
Wher I was habandoned of you,  
& he hath chased me out of the feld,  
certes I am worse tha mad of thys  
p' ye haue forsake me for Reynawde.  
And syth that it is thus Wyth me: I  
scheke not to lyue anye lenger, nor to  
be kyng any more, and now I take  
to you the crowne to p' ende that ye  
shall gyuen vnto Reynawde whan  
ye Wyll, and that ye make him king  
of Fraunce. For I Wyll be no more  
your

your kyng.

**W**han the xii. peers of Fraunce,  
At the other lordes hearde Char-  
lemayn speake so sorowfullye:  
thei were sore abashed that ther was  
no man so hardye that durst saye one  
worde. And the one looked vpon the  
other and were abashed. And whan  
the duke Raymes of bauiere vnder-  
stood the wordes of Charlemain: he  
put him self forth and said. Sir Em-  
perour god forbyd that ye shold doo  
as ye saye, for it were great shame to  
vs all and also to you, but I wot wel  
that we haue myspysed ayenst you  
in that we haue supporced Reyna-  
de, but ye oughte to consydre that we  
haue doone, was by no malyce: but  
for good entencion. For we wend for  
to haue made the peace of the warre  
that hath endurde so longe, wherby  
many good true men are deade, but  
sith that we see, that it pleaseth not  
you to make peace with the four son-  
nes of Aymon: take again your crow-  
ne and be not wroth with vs, and we  
shal promyse you that we al shal ser-  
ue you well and truely, and that we  
shal take Hawgys or a moner  
be passed, or elles we shall die all, &  
from hence forth on he that shal spa-  
re the four sonnes of Aymon, shal be  
slaine of vs. Than saide the kinge  
Charlemayne, lete all this alone I  
tell you for certaine that I shall ne-  
uer be pour kyng, but ye peeld to me  
Reynarde or Hawgys the cursed  
theef that hath mocked me so ofteyn.  
And whan Charlemaine had saide  
this: he entred within his paullion so  
he an angred. And than came therre

Olyuer that was sore abashed of þ  
he sawe the kinge make so cutill chere,  
and after he saide to Charlemayne.  
Syz Wherol are ye so sore angry: by  
my faiche saide the duke Raymes he  
hath shamed vs, for he hath forsaken  
his crowne and his realme. Sir laid  
than Olyuer doo not so, but take a-  
yen your crowne and be our lord and  
our kyng. And who dooth not youte  
commaundement: chalyse him in  
such a maner that me take ensample  
therby. Olyuer saide Charlemayne,  
ye speake for noughe, so; I wyl not  
doo it, but I haue Reynarde or Haw-  
gys dead or quicke, syz saide Olyuer  
now pardon vs than, & I shal deli-  
uer to you Hawgys or eyn.

**D**imp Olyuer sayd Charlemain  
I am not a chylde, Wherol  
men oughte to mocke with. For I wot  
well that Hawgys doubteth you of  
nochtynge. Syz said Olyuer, yf ye will  
promise me that ye shall take again  
your crowne, and that ye shall keep  
vs as ye haue doone afore tyme: I  
shall bryng him nowe afore you, by  
my faiche sayde Charlemayne yf ye  
doo it, and that I maye haue hym at  
my will( for I haue hym most of all  
men in the worlde) I shal doo al that  
ye will desire of me, and also I shal  
give you londes ynough that ye shal  
be concert of me, for if Hawgys were  
not the sonnes of Aymon myghte not  
endure ayenst me, for yf I had them  
in prison, and though I had sworen  
to keep them, yet shoulde that theefe  
Hawgys stelle them awaie fro me.  
Syz said Olyuer I shal bryng him  
to you w/out any doubere. And than

T. i. Olyuer

the booke of the four

Olyuer went to his paupyon and Rowiand with him, and many other knyghtes for to see Hawgis. Olyuer sayde then to Hawgis, Hawgis ye must come to Charlemayne. Olyuer saide Hawgis, ye haue betrayed me, but I wot well that Charlemayne shall be more currouous than ye haue be, for he shall do me no harme, and let vs goe to him in the name of god whan ye wyl. And when Olyuer ledde Hawgis to Charlemayne, and whan he was within the paullion: he went straigthe to the king and saide to him. Sir, ye haue promised me that if I brought Hawgis: hat ye shold take againe yowre crowne. And that ye shold keep vs to right as ye haue doone aforre time. Lettes saide Charlemain it is trouthe, and if ye keep your couenaunt: I shall doo that I haue promysed you. Now holde you sit saide Olyuer before Hawgis, that I deluyer to you for to doo your pleasure with him the whiche I haue take and conquered by force of armes. whan the kyng Charlemayne sawe Hawgis: he was so gladded that no man myghte be more, and after he saide, by my sayth nowe haue I one partie of my desyre, thou fule cheef Hawgis now I holde thee, nowe shalt thou be rewarde of thy pride that thou hast shewed to me whan thou barest a waye myne egle of golde, and for all the good turnes and thefes that thou hast doone in thy daies. For many tyme shou hast angred me soore, wherof thou shalte be nowe payed after thy deseruyng. Sir saide then Hawgis ye shal doo with me what it please you, for I am

now in yowr handes, but I counsayll you for the best that ye let me goe and that ye make peace with Reynawde, and with his bretcherne, for ye shall get no chinge by my deathe, and my cosins been such that they shal auage it right wel by force of armes, and if ye doo as I saie: ye shal haue with you the floure of knyghthode of all the wrold. I cheef said Charlemain how searful thou arte now. Lettes this that thou sayest shal auayle the nochryng. Sir saide Hawgis I am no cheefe. Now can I not doo no thing siche that I am in yowr handes. And whan ye shal haue put me to deach: ye shal doo me no more nothinng, and yet ye shal be soray for me of euer. xiii. houres comen at an ende. Rybawd saide Charlemaine, speake not so boldly, for I can: thou shalte haue an evill night or euer thou scape me, nor the glutons thy cosyns shal not helps the cherfro, but that I shal make the die in dispice of al thy wroth craft that thou cannest doo. Now we shal leue a litel to speake of Charlemain and of Hawgis: and we shal speake of the good knyght Reynawde Alard, of Guichard, and of the lityle Richard his bretcherne.

**W**han Reynawd was departed from the hoste of Charlemayne as I sayde before: he rode so longe that he came to Bounaroban and his folke with hym. And whan that lady wist that her lord came: she came him ayenst, and said to hym. Sir ye bee righte Welcome, haue ye deliuered Bycharde? yea, veres

verely sayd Reynawde god gramer,  
cy, and blessed be god sayd the lady.  
heated that he were coulde) not haue  
kept him from weeping.

And than sh: went to Rycharde and  
kylled hym more than ten tymes, &  
there was a cheete and a feast made  
ryght awable. And after they had  
made greate Joye: Reynawde began  
to demaunde after hys cosyn, and the  
lady answered, my lord: I knowe  
no tynges of hym, and whan Reyna-  
wde heard that he was sore agast  
of it, and turned hymselfe to Warde  
hys bretherne and sayde to theym.  
My bretherne I praye you that we  
may know whether our cosyn ma-  
gis is come or not, and goe seeke hym  
in his lodges, for haply he is goe for  
to vnarme him selfe. And inconty-  
nent Guicharde and Richard soughe  
hym at thys lodges and asked for  
hym to two of his men, the whiche  
sayde that they had not seen hym sith  
he was gone with them. And whan  
they hearde that they were full sor-  
and went agayne to theyr brother  
Reynawde and tolde him howe they  
coulde not fynde hym. Whan Rey-  
nawde vnderstoode that they hadde  
not fynde hym, he beganne to make  
more sorowe than of all his brethern  
had be deade, and than who had seen  
the greate mone that Alarde, Guy-  
charde and the lytell Richearde made  
for theyr cosyn: he wolde haue had  
greate pitie for to see theym, for they  
pulled theyr hertes from theyr heades  
and scratched theyr visages, whan  
the good lady sawe the greate sorowe  
that Reynawde her husbande and his  
bretherne made, she fell downe in a  
swoone to the erth. I promise you he  
that had seen that sorowe (how heard

**H**er that Reynawde hadde  
thus made greate sorowe: he  
restrained hymselfe a lytell and chan-  
sayd, ha my cosyn Dawgis wel ye  
haue stolen your selfe from vs, and  
what shal we doo fro hence forth sith  
that we haue lost you? Whan they had  
made theyr mone in this maner a lo-  
ge while: Reynawde said to his bre-  
therne and to his folke. My Lordes  
I pray you that ye leue your sorowe,  
for by no sorowe the marter can not  
be remedied, I praye you recomforde  
yourselue, for I wyl put me agayne  
to the waye for to goe to the Woods  
of the serpent for to speake with the  
abbot of saynt Lazare to wyt yf he  
canne tell vs anye tydinges, for my  
hearte iudgeth me that aforc. xiiiij.  
houres I shall knowe the certenite,  
and fare well my bretherne tyl I co-  
me againe, ye speake well and wisely  
saide Alarde, but we shall goe with  
you for to keep you. Lettes said Rey-  
nawde, ye shal not come a foote with  
me: And thā Reynawde went in to his  
chambre, and made him to be armed,  
and came and lighed bypon bayarde  
his good horse, & yssued out of mou-  
tawban, the sheelde at the necke, and  
the spere in the hand and cams to ba-  
lancon, and passed ouer the water, &  
whan he was ouer the water he foud  
two laddes that came to water their  
horses from the host of Charlemain.  
Whan the laddes sawe Reynawde  
that was so greate, and was all  
alone: they sayde to hym. Sy! Whae  
be you that are alone, ye seeme to be a

The booke of the four

noble man. Children saide Reynawde  
I am of Bypus folke that dyd scape  
whan the sonnes of Aymon hanged  
hem at mountfawcon. And than he  
sayde agayne to theym. What dooth  
the valyaunt kynge Charlemayne?  
so it is suppet tyme wisch hym. Sayd  
said the laddes the kynge is well me  
rye and maketh good cheare, & he hath  
forgotten all the sorowe that he dyd  
make to your mayster Bypus. For  
men haue brought to him Mawgys  
that he hated so muche. Now tell me  
saide Reynawde is Mawgys deader?  
Sayd saide the two laddes he is yet a  
lue. Whan Reynawde understande  
that Mawgys was a lyue: hys here  
lepre all in his bely for greace Joye,  
and than he saide, my laye chyldren  
blessed more you be lych that Mawgys  
is not dead. Now I scare me not  
that he shall dye this daye. All thus  
as Reynawde speake this: the laddes  
went their wayes, and Reynawde  
abode alone chynkyng at the ryuer  
syde, and wha he had thoughte ynow  
ghe: he saide to himselfe sayre God  
what shall I doo? I wote not nowe  
what shall Ichynke or saye, for yf I  
goe assayle Charlemayne at his sup  
per: the night is derke, and he shall  
wen that I haue great folke wisch me  
and he shalbe akerde to lese Mawgys  
and thus he myght kill him anon.  
But siche that I knowe so muche of  
him: I shal tary till to morowe, and  
yf he bringeth him than for to be put  
to death: I shal defende him with mi  
power, or else I shal dye wisch him.  
¶ Here leueth the histori to speakes of  
Reynawde that is at the riuers syde  
of balancon al alone vpon Bayarde:

and returnd to soake of Charle  
mayne the emproure kynge and of  
Fraunce.

¶ How the king Charlemayn wolde  
haue doone hange Mawgys incon  
tinenc akerd that Oliver had deluyerd  
him to him, but chorugh the meane of  
of the xii. peers of Fraunce that as hys  
request of Mawgys were his lutes  
for one night only he dyd so muche  
that he escaped with his honour and  
acquiaunce of them that were hys  
lutes. And he brought wisch hym  
to mountabian the towne and the  
swerde of the Charlemayne þ same  
night, and also the swerdes of all the  
peeres of Fraunce. wherof the Em  
perour was right sorþ, and how the  
kinge Charlemayne sente woorde to  
Reynawde that he shold sende hym  
agayne his crowne and his swerde  
and all that Mawgys had borne a  
waye wisch him, and he shold gne  
him cruce for two peres, to the whi  
che thing Reynawde graunted wher  
so happed many greace euyl leg at  
terwarde.



**T**his party sheweth the histo-  
rye that whan Charlemayne  
saw him sealed of Hawgys: he cal-  
led Bowland, Olyuer, Ogier the da-  
ne, the bishop Turpyn, Richarde of  
Normandy, Guidellon of Bauter &  
the Duke Naymes and said to them,  
My lordes I pray you as muche as  
I can that ye doo make a greate ga-  
lous, for I am delybered that afore  
supper Hawgys the great cheef shal  
be hanged by the nekke, for yf all the  
worlde had sworne the contrary: yet  
shall I not keep him to the day were  
come. **S**yr saide the duke Naymes  
sych that it please you that Hawgys  
shall dye: ye shall make hym dye by  
a nother maner of wylle, if ye doo af-  
ter me. And how than sayde Charle-  
mayne: **S**yr I counsayll you that

ye hange not Hawgys by nyght: for  
Reinaude and his bretherne shold  
mocke you, and they shal saye that  
ye durst not make hym dye by daye  
lyght so; feare of theym, and therfore  
**S**yr abide till the daye become, and tha  
maye ye doo execucion vpon hym  
with worshyp. And whan the tyme  
shall become: that ye wylle sende him  
so; thysend many folke with hym, thas  
and Reinaude and his bretherne co-  
me there for to succure him: that thes  
may be take, and hanged with hym,  
Naymes sayde the kinge, ye mocke  
with me, for yf this cheef scape me:  
I am defamed. **S**yr sayde Hawgys,  
if ye be a feard that I shold goe awat  
I shal give you surasye that I shal  
not goe. Who is that saide Charle-  
mayne that shal be thy surasye: is there  
**T. iii.** anye

The booke of the four

nye man in the world that is so har-  
die that dare take this? Sir, saide  
MaWgis I shal finde þnough þf it  
please you. Now we shall see saide  
Charlemain how þe shal finde them,  
and thā MaWgis looked about him,  
& saw the two þue peetes: so called he  
Diyuer and said to hym. Sir, Diy-  
uer þe þromyseid me whan I peelded  
mē to you that þe wolde helpe me to  
ward Charlemayne. Now I require  
þou that þe Wyll be my suretye þf it  
please you, Wþth a good Wyll sayde  
Oliver upon my life and my goodes  
I shalbe your surety, and þe sir Bow-  
land, saide MaWgis shal þe not be  
also for god my surety: and þe duke  
Naymes, and þe Ogier, and þe Es-  
couf, and þe byshop Turpyn, and þe  
damp Richarde of Normandye, and  
þe Guydellon of Bauyere, I praye  
þou all that þe Will be my surety for  
the loue of the good knight Beinawd  
MaWgis said than the duke Nay-  
mes, Will þe þromyse to vs vpþ your  
faiche that þe shal not goe from vs  
Without our leaue, þe said MaWgis  
upon my faiche. And than came the  
duke Naymes, with the other peetes  
of staunce before the kyng Charle-  
mayne, and said to hym. Sir we wil  
be sure for þe MaWgis upon our ly-  
ues & upon our landes that we holde  
of you that he shal not goe a waye  
Without your leaue, & also of al your  
company, and we shall deliuer hym  
agayne to you to morow in the mor-  
nyng for to doo with hym what þe  
Wyll. My lordes saide the kyng siche  
that þe Wyll be his suretie: I remyse  
him in to your keepyng, by suche a

condicþ, but that I haue him to mor-  
row in the morning erly: þe shal leese  
all your londes. And þe shal ne-  
uer maye retorne in to douce fraunce  
again. Sir said Oliver we graunte  
it as þe haue sayd. Lordes sayde the  
duke Naymes siche that this is doon:  
leste vs goe recomforþe MaWgis,  
for he is well sorþ. Lordes sayd than  
MaWgis to them againe. Siche that  
þe haue doon me one good turne: doo  
me a noþer. I pray you get me some  
meate, for I am yþ a hungred. Whan  
Charlemayne understoode MaWgis  
speake: he looked upon hym, and said  
all laughinge. And shalce thou eate  
sayde Charlemaine: yea, said MaW-  
gis if I can haue any meate. Now we  
heare said Charlemaine, What is  
of this deuile heere þ asketh for meate  
and soþcell a terme he hath to lyue.  
For if I were in his pylghe: I shoulde  
not nowe haue couraþ for to eate.  
Sir sayd the duke Naymes þe says  
yli, for who hath eaten well: he is the  
better at his eate wherof I pray þou  
that þe let him haue some meat. And  
thenne the kyng wasshed his handes  
for to goe to supper and said, whereto  
shall MaWgis be for to eate: Sir said  
Bowlande, he shal well be by you.  
Neue we said the kyng þe saie ryghie  
Well, for heere shal we be sure of him  
and I hadde thoughte for to doo so.  
For I shoulde not dare trust hym to  
none other man. And than the kyng  
was sette at the table, and he made  
MaWgis to syl nexte hym, and ser-  
ued hym at the table, for as longe as  
the supper lasted: he durste not eate  
nor drynke, least that MaWgis shoulde

Shoulde werke Wyeche crachte vpon  
 him, but Hawgis eate ryghte Wel, full fayne, if please you to suffice me.  
 for he had a good appetit to his meat.  
 And whan Olyuer sawe that he be-  
 ganne to lawghe and she wed Bow-  
 land and after saide to hym. Haue  
 ye seen how the king durste not eate  
 all this supper, for feare that Haw-  
 gys shoulde werke wytchedraft vpon  
 hym. Surely sayde Bowlande, it is  
 true. After supper Charlemayne cal-  
 led his stuard, and sayde to hym,  
 Stuard I praye you bryng me xl.  
 torches, and that they brenne all the  
 nyghte. So sayde the stuard, I  
 shal doo your commaundement. And  
 whan Charlemayne hadde ordeyned  
 this: he retourned him toward Bow-  
 lande and sayd to him. Fayre newew  
 I pray you that ye and Olyuer and  
 al the twelue peeres of Fraunce that  
 ye Wyll watche to nyghte with me,  
 for to keep this cheef Hawgys, and  
 make an hundred men to be armed,  
 that shall watch with vs and make  
 the play at the tables and at the chel-  
 ses, to thende that none of vs falle a  
 sleepe, and also make a thousand kni-  
 ghtes to make good watch wþout  
 to the ende that yf Hawgys shoulde  
 escappe vs: then shoulde take him aga-  
 inne. And whan Charlemayne hadde  
 ordeyned this: he set him downe vpon  
 his bedde, and he made Hawgys  
 to sit downe by hym. And of that o-  
 ther parte Bowlande, Olyuer, Ogi-  
 er the Bane, and all the twelue pee-  
 res rounde aboue the bedde. So  
 sayde then Hawgys, wher shal I  
 sleep. What say ye said Charlemain

Wyll ye sleepe: yea, sayde Hawgys  
 full fayne, if please you to suffice me.  
 By my soule sayde Charlemayne  
 ye shal haue euyll teste heere, for ye  
 shal not sleep as longe as ye be a ly-  
 ue. For ye shal be hanged to morow,  
 at the spryngyng of the daye. So  
 sayde Hawgys, ye doo me greate  
 wþunge. wherfore haue I giuen you  
 suffrie, but only that I may haue my  
 easse for so longe as I haue for to ly-  
 ue. Other suffice me to take my teste  
 and that I may sleepe: or elles holde  
 quite my suffrees, certes false cheese  
 saide Charlemayne, all this shal not  
 auayi thee. For I wyll that thy suff-  
 ries goe quite, and discharged. But  
 therfore ye be not out of my handes.  
 And than he made to be broughte a  
 greate payre of yrons, and fited  
 him with them bothe his feete tog-  
 ether. And made the cheyn to be fast-  
 ned harde at a piller, and with all he  
 gaue him a greate coier of yron a-  
 bout his nekke, wherof the kyng  
 kepte the key himselfe. And whan  
 Hawgys was arrayed of this facio:  
 Charlemayne saide to him. By my  
 soule Hawgys ye shal not escape  
 me now. Sit said Hawgys, ye mock  
 well vith me. But I tell you nowe  
 before the xii. peers of Fraunce that  
 I shal see Mounte Awan or it be to  
 morowe prime.

**W**han Charlemayne understande  
 vnde this that Hawgys saide  
 to him: he crowed to haue  
 woxed madde all quicke. So he  
 stode

The booke of the fourre

Stood vp and set hande to hys swerd, his head a wrye, and he tooke then a  
and came vnto Hawgys all wrothe belowe righted vp his heade with  
for to haue smitten of his heade. But all. And then he vngirded him and  
whan Rowland sa we that he auau-  
led hym and sayde to the knyght. Syr  
for God mercy, for yf ye sle me him:  
we been all shamed for euermore, syr  
ye ought not to take heed to that he  
sayth to you. For that, that he sayth  
he saith is like a man that is in des-  
peyre. And howe mighte that be that  
he shoulde escape you as ye hold hym  
now? Verely my newewe I wote not  
how, but yf he heire afoore tymme hache  
so often mocked me, maketh me to  
doubte of hym, but at all auenture I  
shall leue hym in peace cyll to mo-  
tow that he shall be hanged. Syr  
sayd Rowlande, ye saye well. Than  
all they that were there beganne to  
playe at the tables and at the chesse,  
and many other games. And whan  
it came that they had played longe:  
they began all to haue greate luste to  
slepe. And whan Hawgys saw that:  
he made his charme. And whan he  
hadde made it: they beganne all to  
fall in a stonge slepe, and Charle-  
maine hymselfe slepte so harde, that  
he fell backe warde vpon hys bed.  
And whan Hawgys sawe that  
Charlemaine was so fast a slepe: &  
all the twelue peers of Fraunce and  
all the company of them: he beganne  
to make a nocht charme, that was  
of suche vertue that his feires that  
were on his feete, & the coler and the  
cheyne of yren fell all to the grounde  
a sundre. And thenne Hawgys rose  
vpon his feete, and saw Charlemai-  
ne that slept so wel grouelynge with  
all. And then he vngirded him and  
took Joyous his swerde, and gir-  
ded about him, and then after he wetc  
to Rowland and tooke from him du-  
randal his good swerde, and after he  
tooke Haunceleste from Oliver and  
Loytyn from Ogier. And after thys:  
he went to his coffres, and tooke there  
out all the treasour of Charlemaine  
and Went with all this streyght to  
Mountrawban. And whan Hawgys  
had taken all this: he tooke an herbe  
and tubbed Charlemaines nose and  
his lippes with it, and vntoold hym  
and after he shoured him wryth the  
fynger, and sayde to hym, awake sit  
emperour, I promysed you yester ni-  
ght that I shold not goe wryth out I  
shold take my leue of you, farewells  
I goe now. And whan he had sayd  
this: he Went out of the pavillion, and  
set him to the way to Warde Moun-  
trawban. And whan Charlemaine  
vnderstoode that Hawgys had said  
to him: he rose vpon hys feete so  
wrothe that menne could be no more,  
and called vpo. i hys twelue peers  
that he coulde not awake. And whan  
he saw: that: he bethought hymselfe  
an herbe that he had broughte wryth  
hym from beyonde the greate sea,  
and tooke it and tubbed withall the  
nose the mouth and the eien of Row-  
lande, and in like wise to all the o-  
ther. xii. peers of Fraunce, and in co-  
tinent they were awaked, and rose  
vpon their feete soze abashed. & whan  
they were all awaked: they beganne  
to looke the one vpon the other. And  
the

the first that began to speke: was the duke Haymes that sayde to the king Where is maugies? By my soule said Charlemayne, ye shall deluyer him me agayne, for ye haue let hym goe wittfully, for ys ye wolde haue suffred me to haue hanged hym yester day: I had be otherwyse ryd of hym. Roialme said Oliver, sawe ye hym goe her? Nape by saynt Denys said Roialme. Isaw hym wel goe saide Charlemaine. Syz said Roialme ye ought chenne to haue tolde vs of it, for he shoulde not haue escaped so. And in saying this: Roialme loketh at his side, and he sawe not durandal his swerde, wherof he did cast a great sighe. And than Charlemayne sayde to him. Neued where is your swerde? by my head I know well that y cheef Maugis hath be wytched vs. For none of vs hath his swerde, and also he hath my hosen with him. Nowe hath he well mocked vs.

**H**ad whan the. xii. peers of Fraunce saw that they had lost al their good swerdes: they were right sorry for it more than any man canne saye. And after Roialme sayde, by my saythe Maugis hath wohn a great gayne, whan he berech a way thus our swerdes, for they ben more worth the thā is all Paris. And whan Charlemayne perceyued that his corsers were open: he went anon & looked in, & he was sore an angred whā he founde nor his Crotone, nor the best parre of hys treasons, wherof he made great sorow, and after sayd, Ha false cheefe Maugis full litle I haue gotten of thee & of thy takynge.

And who than had seen the sorowe that the. xii. peers of Fraunce made: wolde haue had no luste to lawghe. Nowe shall we tell you a ytell of Maugis that went as fast as euer he coulde to warde Mountawban and he came to passe ouer the water of Baiacou at that place where Reinaude was full heauy, and full of sorowe, by cause he knew no rydinges of Maugis, but whan Maugis had passed ouer the water: bayarde smailed hym and begane to crye and came toward Maugis, wolde Reinaude or no. And whan Maugis sawe Reinaude: he knewe hym well, and saide to him larghinge. Knighc what be ye that ridest at this time of nighc: and Reinaude said to him ye know wel I am your cosin Reynaude the sonne of Aimon, & than he lighted from bayard, and came to Maugis and kysled him by greate loue many times, and than sayde to hym. Fayre cosin thanked be our lord that I see you deluyered from the handes of Charlemaine. By my saythe saide Maugis, ye forgate me well behinde. Losyn saide Reynaude, by my soule I coulde not doe thereto. For I haue be heere syth yester day cwyn. And I promyse you that I was deliuered for to haue succoured you or elles to haue dyed with you. My cosin sayde Maugis I thanke you, light upon your horse, and leice vs goe to Mountawban. Whan Reynaude was upon his horse againe: he sayd to Maugis. My cosyn what is that ye haue laden. Losyn sayd Maugis it is the crowne of Charlemayne & his swerde Ioyous, durandal the swerde of

The booke of the four

of Rowlonde, and the swerdes of al  
the xii. peetes of Fraunce. Losyn said  
Reinalwde ye haue wroughte well  
god gramecye, but of the swerde of  
Ogyer me displeasch. Losyn sayde  
Hawgis I haue doon it all wilsully  
to the end that the king shold mar-  
ke therby noue euil, and that he were  
not apeched of treason. And than he  
shewyd him al the cause and the ma-  
ner that Charlemayne had holde him.  
Losyn saide Reynalwde ye did ryghte  
well. And whan he had sayde thys:  
they went on their waye to Warde  
Mountawban, and they mette in  
their waye Alarde, Guicharde and  
the lytil Richard that came ridinge  
makinge greace mone for doublet of  
Reinalwde. And whan Reinalwde  
saw them come he saide to them,  
Whechec goe you my fayre brethern:  
Sic saide they we went seekinge af-  
ter you, ye haue founde me said Rei-  
nalwde, and I haue founde our colin  
Hawgis. And whan they understood  
this rydinges: they were ryghte  
gladde and thanked our lord of it.  
And after Alarde saide to Hawgis  
Faire colin where became ye that ye  
came not with vs again. Alard said  
Hawgis, whan Richard was en-  
terred within the pauillion of Charle-  
main, and had take the egle of golde:  
I caised in the pauillion for to slea  
Charlemayne, and it lacked but litill  
that I slewe him, and whan I crow-  
ed to haue comen after you. I founde  
a greate rowte of knyghtes, that a-  
rested me, and so I defended me of  
all my power. And than came Oliver  
of Upene that ouerthrew me downe,  
and I yeelded me to him for his

prisoner, the whiche deliuered me  
to Charlemayne that wolde haue  
made me to be hanged shamefullye  
but lord I thanke you, I haue doon  
so muche that I am escaped. Losyn  
said Alarde, it is well happed to you,  
whan thei had deuised longe ynough:  
they went to Mountawban, whan they  
were come there: it is not to be aske  
if the good lady clare was wel glad,  
For incontinente she did to be made  
ready diuers meates for the dinet, &  
Whan they hadde eaten: they went to  
rest, for they were wery and specially  
Reynalwde and Hawgis, wold faine  
haue slept. And the nexte daie they  
went to heare their Mass at the chur-  
che of Mountawban, and whan the  
mass was doone: Reinalwde called  
Hawgis his colin and his brether-  
ne, and saide to them. Lordes shewe  
meche bothie that ye gate yesterdaie.  
Sic saide Richards gladlie sith that  
it please you. And than he tooke the  
egle that was of golde mali, and of  
precious stones and gaue it to Rei-  
nalwde. And whan Reinalwde saw  
that gifte so riche: he was gladd of it  
by cause of the great valure of it. Rei-  
nalwde called Hawgis a saine to him  
Losyn what shall we doo with this  
egle? My colin saide Hawgis me se-  
meth that ye ought to put hym aboue  
upon the apple of the greate towre of  
this castell to the ende that Charle-  
mayne and all his hoste maye see it.  
By my soule said Reinalwde, saine  
wel. And they tooke the egle and ma-  
de it to be borne vpon the highe tow-  
re of Mountawban. And whan the  
sonne dyd shyne vpon chys Egle: it  
ca.

callid so greate a light: that it might  
be seen x myles thence. And whan  
Charlemaigne and his folke apper-  
ued it: they wate ryght sorwe for it  
and an angred.

**H**an Charlemayne the greate  
Emperoure saw that the soun-  
sonnes of Aymon mocked him  
thus: he called to him BoWland and  
Olyuer, and all the other Peeres of  
Fraunce and sayde to them. Lordes  
it is so: e mi thapped to vs such we ca-  
me in this londe of Gascoign, for I  
haue lost my crowne and Jopous my  
swoerde & myn egle of golde that was  
of so great value as ye all know, and  
ye al haue loste yowre good swoerdes,  
where of we be wel shamed, & also we  
haue ben chased fro the feild shame-  
fully. Now haue wel the sounsonnes  
of Aymon shamed vs al through chace  
faulce cheet MaWgis. Wherfore my  
faire lordes I complain me unto you  
prayinge that you wil helpe me to a-  
venge me vpon them, for they haue  
doone you shame as wel as unto me.  
Than said che. xii. peeres of Fraunce,  
sy; we be ready for to doo all that ye  
wyll. I wyll saide the kinge that ye  
Ogier, also the duke Naymes and  
ye bishop Turpyn, and ye Escoufe,  
the sonne of Dedon, that are of the  
kinred of Reynawde: bat ye goe to  
Moundawban, and so tel to Reynaw-  
de, to his brethern and MaWgis that  
they deliuer me againe my crowne.  
Jopous my swoerde, and also myne E-  
gle of gold, and the swoerdes of you al  
and I shall give them truce for two  
yeres. And I shall doo al mine hoste  
to returne againe in to Fraunce, sy;

answered Ogier. I shal with a good  
wyll doo your commaundement, but  
I feare me of Reynawde that he will  
keep vs prisoners. Ha Ogier, sayde  
Charlemayne: ye feare him but liell.  
Whan the barons heard the coman-  
dement of the king: they made no ca-  
rying but lighted on horsbacke, and  
rode to Moundawban. And whā thei  
were come together to the drawyng-  
ge: the porter that keept warde vpon  
the gate, said to them lordes what be  
ye: my frond said Ogier, we are of  
the folke of Charlemaigne, goe yowre  
waye to Reynawde, and tell him that  
the Duke Naymes the bishop Tur-  
pin, Escoufe the sonne of Dedon, and  
Ogier the Dane wolde speake with  
him. My lordes said þ porter, I shal  
goe to him incōrrent, & than he wene  
to Reynawde and shewd him howe  
soure knyghtes were at the gate that  
wolde speake with him, what be they  
said Reynawde? My lordes said the  
porter they tolde me that the one is  
called the duke Naymes, the other  
the bishop Turpyn, and a no: her Escoufe  
the sone of Dedon, & the f. urth  
is named Ogier the dane. Whan  
Reynawde heard this: he stood vp and  
said to his three brethern. My lordes  
heere cometh soure valyaunt knyghtes  
and wise. I beseeche you that we  
shew to them that we been no chil-  
dren for to be roched in a slepe. Closin  
sayde MaWgis ye speake well and  
wisely. We semelich it were good that  
we shold know, wherfore they co-  
me, or they entre to the ende that we  
may best answere to them. Than  
they wente unto the gate, and made  
the drawyngge to be lette downe.

And

The booke of the four

And whan it was doone: Rycharde  
yslued our self vpon the brydge, and  
went ayenst them and made to them  
greate honur and sayd to them. My  
lordes ye be ryght welcome, thys ca-  
stel is at your commaundement. For  
I holde me so sure of my brother Rei-  
nawde that I darc offre it to you, co-  
syn sald the messenger's gramercye.  
And than Reinaude auaunced him  
selfe, and saluted them honourably,  
and after cooke Ogier by the hande,  
& he him, & thochter thre he broughte  
to the Dungeon, where they were re-  
ceiued honestly by the lady Clare the  
Wife of Reinaude. And whan Reinaude  
had receyued them: he made  
them to sit vpon a bencbe, and than  
he saide to them, fayre lordes I praye  
you that ye Wyll tell vs wherfore ye  
be come: For ye come not without a  
greate cause, ye kno we Wel sy; Rey-  
naude said Ogier, that all we thac  
been heere haue euer loued you well.  
And I promise you yf it had been our  
will, ye should haue had good peace  
With the kinge Charlemayne, but  
many tymes he hathe vnbrayed vs  
therof, ye must kno we that your co-  
syn Hawgys hach shamed vs al, for  
we were his suster to Charlemayne  
Upon our othe to deliuer hym at hys  
will. And he said Hawgys is come  
lycher without our leauue ayenst hys  
promise, and that worse is: he hath  
robbed the crowne of the kinge Char-  
lemayne and his swerde, and all the  
swerde of vs all. xii. peers. wher-  
fore Charlemain sendeth to you woe-  
de by vs that ye see heete, that ye deli-  
uer him again his crowne, the egle of  
golde, and all our swerde. And he

shall gyue you truce for two yeres,  
and he shall doo returne al his armes  
in to staunce. After that Ogier had  
said this: Hawgys stood vp and spa-  
ke by the leue of Reynawde, & said,  
Lordes ye ben right welcome in this  
castell of Mounteban. And yf it  
please you, ye shall not speake no mo-  
re of this matter now, and ye shall a-  
byde this night with vs, and to mor-  
row ye shal haue an answere of that  
ye haue sayde. Reynawde saide than  
Ogier, Wyll ye keep that Hawgys  
hath said: yea without fault said Rei-  
nawde, sith that it pleasest you: we  
shall abyde for the loue of you. And  
than Hawgys went to the shuarde  
of Mounteban, and aduised him  
the meaces. Wherol the knyghes of  
Charlemaine shold be feasted with  
all, and tolde that they shold be wel  
serued, what so euer it coste. And see  
that the greate cup be borne alaxe the  
duke Raymes, the whiche I did con-  
quere at reyns. My lordes answere  
the shuarde, doubt not, ye shall well  
be serued at my power. And thenne  
Hawgys came agayne. And whan  
Reynawde sawe him come: he called  
hym and saide to him, my cosyn I  
praye you see that we be well serued,  
sir saide Hawgys, I haue putneyed  
for it al ready. wha Reinaude vnder-  
stood him: he was gladd of it, and  
begā to deuise with þ folke of Char-  
lemaine right honestly and of many  
thinges. And whan he thought that  
the meate myght be well ready: he &  
his bretherne cooke the fourte kny-  
ghes and broughte them to the halle to  
theyr meate, & whan they were there:  
Hawgys made them washe, & than  
he

he tooke the duke Raimes and made hym sry downe, and my lady Clare next hym. And he made sry downe þ bisshop Turpyn and Reynawde and than Ogger and Alarde, and after Guicharde and Escoufe the sonne of Dedon, and than the lytle Rychard. And whan they were all set at the table, the meates of þ first course were brought to the boarde, & thā the other one after another by good ordenaunce and sayre. And to say the trouthe they were well and honourablye serued, and of many and dyuerse seruises of roiall meates. And after that they had well eaten at theyr ease: the duke Raimes called Reynawde and sayde him. Good colin I pray you that ye wyl delyber your selfe for to gve vs a good answere of þ ye haue heard of vs. Lordes sayd Reynawde I shall doo it in so muche that the kyng shall haue a cause to be contente of me. For I shall doo all that he wyl for to haue peace and hys loue withall, and that for the loue of the other my lordes þ be heere now. And than Reynawde made to bryng the swerde of Charlemayne & the swerdes of þ twelve peers, and also the crowne and the Egle of golde. And whan Ogger sawe this: he began to laughe and sayd. By my soule Reynawde ye had heere a fayre gayne yf ye had kept it. And whan Rycharde sawe that his brother Wolde delyuer the Egle of golde he began for to say By saynt poule my fayre brother ye shall not doo so. Ye shall not delyuer agayne that I haue wonne wel and truly by force of armes, brother Rycharde sayde Reynawde, let me doo

I pray you. I will not sayd Richard by my soule, for Charlemayne hym selfe smote me whyle that I was prysoner within his pavilion full shāefully wþth a stasse. Lordes said the duke Raimes, let thys a lone. And take we that Reynawde giueth to vs in thanke, for he hath doone þ enough. By my sayth sayd þ bisshop Turpyn he dooth so. And than they tooke the crowne of Charlemayne & all theyr swerdes. And whan they had them: Ogger sayd to Reynawde. By colyn I counsell you that ye come wþ vs, and Alarde & Guicharde shal abyde heere to keep your castell. By sayd Reynawde I feare me to sore þ kyng Wolde make me for to be killed outrageously. Come on hardy sayd the duke Raimes, for we shall lede you wel surely. For syth that ye shalbe with vs: ye ought not to fear nothyng. Lordes sayde than Reynawde I shall doo your commaunde demente vnder your assyngge.

**W**han Reynawde was accordeed for to go wþth the Duke Raimes, and with the bisshop Turpyn, wþth Ogger the Dane and Escoufe the sonne of Dedon: they ryghted all vpon theyr horses, and Reynawde mounted vpon bayarde and armed hym. And in like wise dyd Alarde. And whan the duchesse Clare sawe that Reynawde her Lorde wolde go with the folke of the Emperour Charlemayne: she came before them & kneeled downe before them, and sayd vnto them my lordes, I thanke you muche of the fauour that re did

U. i. M. We

## The booke of the four

Shew to my brother Richarde and to  
Mawgis, now agayne I pray you  
that ye will haue Reynawde for re-  
comended mi lord and my deere hus-  
bande the whiche ye lede with you.  
Madame said Ogier, haue no doubte  
that Reynawde shall haue anichar-  
me. For we should not suffre it for  
nothing for to leese both life & good-  
des. And than they put them to the  
Way for to goe thens, and Reynawde  
ooke ten knyghtes wth him for to  
brace hym selffship. Whan they  
were come to the riuere of Balancé:  
they sought after þ passage and pas-  
sed ouer. And whan they were all  
ouer: Ogier began for to sat. Lordes  
ye wot well all is of euill courage  
agaynst Reynawde, wherfore I doubt  
me of him þ we haue brought heere  
wth vs. I counseil that we knowe  
þyself the wyl of charlemayne or euer  
he see Reynawde, Ogier sayd the duke  
Naymes, ye speake well and wisely  
We shal go speake ye and I to Char-  
lemayne, and Reynawde shal abyde  
heere till we come agayne. Lordes  
sayd than Reynawde I shal doo that  
ye counseil me, but I pray you holde  
me that ye haue promised me, that is  
that ye shal keep my bodye and my  
lymmes from harme. Reynawde  
sayd the duke Naymes. We shal ra-  
ther dye, than that ye shal haue a-  
ny harme. And than he and Ogier  
ooke the Way to warde the hoste of  
Charlemayne, and Reynawde abode  
wth the bishop Turpyn and wth  
the sonne of Edon. Now herken of  
þyngell a spye that longed vno þ  
þyng Charlemayne, wyt it that the  
spye was at the riuer side of Balan-

con wth this selffship. Whan the  
wordes abore sayde were spoken,  
Whan the spye had well understand  
all the conclusion: he stale hymselfe  
fro the companye and rode a good  
pace as he myght in the Worlde and  
came to Charlemayne, to whome he  
sayd in this maner, syr I bryng yow  
tidinges wherof ye shalbe ryght glad  
my freende sayd Charlemayne thou  
art well come. I praye yow tell me  
what tidinges þe brynges: Wyt it  
þy that I haue lefe Reynawde and  
Mardehys brother at the ryuer side  
of Balancion with the bishop Tur-  
pyn and Escouf the sonne of Des-  
don, and the duke Naymes, and O-  
gier are coming towarde you for to  
ask leue þt they shal bryng them  
to you wþh surci. Is it trouth said  
Charlemayne: yea without fawt said  
Pinable. By my soule sayd the king  
I shall rewarde thee for it ryght  
well, but keep well that ye shew neit  
this to no man vpon thy life, for I  
shall put them to a good remedy. And  
than he behelde aboutheym and saw  
Oluer and sayde, Oluer inconve-  
nient and without any delaye, take  
two hundred knyghtes wth horses  
and wel armes, and lede them at the  
ryuer syde of Balancion, where þe  
shal fynde Reynawde and Marde,  
þt see that þe take them & bring them  
hither, and if þe doo this: asse of me  
what þe wyl, & þe shal haue it. And  
than sayd Oluer, syr I shal wel doo  
your commaundement. And than  
he tooke wth him two hundred kni-  
ghtes as þ kinge Charlemayne had  
ordyned hi, & tooke his way to war-  
de the ryuer of Balancion. Now god  
þrough

through his pitie sauē the good kni-  
ght Reynawde and Blarde his deere  
brother, for they ben in great peril of  
thei rives. This hangyng that D-  
lyuer was gone to warde the ruer  
of Balancon: the duke Maymes and  
Dgyer came to the hoste and lighed  
a fire the pavillion of the kinge, and  
went in. And whan they sawe the  
kyng: they made him the reverence,  
but he sayd no word to them. Whā  
Dgier sawe the countenaunce of the  
king: he sayd to hym. Say: What se-  
blauant is this that ye haue co-  
mune with me? I meruayle me greatli that ye make  
vs so euyl cheere seen that we come  
to thens where ye haue lende vs, þ  
was to Moutalobā, Wherc we haue  
spoken with Reynawde the sonne of  
Aymon, the whiche is al togheter re-  
dy for to doo al that your pleasur is,  
and so he hath deluyered vs agayne  
your crowne and al our swerdes, as  
soz your egle: ye shal haue it whā ye  
wyl. Dgyer sayd than Charlemain  
What haue ye doone of Reynawde  
soz I am sure that ye haue broughte  
him with you? Say: sayd Dgier it is  
trouth verely we haue broughte him  
to vs vpon our faith to take sute-  
ties of you of truce þ ye haue graun-  
ted hym. By saynt Denis (sayd char-  
lemayne) I will not therof, soz þ I  
can haue hym ones in my handes al  
the golde in the Worlde shal not sauē  
him but I shal make him dy a sham-  
full death. Say: sayd Dgier Whac  
say ye? I meruail me greatly of that  
ye haue sayd. Damp emperour said  
than the duke Maymes, so greate a  
kyng as ye be: ought neuē to haue  
sayd suchē wordes as ye now haue

uttered with your mouth for the va-  
lue of haile his realme, ha goddes  
sweete sir gne not to your selfe so  
great a blame, & þf ye doo this that  
ye say: I promise you that I, Ogier,  
the bishop Turpin and the sonne of  
Dedon, we shal recide you euyl for  
euill, & þt we shal sauē Reynawde  
at our power so that ye shal not doo  
him harme, sith that we haue brou-  
ght hym vpon our fayth. Now shal  
we sayd Charlemayne how ye shal  
conne helpe him. Say: (sayde Dgier)  
þt ye doo to vs any outrage or dys-  
honour: I promise you we shal for-  
sake the homage and the fayth that  
we oþre to you, and we shal doo the  
worse that we can agaynst you and  
agaynst your realme. ¶ we shal now  
presently speake a litle of Oliver þ  
was gone to Balancon. It happed  
as by fortune that þe sayde Oliver  
ouertooke Reynawde so nigh þ whis-  
che was on foote: that he coulde not  
haue leysse for to moue vpon hys  
And whan Reynawde sawe that he  
mighþ not light vpon his hysle by-  
cause that Oliver had ouertaken  
him so soore he was soore an angred of  
it that al moste he waxed mad al quic-  
ke. And than he returned hym to-  
warde the bishop Turpyn and to-  
warde Escoufe & sayd to them, Was-  
talleys ye haue betrayed me falso and  
I wold never beleue it, wherin ye  
haue doone greate sinne and greate  
evil. Say: sayd the bishop Turpyn,  
I were to you vpon my fayth that  
herof we never knew nothinge nor  
thought it, and I promise you that  
we shal live and dye with you, and  
þt this: Reynawde turned towarde

### The booke of the fourre

Oluer & sayd to him Oliver may ye  
veelde me againe the goodnes that I  
the wed to you in the playne of Wal-  
colours, I know that one curteysie  
requireth another, for whan ye were  
to the ground cast, I deliuerde you  
your horse againe, and holpe you to  
light vpon hym agayne, syr sayd O-  
luer it is trouth that ye say, and I  
promise you that I am ryght sorwe  
that I haue founde you now heere.  
For I know no man in the woorlde  
that wolde doo to you anye harme,  
but I wolde be wroth with him, this  
hanging that Reynawde and Oly-  
uer spak together: there came Rowl-  
ande that was departed from thost  
aftir Oliver for to help hym to take  
Reynawde, and whan he was nigh  
he beganto crye. Ha ha Reynawde,  
by my soule ye be no we taken and be  
trapped. And whan he had sayd this  
there was Ogier behinde him þ had  
folowed hym with the poynþ of the  
spere, the which layde to hym, by my  
head syr Rowlande ye shall doo no  
harme to Reynawde, for the Duke  
Raymes and I haue brought hym  
hether vpon our fayth, for to take þ  
sureties of the trewes that we haue  
gauen to him in the kinges behalfe  
as ye knowe he had charged vs to do  
And I tell you syr Rowlande þ ye  
doo to him any harme: þ shal doo it  
to vs. Ogier sayd Rowlande ye shal  
now be an euil suretie for him. Rowl-  
ande sayde Ogier, I make myne a-  
vow we to you þ þ ye sau Reynawde:  
We fourre that ben heere shall helpe  
hym agaynst you. Rowlande sayde  
than Oliver I praye you that ye let  
Reynawde in peace, for I promise

þou he did ones to me a curteysie tuis-  
ne, and a great pleasur, & now I wil  
reward him for it, if it please you,  
and I shall tell you what we shall  
doo. we shall lede Reynawde before  
Charlemayne. And we shall praye  
hym that he treat hym curteisly, and  
we shall parforce our selfe to make  
his appoyntment. Lordes sayde the  
Duke Raymes, Oliver hath spoken  
honestly. I counsell that we leade  
Reynawde tofore Charlemaine, for  
to see what he wil doo of him. And I  
swere by god þ he wyl doo any ou-  
rage to Reynawde: we shall not sus-  
cite it for to dye for it, & we shall help  
him to sau him selfe to our powre.  
Aftir all these wordes: they tooke  
them selfe on theyþ waye, for to lede  
Reynawde to Charlemayne.

**R**yan Rowlande and Oly-  
uer had brought Reynaw-  
de into the paulyon of þ  
kyng Charlemaine: wyt it that the  
duke Raymes, þ bishop Turpin,  
Ogier the dane, also Escouf the son  
of Edon Wente neuer one foote fro  
Reynawde. But whan Oliver wold  
haue presented Reynawde to Char-  
lemayne: Ogier auauanced hymselfe  
and sayd to the kyng in this maner.  
Syr ye knowe howe þee dyd lunde  
þs fourre that ben heere afore you in  
your message to Mountabban, for  
to tell vnto Reynawde as þee had  
charged vs, to whome we dyd shew  
in your behalfe, that þf he Wolde  
delyuer to you agayne your Crow-  
ne, and all the good swerdeþ that  
Maugys had borne with hym, and  
the

the Eggle of golde, ye shold glie him  
truce for two yeres, & that ye shold  
doo turne your hoste into fraunce a  
gayne. Wyt that Reynawde hath do-  
one all that we haue required hym  
of in your behalfe, & wee haue brou-  
ghim with vs vnder your laufe  
conduite, and so we take hym vnder  
our charge that he shold haue no  
more harme thā we shold. Notwith-  
standinge ye haue made hym to be  
taken, the Whiche chynge we wolde  
neuer haue thought that yee wolde  
haue doone it, seen that heere be your  
cro wne & your swerdes, & the Eggle  
of golde is at your pleasure whan  
ye will haue it. And moxeouer wee  
promysed hym that yf ye dyd to hym  
anyt harinc: that ye shold doo it to  
vs as well as to hym, & I promise  
you yf ye doo to him anyt harinc, yee  
shalbe greatly blamed for it of al the  
Worlde. But and yf ye wil werke ho-  
nestly heere in and lyke a true emp-  
toure & king for to keep that neyther  
ye nor we be not blamed for it: sende  
Reynawde agayne to Mountawba,  
with this that he hath taken to vs,  
& whan he shall be therin agayne: do  
to hym the worse that ye can.

**O**gyt sayde Charlemayne, ye  
speak for noughe & all your  
felowes also. For I shal not doo so  
but I shal doo after myne owne will  
thoughe ye all had sworne the con-  
trary. And so shal I not doo of Rey-  
nawde as I dyd of yf false cheef man-  
gis. And whan Charlemayne hadde  
sayde thus: he turned him towarde  
Reynawde, & sayd to him. Reynawde  
Reynawde I holde you nove, cer-

tes I shal so keepe you that ye shall  
not deceyue me as did Hawgys, for  
I shal make you anon to be lympte  
and cutte in small pecces, and than  
brunte all to powder. **S**ayd Reynawde  
ye shal not doo so & god wil.  
**O**gyt sayde Charlemayne, Wyll ye  
defende agaynst me my mortall ene-  
mye? **S**ayd sayde Ogyt I wil not de-  
fende your enemyes agaynst you: but  
I promise you that I shal defende  
my trouthe agaynst all men. **S**ir said  
than Reynawde what is your plea-  
sure yf I doo: yc haue called me tray-  
toure, wyt it that I was never such  
nor no man of my lynage. nor I knew  
not in the worlde that sayth that I  
haue be a traytoure, or yf I haue doon  
any treason agaynst you, but that I  
should fight in the quarell agaynst  
him body to body. By my sayth said  
Charlemayne, I shal make it to be  
proued vpon you by force of armes  
**S**ayd Reynawde, yf speake now  
as a kyng, & heere is my gage that  
I gine, sayinge that I am as true a  
man as any that is in all the Worlde  
& in lyke wise all they of my lynage.  
Than Charlemayne sayde to him, if  
ye gyue me sureties: wyt that I shal  
take vp your gage, and not els. **S**ayd  
sayd Reynawde I shal synde suretie  
ynough. Than he turned him & saw  
Ogyt, and sayd to him. **S**ayd Ogyt  
come forthe, & ye duke Haymes, and  
also yf hollhop Turpyn & ye Elscouf  
the sonne of Odon, be my suretie I  
I pray you, so yf ye ought to be so, ye  
knowe that I dyd never vnluthe  
Reynawde sayde the duke Haymes  
We shal be sureties for you wych a  
good wyl.

The booke of the four

**T**han sayde Reynawde, sy<sup>r</sup> heete ben my sureties that I take you, are ye contente of thē: ye sayd Charlemayne I aske no moze. Sy<sup>r</sup> sayd than Reynawde, who is he þ shall make the batayle? By my sayth sayde Charlemayn, my selfe shal it be. Sy<sup>r</sup> sayde Bowland, yee shal not doo so if it please you, for I shal fyght for you my selfe. Sy<sup>r</sup> sayd Reynawde ordeyn in your place suche as it shal please you, and whan he had sayd this Worde bayard was taken agayne to Reynawde, þ whiche lighted upon it went towarde mountawban, and with him went Ogier the dane, the duke Maynes & escouf the sonne of Dedon, and toghether a lard that had betaken as Reynawde. And whā they were come nigh mountawban: Guycharde, Richarde and Hawgys sa<sup>r</sup> we them come, & came theym agaist, and whan Guycharde sa<sup>r</sup> we Reynawde: he asked of hym howe he had done: By my saythe sayd Reynawde we are not welcom for the kyng knew that we were at Balancon wher Ogier had left vs and he sent anon Dyluer & Bowland for to take vs, and were ouertaken so sodenly that we coulde not lyght upon our horses, & we were broughte to Charlemayne, and I promise you he is a cruell man fulfylled w<sup>th</sup> all cursednes. And thus recounted Reynawde to his brethern all that ye haue now hearde afoxe.

**T**hat night Reynawde and his compani made good cheere at mountawban and made the folke of charlemayne to be well feasted by þ

noble lady Clare his wyfe right honouably, and after they had supped well: they went to bed so that night and whan the morynge was come that every man was vp: Reynawde & his fela whip w<sup>th</sup> to heare masse in the chapell of saynce Nicolas; and Reynawde offred. iii. marke of golde And whan the masse was doone: reb<sup>r</sup> naude & all his barons asched after theyr armes so to armē them. Whā they were armē: Reynawde tooke leue of his wyfe abore all the company, and than he called to hym byg brethern and Hawgys and sayd to them. By lordes I leue this castell in your protection and laul garde, & I recommende you my wife and my chyldren, for no w<sup>th</sup> I goe fyght w<sup>th</sup> the best knyght of the worlde, now I knowe not what shall betyde of me, wherfore I pray you þ ye wil keep well this castell, for I promise you þ I dye: þe shal haue need of it heere is Ogier that shall come with me & the Duke Maynes also, for they ben my sureties to the kyng Charlemain By my soule sayde Alarde þe speake for nought, for we shall goe with you, and we shall haire you compa<sup>r</sup>nye wher somuer ye go and so shal we see the batayle, and how þe shalbe mayntened in your ryght and þe haue need of helpe: þe shall synde vs redy to your succours. By Saynte Paule sayde Ogier the dane, Alarde hath spoken wylsely, and whan Reynawde sawe this he called Hawgys & sayd to him. By sayre cosin I pray you that ye wyl abide heere, & that ye wyl keepe all well sytch that my bretheren wyl come with me. Reynawde

ma wode sayde Ma wogis, I shall doo  
as it pleaseth you, & I promise you þ  
Mountawban shall haue no harme  
by my defaute. Whan Reynawde had  
ordeyned all well: he tooke on incom-  
tynent his way in the felawshyp of  
his brethren and of the barons afore  
sayd. And whan they cam there as  
þ batayle shold be doone: Reinawd  
lighted a foote & taryed after Ro-  
lande. **C**here leueth the hystorye  
to speake of Reynawde; of his bre-  
thren & of the other barons that were  
in the company of þ said Reynawdes;  
and returneth to speake of Rowland  
þow he and Reynawde made theys  
batayle the one agaynst the other.

**C**here sheweth howe Reynawde  
saught agaynst Rowland, the whiche  
he conquered by the wyll of god and  
brought him to mortawba, wher of  
Charlemayn was ful hevy & wroth.  
And also hows Ma Wogys bare þ em-  
perour Charlemayne to Mountaw-  
ban vpon Bayarde all a lepe, & de-  
liuered hym to Reynawde in a bed.  
Wher Reynawde laye. And howe  
Ma Wogys after this wente awaie &  
tooke the habyte of a heremite and left  
his kinsmen and lyued poorly, soz  
he wold not let the peace of Rey-  
nawde to Charlemayne, for þ warre  
had lasted longe ynough.



The booke of the four

**R**olande saw h̄ day he rose  
fro his bed and w̄t ( after he was re-  
d̄ ) to heare masse, and offed a riche  
gilt vpon the alter, & whan h̄ malle  
was doone: Rowlande asked after  
his hatcys̄ for to arm him & whan  
he was wel arm'd he lighted a horse  
backe quickly. And thā Charlemain  
sayd to hym. Fayre neuere I comēd  
you to God þ he lede you to a good  
waye and keep you fro death and  
fro prysyon, for ye knowe that Rey-  
nawde hath ryght vpon vs, & we doo  
to hym wronge, wherfore I Wolde  
not for hālf of my realme that any  
hatcine came to you for it. Myr sayde  
Rowlande it is to late for you to re-  
pent now, for syth that ye knewe þ  
ye were in the wronge: ye shold not  
haue accepted the batayle þ ye haue  
enterpysed, but sith it is so that the  
tbynge is come so ferre forth: I can  
not leue it, but yf it were to me great  
shame, no w̄l helpe me god if it please  
him through his mercy. Whan Row-  
lāde had sayd these wordes he tooke  
hys way for to goe to the pincere of  
mouca whan where as the batayle of  
Reynawde a of him shuld be made  
and whan he was nigh the mountaib-  
bon: he saw Reynawde that awaited  
after hym at the sayd tree and incō-  
tinent he began to crye vpon hym.  
By God Reynawde this daye shall  
ye haue a doo with me, & I promise  
you that whan ye shall goe fro the  
feild: ye shal never doo faytes of ar-  
mēs agaynst me no; agaynst no o-  
ther. Whan Reynawde heard Row-  
land crye so: he came agaynst him &  
sayd to him, syz Rowlād it becometh

not to such a knyght as ye be for to  
chrete me thus, & I tell you þ I am  
herece redye, & þf ye wyl batayle: ye  
shall haue it inconvenyent. Reynawde  
sayd Rowland I am not come heere  
for prace: but keep you fro me, & yes  
shall doo as a wylde man. Rowland  
sayde Reynawde beware of me, for I  
am sure that I shall bynge doowne  
the pride of you that is so great.

**R**ed whan Reynawde had  
sayde that Rowlād he spurred  
bayard w̄ the spettes & came agaist  
Rowland, & Rowland agaist Reyna-  
wde, & they gaue to eche other so  
great strokēs at theyz brestes þ they  
brake bothe theyz speares al to pecess  
and with the tening that they made  
agaynst eche other: they recornded  
the one the other so harde w̄th  
theyz sheldes that Reynawde muste  
needes fal doowne to the erth w̄ hys  
saddle betwēn hys thydes, because of  
the gyres that brake a sunder, & row-  
lād lost his stropes w̄ al. And whā  
Reynawde saw himself a ground he  
rose vp right quickly, and lighted as  
gayne vpon bayarde without saddle,  
and came vpon Rowland w̄th his  
swerde in his hande, & gaue hym so  
great a stroke: that Rowlād felte him  
selfe sore greued with all, & whan he  
saw that Reynawde had stonyed hi  
so sore: he set hande to durandall his  
good swerde, & tanne asp̄elye vpon  
Reynawde. And whan Reynawde  
saw him come: he went right fyerly  
vpon Rowlande, & than began the  
batayle to be harde, and sore cruel be-  
twēn them two, and I promise you  
they leste not one peice of theyz ha-  
nes

nes whol, nether vpon the one nor vpon the other, but it were al to brocken and beaten a sondre, in so much that þ barons that looked vpon the had great pitie of thone & of thother. Whan þ duke Maynes, had beholde a longe whyle of this wunderfull batayle: he began to cry as loude as he coulde saying in this maner. Ha lyng Charlemaine ye are oure cruel for thorouge your cruel malice: ye put to deaþe Wo of the best knyghþes of the wþrld. Whersoye ye shall dñes aby or longe. whan Reynawde saw that neyther of them two coulde not ouercome the other: he sayde to Rowlande, If ye beleue me: We shal lyght do wone a foote bothe to thend that we kyll not our horses. For yf we slea them we shall neuer recouer none suche nor so good, ye saye Well sayd Rowlande, and I am so content. And than they descended a foot vpo the mede we. Rowlande sayde Reynawde, now are we per to per, now it shall be seen the whiche of us two shalbe mayster of the place. And us this they camme the one vpon thother as proudly as it had ben two Lions Who that had seen than the greate strokis & that dangerous that they gaue to ech other he shold haue said that there had be neuer suche two knyghþes in all the remenant of the wþrld. Whan Rowlande sawe that he coulde not wynne Reynawde: he came to hym, & tooke hym with a fust arme, and so di'd Reynawde hym in lyke wyle in maner of. Wherþerþe togyþer a great whyle without that the one coulde cast do wone the other by no way. And I promple you that

a man shold Wel haue gone a mile: or euer they leit ech other goe Wha they were euipid ones togyþer, & at the last wha they saw that the one coulde not cast downe the other: they leit ech other goe the one there and the other here for to take their bretþ for they were tyght wety, & sore traumayled so muche that almooste they myght not stande no lenger, & theyr helmes sheldes and theyr armes were al to cut and brooken and the grounde where they fought thus was all to stamped and beaten with theyr fette as men had beaten coynes there vpon.

Whan Charlemayne saw that the one coulde not ouermaster the other, and howe they were both euipid araved: he was sore aferle for his newew Rowlande, and than he kneeled do wone vpon his knices & huced his handes to gether toward heauen and began to say. Good lord gloriþous that made the wþrld, sea, heauens and the erþ, and deliuerde the holy dircyn margarete from the help of the horþle Dragon, and Jonas from the wþl of the cyllie: I beseeche you also that ye wþll deliuer my newew Rowland from this batayle mortall, and sende me suche a token wherby I maye deparre these two knyghþes from ech other to the honoure of the one and of the other. Whan Blarde Gurcharde and Rychard saw therþ brother so wety they were a ferde of his person, and than they began also to praye god that he wold keep theyr brother Reynawde fro

### The booke of the fourre

From death and from prison. And whā  
they had made they; prayere: oure  
Lorde for þ prayers of Charlemain  
he mad a fayre myacle, for he mad  
tysse so great a clowde & so thike, that  
they myght not see eche other. Then  
Rowland sayd to Reynalde, Where  
are ye gone Reynalde, other it is ne  
ght, or els I canot see never a whit?  
No more doo I sayd Reynalde ve  
rely. Reynalde sayd Rowlande, I  
pray you doo to me a curteys turne,  
& a nother tym I shal doo as much  
for you yf ye require me therof. By  
Rowland (sayd Reynalde) I am re  
dy for to doo al that ye wyl require  
me of, so that my honour be sauied.  
Gramcreye Reynalde of that ye  
haue graunted me. Wyt that sything  
that I wyl despise of you is this, þ  
ye bring me with you to Mountaw  
ban. By Rowland sayd Reynalde  
þy wyl doo this: I shal be ryghte  
glad therof. By my fayre I shal go  
there wyrth you without any faute if  
it please you. By sayde Reynalde  
God of hys goodnes yeele you the  
worlþy that ye wil now doo to me  
for I haue nōe deserued it vnto you.  
By Reynalde (sayde Rowlande)  
Wyt that I doo this bycause that I  
know wel that ye be in the right, and  
that ye fighþ in a good quarell, and  
I am in the wronge. And whā Row  
lande had sayd this he receyued hys  
syght, and saw as he dyn afore, and  
than he sawe Ylalunche his good  
horse, and he lyghted vpon hym, and  
in lyke wylde Reynalde vpon bay  
arde And whā Charlemayne sawe  
this he was soraballed, and begā  
to call and to crye. Lordes Lordes

noto see, I wot not what I shold  
saye, for Reynalde ledeth Rowland  
With hym. Now shall I see if ye shal  
let him goe. Whā Charlemayne had  
spoken thus: he came to his horse &  
lyghted vpon him, and began to crye  
Now shall I know who ben my frē  
des. whā the barons of Fraunce  
heard Charlemayne speake thus: they  
spurred they; horses and ran after  
Reynalde.

¶ Han Ogier sa We Reynalde  
I come wþt Rowlande that he  
brought to hym: he was ryghte glad,  
and he came agaynst Reynalde and  
sayd to him. By ye haue wel know  
ght this dai, that ye haue taken such  
a pryme. Ogier sayd Reynalde, I  
promise you that Rowlande hath let  
himselfe to be taken with his good  
wyll. Thanked be god of it sayde the  
duke flanes Reynalde sayd Ogier  
go your wþt to Mountawban, and  
the bishop Turpin þ sonne of De  
dō and I shal returne agayne, & we  
shal tary Charlemayne that cometh  
after you and we shal doo so much  
that ye shall be wel at Mountawban  
or they ouer take you. Ogier sayde  
Rowland ye say well, and I thankes  
you of your curtoysie. Whā thei had  
thus shoxtie spoken together: Rey  
nalde & Rowlande rode so fast that  
ther came to mountawban. It is not  
to be asked if Rowland was wel sca  
fed at mountawban. I promise you it  
is not possible to feast a prince better  
nor more honourable thā he was at  
mountawban. This hanging: Ogier  
was come against king Charlemain  
and

and he dyd so muche by his sayle la-  
guage that he helde the king till that  
he thought that Reynawde & Rowl-  
lande myght be well at Mountawba  
by that tyme. And wha he had doone  
so: he spurred his horse and went to  
Mountawba after the other. wher  
as he myght well goe without to be  
vnbraied for it, for he was one of the  
suyenes of Reynawde as yee haue  
heard. And whan Charlemaine saw  
this: he folowed him vnto the gates  
And whan he was come to the gate  
of Mountawban: he began to crepe  
withan hie voyce. By god Reynawde  
this that ye haue doone: shall auayle  
you litle, for ye shall never haue pea-  
ce wþth me as longe as I am man a  
litt. And whan that he had sayd this  
he returned him from the gate, and  
sayd to Oliver that was therre with  
hym. Oliver go lightly to Mount-  
bendell, and bring heere all my hoste  
for I wyll besiege all thys Castell.  
Than sayd Oliver I shal go there  
With a good wyll, but and it please  
you ye shall come wþth me, for I  
promise you if ye comnot therre your  
selfe: they shall not come hicher for  
me. Than shall I goe there my self,  
and thus tooke Charlemayne his  
waye towarde Mountbendel where  
his hoste laye, whan his folke sa-  
wim come: they wente agaynst hym  
and began to saye to hym, sy: what  
haue ye doone with Rowlad: lordes  
sayd Charlemayne Rowlad is gone  
to Mountawban, but I commaund  
you al that incontinent without de-  
laye that my siege be transpored all  
rounde aboue Mountawban, and ye  
damp Oliver shall beare the orifla

and damp Richard of Normandye  
shall lede our hoste. whan Charle-  
mayne had comaued all this: there  
was none that sayde agaynst it, but  
set themself to bring doWne the ten-  
tes and paullion, and to trusse and  
lede theyz baggages, and carped all  
to Mountawban.

**B** richard of Normandy went  
with .xi. thousande men to  
Balacon to keeþ the passage of the  
ryuer vþ all the hoste were ouer the  
ryuer. This hanging Charlemayne  
had put himself aþre for to se where  
he myght best pitche his tentes, and  
his paullion, for to keep siege to all  
aþre the Castell of Mountawban.  
And whan alþe hoste was come a  
þre Mountawban: the kinge made  
incontinent his paullion to be set vp  
before the great gate. And whan all  
the hoste was set: the nyght watche  
of the great Towre came to Haw-  
gys, and sayde vnto him. Sir wþt þ  
Charlemayne is come with his hoste  
and hath put his paullion before the  
mayster gate. Is it true sayd Haw-  
gys: yea without any faute sayd the  
watche. Now care not for it sayde  
Hawgys, for Charlemayne seeketh  
his domage, and he shall haue it so-  
onter than he weeneth. Than went  
Hawgys to Reynawde. And she-  
wed him howe Charlemayne was  
come with all his hoste. And whan  
Reynawde heard this: he went vnto  
Rowland and sayd vnto him. Sir ye  
muste wþt that Charlemayne your  
uncle hath layde siege aþre vs, but  
I promise you that if it were not for  
the loue of you: I shold shew him  
that

### The booke of the four

þ he hath not doone wel. Reynawde  
(sayd Rowlande) I thanke you mu-  
che, but one thyrge I wyl tell you,  
saue your correction, me semetheþat  
I ought to sende to myne vnbke the  
duke Haymes, Ogyer the dane, and  
also the bysþhop Turpyn that shall  
shewe unto him in this maner, Syr  
Emperour Wyt that Reynawde for  
the loue of you wyl not gyue no I-  
cons to your newew, nor he wyl not  
put hym in prisone. But he maketh  
him as good cheere as he doth to his  
owne selfe. And that more is, Reyp-  
nawde, his breþtern and Hawgys  
doo þerent themself for to give the  
and theyr castell unto your handes,  
so that theyr liues be sauued. ye spea-  
ke well and wisely syr Rowland said  
Reynawde, and so I am redy to doo  
as ye wyl haue it. Rowland sayde  
the duke Haymes, I dare not goe to  
hym, ye may wel knouȝe sayd Row-  
land. For ye be not haced of the king  
duke Haymes sayd Ogyer, we shal  
goe to Charlemayne, þe wyl doo  
aftir me. And they accorded that thei  
two shold goestogither to the kyng  
for to shew to hym as Rowland had  
deuised. And whan that these two  
princes, the duke Haymes and O-  
gyer came to the paullion of Charle-  
mayne: they saluted him reuerently,  
and the duke Haymes speake to him  
in thys maner of Wyse. Syr Empe-  
roure your newew Rowland recom-  
mendeth hym humblye to your good  
grace, the whiche Reynawde keþeth  
within Mountawban for his pris-  
oner, not vnykndly: but he maketh to  
hym as good cheere and as great ho-  
nour he betteth unto hym as he were

his owne brother, and his souerayn  
lorde, and all this he dooth for your  
loue. And demaundeth of you peace  
þt please you to graunt it to hym  
by suche maner that he shall gyue  
you Mountawban, and the Egile of  
golde, and he shall let goe Rowlande  
at his libertie without raunsu. And  
also he shall peelede hymselfe to you  
and his breþtern in lyke Wyse, and  
also Hawgys for to doo your wyl  
with them, saue theyr liues: and they  
shall promyse you þt theyr seruise  
pleaseth you, that thei shal serue you  
agaynst all me with all theyr power  
and puissaunce, so that ye shall haue  
cause to thanke them for it.

**W**ha Charlemayne vnderstood  
þt these wordes he shooke al for  
great angre. And brgan to saye to þ  
duke Haymes, and to the other that  
were come to hym, flee out of my pa-  
uilion euill folke. I meruaple me  
how haue ye durst cum heere Within  
and I tell you that Reynawde shall  
haue no peace with me, but if I haue  
Hawgys for to doo my wyl of him.  
Whan the barons vnderstode char-  
lemayne that spake thus: they came  
out of hys paullion and tooke no  
leauue at hym, but returned inconci-  
nent to Mountawban. Whan they  
were come there: Rowland and Reyp-  
nawde asked them how they had  
doone wth Charlemayne. Lordes said  
the duke Haymes, it is no force to be  
asked aftir it. For Charlemayn wyl  
not doo it, but if men take unto him  
Hawgys for to doo his wyl of him,  
Lordes sayd Reynawde I am sorry  
for it. I meruaple how Charlemayn

is so harde harted, and I make mine a wo vnto god, he shall not hane Hawgys though I should dye for it. After these wordes they went to theyz meat, & Hawgys made them to be serued plenteously and worshipfully, and whan they had supped: the beddes were heled, and they wente anon to bed. And whan Reynawde wolde go to his bed: he calid to hym Hawgys, and sayd to hym, cosyn I pray you that ye doo make good wat che to night. For ye know that ourre lutes liet, therupon. Syr sayd mawgys feare not for to slepe well & rest your selfe. For I promyse you þt hys castell shalbe well kepte by goddes grace, & whan all the barons were a bed: Hawgys wente to the stable and sadled Bayarde, and than he listynged upon hym and he came to the gate and sayd to the porter. My fide open the gate for I must go out a listrie, & abyde me heere for I shal come agayne soone. Syr sayd the porter. I shall doo so with a good wil. Tha wente out Hawgys streyght to the pavillion of Charlemayne. And wha he was come there: he began for to make hys charme, & brought a slepe all they that were in the hoste. And whan he had doone so: he wente to the bed of Charlemayne, and tooke hym in his armes and brought him vpon Bayarde. And whan he had doone so: he wente his wayes agayne to Moutawban, and brought Charlemayne with him. And whan he was come there agayne: he tooke Charlemayne from Bayarde, and bare him into his chambre and layde hym in his bed. Whan all this was

thus doone: he tooke ato the fire it, and pyched it byt wene the strawe & the bedsted, so that it helde faste vnto before the vilage of the kinge Charlemayne. And after he wente to the chambre of Reynawde and sayde to hym, Losyn what wolde ye wel giue that shold deliuer Charlemayne into your handes? By my soule sayde Reynawde I haue notyng but that I shold gladly giue it so þt I micht haue hym heere within this castell of Moutawban. Losyn sayd Hawgys wil ye promyse me that ye shall doo to him no harme of his body, nother your brethern nor none of yours? & I shall put him into your handes even anon. Losyn sayd Reynawde, I promyse you that vpon my saythe, now come with me sayd Hawgys. And than Hawgys brought Reynawde into his chambre, and shewed him Charlemayne that was in hys bed and slepte, and after he sayde to him. Hy cosyn Reynawde. Now ye haue heere Charlemayne, keep hym so well that he scape not you. And whan Hawgys had deliuered Charlemayne to Reynawde, he came vnto þt stable wher he had put bayarde and tooke some strawe and rubbed his backe with all & his head, & than he kissed hym al weeping, and tooke leaue of him. And after he went and tooke the palstar and the cloke and came vnto the porter, and gaue him all his other raymentes, that he had worted aforo and went out of Moutawban. Now leaueth the historie to speke of Reynawde, and of Charlemayne a lytle, and shall shewe of Hawgys that left all his knynd & frendes

X. i. frendes

The booke of the four

crendes and became an heremite.

**C**how after that Hawgys had deliuered Charlemayne into the handes of Reynawde his cosyn: he wetc

Without any leue from Mounawban into a wood beyng p riuer of Dordon into an heremite, where as he lyued like an heremite a poore life to doo penaunce for his synnes.



**N**ow she weth the history, that whan Hawgys had deliuered Charlemayne for prisoner unto Reynawde he went out of Mounawban without the leue of Reynawde, and without the knowledge of any of the castell, except of the porter. And wit it that the sayd Hawgys went so longe that he came to p riuer of Dordon, and passed ouer the water in a bote. And whan he was ouer he entred into a wylde forest, and walked with it til it was noone. And whan he had gone ynough through the wood, he behelde a syde: and sawe a lytle hill, and upon it a litle house in maner of an heremite, he went to it and founde the place devoute and pleasaunt. For afore the gate sprake a quicke fountayne. And Hawgys

went into the chapell, and kneeled a fore an ymage of our lady that was there, and prayed our lord p he wolde pardon hym his synnes. And as he was there makinge his prayere: a devotion tooke him so greate, that he made his vowe to God p he should dwelle in that place, and that he should serue god there from that day foorth on, and that he should eate none other but suche wilde herbes as grew in the wood. And than he prayed unto our lord that Reynawde and his bretherne myght haue peace Wyth Charlemayne. And whan Hawgys had doon his prayere: he rose vp and came out of the chapell, and tooke p saddle from his horse, and the bridel, and so let hym goe to the grasse, and went agayne to the Chapell.

But

**C**But heere leueth the hystore to speake of Dawgis þ was become an heremyte and returned to shewe of Reynawde and of his bretherne that had Charlemaine for theyz prisone within theyz castell of Mountawbā.

**C**How the barons of Fraunce that were at Mountawban, were soþ þ they could not a wake the emperour Charlemayne that Dawgis had broughte a slepe throughte hys arte. But whan the tyme of the charme of

Malogys was passed: the kyng awoke by himself, & he fownde hymself at mountawban, he swarc þ he shold never make peace w Reynawde as longe as he was prisone, and how Reynawde let him goe agayne to his houle vpon his houle Bayarde, wherof Reynawde repented him afterwarde right soþ. So; soone after þ: Charlemayne dyd besiege mountawban of so nyghe that he fampsched Reynawde & his brethern with in with his wife and childzen.



**T**is this partis he with the hystore that whā Malogys had diuerced Charlemayne into the handes of Reynawde, & that he was gone as ye haue heard: Reynawde called to hym his bretherne, & sayde to

**C**ome hether my chyue bretherne tell me what we shall doo with Charlemayne þ We holde now in our handes, ye know how long that he hath dōmaged vs, & hath doo to vs great harmes wþout reason, wherfore

þ.ii. me

The booke of the fourre

me thinketh that we ought to auēge  
vs vpon him, syth that we haue him  
Syr sayde Rycharde I cannot saye  
what ye wyl doo of hym, but and pe  
wyl beleue me: he shalbe hanged for  
the wth. For after he were dead ther  
is no man in all Fraunce þ we shoule  
feare any chynge. Whan Reynawde  
understode the couisell that Rycharde  
his brother had ginen hym: he looked  
doone towarde the erthe, and begā  
to thynke sore. And whan Rycharde  
saw hym muse so: he asked hym what  
he thought þ þe cared who shoule  
doo execution vpon the kyng: for  
sayd Rycharde þe shall not lache for  
that: for none other shal hange him  
but my selfe, and that I shall doo e-  
uen a non þ þe wyl deliuer hym vñ-  
to me. After these wordes Reynawd  
rygheed his head vp and sayde. My  
brether þe know w well that Char-  
lemayne is our souerayn lorde. And  
of thother part ye see how Bowland  
the Duke Haynes, Ogier the dane,  
the bishop Turpin and also Elcous  
the sonne of Dedon are wþin for  
to make our poyntment with Char-  
lemayne, for they know w well that we  
ben in the right & the kyng in þ wrōg  
and thus þe we kyl hym be it wþth  
ryght or with wrōnge, all the wroght  
shoulde renne vpon vs, noz never as  
lōge as we liue: we shal not be wout  
warre. And whan Reynawde had  
sayde thys: Alarde spake in thys  
maner. Brother þe haue spoken mi-  
selfe, but þe see that we cannot haue  
peace wþth Charlemayne by no w-  
se me semeth that wee ought to aske  
it of hym once for all, and þe wyl

not: let vs keep hym þysoner, bro-  
ther sayd Guycharde þe say Wel, but  
my hert telch me that he shal neuer  
make peace wþth vs nor loue vs,  
Lozdes sayde Rycharde me semeth  
that we haue a good head of Rey-  
nawde our brother, thanked be our  
Lorde, the Whiche hath gouerned  
vs ryght Well hereto let hym shyste  
wþth the kyng as he wyl. And  
that, that þe wyl: shall be doone. By  
my fayþe sayde Alarde, Rycharde  
speakeþ well. And whan they were  
all accorded to that that Reynawde  
should doo: the fourre breþern went  
to the Chambre wheres Bowlande  
was, to whome Reynawde spake in  
thys wþle. Syr Bowlande a rysle. I  
þrype you that ye wyl sende for Ogier,  
the bishop Turpin and for all  
the other that be heere wþin of the  
folke of Charlemayne. For I wyl  
tell you one chynge. And whā Bow-  
lande saw Reynawde and hys bre-  
þern at that tyme of the nighe come  
into his chambre: he was meruay-  
led. Neuerthelesse he sent for all hys  
felawes, as Reynawde hadde tolde  
þym. And whan they were al come:  
Reynawde stode vp and sayd. Loz-  
des þe ben all my freendes, god gra-  
mercy and you, wherof I wyl not  
hyde no chynge from you. Yee must  
kno w þ I haue heere wþin a þy-  
soner by whome I shal haue peace &  
all myne heerfaunce agayne. Rey-  
nawde sayd Bowland, I pray you tel  
me whac he his. For heere is no ma-  
ter, but that wylde sayne þe shoule doo  
Wel. By my soule sayd Reynawde it  
is the great emperour Charlemayne

to Whome al fraunce belonged. And whan Rowland vnderstode these tiddinges: he was so ze maruayled of it & sayd. Reynawde ye tell me nowe a wunderfull thyng, Howe haue ye taken myne uncle so lyghtly? tell me & it please you, how ye had him heere Within: haue ye taken hym by force of armes: nay verely said Reynawde Tell me then how I pray you sayd Rowlande: Witte sayde Reynawde that I wot not howe Hawgys my colyn did to night, but well I wot y he hath brougthe the king heere with in out of his pavilion, and hath lalde him in a bed, in a chambre where he is now fast a slepe.

**R**yan Rowland and al his clawes heard these tiddinges: they were greatly abashed, how it myght be that mawhis should bringe the kynge there. I metuayle much therof sayd the duke Raymes, for ye knoue well that the king made hymselfe for to be kepte bothe night and day well sure. Loedes sayde than Ogier, all this hath doone our Lorde for the loue of reynawde, bycause he setteth hym al to mischeif against Reynawde and that the warre hath lasted to longe y whiche shal now be left, wherof Ichake God for my parte. For manye good knyghtes haue losse their lyues for it. And whan Ogier had sayd thus: Reynawde tooke Rowland and the other, and brougthe them al wayes speakinge vneo the chambre, where Charlemayne laye so faste a slepe, that they coulde not awake hym, for nothing that they could doo to him,

For Hawgys had charmed hym so harde. And whan the barons sawe y dinges so harde a slepe: they wundred full sore vpon it, & they were greatly abashed of it. Than spake Rowland syr and sayde Reynawde where is Hawgys that hath wrought so well to night. I praye you let hym come heere, and that he awake mine uncle Charlemayne out of this slepe And whan he shall be awaked: Wee shall all fall at his feete, and shall crye hym mercy. And so I pray you that thoughte yf ye holde in me vncles in your handes, that ye wyl not be the prouder for it in youte wordes, by my fayre syr Rowland sayd Reynawde. I wyl that ye know I should rather dye than I should say to my souerayne lord a foule word. But I shall put me, my goodes, and all my bretherne to his wyl, to the ende that it wyl please hym to graunt vs peace wþth him. And I wyl go setche Hawgys to you, thereto doe with hym what ye wyl. And than Reynawde wente and soughe Hawgys the whiche he coulde not finde, wher of he was full sorry. And whan that the portre wylt that Reynawde soughe after Hawgys: he came to hym and sayd. Sir ye seeke hym for noughe, for he wente his waies out righ now. And how knowest thou of it sayd Reynawde: Sir wylt that this night he made me open the gate and he wæt out vþd your horse bayarde. And he had not taryed longe: whan he brougthe a great man a big he vpon the horse necke afore hym, & went in I wot not where. And soone after he came agayne vpon another

The booke of the four

horse, and he had clothed hym selfe  
poorely. And than he made me to o-  
pen the gate, and he wente oure, and  
he cam not sith againe. And al this  
is trouth that I tell you now.

**A**nd whan Reynawde had  
vnderstante chese wordes he  
was so vroche þ he wist not what  
to say nor doo. For he kneþe well  
by hymself that Hawgys was gon  
by his wavyes because he wolde no len-  
get abyde the wrath of Charle-  
mayne. Than began Reynawde for  
to weape full tenderly for hys colyn  
that was thus gone. And all we-  
pyng he came againe vnto the bat-  
ons, and sayde to them how Hawgys  
was gone awaþ without his  
knowledge wher of he was so worth  
and so sorþ that he went almoþe out  
of his mynde. And whan Ralde, Guy  
charde, and Rycharde had well vnder-  
stante thys: they begaþ for to make  
great mone, and soþowed full soþe.  
And than Rycharde began for to say,  
Ham, saye colyn Hawgys. What  
shall we doo from hens forþonþsith  
that we haue loste you: we may wel  
say þ we be discomfited. For ye were  
our saluaryon, our succours, & oure  
hope, our counsel, our refute, our de-  
fence, and also our guyde. For it is  
not yet longe ago that I shoulde haue  
dyed an euill death þ I had not be-  
succoured through your helpe. Alas  
all the heurnes þ ye bere of the wa-  
re þ the kynge Charlemayne hath  
agaynst you comþon by vs. And  
whan he had sayd so: he knacked his  
teeth þ angrē, and sayde. Wee ben

nowe well all lost syþ that we haue  
lost Hawgys. And with this: he set  
hande to his swerde, & wolde haue  
slayne the Emperour Charlemayne  
but Reynawde drewhim a syde. And  
the duke Raymes and Oyger sayde  
than vnto hym. Rycharde Rycharde  
refrayne your courage. For it were  
not wel doone for to kyll a man that  
slepeth. And also afoþe that we shal  
departe hence: we shal leþ all at one  
and God wyl. **C**hortelye for to  
speak: Olyuer and the Duke Ray-  
mes spake so sayre vnto Rycharde þ  
they made him promise them that he  
should doo no harme to the kynge  
Charlemayne. Neuerthelesse Rys-  
charde leþ not to make great soþow  
for his colyn Hawgys that he had  
lost. For al them þ laþ him make so  
great mone had pitie for to le him. It  
was no mernayle if Rycharde made  
soþow for Hawgys: For I promise  
you he had greate need of hym not  
longe after. And so had all his bre-  
thren, as ye shall heare heere after.

**A**ll thus as the four sonnes  
of Aymon made they mone  
for the loue of they colyn Hawgys:  
The duke Raymes began to speake  
& sayde in this wise. By god, lordes  
ye doo not wel for to make so great  
soþow. I pray you leue this heu-  
nes. And let vs begin to speake of  
your peace that muste be made with  
the Emperour Charlemayn that an-  
ende maye be hadde of thys warre,  
that hath endured so longe. By god  
sayd Ro blande ye be passyng slow  
therupon. And also we muste fynde  
haue

haile his mercy or euer we mone any  
thing of the peace. For ye wot wel þ  
I leſt him bycause that peace shoulde  
be made. þyr sayd þ duke Haymes  
ye speake wylly and well, but howe  
thal we speake wylly wylly  
þawgys were heere: we cannot a-  
wake hym. And but þ god remedys  
eth it: we shal never speake wylly hym.  
But al thus as the barons spake in  
thys Wyse: The charme that þawgys  
had set vpon Charlemayne was  
come at an ende, and the strength of  
it was passed. And sodenly Charle-  
maine began to mone hys body, and right  
soone abasshed looked al aboute him.  
And whan he saw þ he was at mountawban  
in þ subiecſon of Reynawde  
the sonne of Aymon: he was sore an-  
gred, and made ſuche ſoone we for  
it, ſo that al they that were there ſaw  
wed that he had been mad and fren-  
tymyselue. And wha his Witches were  
come agayne: he knew wel þ þawgys  
had doone it vnto hym & ſware  
that as longe as he were manne on  
lufe: he ſhould make no peace tyl that  
he were out of Mountawban, and  
that men had brought þawgys to  
hym. And wha Rycharde vnderſtoode  
this that Charlemayne ſayd he be-  
gan to ſay in this Wyſe. Howe the  
deuill dare ye thus ſpeak erly, ye ſee  
well that ye be our pryſoner. And  
yet ye thretē vs. I make to god mine  
a bothe and to Haynte Peter, were  
not that I haue promyſed, that I  
thal not doo to you no harme at this  
tyme: I ſhould ſtrike the head from  
the boþe of you. Holde your peafe  
ſayd Reynawde, let the kyng Char-

lemayne ſaye his Wyll, ye are oner  
bely in your wordes. And let vs all  
pray hym that he wyll pardon vs.  
For the warre hath laſted to longe,  
curſed be he that began it. For great  
eytles and harmes the whiche are  
happed ther by.

**R**eynawde was wyſe, and wel  
taught for to ſytle thus hys  
brethen, to whom he ſaid. My lo-  
des my brethren, þt please you, ye  
thal come with me, for to cry mercy  
vnto our ſenayne lord the Emp-  
erour Charlemayne. Reynawde ſaid  
Alarde, we ſhall doo all that ye wyl.  
By mi faith ſaid the duke Haymes,  
My lordes ye doo ryght wylly, and  
I promyſe you that all good ſhall  
come to you therof. Than Reynawde  
and all hys brethen, and Rowland  
and Oliver, and Ogyer the Dane,  
the duke Haymes, the biffhop Tur-  
pin, and Escoufe the ſonne of Dedo  
began all for to fall on theyr knees,  
before the emperour. And Reynawde  
ſpake fyſte, and ſayd in this maner  
of wiſe. Noble Emperour haue mer-  
cy of vs, for I and my brethen we  
peſet vs to you to doo your pleaſure  
of vs, & your will be ſo þ our lyues  
ben ſaued: & there is nothinge but þ  
we will doo it for the loue of you, if  
it please you to graunt vs peace vnto  
you. And for that pitiȝ pardon that  
God gaue vnto Mary Magdelene  
whan ſhe was ſhyd hys feete in the  
house of Simeon, good ſyȝ haue pitiȝ  
of vs. And if it please you not for to  
pardon me at þ leaſt pardon my bre-  
then. And take them agayne theyr  
landes, and I ſhal gyue you Mountawban

The booke of the soure

caubā, and Bayarde my good horse  
And so shall I goe into the holy lāde  
I & Hawgys, where we shal serue  
to the Temple of our Lorde. And  
Whan the kinge Charlemain heard  
Reynawde speake thus: he blastrēd  
all for angre, and sayd by that good  
lorde that made me, yf all the wōrldē  
Speake to me therof, yet shold I ne  
uer colēt me to no peace, but I haue  
Hawgys in my handes for to doo  
my wyl upon hym. I las sayd than  
Reynawde, now haue I hearde that  
Worde bytynge, wherof I am al des  
perate. for I shold rather let my  
selfe be hanged, thā that I shold cō  
lente to the death of Hawgys my  
good cosyn. for he hath not deserued  
towarde vs, that we shold betraye  
hym, but rather he were worthy by  
reason for to be lorde aboue vs. Rey  
nawde sayd thā Charlemaine, thike  
not thoughē I am your prysoner y  
ye shall make me doo anye thyngē a  
gynst my Wyll, syz sayd Reynawd  
wyte it that myne entence is for to  
make my selfe toward you for I haue  
leuer that we suffre wronge of you,  
chan ye of vs, now tell me syz how I  
shall deluyner you Hawgys that is  
our life, hope, succours, our comfort,  
sheild, our spere and also our swerde  
our bēde, our Wynē and our fleshe,  
also our refete, our mayster our gu  
rde, and our defensē in all places,  
Wherby syz I tell you that yf ye had  
all my brethern in your pryson, and  
that ye shold make them to be han  
ged, and that Hawgys were with  
in my power and with me yet wold  
I not yeelde hym unto you for to  
quyte Wythall my brethern. And al

so I shwere you vpon my sayth that  
I wot not where that he is gone, god  
wot it. Ha sayd the Emperour char  
lemyne, goddes curse haue he, for  
I am sure he is hecre within you,  
he is not sayd Reynawde I take it  
vpon my baptysme. And than Rey  
nawde turned himself toward Row  
lande and all the other barons and  
sayd to them. Lordes I beseeche you  
for God that it wyl please you for  
to pray our souercayne lorde þ kinge  
that he wyl haue mercye of me and  
of my bretherne, to the ende þ peace  
maye be had in Fraunce yf it please  
hym. And than Raymes that was  
kneelinge vpon his knees, and that  
heard that Reynawde had sayd and  
wyte well that he spake but well:  
sayde to the Emperour in this wise,  
Syr I pray you that ye wyl not be  
dyspleased of that I shall tell you,  
ye knowys y I am suretie for Rey  
nawde, and so is Ogyer þ danc, but  
me semeth that we ought now to be  
discharged therof, siche that ye be here  
presence within his castell, but ano  
ther thyngē I wyl tel you, me thin  
keth that ye ought to take, that the  
erle Reynawde proffereth to you or  
þ any more harme come to you ther  
of, and so helpe me God ye shall doo  
Wel. And al they of your courte shal  
be glad of it. And whan the barons  
hearde this that Raymes had sayde  
to the kinge Charlemaine: they spo  
ke all and sayde. Syz doo that the  
duke Raymes hath tolde you, for he  
hath gruen you good counsell and  
true. And yf so be that ye doo it not:  
ye shall come to late for to repente  
you of it.

But

**W**han Charlemayne vnderstoide  
this that þ duke Rainmes had  
sayd to him: he was ryght wroth of  
it. For his herte was so hards alto-  
wyed with great angre: that he tooke  
no hefe of good couisel, and he sware  
þy saynt Denys of Fraunce that he  
should not doo it so: no man but þe  
he had synt Hawgys in hys handes  
so: to doo hys wyl onþ hym. And  
whan Reynawde hearde these wro-  
des: he blustered in his face soþ an-  
gre, and rose vp from kneelinge his  
þretherne and all the other barons  
also. And then Reynawde sayde to  
Rowlande and to all the other Lo-  
des that were there. **S**yr I wyl wel  
þ Charlemaine know my wyl & my  
entente, þ whiche I shall shew afor  
hym unto you. Wyt it that syt I ca-  
lynde no mercy in him: I praye you  
that þe wyl not blame me fro hence  
forth on, þe I seeke my ryght. Soþ I  
shall seeke it in all the maners that  
a true knight ought to do. And whā  
Reynawde had sayd this: he turned  
him towarde the kyng, and sayd to  
hym. **S**yr ye mape gos hens whan  
it plesaþ you, soþ by my soule ye shal  
haue no harme of me now, soþ ye be  
my souerayne lord, & with good wil  
we shalbe in good peace wþþ you.

**T**he barons of Fraunce þ were  
there: wundred soþ of the  
great kindenes of Reynawde. Thā  
sayd þ duke Rainmes, haue ye heard  
the great humilitie of the noble kni-  
ght Reynawde? By soule sayd to wal-  
lante. Reynawde sayth meruaylous-  
ly. I wolde not haue trowed that

he shalde euer haue fared so fayre to  
Charlemayne. And whan Rychard  
vnderstoode þ, that his brother Re-  
ynawde had sayde: he spake in thys  
wise, brother Reynawde I holde you  
mad. What wyl ye doo: ye see that  
we haue in our handes this vengea-  
ble kyng the whiche we may kyll or  
els luffe hym to lyue, & þe he is set  
so soþ to þyde that he wyl doo no-  
thing that his good counsell telleth  
hym, but he threteneþ vs alwayes  
more and more, and ye wil let him go  
thus a waye: surely þroþer if he sca-  
þeth vs soþ he shal yet angre vs right  
soþ, and I promise you þe he hadde  
vs as we now haue hym: he shalde  
make vs all to dye shamefullye, not  
at the golde in the wrold shal not  
saue vs thereto. And therfore I tell  
you that ye doo greate folye to let  
him go thus alway. For and ye wyl,  
ye shal not make our peace, but þe  
semeth, ye seeke none other but your  
deach, wherof I pray god þe sus-  
tene hym thus to goe awaþ: that he  
maye make you to dye a shamefull  
deach. And whā Reynawde heard his  
þroþer speke soþ: he was wroth & sayd  
to hi in angre. Holde your peace þro-  
þer for he shal goe his wayes quite  
wyl you or no, and the peace shal be  
made whan he wyl and no soner it  
shal not be, soþ thereto he shal not  
be compelled of me, and go you hens  
from me, soþ your great wrodes dis-  
pleaseth me.

**W**han Reynawde had sayde  
this: he dyd call a gentylman  
of hys to whome he sayd, go lightly  
without any taryeng to the yoman  
of min hōsles, & byd him b̄singe me  
my

The booke of the fourre

my horse Bayarde. So I wyl that  
my souerayne lorde ryde vpon hym  
vnto his holte, for he rode neuer vpon  
no better horse. And whan Richard  
heard this: he wot fro thens al swel-  
linge with anree as a spesfull lyon  
bycause he knew that Charlemayne  
should goe so. And wit it that þ king  
Charlemayne hearde and vnderstode  
Well all these wordes, but he durste  
not saye nothyng, so sore he feared þ  
fieresnes of the yong Richard. This  
hangynge: came there agayne þ gen-  
tilman that was gone for Bayarde  
whiche he brought with him, & than  
Reynawde tooke his good horse bat-  
arde & came to Charlemayne, & said  
to hym, syr ye maye lyght whan it  
please you, and goe at your lybertye,  
for to conforte your folke, whiche I  
am sure ben full soray for the taking  
of you. And whan Charlemayne saw  
this he lighted anon vpon Bayarde  
& went out of Mountawban for to  
goe to his holte, and Reynawde con-  
veyed him to the gate of Mountaw-  
ban, & whan the kinge was gone: he  
made the gate to be shet anon. And  
the frenche men that sawe their kinge  
come agayn: they were right gladde  
and receyued hym worthely, & after  
they asked hym how it wot with him  
and þt he had graunted þ peace to-  
des it is wel with me, God grame-  
cy, but of peace I haue made none  
nor neuer shall as touge as I am  
man a lyue for no man shal speake  
to me of it, but þt I haue the tray-  
tor maugis so to do with him mi-  
wyll. Syr sayd some of his barons  
how haue ye be deluyerd. By my say-  
ch sayd charlemayne, Reynawde hath

deluyerd me agaynþ that the Wyll  
of þys bretherne all quire at my ip-  
berrie. Syr sayd the barons haue ye  
not seen Rowlande, Dyluer, þ duke  
graynes the bishop Turpin, Ogier  
the dane nor Eson the sonne of oco-  
don: yea surely sayd Charlemayne,  
but they haue all forlaid me for the  
loue of Reynawde, wherof by þ god  
that hynge vpon the crosse þ I can  
haue them agayne: I shall shew the  
that they haue not doone well, and  
Whan he had sayd thus: he lyghted  
from Bayarde and made him to be  
brought agayne to Reynawde.

**A**nd whan Reynawde sawe  
bayarde, that Charlemayne  
had sent hym agayne: he called row-  
land and his felawes & sayd to the-  
syrre lordes I know well that ye be  
not in the grace of the grete kyng  
Charlemainc for the loue of me, but  
I wyl not that ye haue mawgys for  
me nor for my brethern, and therfore  
sayre lordes I quypte you all quarel-  
les that I maye lay vpon you, and  
gyue you leue to goe whan it please  
you. And whan the Duke graynes  
vnderstode the bindnes of the heit of  
Reynawde that was so noble: he thau-  
ked hym hyghly, and kyssed and en-  
brased hym for great loue, & wolde  
haue kneeled downe afoxe hym, but  
Reynawde wolde not suffre hym.  
Than the duke graynes began to  
saye, Ic vs thynke to goe after the  
kyng Charlemayne your uncle, sith  
it please Reynawde to gyue vs leue  
Graynes sayd Rowlande, ho w can  
we do this, shall we leue Reynawde  
the whiche ye se myne uncle wyl dy-  
stop:

Groye wrongfullly: Syr said þ duke  
 Haymes heare me yf it please you. I  
 counsel that we go hens, and whan  
 we shal be afoore Charlemayne we  
 shall aske him how Reynawde dyd  
 deluyer him, for yf we speake to him  
 of peace: he shalbe wrothe wþt vs,  
 but whan he shal remembre þ great  
 goodnes and curtesy of Reynawde  
 his hert shalbe molified, & it cannot  
 be but he shal doo to him some grace  
 and fauour, for he shal know well þ  
 his hert is ouer great, & that he hath  
 doone to Reynawde gret wonge.  
 Certes syr Haymes sayd the barons  
 ye speake wþtysly, and ye giue ryght  
 good counsel. And whan they were  
 accorded to the counsel of the Duke  
 Haymes: Rowlande asked after his  
 horse, and eche of the other barons  
 also. And whan they were redye for  
 to lyght on horsbacke: there came my  
 lady Clare the Wyfe of Reynawde  
 that kissed Rowlande, Olyuer and  
 all the other barons, and after she  
 sayde to them in this maner. Lordes  
 that be heere present. I beseeche you  
 in the name of god & for his blessed  
 passion þ it pleaseþ you for to pur-  
 chace þ peace of my lorde Reynawde  
 and semblably of hys brotherne to-  
 warde the great king Charlemayn,  
 ye know my lordes that the kyng  
 doþe to my lorde great wong: and  
 also ye know the great curtesy and  
 the kyndnes that my Lorde my hus-  
 bād hath shewed vnto Charlemayn,  
 and well ye wot that yf my Lorde  
 had not be: hys brother Rycharde  
 wold haue striked the head from þ  
 body of hym. Madame sayde þ duke  
 Haymes doubt not. For and god be

pleased the peace shalbe made with  
 in these thre dayes. And than they  
 lighted al on horsbacke, and the thre  
 breþern of Reynawde conueyed þe  
 to the gate, and Reynawde taryed  
 after them vpon the brydge, & whan  
 they were come to the layde brydge  
 Reynawde sayd to them, My lordes  
 I commende you to God. I maye no  
 lenger goe with you, praynge that  
 ye wyl haue me in your remembraunce.  
 Then al the Peeres of Fraunce ( that  
 were there) began to weape tenderly  
 and tooke their leave of Reynawde  
 the noble knyght, & after they tooke  
 they way towardes þ hoste of Char-  
 lemayne. And whan the Emperour  
 saw them come: he called to hym his  
 barons and shewed them they that  
 were comynge. And whan the barons  
 saw them: they mettayled greatly &  
 had greate feare, for they wylle not  
 wot what it was, but Pdellon the Erie  
 said, by god we haue recouered row-  
 lande and hys felawes, þea sayde  
 Charlemain, goddes curse haue they.  
 Thys hangyng: Rowland and hys  
 felawes came tofore Charlemayne  
 and lighted afoote, and incontinent  
 they knceled humbly afoore the king  
 and thā the duke Haymes began to  
 speake first and sayd. Noble Empe-  
 rour we are come in your presence  
 for to crye you mercy, beseeching you  
 for God that it will please you to  
 take vs vnto your good grace, for  
 we haue doone nothing agaynst you  
 but þ it was for your wele. But sith  
 þ we haue knownen þ your wyl was  
 not for to haue peace: we haue forsa-  
 ken Reynawde and all his brother  
 nor heluet whyle we ben a line they  
 shall

The booke of the fourre

Shall haue no succours of vs. Lordes sayde Charlemayne I pardon you, but I tell you yf we tary heere longe tyme we shal haue lytle gaynes therby, wherfore I pray you that we go assaynte Mountawban bothe by day and by night, by such maner that he be taken of vs incontinent, & they all yben in it brought to deach. Sir sayd the duke Raymes ye say well, but and yf ony misfortune happeth to vs as it hath done heere afore time: I promise you it shalbe to you great doommage, and me seemeth it were muche better to haue peace, tha for to contynue we the warre.

**A**nd whan the Barons of Fraunce heard this, that the duke Raymes had sayde to the king: they began to crye with a high voice Sir Emperour, we praye you that ye wyl doo this that Raymes counselleth you. For he gyueth you good counsell. Whan Charlemayne heard the crye that hys folke made to him: he came to the duke Raymes y was kneelyng afore hym, and tooke hym vp, & in lyke wylc his newewe Rowlande and all the other, and sayde to them. My lordes ye knowe that I haue pardoned you with right good wyl, but I wyl well that ye know but yf ye keep yorself fro helpinge of my enemies mortal: I shal angre you upon your bodies. For I hate them so muche that yf I shold abyde heere all my lyfe: I shal destroy the. And wit it that Charlemayne was glad that he had recouered hys newewe Rowlane and his other Peeres how be it he made no semblaunte of

it. And he sayd yet agayne, y he shold never departe from hys syege tyl y he had taken Mountawban and all the tow. Cunnes of Aymon, wherof he shal doo sharpe Justyce, & shal doo breue Hawgys y false traytore. Sir sayd Rowlane I promise you that Hawgys is not win Mountawban, for he feareth you so muche that he dare not abyde you, least yee shal make him to be hanged, by cause he dyd steale you so fally oute of your hoste. Ha god sayde Charlemayne, whan shal I see that I haue him for to doo my wyl of hym: For than the Sonnes of Aymon shal soone be a greed with mee.

**T**han whan the kyng Charlemayne had deuyled longe yernough he gaue leaue to all hys barons for to go agayne into therre rekes for to see therre folke. And whan the morow cam: all the barons cae agayne vneo Charlemain. And whan the kyng saw them together within his pavillion, he was therof glad, & spake to them thus. Lordes I haue bespeched Mountawban as nere as ye see, and I am not dysposed for to departe heere nother for colde, for hete nor for hungre, vnto y tyme y I haue taken hym by lyne force, the whiche thynge shal be lyghtly doone, for I am sure that they shal want bytayles wythin. And worse is for them: they haue loste the traytore Hawgys whiche was therre hope and comforde. wherfore I saye that they canot holde it longe against my power, whan the barons hearde y Charlemayne threatened Reynawde

so soore: there was none of them but  
thei were soory for it, for the most part  
of thei loued Reynawde for the  
Worchrnes and the kyndnes that  
was in him. Then spake the Duke  
Naymes and said to the Empetour,  
Syr ye say that thei of Mountaw-  
ban be dysputueyd of meate, and that  
ye shall not departe from the syege  
till that ye haue taken the castel and  
that is a thinge that shall be doone  
lighlye, but I promise you yf ye ta-  
rye to thair bittailles be doo: ye shall  
lyc here lenger thē ye ween of, wher-  
fore syr I beseeche you, that it wylle  
please you to beleue my counsayll yf  
it semeth you good, syr Ie take heede  
to the curtoysy that Reynawde hath  
doone to you, for ye wot well that if  
he had not be: his brother Richard  
shoulde haue slayne you, al the golde  
in the woorlde shold not haue sauied  
you. Item thynke thenne also in the  
great mekenes that he hath alwates  
shewyd to you, also for the great trust  
that he hadde had in you, he lencd you  
his good horse bayarde that hath no  
matche in all the Wорld, syr yf ye o-  
uerchynke well al, ye shall find that  
no manne dyd neuer to none other so  
greate curtoysy as Reynawd hath  
doone to you, and of that other parcke  
he and his bretherne ben such knigh-  
tes as euery body knoweth. I swete  
to you syr by al hallowen that or e-  
uer ye shal take Mountawban: Rey-  
nawde and his bretherne shall beare  
to you suche damage, wherof ye shal  
be wrothe. And yet ye ought well to  
take heed how we wast and destroye  
the country and the feeldes and greate  
good ye doo dyspende, Whiche for

yourchonoure were better to be em-  
ployed vpon the sarasins: than vpon  
the fourre sonnes of Aymon, for the  
sarasins been vold in rest makyng  
greate towz for the cause of this warre,  
and they doo well. For warre haue  
left them, and it is come among our  
selke so horriblie and so cruel that ma-  
ny noble and wrothy knyghthes ben  
deade therof.

**T**he kinge Charlemain was soze  
abashed, whan he hearde the du-  
ke Naymes speake so: and it  
moued his bloud ful soore and became  
pale as a white cloth for the greate  
wrathe that he had at his heart, and  
casted a syde his sight angrely vpon  
the duke Naymes and sayde to hym  
by greate wrathe. Duke Naymes by  
the fayth that I owe to that blessed la-  
dye that conceyued the sonne of god  
in her virginicie, that if there be any  
man so hardy to speake more to me of  
accoerde to be made with the four son-  
nes of Aymon: I shal never loue hym  
but I shal angre hym on his bodye.  
For I am not dysposed to make pea-  
ce with them for nochynge that can  
besayd, but I shal hange them what  
soeuer it coste me or I departe from  
this sycge. Whan the barons hearde  
Charlemaigne speake thus proudly:  
they were soze mercuaylled of it, and  
left to talke of this matter. But whā  
Ogier saue that al the barons held  
thei my stille: he began to saye to the  
kynge Charlemaigne. Cursed be the  
houre that Reynawde suffered noe  
Richard to smite of your heade, for  
ye had not shreched hym so now. And  
whā Charlemaign hearde that Ogier

B.I. said

The booke of the four

sayde to him, he bowed his necke and looked downeward all penaful and syn he sayd, now lordes make you ready to see that every man fal to his armes, for I will now gryue assaute to Mounawban. And whan the frenshmen hearde the commaundemente of the king: they made no carrying but went & armid themselfe, and whan they were al ready: they came in good ordenaunce, and broughte ladders & other instrumentes with them for to sause withal the castell and engynes for to breake downe the walles, and presented the before Charlemain for to accomlysh his wyll. And whan the kinge saw them so wel appareled: he commaunded the to goe sause the castell of Mounawban.

**A**nd as soone as Reynawde saw his enemies come: he callid his brother Alard, and sayde to him. Brother I pray you take bondy my good horne & blowe in it strongly to the ende that our folke armie them selfe when they heare it, for heere come the frenshmen to sause vs. Whan Alard understoode the commaundement of Reynawde: he tooke bondy, and blew in it with so great a winde three tymes that all they of the castell hearde it, and were all abashed wych all and without anye carryinge they went & armid themself, and lyghely gate upon the walles for to defende the castell. Neuerthelesse the frensh men came neare and entred in to the dyches as bogges doone in a myre, and dressed vp their ladders to the walles. But wyt it that they of within the castell beganne to defende

so stronglye wych castinge of stones: that they damaged sore the frenshmen so that many of them lay deade within the dyches. For Reynawde & his bretherne dyd therre so great feates of armes that no body myght endure their strokes, who had seen the poore duchesse and her yong child, en ac that saut bryngynge stones to Reynawde and to his brethern upon the walles: he wolde haue had pyte of it. For the two yong sonnes of Reynawde laid to theyr vicles, holde out vicles these stones, for they been greate ynglye. Suche defensse made they of Mounawban, that they ouerthewe them that were upon the ladders to the botome of the diche, all dead and sore wounded, and whan the king Charlemain saw this: he was wrothe, for he knewe than wel that he shold never take Mounawban by force, nor also the noble knyghtes that were within it, as Reynawde and his bretherne. And therfore he made the trumpet to be blowen, to call his folke a backe wth so greate angre that he was almoste out of his mynde, and whan the frenshmen hearde blowe the trumpet: they were glad, for they were shrewdly handeled, and I promyse you that Charlemain left such a company dead wth in the diche that he longe after was full sorry for it.

**W**han Charlemain and all his folke were wþdrawen again: he beganne to weare Sayne Denys of fraunce that he shold never departe thence til he had famisched Reynawde & his bretherne within the castell of Mounawban, & than he

commaunded that afore cuerte gate  
of the castel shold be layed two hun-  
dred knyghtes, for to keep that no bo-  
dye migh: in no dace, but he shold  
be take. And whan Reynalode saue  
that he kneled down upon his kne-  
es and heued vp his handes toward  
heauen and sai: Good lord that sus-  
tred deeth on the crosse. I beseche you  
that ye wil graue vs that grace that  
we maye haue peace with Charie-  
maine & saue our lutes. And whan Ri-  
chard heard the prayer of Reynalode  
he tooke heed to it and said. Brother  
I promise you if ye wolde haue bel-  
tied me: we shoule nowe haue be in  
good rest & peace, for Charlemaine  
wolde haue be glad therof for to saue  
his life, ye know that our cosin maw-  
gis brougthe him not heere for none  
other cause to be our prisoner, but to  
the entent that we shold make our  
peace, but ye wold not take heed to it,  
Whan we migh: haue had our wyl,  
and I promise you we shall not doo  
as we wolde.

**T**he emperour Charlemaine a-  
sode so longe at the slege a-  
fore Mounteban, that they that  
were within it had great need of vi-  
caylles, for he that had any meat: he  
had it incontinent, and so great scar-  
site of victaylles was there within a  
while that men coulde get there no  
meat for golde nor for siluer, and ma-  
ny other fell downe at grounde heire  
and there so ferre for hungre that it  
was great pike for to see, for ther  
was there so great that thone brother  
hidde his meat from the other, and  
the farther from the childe, & the childe

fro the father & fro the mother. And  
shortly to speake: I promise you that  
the poore folke died for hungre by the  
streets, and with this was so great  
stenche in Mounteban of the dead  
that were there: that no man coulde  
endure it. And whan Reynalode saw  
this he was sorwe for it, and than he  
dyd doo make a greate charnell wher  
in he made all the deade bodyes to be  
buryed. And whan Richard saue  
so greate mortailece within the castel  
of Mounteban, through he cause of  
the great deirth that was there, and  
saw his bro:ther Reynalode in so great  
distresse: he could not forbear, but he  
saide to him, by god my brother nowe  
goeth it worse then euer it dyd, it had  
be muche better if ye hadde beleued  
me, for yf ye wolde haue suffred me  
to slea the kynge Charlemayne: We  
shoule nowe not haue be in thyg  
myscheef and great pouertie that we  
haue nowe, nor your folke hadde not  
dyed for hungre as they doo, and thā  
he began to weep tenderly and sayde  
glas why doo I complayne other? I  
myght well complayne my selfe siche  
that I must dye and be put in to the  
charnell as the poorest of vs all. Ha  
Ma:Wgis my sayre cosyn, wherē be  
ye nowe? ye satle vs at oure need, for  
and ye were here within with vs: we  
shoule not be famyshed so: hungre  
and also we shold not double muche  
the kynge Charlemaine, for I wot  
well that ye shold get vs victaylles  
ynough to lyue upon for vs and our  
men, and now we muste dye for hun-  
gre as the wulff shold upon a sca. for  
Charlemaine hateth vs more than  
he dooth the Sarasyngs. And therfore

The booke of the four

it is not for vs to wapte after picte of  
him, for he is ouer cruell a king vpon  
vs.

Ogier with great payne kept his ey-  
en fro weepinge lest Charlemaine  
should not perceiue his sorrowful herc

**C**harlemayne by the reporte  
of somefolke knew the greate  
derthe & scafthe of vitailles  
that was within Mounawban, wher-  
of he was right glad, & called to him  
his folke and said to them. Lordes  
now can not Reinaud escape, but he  
shai soon be taken & hanged, & the fal-  
se Richard drawn at an horse tayle,  
& Blarde, & Guichard also, and ther  
Worthines shall be henn Worthie to  
them. And whan the kinge Charle-  
mayne had sayde these wordes: he  
sent for all his peeres & barons, and  
whan they were al come within his  
pauillion: he was glad of it and sayd  
to them. Lordes thanked be god that  
I haue brought myntaukan so low  
that Reinaud and his knyghthees  
haue no more vitailles in it, and now  
they shai yeld them selfe at my wyll  
mawgrie their crech, for by meste parage  
of their folkes ben deade for hunger,  
and yet dien dayly, and remist wyt  
I wyl that Reinaud be hanged &  
his brether also, but first I wyl that  
Richard be drawn at an horse tayl.  
And so I charg you that none of you  
be so hardye to moue my Wyll to the  
contrary, for I wyl that it be doone  
as I saye. Whan the duke Natmcs  
Rowland, Oliver, Ogier, the bishop  
Turpin, & escouf, þ sonne of Devon,  
þ were there heard þ king speke thus  
they were righte sorwe for the loue of  
Reinaud & of his brether, & looked  
down & said no wordac all for feare  
þ they shold be shent of the king, &

**D**ere ye ought to wit that dw-  
inge þ comie that Charlemain  
iaye at the siege aforo Mounawban  
persecuting the four sonnes of Aymo  
Reinaud, Blard Guichard, and Ri-  
chard: Aymon their father helde the  
party of the king ayenst his children  
for he had promised him to doo se, as  
ye haue heard aboue, but Witte that  
whan he heard how the empereour  
threthened his children, how be it that  
he had forsaken them he was vexothe  
for it, for he knew wel his children  
died so: he woud never haue joy after  
that, for whatsoeuer warre he made  
ayenst them, he loued them kindly as  
the fater ought loue his childe, for  
nature may not lie, & therfore he took  
so great sorow wha he heard of his  
sonnes that they were threthened to be  
hanged: that he almost fel down dead  
to the ground, & of the great sorow þ  
he had could not kepe himselfe but he  
said. Sir empereour I besech you that  
it wyl please you to bryng my children  
to right, for though I haue forsaken  
them, yet are they my sonnes of my  
body begotten. Hold your peace Aymon  
said Charlemain, for I wyl that  
it be so doone of the, for Reinaud did  
slea my newe þ barthelot that I lov-  
ed so much. And after he turned him  
self & saw þ barons that spake thone  
to other & said to them. Lordes leue  
your musing, for I tel you for a crow-  
the that I shal not leue to doo herin  
my wil for no man þ speakeþ ye Wor-  
wel it is iii. pere gon sith we besieged  
this

castel first and euer sith haue leien he-  
re, where we haue lost many of oure  
folke, wherfore I comaund you that  
eicher of you doo make engynes for  
to bryng downe this great towre &  
all the temmaunt also, for with such  
maner we shal abash them greatlye,  
and ye my newe lord Rowland ye shall  
doo make of the engines. vii. and O-  
liuer shal doo make vt. the duke Nas-  
mes iii. the bishop Turpin, and O-  
gier the dane other. iii. and ye duke  
Aymon said the king Charlemain ye  
shal make thre.

**H**ewe shoulde I nowe doo this  
good lord said the Aymon: for sir  
Emperour ye know wel þt they  
be my children, nother cruantes nor  
knaues, but be the best knyghtes of  
the wold, & so I tell you sir that if I  
saw them die: I shoulde for goe my  
wittes for angre. And whan Charle-  
maine heard Aymon speake thus: he  
was wroth and began to gnaw on a  
stake that he held in his hand, and af-  
ter said. By that god that made me if  
therer be ani of you that gainsaith my  
wil: I shall strike of his heade with  
my swerde. Sir said the duke Nas-  
mes angre not your selfe. For that, þ  
ye haue comaunded: shal be doone in-  
continent. whan the barons vnder-  
stood the comaundemente of Charle-  
maine: they went their way for to ma-  
ke þ engines that the king had com-  
aunded, the whiche were anon made  
readye & these engines were for to cast  
greate multitude of stones. And as  
soon þ they were made: they were set  
for to cast ayn moucawba & in shor  
time they dōmaged it ful sore, & so I  
promise you þ within the castel were

made greate cryng of wemen and of  
children, & for feare of the stones they  
went and hid them vnder the ground  
and so thei of Moucawban endured  
this mischev as longe as they had a  
ny morsell of meat. And I ensute you  
that there was so great derth and so  
great mortalite: þ men wist nomore  
where to laye the deade. For the chur-  
chell was al full. Alas who had seen  
so yong bachelers that for scincnes  
went leininge vpon their staves tho-  
rough Moucawba for lacke of meat:  
he woulde haue had great piteie. For a-  
fore that the castel was besieged they  
were so stronge and so myghtye that  
none could haue overcome them, but  
they were than so feble that they fel  
Whete they went, musselinge in the  
grounde as hogges.

**A**nd whā Reynawd saw the  
great piteie that was among  
his folke: he had of it greate sorow be-  
cause he myghte not put no remedye  
thereto, and than he began to saye in  
himself. O good lord What maye I  
now doo: now I se wel my wyt auail  
lech me nothing, for I wot not where  
to seeke vitallies. Alas god Where  
may Dawgis be now that he know  
not my great need and the outrage þ  
Charlemaine dooch to vs. And whā  
the good lady clare saw her lord Rei-  
nawd that complained him selfe so  
piteously: she began to say vnto hym  
in this wise. For soth my lord ye doo  
not wel for to discomforst your self so  
sore, for ye discourage vs al within,  
moreouer I promise you that heere  
been yet within mo than a L. horses,  
I pray you let one of thaim be killed,  
and ye, my selfe and our poore childre

The booke of the fourre

Shal eat of it, for it is more than thre  
daies agoe that they no: I eate anye  
thing that did vs good, and whan she  
had said this: she fel downe in a swoone  
at the feete of Reyna Wde her hus-  
band, for grete feblenes for lacke of  
meate. And whan Reyna wde sawe  
her fall: he tooke her vp anone in  
his armes, and after that she was  
come againe to her selfe, she saide all  
weeping. Ias dete lady mary what  
Shal I poore wretche doo for all my  
heart falleth me, and almost wil my  
soule depaſte: al so sore is my bodye  
famished alas mi childre who should  
euer haue wende that ye shoulde haue  
died for hunger.

**W**han Reyna Wde sawe the grete  
distresse wherin his wyfe was:  
he had grete pite of heer, and  
the teeres began to fall ouer the chee-  
kes of hym, and al weeping he went  
to his stable, and there he made a hor-  
se to be slayne, the whiche he made to  
be dressed for meate to hys folke, but  
I promise you that horse flesh lasted  
not longe afore therm for they were  
menne yno we to eate it vp lyghely.  
And heere ye must know that all the  
horses that were within Mountaw-  
ban: were in lyke wise eaten, one af-  
ter a nother, excepte fourre, that is to  
Wyt Bayarde and the horses of the  
thre bretherne of Reyna Wde the  
whiche fourre horses they wolde not  
eat by cause they wolde not be a foot.  
And whan Reyna wde sawe that there  
was no more thyng that they myght  
eate: he called his bretherne and  
said to them. Faſte bretherne what

Shall we doo: we haue no more foode  
to take vs but onely our fourre horses  
that are leſt alwyng. Lette vs doo kille  
one of them that oure folke may eat  
with vs. By my heade sayde Rich-  
ard that shal not be mine, and if ye  
h me lust to r: let youts be slayne, for  
ye shal not haue me, and if ye ha-  
ue great myſchayfe be wel worthy  
for throughe youte p: yde: we are  
brought in this pylght, bycause that  
ye leete goe the king Charlemain, for  
and if ye had beleued me: thys grete  
myſchayfe had not befall vs. Thys  
hanging: cam the lityll Simon the  
sonne of Reyna Wde that sayde to Ri-  
chard in this manner. Holde yout pe-  
ace myn uncle, for that thing that mai  
not be amended, men oughtes to let it  
passe in the best wile. For it is to sha-  
mekully to reherce that, that is passed  
but doo as my father commaunderh  
you & ye shal doo wel. For ye doo not  
well to angre him so as ye doo, and  
though he hath misſed of his entent,  
he hath boughte it deare ynowgh as  
wel as we, if the king Charlemain  
hath damaged you longe, it may well  
hap that god shal helpe you o: ought  
longe, if it please him, and I beleue  
certenlyc that he shal doo so, for the  
kyndnes that my lord my father did  
shew unto charlemain whan he had  
him heere, can never be lost as I wen.

**C**reat ptye had Richardde of his  
Incue we whan he hearde hym  
speake thus wylly & tooke hym  
betwen his armes and kissed hym al  
weeping, and than he said to Reyna  
de. Brother commaund my horse to  
be

be slayne whan it please you, and giue some comfort therwithall to thys folke and to my lady your Wyfe and to my yong neuerwach is here hach wel deserued to eate of it for the good counseyl that he hathe giuen to me now. Brother said Alard, let be slain Whiche he will of three, for it were to greate adommage if bayard shoulde dyce, and also I tell you that I had never dye my selfe than that Bayarde shoulde be slayne. Brother sayde Guychard, ye say wel, and anon the horse of Richard was killed and dresed to their meat, and so in lyke wise was doon with the horses of the two other bretcherie, and full sauourlyt it was eaten. And whan Reynawde sawe that there was no meat more: he wist not what he shoulde doo, for he was more soray for his bretcherie and for his wife, and his childre, than he was for him selfe, and began to saye in this wise. Alas what shal I doo? I am vanquished & ouercome with out any stroke. It had be better for me to haue belcued my brother Guychard, for I had not be nowe in the myserye and greate need wher I am in at this houre. Now I see wel that Charlemaine hath chased me so muche that he hath betrapped me wi: him in his gynnes, Wheroure I can not scape, and I know wel that I ought not to be complayned, for I haue made my selfe the rodder wher with I am beaten, and yf I shoulde repente me therof: it shoulde profyue nothinge, for I come to late for to doo so. whan Richard saw his brother Reynawde make suche sorow: he knewe well

hys mynde, and was ryghte soray for hym, so that he shooke al for sorow, and wist not what he shoulde saye. For yf Reynawde Wolde haue hadde of his owne selue: Guychard wolde wel haue gryue hym of it, yf he myght haue be comforted therwith. Then spake Guychard that other brother and sayd. Why good bretcherie what shall we doo: we shall yeelde our selfe or elles dye heire for rage of hungre, and we may no more from heire forch on, but onelye wayte after deathe. What say you brother Guychard said Reynawde, wyl we yeelde our selfe to the moste cruel king of the wold for he shoulde make vs all to be hanged shamefully, if any perte could be founde in him: I wolde yeelde me gladiye but ther is none in him, and therfore I am delybered that we shal not yeelde vs to him, we shall rachet eat my children, and after our bodyes. But alwayes if ye will eate bayarde: I am therof conente to passe the tyme forchou, for I haue ofte hearde saye, that a daye respite is worthe muche. But neverthelesse what so ever he sayde, he had no courage to eat Bayard, for it was al his succours. Brother sayde Alarde, I counseyl that we eate Bayarde, rachet then we shoulde yeelde vs in to the handes of Charlemayne, for he is to cruel, nor he shal never haue mercye of vs. And whan Reynawde sawe that they wold eat bayarde hys good horse: he tooke for it such a herteis sorow that he almost fell in a swoone to the earth, but he tooke togidre his strengthes and stode vnyghe and began to saye. Faire bretcherie what will

The booke of the four

Wyll ye doo: weill ye eate bayardemy  
noble horse, that so ofte hath kept vs  
from death and from perill more: all:  
and I pray you that afore ye slea him  
that ye slea me, for I maye not see  
him die, and whan ye haue slaine me:  
slea him hardelye. And if ye will not  
doo so: I forbed you in as muche as  
ye loue me that ye touch not bayard,  
for he that shal hurt him: shal hurt me.  
And whan the duchesse hearde Reina  
wde speake thus: she wile not wohac  
to doo, than she said to him in greate  
wrathe. Ha gentill duke de borayre,  
and what shall now doo your poore  
chylđren: wyll you that they die for  
hunger for faute of youre horse: for  
it is three daies passed þ they eat any  
meate, shouldeþ shal they lyues come  
to an ende and mine also, for my herte  
cleaueþ in my body for sine forse of  
hunger, and so shal ye see me die pre-  
sently, but if I haue succours. Whan  
the chylđren heard the mother speake  
thus: they saide to Reina wde. Good  
father for goddes loue deliuer youre  
horse, for he shal die as wel for hun-  
ger, and it is better that he dye fyfte  
than we afore him. And whan Alard  
Guycharde, and Rycharde hearde  
their newe wifes speake thus: Richard  
spake and said to his brother. Ha ge-  
till duke for god suffre not that your  
chylđren nor my lady youre wife dye  
for hunger, and we also. And whan  
Reina wde heard his brother Richard  
speake so to him: his herte rendred  
with al right sore, & fel to wep, & said  
my faire bretherne sith that it please  
you that bayard shal die: I praye you  
goe and slea him. And whan they  
were al accorded that bayard shoulde

be slaine and eaten: they went streight  
to the stable, where thei found bayard  
that casted to them a greate syghe.  
And whan Reynawde sawe that: he  
saide he shoulde rachet slea him selfe,  
than that bayard shoulde die, that ma-  
ny tymes hath sauad him fro deache.  
And whan the chylđren had hearde  
this: they returned agayne to their  
mother weeping & al dead for húgge.

**T**han whan Reina wde sawe  
that his chylđren were gone: he  
wente to bayarde, and gaue him a  
littill heþ, for he had none other thing  
to giue him. And than he came to his  
bretherne, and found Alard holdinge  
Simon his newe wife that wepte, and  
Rychard held yon, and Guichard, the  
duches, that in his armes was swo-  
ned, and said to them. Alas for God  
mercy. I praye you take in you cou-  
rage till night, and I promise you þ  
I shal doo so much that we shal haue  
meate, and god wil. Brother said Al-  
arde we must suffre it wolde we or  
not. So longe abode the knyghtes þ  
the night came, and whan it was co-  
me: Reina wde said to his bretherne.  
My brethern I wil go speake to our  
father, for to see what he shal say to  
me, and if he shal let vs dye for hun-  
ger. Brother said Richard I wil goe  
with you if it please you, and ye shal  
be the more sure that I be in your com-  
pani. My brother said þ good knyght  
Reina wde, ye shall not so, for I wil  
goe there alone, and if I bringe you  
no meate: I shal than delyuer you  
bayarde. And whan Reynawde had  
said this: he made himselfe to be wel  
armed, and lyghþed upon bayarde,  
and

and we! secretly went oute of Now-  
tawban, and came to his fathers pa-  
tullion, the which he knew wel. For  
he had aspyed it from aboue the great  
tower whiche it was daye. And it hap-  
ped so that he found his fader Aymon  
oute of his paullion all alone way-  
tyng yf he myght by anpe wate un-  
derstand some tydylges priuelye of  
the castel. And whan Reynawde saw  
his fader he said to him. What arte  
thou that goe no we at this tyme of  
the nyghte all alone? And whan Aymon  
heard him speake he knew him  
anon and was right glad, but he ma-  
de of it no semblancie, and said to him  
but What art thou thy selfe that goest  
at this houre so hic mounched? Whan  
Reynawde hearde his fader speake  
he knew him wel and saide to him.  
Syr for god haue mercy vpon vs, for  
we die all for hunger, and al our hor-  
ses ben al ready dead & eaten, & so we  
haue no more but bayarde, that shall  
not die as longe as I lyue, for rather  
I shold let me be slaine, for to me &  
to my bretcherne he hache ofseen sauad  
our lyues. Alas fader syfye Wyl not  
haue mercy on vs: haue mercy of my  
yonge chyldren.

**D**a faire sonne saide Aymon, I  
can not helpe you for nothing,  
but goe your waye agayne, for I ha-  
ue you forsworne ye wot it well, and  
therfore I wolde not doo ayenst min  
oche, for all the good in the worlde,  
and my hearte is ryghte sorwe that I  
may not helpe nor gyue you succour.  
Syr sayde Reynawde ye speake yll,  
cause your reverence. For I promise

you if ye gyue vs no succoures: that  
my wife, my children, my bretcherne  
and my selfe shal die for rage of hun-  
ger o; euerthre ce daies ben passed. for  
it is all ready more then thre dayes  
that none of vs eat any meat, and so  
I woe noe what I shal doo. Alas  
ye be our fader so ought you to com-  
for us. For I wot well if the kinge  
haue vs: he shal make vs all to be  
hanged and dye shamefully. Whyche  
were not your worshippe, wherto  
my fader ye ought not to fayile vs  
yf the lawe of nature is ryghtwylle.  
My fader for god haue pitie & mercy  
vpon vs, and holde not your coura-  
ge ayenst your poore children, for it  
were great ctyueltie, and also ye know  
well that Charlemaine dooth to vs  
great wronge, for to persecute vs as  
he dooth. whan Aymon bearde Rey-  
nawde speake thus: he had greate pitie  
of him, and was so sorwe that almoste  
he fell do wne in a swoun to the erth  
and after he began to behold his chil-  
de Reynawde & soze wepinge he sayde  
to him. Faire sone ye haue said trou-  
the that the kinge doothe you greate  
wrong, & therfore a lyghte fro youte  
horse and ente within my paullion  
and take what it please you for no-  
thyng shall be saide naye to you, but  
I shall noe gyue you nothing for to  
sauemine oche. And whan Reynawde  
heard his fader speake so: he desce-  
ded a foot & knelled before him, & said  
an hundred graemes deare fader  
and than he entred within the paull-  
ion of his fader, and laded bayarde  
with bread & vich flesh boch salt and  
freshe, and wyt it that bayarde dyd  
bears

The booke of the four

det more then x. other horses should  
haue doone. And whan Reynawde  
had wel laded bayarde with vittalles:  
he tooke leue of his fater & went a  
gayne to Mountawdan, it is not to  
be asked what welcome Reynawde  
had of his brether, of his wife, and  
of his men, & wyt le that whan they  
saw him bring so muche vittalles: they  
s wounded al for tope to the earth, and  
whan Reynawde saw this: he wende  
they had ben dead for hunger. So be-  
gan he to make great sorow and not  
Without a cause, and while that Re-  
nawde sorowed and made great mo-  
ne: his brether begau to come again  
to theymselfe his wife and also his  
two children. And whan Reynawde  
saw them al vpon their feet: he was  
glad and presented to them meat for  
them and for his folke, and they tha  
made great Joy and eate their fill as  
theyr ease. And whan they had eaten  
well: they went to slepe excepte Rey-  
nawde that wolde keep wachelyn  
self. And on the morne whan the day  
was come: they rose & went to heare  
mass, and after the masse was doon  
they fell to their meat againe, and  
eat al that was left ouer eyn of that  
Reynawde had broughte, and whan  
the next night was come, Simon (þ  
coulde not forget his children) made  
his stuard to come before him and  
sayde to him, ye know how I haue  
forsworn my children, wherol I am  
sori that euer I did so. But it is said  
that at the need the frennd is knownen,  
I let you wot that my children been  
yonder within in great pouertye and  
misease, and howe be it that I haue  
forsworn the: I oughte nor maye not

faile them, we haue three engynes  
that Charlemain hath made me doo  
make for to hutt my children wherol  
we haue damaged them as muche as  
we myghte, nowe we must we helpe them  
after their damage. And I shall tell  
you, see that ye put within the engy-  
nes bread and flesly boch salt & fleshe  
in great plenky in stead of stones, and  
let this be cast in to the castell, for if  
I shoulde die my selfe for hunger I  
shall not sayle them as longe as I  
haue wherol to helpe them, and also  
I repente me full soore of the harm that  
I haue doon to them, for al the world  
oughte to blame me therof with good  
ryghte, and we been in the wrounge.  
þy saide the stuard ye saye well.  
For ye haue doone so muche ayenst  
them that al the wrold blameþ you  
therof, but incontinence I shall doo  
your commaundement. And then þ  
stuard went and made the thre en-  
gyns to be filled with vittalles, and  
after he had the gourcunt to cast the  
in to Mountawdan. And ye muste  
wyt that many of the hoste blamed  
Simon soore, that he made his en-  
gynes to be caste ayenst his chyldyn  
for they wende it had be stones, and  
whan the nighte was passed & that  
Reynawde was vp: he went heire and  
therol within the castel, & found folson  
of vittalles that his fater had cast,  
wherol he was righte glad and sayde  
Good lord blessed be you, now see I  
wel that they that haue their crut in  
you can not fare amiss, & than he cal-  
led his brether his wife & his chil-  
dren & said. My bretherne ye see howe  
our fater hath pley of vs. And then  
he made the vittalles to be gathered

Up and put in a sure place, and so thei  
eate therof at their ease for they had  
well great need therof, for they were  
so soore an hungred that it was greate  
pite. And wryt it tharre Aymon made  
caste so muche wrytayll within Mount-  
auban: þþ they of within had ynow-  
ghe for thare mone: heys with good go-  
uermaunce.

**N**ow must we understand þ  
Charlemayne had some know-  
lege how the oide duke Aymon had  
gauen vittails to his childre, wher-  
or he was soore an angred & made Aymon  
& sayd to hym. Aymon who maketh  
thee so holde to gue any meat to min  
enemys mortal: I know wel al thy  
wrytayll, thou mayst not excuse thyself,  
but by the saythe that I owe to God  
I shal auenge me so well or nyght:  
that if I may yel shal leese poure heade  
for it. Sir said the duke Aymon, I wil  
not denie it, for I tell you truely if ye  
should make me dye or be brent in a  
fyre: I will not savle my chyldren as  
longe as I may helpe them. For my  
chyldren be no theuers traytors nor  
no murdeers, but they been the most  
valiaunt knyghtes of the world & the  
truest, & ween not you to slea my chil-  
dren in suche maner, ye haue to longe  
wrought poure tolyf if it wolde suffise  
you. whan Charlemayne heard Aymon  
speakethus: he was angrye  
with it, & for great wrath he loketh as  
fire & Almost he smote Aymon, & whan  
the duke Raimes saw this: he auau-  
ced him forth & said. Sir sende home  
Aymon for ye haue kepte hym heire  
to long, ye ought well to understande

that Aymon wil not see his chyldren  
to be dystroyed, and therfore ye ought  
not to blamie hym nor smite hym, & let  
tharre Charlemayne hearde the duke  
Raimes speake: he sayd to him. Raimes  
lych that ye haue iudged it: ye  
shall not be gaynsayd, & than he tur-  
ned him towarde the duke Aymon &  
sayde to hym. Now goe forth out of  
myn hoste, for ye haue doon me more  
domage than profyte, sir said the du-  
ke Aymon. I shal gladly doo your co-  
maundement. And anon he went &  
lighted on horsebacke, and after said  
to the peeres of fraunce. Lordes I  
pray you al that ye wil haue my chil-  
dren to remynded, for they be com  
of your bloude, & let the king see well  
to, for yf he make my chyldren to dye  
by such great vengeance as he hath  
sayd: if I shalde become a sarasyn &  
dwel in Afryque al the dayes of my  
lyfe: I shalstryke of his heade, for no  
ne other gage I Wyll not take. And  
whan Aymon had said thus: he went  
out of thost into fraunce to his coun-  
try wel heuy because that he ief his  
chyldren in so great pouerty, & Char-  
lemayne that sawe Aymon goe thus  
quicke, and that he hadde gaignshed  
Mountauban of vittails: he was  
full angrye for it. So studyed he vp  
on this a longe whyle. And whan he  
had studyed longe ynough: he was  
so soray that none myght be more sor-  
er, and returned hym selfe towarde  
hys Barons, and sayde. Lordes I  
commaund you that ye breake al out  
engynes. For by them I haue my-  
selfe to haue the castell of Mounta-  
ban. And incontinent the Barons  
made breake the engynes as the king  
had

The booke of the sonne

had commaunded. And by all thus  
Reinawd abode a long while in good  
peace, but their vittailles began sore  
to mynyshe. And whan Reynawd  
sawe that he was sorp, and began to  
complayne in himselfe, & saide good  
lorde what shal I doo? I knowe that  
at longe tennynge we shall not now  
holde, and so shall Charlemain haue  
no mercy of vs, but he shal make  
vs die. I las Hawgis where be you?  
For if ye Were with vs we shoulde  
doubte nothinge nor I shoulde not  
suffre this great distres that I haue.  
All thus as Reynawd complained  
hymselfe: than came Alard that was  
so feble that with payne he migh bee  
stande vpon his feete, and sayde to  
Reynawd. Reynawd for the loue of  
god make bayarde to be slayne. For I  
may no lenger lyue without meate,  
nother yet my bretcherne.

**T**han whan Reynawd heard  
this brother Alard speketh:  
he was ryght sorpe for it and tooke  
his swerd & went to bayarde for to  
slea him. And whan bayarde saw the  
Reynawd he began to make greate  
Joye, and whan Reynawd saw the  
chere that bayard him made: he sayd  
to him. Ha bayarde good beaste, for I  
had the herte to doo thee hatme I  
Were well cruell. And than yonner  
the yonger sonne heard that he cried  
vnto his facher, sir wherfore carry ye  
that ye slea not bayarde sith he must  
dye, for I Were madde for hungre,  
and so I tell you yf I haue not shore  
ly some loode: ye ye shal see me die a-  
fore your eyen, & yet my mocher & my  
brother also, for we may not lenger

lyue thus so harde we been famished.  
And whan Reynawd hearde bys sou-  
ne speake to him so; he had great pity  
of him, and great sorow in his heart,  
and so he had of bayarde that chered  
him so muche. Than wiste not Reyn-  
awde what he shoulde saye no; doo,  
and so began to thinke alonke whiche  
Ind whan he had bethoughte hym  
selfe longe ynough: he aduised hym  
howe Bayarde shoulde not dye. And  
than he called after a basyn, and ma-  
de bayarde be lette bloodemuch, and  
after he had let hym bloude ynough:  
Reynawd stopped the bayne and ga-  
ue hym bloud to Alard for to be dressed.  
And whan it was soden they eate  
all alystell therof, whyche gaue them  
great sustenaunce. And to save the  
trouch: Reynawd and his folke we-  
re well fourte dayes without any o-  
ther foode. And whan it came to the  
v. day that they wolde haue had bay-  
arde let bloud againe: he was so feble  
that he caste no bloude at all. And  
whan the duchesse sawe that she be-  
gan to weep tenderly and sayde. Sir  
for god sith that he giue ih no more  
bluod let hym be slayne, and so shall  
eate your poore children of him that  
dyen for great hungre, & I also. Dame  
saide channe Reynawd I wyl  
not doo so. For bayard haiborn vs  
good compayne in oure liffes and so  
shall he doo till the houre of our dech  
for we shal dye all togyther. And ye  
ought to know that Reynawd and  
his company Were brought so lowe  
that they walden none other but dech  
thc whiche was them nigh ynough,  
Than an olde man that was amog  
them cam and sayde to Reynawd

Say, what shal it ber? I see that you &  
Mountawban shalbe destroyed, but  
in you is not the faute, for it hath be  
Well defended as longe as ye might  
as it apereth, and sith that I see yee  
mai no more doo: come after me and  
I shall shew you away, where throu-  
ghe we shall well all goe out Wyth  
out any daunger, and I wyl well  
that ye knowe Mountawban was  
once made and shytte, afore ye dyd  
make it, and ths Lorde that buylded  
it sykt: let make a wape vnder the  
erth that bringeth folke to the wood  
of þ serpent, & I was a yonge childe  
whan that way was made, & I know  
well where it lieth, doo digge where  
I shall shew you: and ye shall finde  
it without any sayle, and thus shall  
we go free wthout any daunger. Wha  
Reynawde heard these wordes: he  
was so glad of it that none might be  
more, so that he forgat his hungre  
With all and sayde. O sayre God þ  
all made, blessed be you. Now haue  
I founde that I desyzed, for I shall  
goe to Ardeyne Whiche I ought to  
loue deere. And ths he tooke the olde  
man by the hande and made him to  
bringe him to the place where he laid  
and there he made to be digged in the  
erth and founde the way that þ olde  
man sayd, wherof he was right glad  
and than he wente to the stable and  
put the saddle vpon Bayarde and af-  
ter brought him to the way, but wit  
it that Bayarde was so feble that  
he scante coulde go the pase, and ths  
Reynawde, þys wyse, þys brethren,  
þys chyldren and the remenaunte  
of þys folke put theym selfe to the  
way vnder the erthe, so that no crea-

tute a true abode wthin the castell.

**O** great plentie of torches þey  
nawde made to be syzed þ they  
mght see the better wthin the caue  
as they wente, and he ordyned þys  
for warde of that fewe folke that he  
had, and wente forth in good ordyn-  
aunce with his baner displayed, &  
he with his bretherne made the re-  
garde. And whan they had gone a  
louge whyle through the Caue that  
was wyde & large; Reynawde made  
his folke to tary and layd to þys bre-  
thren, my bretherne we haue doone  
eupll. For we haue leste behinde vs  
kyng Pon in the prison, certes I  
shoud leuer dye: than that I shoud  
leue him so, for he shoud dye there  
for hungre as a famished Wolfe, &  
that were to vs great sinne. By god  
sayd Richard he hath well deserued  
it, for of a man þis a traytour: men  
ought not to haue pitee, brother sayd  
Reynawde ye say yll. And than he re-  
turned agayne & came to the prison  
where the kyng Pon was, Whiche he  
ooke out & broughte with him. And  
wha the duchesse saw her brother þ  
kyng Pon come: she sayde to hym.  
Ha my brother ye are right yll come  
to me for al the harme that we haue  
suffered: cometh thozouge cause of  
you. I am sorry that ye be not dead &  
goten wthin the prison, for ye haue  
well deserued it. Madame sayd Rey-  
nawde, let that alone I pray you, for  
he shal not dye þ I maye. For I  
haue doone to him homage, wher-  
fore I ought to obey hym, and how  
beit he hath wrought ful yll agaynst

The booke of the four

vs: yet shall I never be forsworne a-  
gainst him, whā his brethern heard  
him speake thus: they sayde to hym,  
brother ye speake well & wysely, &  
ye doo that ye ought to doo, nor ye  
shall never be rebuked of vs for it,  
doo theri as it pleasest you, and af-  
ter these wordes: they Went on their  
Waye.

**S**o longe went these knyghtes  
that they came out of þ caue,  
and found themselfe at the wood of  
the serpent eyn at the spryng of the  
day, & as soone as they were yssued  
out of the sayd caue they were so sca-  
ped fro Charlemayne: yonnet than  
the lytle sonne of Reynawde swou-  
ned there for great hungry. And whā  
Reynawde sawe that: he was ryght  
sori for it, and tooke hym vp and said  
Fayre sonne I praye you be a good  
cheere, for we shall haue soone meat  
great plentie. And whan he had said  
this: he tooke his other sonne Iymo  
in his armes and recomforted hym  
muche. And whan Reynawde had  
doone so: he looked abouthe him and  
knew well whare they were, and he  
sayd to his bretheri. Lordes me se-  
meth that we ben nyghe the hermy-  
tage of my good freende Bernarde,  
þy sayd Alarde yec saye trouþ, but  
what shall we doo? Brother sayde  
Reynawde. I coulþ for þ moſte pro-  
fytale that we go there, and we ſhal  
abide there tyll the nyght be come, &  
than we ſhall take our way towarie  
Ardene, for I coulþ not that wee  
goe bi day, and alſo it cannot be, but  
the heremite ſhall haue ſome meate,  
whiche we ſhall gyue vnto my wife

and vnto my chyldren. Brother ſaſ  
Alarde by my faythe ye ſpeakē well  
and wysely. And than they put them  
ſelue to the Way, and they had gone  
but a little: that they founde the herem-  
ite, but as they Went al thorou  
ghe the wood of the ſerpent: they de-  
parted the one fro the other as wilde  
beaſtes eatyng the herbes and graſ-  
ſes as it had ben apples or peices,  
ſo great hungry they had. And whan  
that Reynawde ſaw this: he was ſo  
ſty and called them agayne and ſayd,  
Lordes ye doo not wel for to ſepare  
thus the one from the other. For it  
might lightli turne vs to dommage  
I pray you that euerye man call o-  
ther and gather your ſelue together,  
& let vs goe into the hermytage. For  
we shall fynde there Bernarde that  
ſhall make vs good cheere I wote it  
wel. And whā they were come there:  
Reynawde knocked at þ gate. And  
whan Bernarde hearde it: he came  
anon and ſaw Reynawde and hys  
folke, wherof he was ryght glad, &  
came and kyſſed Reynawde. And af-  
ter he ſayd vnto him, Fayre lord ye  
be ryght welcome, of whens come  
you, and howe is it with you? My  
freende Bernarde ſayde than Reyna-  
wde. Wyt it that I haue lēt myna  
herytance by fyne forſe of hungry  
and ſo I goe vnto Ardeyne. For I  
can vnone otherwile doo at this time  
And I pray you that þ yec haue an  
meat: that ye for goddes ſake wyl  
gyue it to my wyfe, and to my chy-  
ldren. For they ben ſo ſore famylid  
that they dñe for hungry, but þ they  
haue ſome meate.

Whan

**W**han Bernarde understoode these wordes of Reynawde: he had of hym great piti for the distresse wherin he saw Reynawde and hys folke. And of the other parte he was glad whan he wiste that they were scaped out of the daungers of Charlemayne, and anon he wente to the duchesse and sayd to her, madame ye be ryght welcome. I pray you doubt nothing. For ye be atryued in a good place, to take yowre rest at yowre ease. And than he wente into the Chambre, and brought out bread and wine and all suche as god had sente hym. And after he set hi beside Reynawde and sayd to him Lorde take a woxth suche vitaples as God hath gryuen to me, therer they ben. I shal giue you meate in despite of Charlemayne. Gramercy sayd Reynawde, hecre be good tidinges for vs, but whan the nyght is come: wee shall goe to Ardeyne. For I doubt soze that Charlemayne shall aperceyue that we be departed. For yf God graunt me yf I may bryng me and my compayne to Ardeyne: I shal not set a rotyn apple for all the powter of Charlemain for I shall well defende me agaynst hym. Soz sayde the hermyte ye saye well. I pray god that he wyl fulfil your wyl. All that daye soioured Reynawde and his folke wylt Bernarde the Heremite, the Wyche serued, and comforstod them with al hys power, and also he gaue of the Dres of hys alle to Bayarde as muche as he myght eate. And whan the nyght was come: Reynawde wolde depart and bad fare well to the Heremite, and whan the Heremyte sawe that

they wolde goe away: he founde the meanes that they had thre horses, wherof the duchesse had the one, and the children had the other tweyne. And thus Reynawde wylt hys felawshyp went on theyz way so lōge that they came to Ardeyne. And whā they of the Litie Wyke that theyz Lorde was come yf they had desyred so longe: they were well glad & came agaynst hym in fayre company, and receyued hym honourably, and conueyed him vnto the fortresse, & after they went & made feast through all the towne, lyke as god had deseeded there, for greate Joye that they had of theyz Lorde Reynawd. And whan the Barons of the lande wylt that theyz Lorde Reynawde and his brethern were come to Ardeyne: they were glad, and came soone to se him, and to hym they made reurence.

**B**ut hecre leaueth the historye to speake of Reynawde and of hys bretherne, his Wyke and hys children yf were in ardeyne wel at case, for their great hunger was caised, and shal retorne to speake of Charlemayne and of his xii. peers for to shew how he entred into Mountawban after that Reynawde was departed.

**H**ow Charlemayn after yf he had besyeged Mountawban & had famished Reynawde & his brethern: knew that they were gone, & had habanded the place, & were gone to Ardeyne he wente there and besieged them a gayne, but or euer he had ryght hys syge, Reynawd, & his brethern made an issue vpon him & his folke, & slew many of them. And tooke prysoner Rycharde the duke of Normandye.



**I**n this party shewed the histo-  
ry that whan the kyng Char-  
lemaigne was at y siege before Mou-  
ntawban soz an angecd y he coulde  
not take Reynawd nor his brethern.  
Now it happed upon a day y Char-  
lemaigne rode nigh the Castell soz  
to y wt how they bare them self with  
in Mountawban. And whan he was  
nigh he looked up to the walles and  
saw no body that was there, as thei  
were wonke soz to be. And whan  
he saw that he was abashed of it, &  
came to the paulyon, and sente In-  
continent soz all hys barons. And  
whan thei were come he said to the  
Lordes it is wel nycge eyghe dayes  
age, y I saw no body vpon the wal-  
les of Mountawban. Wherfore  
I beleue that all thei of it be dead.

Sy, sayde the Duke Maymes, it  
were good that men wyt the trou-  
the of it: sende therethy if it please  
you. whan Carlemayne hearde  
thys: he lyghted anon on horsbacke  
and all hys Barons wyt hym, &  
went to Mountawban. And whan  
they were come vnto the gate they  
made semblaunte to giue a salut to  
the Castell, but Reynawde was soz  
fere to defede it. And than Char-  
lemaigne wende verelye that Rey-  
nawde and all hys had ben dead soz  
hungre & great distresse, he made to  
be brought therethy a longe ladder  
and righted it to the walles. And in-  
continent Rowlande mounted vp  
fyrst of all, and after hym Ogier, O-  
liuer, and the Duke Maymes. And  
whan they were vpon y walles: thei

behelde withyn, and they saw nother man nor woman, and so they wente downe from the walles, and yede & opened the gate, and made Charlemayne hearde to come in and all his folke. But wyt it that Charlemayne wet in as angry as any man myght bee. And whan he was within & founde no body: he was so sore merueyed that he wylt not what he shoulde say nor doo. So wente he vp to the dungeon and he founde therre no bodye, wherof he was more meruayled tha he was afore, and than he began to say. By my soule Lordes heere is great meruayles and wel the deuylles Werke. Wyt it that Reynawde is gone and all hys bretherne, and all hys folke also. And all this hath doon that theef Hawgys that hath ben here within, for it can none other wylle be.

**A**fter that Charlemayne had sayd these wordes: he began to walke within the Castell sekynge all aboue to see yf he myght finde Reynawde or any of his bretherne. And so longe he wente thus heere & therre that he founde the waye there as they went out, & whan the kyng Charlemayne saw the caue: he was sore abashed with it and called Ogyer the dane & sayd to him. Ogyer heere is the waye wherethroughhe traytours are gone a waye, and all this hath doone me Hawgys. For he hath made this caue in despite of me wherof he maketh my hert to breke in my bely. Syz sayd the duke Raymes, ye blame Hawgys, but thys caue sheweth not that it had beyn,

made this hundred yeres passed, and I tell you for certayne that sarasins made it firste. Whan Charlemayne hearde these wordes: he beganne to smite with an angri face, and cursed them that made the laue, and was mervayloussly an angred, for he knew wel that Reynawde and all his company were gone out at the same hole and so he was dismayed of his purpose, he sayd then to his folke. Now goe lightly in, & seke wherethis hole bringeth men unto, for I shal not be at mine easse tyl I know it. And whan Rowland vnderstode Charlemaine: he put hym selfe Wythin the Laue, and made lyght a great many of torches for to see in it, and after Rowlande went plentic of frenche men that folo wed hym, and they went so longe til they came at the ende of the caue, & founde themself in the woode of the Serpente. And whan Rowlande was come out of the caue: he looked aboue for to knowe wheres they were but he coulde not hymself know it, & than he sayd to his folke, Lordes me semeth that for to goe any farther for to seke after Reynawde it were but foly: for he knoweth wel the countrey and we wot not where to goe. Syz sayd his felawes ye say wel, therfore let vs returne to Charlemayne your uncle for to tell hym what we haue founde Wythin thys Laue.

**W**han Rowlande and his felawes were accorded: they returned that waye that they were come. And whan the kyng sawe them come out agayne: he asked of

3.iii. them

The booke of the four

them what they had founde, and yf  
they had found any pssur to goc out  
of the laue. Hyz sayde Rowlad yea  
Without anye sayle. Wit that Reyna  
wude and his folke are scaped you  
and they haue Bayarde with them  
for heere ye may see the path. And  
Whan the king Charlemayne knew  
the trouth how Reynawde and hys  
company were gone: he was so great  
ly an angred þ none might be more,  
and the same houte he sent his mes  
sangers in all his landes and coun  
treis for to Wit yf he might vnder  
stante any tidinges where Reynawde  
and his brethern were become. And  
whan he had doone thys: he comau  
ded that his hoste shold dyslodge, &  
that they shold come all to Mounta  
wban. And whan þ barons heard  
the king: they did his comaunder  
ment, and came al to Mountawban  
& lodged them as wel as they could,  
& abode wel there six dayes making  
great Joye that Reynawde and hys  
bretherne were thus expelled out of  
it. And as the barons were deuising  
wythin Mountawban there came a  
messanger tofore Charlemayne, and  
salued him as to him appeteyned,  
and to him he said in this wise. Sir  
Wyt it that I haue seene Reynawde  
Alarde, Gutcharde, and Rycharde le  
dynge great toye with great compa  
ny of knyghtes, keping a great cour  
te within the citie of Ardeyne, where  
as Reynawde gryueth great gyftes  
to every one. And I am soze meruey  
led wher he hath gotten so greate  
treasur. And also is there with him  
the kyng þon of gascogne and that  
more is I tell you for certayne that

Reynawde hath made a great asse  
ble of folke for to defend hym agaist  
you if ye go in any wise for to assaile  
hym.

**T**he kinge was muche angry  
whā he heard his messanger:  
so lware he by saynt denis he shold  
neuer lye in no bed tyll he had besye  
ged Ardeyne. And whan he sayd so:  
he comaundered to his barons that  
eury mā shold trusse his baggage  
and they shold take on theyz way  
streyght to Ardeyne. And whan the  
barons heard Charlemayne speake  
so: they tooke on theyz way without  
any more tarrynge towarde Ardein  
and rode so longe tyll that they cam  
to mountayn weyl, þ was not ferre  
from Ardeyne, for men might see  
from thens the stples of the towne  
There was lodged the hoste of char  
leayne that nyght, and I promise  
he did doo make good Watche, for  
doubt of the fourt sonnes of Aymon  
And whā the day was come Charle  
mayne did set his folke in godordes  
naunce, & with his baner dysplayed  
they rode to Warde Ardeyne. And  
whan Reynawde wylt that Charle  
mayne was come for to besiege them  
wythin Ardeyn: he began to lware  
þ he shold not let him besieged as he  
had doone within Mountawban.  
For rather he wolde fight w<sup>t</sup> Char  
leayne. And if it may so falle that  
he come in his handes: he shall not  
haue pitie of him as he had tofore  
cyme bycause he had founde him so  
cruell and without pitie. Brother  
sayde then Rycharde now I see you  
speakelike a knyght, and by þ sayth  
that

that I owe vnto you I promise you  
þ or euer Charlemayne shall besiege  
vs: I shall slea more than an hundred  
of his folke, and but þt god fayle vs  
We shall doo suche a thing that shal  
be to the great hurt & dyspleasure  
of hym, wherof he shalbe sorry all the  
dayes of his life. For he is not mas-  
tered like a gencilma. For the more  
that he is prayed the leſſe he dooth.  
Brother sayd Alarde ye speake wel  
and honestlie. And I shall con you  
thanke for it as longe as I lyue.

**Y**E ought to wyt þ whan Reynawde saw Charlemayne com-  
for to besiege him with a greate pu-  
issaunce of folke, he was nothing ab-  
ashed with it, but he made inconti-  
nent bondy his good horne to be blo-  
wen, and made his folke to be arry-  
ued redely that were in great num-  
bre and made them issue out of the  
litle. And whan his army was as-  
sembled in the feeldes: it was a noble  
chynge for to see, and than he ordeyned  
hyſ batayles bi good ordenaunce  
as a wise fighter. And after he had  
doone so he cailed his brethern and  
sayde to them. My fayre bretherne  
this daye is the day that we shal die  
or els doo so muche that we shall  
bringe the warre at an ende. Wher-  
fore I pray you þ every of þs shew  
him selfe a good knyght, for in you  
is all my trusse, and so I promise  
you that I haue leuer di worthely in  
batayle, than for to be hanged shan-  
fully as theſe my brethern I praye  
you come all nigh me. For I Wyll  
that we ben the fyft that ſmitte vpon

our enemies. Brother sayde Alarde  
we ſhall doo your commaundement  
doubt ye not of it, and go forth whā  
ye wyll, and whā they were ſo agreed  
Reynawde did chooſe an hundred & the  
best knyghtes of his felyſhip, and ſayde to them. Sirs I praye  
you that ye Wyll be wytch me in the  
fyſte batayle, and ye ſhall doo me  
greate honoure. Sir ſayde the kny-  
ghtes, we ſhall gladlye doo your com-  
maundement, and we ſhall not leue  
you as longe as life is in vs, and ſo  
we thanke you of the greate worlshyp  
that ye doo call vs in your company  
for ye knowe well that we canne  
not fare amys as longe as we be  
wyth you.

**R**han Reynawde had or-  
deyned Wel hys batayles  
he made none other tary-  
enge, but wente the formeſt of all, þ  
ſheelde at the necke, and the ſpere in  
the fyſt & was mounted vpon Bay-  
arde, that beheld proudly about him  
makyng greate noyſe. And then  
Reynawde gaue him the ſpurre, and  
went fayre vpon the folke of the  
kyng Charlemayne, and whan  
Charlemayne ſaw Bayarde com-  
yng that made ſo greate bruyte, and  
Reynawde vpon his backe þ cam in  
ſo fayre ordenaunce; he was ſore ab-  
ashed of it, and ſayd in him ſelf. O  
good Lord, and wherē the Deuyll  
haue all redy had the foure Sonnes  
of Aymon ſo many folke as I ſe here  
now come with them. I beleue that  
it is ſome deuyllis werke, for I had

not

The booke of the four

not left many with them late a goe.  
And now Reynawde is so puissant  
that he feareth me no thyng. But I  
promise god all this shal not auayle  
hym no thyng, but I shal doo iustice  
vpon hym and his brethern or ought  
longe. And than he made his bataile  
to set in ordeneance in the best wyse  
that he coulde, and lighted on horse  
backe for to come syght wryth Rey-  
nawde. And whan the Duke Raymes  
saw that Charlemayn was so  
mad þ he wylde goe fight with Rey-  
nawde, he went to hym & sayde syr,  
What is that ye will doo? I pro-  
myle you it were greate folye for to  
fight wryth these folke, & it were bet-  
ter that ye made peace w Reynawde.  
For I am sure that Reynawde shal  
doo all þ ye wil comande him, and  
I tell you wel þ if we fight wryth hym  
that ye shall see manye knyghtes to  
trayle theyz bowelles thordough the  
feilde, wherof it shalbe great harme  
to the one party, and to the other.  
And such shall þ losse be that it shal  
not be recouered agayne. Raymes  
sayd the kynge Charlemayne let vs  
alone, for I shal doo none other wise  
for no man that liueþ, I shalld ra-  
ther let me to be dismembred. And  
whan the Duke Raymes had vnder-  
stante his wordes, he was ful soray-  
of it and left his speaking therof, &  
from that houre Charlemayne deli-  
bered hymselfe for to syght, and al-  
wayes he rode forth in great wrach.

**A**nd whan Reynawde saþe  
that the two hostes were ap-  
prached sore nigh the thone the other,  
as to hande and hâde: he sayd to his

brother Rychard that was next hym,  
I wil go speake wryth the king Char-  
lemyne for to wryt of hym þ he wil  
pardon and take vs vnto hyms grace  
for þ he wylde doo so: I shalld doo  
entierly all his wil and pleasure as  
to our souerayne lorde. By godbro-  
ther sayd then Rychard, yee be not  
worthe a botell of heþ, for the herre  
is all redy fayled in your bely. Goe  
forth mischaift sayd then Reynawde  
thou wot not what thou sayest. For  
I Wyll go there no man shall keep  
me thereto, & if he recuseth the peace  
whan I shal axe it of hym: I shalld  
make myne auowe to god that I  
shall neuermore require him therof.  
Brother sayd Alarðe ye say wel and  
wisely, go there hardy and doo ther-  
in your wyll. And than Reynawde  
made none other delapinge, but he  
smote Bayarde wryth the spoutes,  
and went incontinent towarde the  
kynge Charlemayne, & sayd than to  
hym. Syr for gods mercy suffre it ic  
be your pleasure that we haue peace  
and accorded wryth you, þ this warre  
that hath lasted so longe maye kin-  
she, and that your wrach be put awaie  
from vs if it please you, and I shalld  
be redy to doo all that ye Wyll, and  
also I shalld gyue you Bayarde my  
good horse. Than sayd the kynge to  
hym, goe fro me false glocon, the de-  
uyll speed thee, for al the worlde shal  
not conne keep thee but I shalld sles  
thee. Syr sayd Reynawde ye shalnot  
doo so, and god wryl, for I shalld de-  
fend me well. And witte sich that ic  
is com to this: ye shal not be spared  
of vs, but we shalld doo the wroste þ  
we can. Since knyghtes sayde the  
kynge

Kynge Charlemayne, I shall never  
praye you if this euil gloton scape  
me uo w. And whā that Reynawde  
lave thys: he sayde. **S**yr kinge of  
Fraunce I defie you, and soorthwith  
he spurred Bayarde, and ranne with  
his spere vpon a knyght, whiche he  
smote so harde in the brest that he o-  
uerthrew hym dead vnto the erthe.  
And after that he went agayne vnto  
his folke. And whan that the kynge  
Charlemayne saw this: he cried whan  
hye boyce smite knyghtes now shall  
they ben discomfyted.

**T**han whan Rowland hearde  
the kynge Charlemayne crie  
thus: he spurred his horse and went  
after Reynawde, & also many other  
knyghtes, but they ouer cooke hym  
not. Whā Rycharde saw his brother  
come: he came hym agaynst & sayde  
to him. Brother what tidinges bring  
you: shal wee haue peace or warre?  
Brother sayd Reynawde let vs doo  
the best that wee can doo, for peace  
we shal not haue. Brother sayd then  
Rycharde god blesse you for the tidinges  
that ye bryng, for I thynke to  
doo this day such a chyng, wher-  
of king Charlemayne shalbe angry.  
Brother said Reynawde I pray you  
that ye shewe yourselve vertuous &  
stronge agaynst our enemyes. Whan  
the king Charlemayne saw that it  
was time to set vpon him he called  
hastely the duke Raymes and sayde  
to hym. Raymes holde my Dritlam  
and thynke for to smite Wel and ba-  
llauntly as a worthy knyght ought  
for to doo at eyther hande in keeping  
my worship, and herof I praye you

hastely. **S**yr sayd the duke Raymes  
ye need not for to pray me, for I am  
bōude for to doo the same, but it grie-  
ueth me that ye haue not done other  
wise, that is for to say that ye shoulde  
haue graunted to the peace, for the  
warre hath lasted to longe. **R**aymes  
I commaunde you that ye speake no  
more theroft vnto me, for while I liue  
they shall haue no peace with me.  
**S**yr sayd the Duke Raymes I am  
sory for it. Now let see what ye shall  
doo, for I goe to batayle syt of all,  
and looke that ye folow me yf ye will  
for I shal pac me in such a place  
wherof ye shalve soye metuayled, &  
not without a cause, for theri nys  
no man so colde, but he shoulde soone  
get herte there within a litle whyle,  
Now folow that wyll.

**H**ad whan Reynawde saw þ  
Dritlam of Fraunce come:  
he broched Bayarde wþ the spates,  
and ranne amoung the thickest,  
and smote a knyght so harde that he  
cast hym downe vnto the erthe. And  
after he turned him toward his folke  
& chered the honestly, & than wente  
agayne vpon his enemyes, and of  
theri he ouerthrew foure one after  
an other, and vpon the fyfth he brake  
his spere into two pecces, and hur-  
ted hym ryght soye, and anon he set  
hande to flamberge his good swerde  
and smote a knyght withall vpon  
his helme so great stroke that he cle-  
ued him vnto the harde teeth, and  
forth with he smote another with su-  
che strengþ that he made ffe þ head  
from the body of hym. And after þ  
he had doone these two strokes: he  
ctyed

### The booke of the four

raped Ardeyn as he could for to reloyle his folke, and whā he had cryed so he layd to them. Now vpon them good knyghtes, for this day we shal auenge the great shame þ Charlemayne hath doone to vs so longe wþout any reason. And whan A. Lard, Guycharde & Rycharde heard Reynawde speake thus: they ranne vpon theyz enemies by luche a maner that eache of thē ouerthrew. vñ. knyghtes at þ enpraynte, who that had be there than he shoulde haue sene great faytes of armes doone of the four sonnes of Aymon, for after þ they were ones assembled together: the folke of the kynge Charlemayne myght not endure afore them. For Reynawde and hys brethern wente in synynge at eyther hande, and felled theyz enemies downe sterke dead as beastes, so that the moste part of thē were slayne or dyscomfited.

**W**han the kynge Charlemaine sawe the great dommage that the four sonnes of Aymon bare to him: he was right soze an angred for it. And wþ the great wrath he wente and ranne vpon the folke of Reynawde and smote a knyght so vengeably that he cast hym downe dead to the erth, and brake his speare all in peces. And after he tooke his swerd in his hande, wherof he did mervayles of armes, so muche that his folk prayled hym for it, for he bare hym selfe there valyaunt and stronge. And wþt that this meruaylous batayle was so crucil that it was great pytic for to see. ¶ It is crouth þ Rowland was aferde for his uncle char-

lemayne that he shoulde be ouerthrew. We whā he saw him in þ prese, wherfore he went anon vñghe him, and so dyd Oliver, Ogier and all the xii. peers for to keep þ he shoulde haue no harine. And whan the great batayles were assēbled the one against the other: þe shoulde haue seen there a sharpe and a heaþy batayle so that it was picie for to see, for syn þ Rowlande, Oliver and all the xii. peers of Fraunce were come in the medle: they began to make so great slaughter of the folke of Reynawde þ they made them leaue the place. And whā Reynawde and his brethern saw þ: they medled them so sharpli among the frenche men þ euery man made them waye, for they caught no man but they threwhym dead to the erth so muche that there was nothynge but it trembled afore them, þe ought to wþt that from the houre of pryme vnto the houre of noonc endured this morsall batayle, that noone wþt who shoulde haue the better of it. But whan noone was passed: the folke of Reynawde begannen to wþthdawen themselfe, for they myght no more. And for to saye the trouth of the folke of Reynawde wþdrew them: they were not to be blaſmed for it, for Charlemayne had fourt tymes moe folke than Reynawde beside þ xii. peers that were luche knyghtes as men wel knewe. But this that the folke of Reynawde dyd: was for the good ensample that they sawe in Reynawde & in his brethern. And whan the noble knyght perceyued that hys folke wþdrewen themselfe: he came to hym that bare his

his standarde and sayde to hym. My creende ride towarde Ardeyne in the wyllest wile that ye can, for this day we haue fought wylght soze, and it is tyme that we goe rest ourselfe. Syr sayde the knyght I shall well doo your commaundement, and incontinen-  
t he tooke his way to warde Ar-  
deyn. And than Reynawde called his  
brethern and sayde to them, let vs be  
behinde for to keep our folke, for o-  
ther wylle we are lost. Brother sayde  
Rycharde doubt not, for as longe as  
god giueth lyfe to you & to Bayard:  
we need not feare nothynge.

**W**han Charlemayne saw that Reynawde and all his com-  
pany was gone: he cryed wylth a hye  
voyce, nowe after Lordes after for  
nowben they dyscomfyted. But this  
word of Charlemayne was cause  
that many a woxthy knyght lost his  
lyfe. For luche dyd folow after Rey-  
nawde that payed decretely forit. For  
Reynawde and his bretherne lewe  
more than an hundred that folowed  
after them. And wolde Charlemain  
dy no. Reynawde and his bretherne  
entred agayne wylth their folke with  
in Ardeyne. And ye muste kno wyl-  
th Rycharde the brother of Reynawde:  
Justed with Rycharde the Duke of  
Normandye by the gate of Ardeyne  
as they wold haue entred in. And  
there the Duke was overthowen,  
the whiche was taken prisoner by  
Rycharde the brother of Reynawde,  
and brought him into the Cittie maw-  
gre the folke of Charlemayne. And  
Whan Reynawde and all the folke  
were within Ardeyne: he made the

gates to be shet. And after went, and  
ysacmed the for to take some easse.  
For they had well need therof.

**Y** E ought to wit wylth Char-  
leayne saw that the fourt son-  
nes of Aymon had sauied them self,  
and that thei had taken Rycharde the  
Duke of Normandye prisoner that  
was one of the xii. peers: he was so  
angrye that no man can be more,  
for he feared soze lest Reynawde  
should make to dye Rychard of noz  
mandye, and whan he sawe that he  
migh: doo none other: he commaund-  
ed that the Cittie shold be besieged  
of all sydes, the whiche thing was in-  
contynent doone as he commaunded  
And than sware Charlemayne that  
he shold never leue his syge unto  
the tyme that he had taken the Cittie  
and the fourt sonnes of Aymon to  
be hanged shamefully. Syr sayd Ro-  
lande ye know that I am he wylth  
hath hurted the fourt sonnes of Aymon,  
nor never I speake to you of  
peace bewene you and them, but frō  
hence foorth reason comandeth me  
wylth I shold speke & moue thereto.  
Syr ye know well that it is a go. xv  
yeres and more that ye haue warred  
wylth the fourt sonnes of Aymon, &  
we had alwaies wylth worse of the warre  
and not wylthout a cause, for Rey-  
nawde & his bretherne are valiaunt  
knights, nor they be not to be lyghte-  
ly brought to dyscomfiture. And I  
promise you wylth I haue warred so long  
wylth the sarasyns as ye haue doone  
wylth the fourt sonnes of Aymon: ye  
should haue be lordes of wylth moste part  
of them, whiche had be to you more

Woz:

## The booke of the fourre

Worshyp and lesse dommage, & worse  
is: ye know howe Richardc of Noz-  
mandy one of the best knigthes that  
ye had: is taken, and ys other wile it  
happeth to hym than well: it shall be  
to you great dyshonour and blame.  
For therof ye shall see all Fraunce in  
a roze and trouble, but if ye put som  
reinedy thereto, & I tell you if I were  
in the case that Reynawde is in: I  
should lea hym. Byth that I mighte  
haue no peace wyth you. Wherfore  
lys ys ye wyl beleue me for your ho-  
nour and for your profit: ye shal sed  
Wordc to Reynawde that he deluyer  
you agayne Rycharde of Nozman-  
dye all armed vpon his horse, and ye  
shall make peace wyth hym, and I  
promise you lys he shall doo it glad-  
ly wyth all that ye wyl commaunde  
hym and so shall all hys brethern also.  
Rowland sayd than the king, wil  
re say any thing more. Nay lys sayd  
Rowlande. And I sweare you vpon  
my fayth that the fourre sonnes of  
Aymon shall never haue peace with  
me, and so I tel you y I feare me not  
for Rycharde of Nozmandy, for Rey-  
nawde shold rather put out bothe  
his owne eyen tha that he durst doo  
to Rycharde any harme vpon his b-  
dy. And whan þ barons heard Char-  
lemaigne speake so: the teares began  
to fal downe fro theyz eyen for great  
feare that Rycharde of Nozmandye  
theyz Peere shold haue any harme.  
After all these chynges Reynawde  
and his bretherne were wþthin Ar-  
deyne making great Joy. And after  
they were all out of theyz harneys:  
Reynawde ordeyned good Watche  
vpon the walles of the Littie. And

than he made come the duke Richarde  
de of Nozmandy afore hym, & sayde  
to him in thys maner. Duke richard  
ye know wel that the king dith great  
wþonge for to trouble vs so as he  
hath doone, and yet dooth withoute  
any resonable cause. And therfore I  
tell you for certayne, but ys that ye  
make vs to haue peace: thinke not  
to lyue onye lenger, for I shall doo  
smyte of your head and your body to  
be hewed in fourre quarters. Sic said  
the duke Rycharde of Nozmandye, I  
am in your daunger, so maye ye doo  
of me your pleasure. Ye haue taken  
me by warre, and none otherwyse: ys  
ye doo to me other wylle than ye ou-  
ght of ryght of warre, ye shall haue  
dyshonour for euer more. And so I  
wyll wel that ye know that as long  
as I liue: I shall not fayle Charle-  
maigne for no feare of death. Whan  
Reynawde hearde Rycharde of Noz-  
mandye speake thus: he restrainyd  
a lytle his wrathe, and than he com-  
maundyd þ he shold be put in prongs  
within his chabres, and þ he shoud  
be well kept and curteysly, and that  
he be well serued of that appetey-  
neth to hys estate. Than was the  
Duke Rycharde all thus in prison:  
but he was well serued of all good  
meatys, and he had good compayne  
for to playe to what game that he  
wold. And also the good Duchesse  
clare dyd vysite him often, and rec-  
oþted hym with her sayre langage.

**W**han Charlemaigne had beset  
the Cteie connde aboue  
and sawe that by no salwyng, he  
myght not get it: he dyd doo make  
manc

many great engynes for to cast stones in, but what somuer y he dyd; Reynawde and his brethren and also his folke issued out often, as well by night as by day vpon the folke of the king Charlemayne, and did him great damage, for Reyna Wde tooke no man but he kepe him prisoner, for to see yf he myght haue peace Wyth Charlemayne, by meanes of them. And whyle that Charlemayne had layde his siege thus af ore Ardeyne: the king Pon of gascogne fell sick of a great sickenes, & shose hym of al his sinnes praying god to haue pitie and mercy on hym, and after he had be longe sycke he died. God pardon hys soule. And wyt that Reynawde made hym be buryed wypfully, as to a kinge percteyneth, but there was no man that wept for hym, for all they of the Littie hated

hym, bycause of the grete treason y he had doone to the toure sonnes of Aymon. ¶ Now leueth the historye to speake of this mater, & returueneth to speake of Maugis that was in his hermitage y serued our lord w good herte, so muche that he had for gotten Reynawde, his brethren & hys frendes.

¶ Now Maugis he beyng in hys hermytage, came in hym a wyll by a vysyon y he had by nyght in a slepe for to go see Reynawde & his brethren. And how he met with two marchantes that vnt heues had robbed in a wood, of whiche theue the sayde Maugis new syuc, & deliuered to the Marchantes all theyz good agayne. And after this he went to Ardeyne for to see Reynawde, and his brethren.



**D**ow sheweth the historye that whan Maugis was in his hermitage, & had watched so longe about hys prayers to God: he fell a

slepe, and him semed in his slepe that he was at Mounte Urban and sawe Reynawde and his brethren y came agaynst him, and made theyz com-

playnt

The booke of the fourre

playnt to hym of Charlemayne that  
wolde take fro them the good horse  
Bararde, but Reynalde had hym  
fast by the byrdle, and Wolde not let  
it goe. And wit it that Hawgys had  
so great sorow in his dreame: that he  
a woke withall al wrothe, and arose  
on his feete incontinent. And than  
he sware our Lord he shold never  
crasse to goe till he had seen Reyna-  
nde and his brethen his good co-  
lyns. And whan Hawgys had said  
so: he made none other taryng, but  
he shet the doore of his chapeell, and  
ooke his weede and his staffe, and  
went on his waye also soone as he  
myght. And about þourre of noone  
he founde hymselfe in a great wood  
where he founde two men makyng  
cuyll cheere and great sorow, & whā  
Hawgys sawe them: he cam to the  
and sayde: God be with you. And one  
of them answered and sayd, certes  
god is not with vs: but rather the de-  
uyll, for unhappy was that houre þ  
euer we came into this wood, for we  
ben vndoone for cuer. Good Syrs  
sayde Hawgys What eylent you þ  
ye speake so. Good man sayd þ one  
of the two, a little before you, are the-  
nes þ hach robbed vs of our clothe  
and haue slayne one of our felawes  
bycause he speake to them angrely.  
Whan Hawgys heard these pooze  
marchauntz speke thus: he had great  
pitie of them and sayd to them. My  
freendes come with me, I shal pray  
the theenes in our Lordes behalfe þ  
they wyl deliuer you agayne your  
goodes, and þt they wyl not doo it: I  
shall be wrothe with the, & so I shall

fight wþ the wel as I can wþ my staffe  
for to wit þt theyr headez ben soft or  
hard. whan the marchauntz hearde  
Hawgys say so: they begant to looke  
vpon hym if they could know him,  
but they myght not knowe what he  
was. Then spake to hym one of the  
in this maner, and What deuyll is  
that þt say: thou art but a man alo-  
ne all naked and they ben all armē  
and also þt can scantlie haue vp  
your staffe. Let this foole alone sayd  
that other, see ye not how his eyen  
goe in his head: And than they sayd  
to Hawgys. Brother go thy wayes  
and let vs in peace, or els I shal giue  
thee such a stroke wþ this same stafe  
þ thou shalt keele it well. And whan  
Hawgys saw the marchaunt speke  
thus to him: he sayde. Brother thou  
dooste not wel to speake to me so, for  
by force thou cannot get ought of  
me. And thus departed Hawgys  
from the marchauntz, & went his  
way so muche þ he ouertooke þ the-  
enes and sayd to them. Lordes God  
sauie you. I pray you tell me whye ye  
take a way þ goods from these mar-  
chauntz: ye know well þt it is not  
yours, wherfore I pray you let the  
haue agayne theyr goodes and their  
marchandise, & god shal come yow  
thank. Whan þ theenes heard maw-  
gis speake to them thus: they were  
angry for it. And behelde vpon maw-  
gis from ouer the shoulter as he had  
be a Sarasyn. Thenne spake the  
Master of the Theenes and sayde  
þt to Hawgys. Go away hoxel on  
or els I shall gyue thee such a stro-  
ke with my foote that I shall breke the

the heire within thy bely. And whan Hawgis heard this and knew that the theues feared nother god nor hys mother: he was ryght an angred, & heured vp his palniers stafe & smote the mayster cheefe with al vpon his head so stronglye that he caste hym downe dead to the grotide. And wha the other theues saw their mayster dead: they ranne all to Hawgys to haue killed hym, but Hawgys areched them so with his stafe that he slewfve of them within a litle while and than the other tweyne began to flee away through the wood. And whan Hawgys saw that they forsooke the place: he followed them not but cryed vpon them. Ha false theues turne agayn for to deliuer your cheefe whare ye tooke it. And whan the Marchauntes hearde Hawgys crye thus: they came incontinent to Warde hym, and they found that the theues that had robbed them were dead. And than they sayd the one to the other, heere is a good pylgrym. I ween it is my lorde saynt Martin

C. 150 And whan the marchauntes saw this that Hawgys had doone: they were right glad of it. So came they to warde Hawgys and kneeled before hym and cryed merc y of that they had said to him. Lordes sayd Hawgys yf ye gaue me greate wordes: so dyd the theues muche more. For they called me rybaude cruant and hoxeson, but they haue bought it right deere as ye may see. & I am right sorry that two of them are scaped from me. Stande vp thā gtake with you your goodes agayn

and god be with you, but I pray you tell me or ye go yf ye wot not, where is Charlemayne. Syr sayd the marchauntes, we wot wel that Charles maine hath taken Houawban, but we promyse you he hath not yet taken none of the fourt scunes of Aymon: for they were gone out wth their folke through a caue vnder the walles of the Castel vnto the Cittie of Ardeyn where as they ben now. And Charlemayne hath layde there his syege afore them, & will not make no peace with Reynawode nor wth his bresthern. Lettes sayd Hawgys I am sorry for the, for they ben good knyghtes and true. whan Hawgys vnder stoode that Charlemayne had besyeged Reynawode within Ardeyn: he comended the marchauntes to God & tooke his way towarde Ardeyn, and so muche he went that he came into the hoste of Charlemayne, and went streyght towarde the Cittie, & made semblaunt to be soze feble, for he weare lenynghe vpon his stafe. And whan the folke of the kyng Charlemayne saw Hawgys goe thus: they looke soze vpon him and sayd thone to the other, that pylgrym is lyke for to goe ferre, he cannot stande vpon his feete. By my othe sayd another it might well be Hawgys that is so drsgrysed, for to dyscleyue hym. It is not so said þ other. Hawgys is not aline. And while þ thei deuised thus together: Hawgys came neare to þ wicket of the gate, and founde the meanes that he gat in anon. And whan he was within Ardeyn he w<sup>t</sup> vnto the þalars, whare he founde

p. 11. Reynawode

The booke of the soure

Reynawde and the duchesse his wife  
and bothe theyz children Aymonee  
and Yonnet, and their uncles his co-  
sins, w a great meyny of noble kni-  
ghtes that were all at theyz meate.  
Dohan Hawgys had looked a while  
Upon them, he lened agaynst a pillet  
that was in the middes of the halle  
afore Reynawde. Than began he to  
ooke agayne vpon his sayze colyns  
þ he loued so muche aboue all thinge  
of the worlde. And whan the Mar-  
shall of the halle saw Hawgys, we-  
ning to him þ it had be a poore here-  
mite, he commaunded that he shold  
beservid of his dinner for Goddes  
sake. And whan Hawgys sawe the  
meat that was brought him, he said  
my lordes I beseeche you for the loue  
of God that it wil please you for to  
bringe me some browne bread and  
water in a trene dishe, and thus I  
shalbe serued as vnto me appertey-  
neth. For I dare not take none other  
meat. And whan þ steward of Rey-  
nawde saw that, he made hym anon  
to be brought al that he wolde haue.  
Than tooke Hawgys the browne  
bread and made soppes in water, &  
eate of it with a good appetite. And  
whan þ Reynawde sawe thys poore  
man afote him that liued so poorely  
and was so lene and so pale: he had  
of hym great pitie. So tooke he a  
dishe that was before him that was  
full of venison, and sent it to hym  
bi a squier of his that presented it to  
hym saynge thus, holde good man  
the duke sendeth you this, god yelde  
him sayd Hawgys, and than he too-  
ke and set the dyshe afote hym, but  
he eate nothing of it. And whan Rey-

naude sawe that he was greatly  
meruailed, & said to hi self, god who  
is that good man that liuerh so hard  
a lise, if he were not so lene: I shold  
say that it were my good colin maw-  
gys, b'it a nother thng sheweth me  
that it is not he. For he wolde not  
hydhe hymselfe from me in no wyle.

**B**eynawde behelde stil Haw-  
gys so muche that he left his  
mete for to looke vpō him. And whā  
the tables were taken vp, & that e-  
very man had eaten at his easle: they  
went to their warde for to defende  
the towne as they were wone for to  
doo, in theyz hatrycs. And whā Rey-  
nawde sawe that euerye man was  
gone, and that there was no body in  
in the halle for whome he wold leue  
for to say hys will: he went to maw-  
gys and sayd to hym, good heremite  
I pray you for the reuerence of that  
God that ye serue that ye tell me ye  
ye be Hawgys or no, for ye are well  
lyke him. Whā Hawgys heard this  
naud speake thus to hym: he could  
hide hymselfe no lenger, and sayd al  
on hye. Colyn I am Hawgys  
wythout doubt. I am com to see you  
and I am glad that I see you and  
also al your bretheren in good plight  
And whan Reynawde vnderstoode  
þ it was his colin þ he loued moste  
of all the men in the worlde, & that  
had kept him diuers times from pes-  
till and daunger, he had not ben so  
glad yf men had gyuen hym the halfe  
of al the Worlde. So wente he and  
killed hym more caun a hundred ty-  
mes, and after he said to hym in this  
maner

maner. Fayre cosyn I pray you that  
ye wyl doo of this cope that ye were  
upon you. For my eyen cannot see  
you thus poorely arayed. Than an-  
swered Hawgys to hym and sayde,  
My cosyn be not displeased of that I  
shal tel you, ye must wyt that I haue  
made my vido to god that I shal ne-  
uer eate but alonly breade and wilde  
herbes and that to my drynke I shal  
take none other but water, and that  
I shal neuer weare the dayes of my  
lyfe none other clothes but suche as  
this is, for I haue giuen my self vt-  
terly to serue and loue our blessed sa-  
uiour & hys glorious mother, for to  
bryng my soule to saluacion in the  
blyste that euer shal laste.

**W**han Reynawde hearde his  
Cosyn Hawgys speke thus:  
he was in a thought whether it was  
Hawgys or no, for he conide not  
knowe hym well bycause he was so  
sore apayzed of his person. And be-  
gan to looke well vpon hym agayn,  
and he shold neuer haue knownen  
him if it had not be a litle litle that  
he had by hys right eye. And after þ  
he had verye knowlidge of hym: he  
made greate ioye for hym. And he  
prayde hym agayne sayinge in this  
wyse. Fayre Cosyn I pray you for þ  
loue of the fayth that ye owe to me  
that ye wyl tell me the trouth of that  
I shal aske you. Syz sayd Hawgys  
I shall tell it you gladly. Cosyn said  
Reynawde I wold wyt wher yee  
haue be euer syth that ye went from  
me, & fro whens yee come now: Syz  
sayd Hawgys sythe it please you to  
wyt of my lyuyng: I shall shewit

you with a good wyl, yee ought to  
knowe my fayre cosyn for certayn  
þ I haue made my selfe an hermite,  
& I haue left the wold for to serue  
hym that made me, & the blessed vry-  
gyn Marye his mother, for to haue  
pardon of my synnes that I haue  
doone in my lyfe, for I haue doone  
many great euilles agayn my crea-  
tour, & by me are dead so many folke  
wherof I knowe that our Lorde is  
greatly wrothe agaynst me. After þ  
Reynawde had hearde Hawgys  
speke thus: he had so great pity on  
him that the teres fell alonge hys  
chekes fro his eyen for loue of hys  
good cosyn. And than he called hys  
brether & sayd to them. come hether  
my bretherns & ye shal se your cosyn  
Hawgys. And whan Alarde, Guy-  
charde, & Richarde, heard these wor-  
des: their hertes rose in their blyves  
for ioye and ran all to Hawgys &  
kyssed hym ful sweetly. And whan þ  
duchelle wylte that Hawgys was  
come: she cam anon there as he was  
and kisst hym weeping ful sore for  
joy that she had to see hym. And tha-  
t came there Aymon & Ponnet that  
made greate ioye, & welcomed hym.  
And thoroþe all the citie was anon  
knownen the cominge of the valiaunc  
Hawgys, wherof many folke cam  
to see him. But he was so chaunged  
and so apayzed that it was pite for  
to see. Thus was Reynawde well  
glad of þ cominge of his good cosyn  
& after þ they had made greate ioye  
a longe whyle: Reynawde called his  
brother Richarde and sayd to hym,  
Brother go sit anon a good godene  
for our Cosyn Hawgys, and let

The booke of the fōtre

Him he brought a payre of shone that  
ben wyde ynough, for I know wel  
that his leete ben soze, & than he said  
to his wyfe, Lady arise, and set hym  
suche linnen as he nedeth. Syr sayd  
he he shall haue of the best ynough  
anon. And whā Hawgis heard this  
worde he sayd to Reynawde. Syr I  
tell you truly that I haue sworne þ  
I shall never weare shone nor lin-  
nen clothes aboue me. But doo to  
me if it please you to giue me a new  
slop and a large hoode, a palster wel  
riende and a male, and therwith yee  
thal well contente me. And than I  
shal comende you to god, and I shal  
go my way, for I am not come heere  
but only for to see you, wherof my  
desyre was soze set vneo. Right soþy  
was Reynawde whā he heard haw-  
gys say so, in so inuche that almoske  
he was swouning for sorow. Rey-  
nawde sayd thā Hawgis leue your  
sorow, for I haue gyuen my self to  
god bterly for to bryng my soule to  
blesse of heuen, and so wyl I goe to  
the holy lande for to serue to the pe-  
ple of Iherusalem, and for to vsit  
the holy sepulcre of our lorde. And  
Whan I haue done so I shal come  
agayne to se you and God spare me  
my life, and than I shal go agayn to  
mine hermitage, and shal lyue there  
as a beast with rootes and wylde  
herbes as I dyd before that I came  
heere. Whan Reynawde heard thys  
he was soþy for it, & sayd to Haw-  
gis in this wise. Fayre cosin for god  
take with you a good horse and mo-  
ney ynough. For ye shal haue al this  
of me. Holde your peace said Haw-  
gis I wil not therof, for whā I haue

bredē it is to me ynough, for al my  
hope is in God, to whome I pray  
that I may come agayne whole and  
sounde.

**A**fter all these thynges thus  
sayd Hawgis prayed Rey-  
nawde that he wylde make haste to  
make hym be deltiered, suche thin-  
ges as he had desyred of hym. And  
Reynawde dyd so byth þ he myghte  
not make hym to take none other  
thyng with hym. And whan þ mo-  
row cam, and that Hawgis had his  
newe sloppe and his hooðe, he tooke  
hys palster and his new male þ Rei-  
nawde had giuen hym. he went and  
hearde mass, and after the masse he  
tooke his leaue of every one, & went  
on his way. And Reynawde couened  
him vnto the wicket of the gate of þ  
Litie and kissed him: and in likewise  
dyd all his bretcherne, and also þ du-  
chesse Clare and her chyldren. And  
Whan they had all kyssed Hawgis  
he conunendd them to God & went  
out of the towne, and went forþ the  
tyght waye. But he was not ferre  
gone whan he was aduyroned round  
about him with the folke of þ kyng  
Charlemayne. And the one sayd to  
the other: heere is the hermite that  
we saw yesterdai but he is now bet-  
ter clothed than he was at that time  
It myght be well Hawgis þ cosyn  
of Reynawde that hath mocked vs  
diuerse tyme, certes sayde the other  
it is he verely, let vs slea hym, and  
we shall doo well, we shall not said  
sone: for thys man semeth to be an  
hundred yere olde. It canout be, but  
that he must be a good man & it were  
synne

Sonne to do hym hast me. All thus as these folke sayd these worder, Hawis  
gis heard al that they sayd and held  
his peace and went on his way syt  
thorouge the hoste without any let-  
tyng of any man. Here leueth the  
hytory to speake of Maugis that  
went into the holy lande, and return-  
eth to speake of Charlemayne that  
had bespreng Ardeyn because that  
Reynawde and hys brethen were  
wythyn.

Chow Reynawde wolde doo hys  
Rycharde of Normandy by cause he  
myght not haue peace with the knyng  
Charlemayne. And how the twelve  
Peeres required Charlemayne to  
make peace w Reynawde. And how  
they telle Charlemayne because he  
wolde not make peace. And how  
he sent worder to them þt they shold  
come to hym agayne. And he shold to  
make peace w Reynawde.



**T**his party sheweth that the  
knyng Charlemayne was at þ  
spege of Ardeyn sore an angred that  
he myght not know howe Rychard  
of Normandy dyd. So sent he for

all hys Barons for to come to  
hym. And whan they were come in  
his pavillion, he sayd to them thus  
Lordes I see wel that it goeth now  
yll with me, bycause I see that Rey-  
nawde

The booke of the four

Reynawde hath not sent me agayne Richarde of Normandy, and he myght well haue deluyered hym free & quide and haue sende hym unto me for all the harmes þ he hath doone to me. Uncle sayde Rowlande I merueyld greatly of that ye saye, ye shuld wel to vs that ye be wythout counsell. By the sayng that I owe to you, ye shal never see Richarde of Normandy, but yþ ys pardon Reynawde & his bretheren, diuerser times he hath meked himselfe unto you, and hath be alwayes redy to fulkyll your pleasure, & ys Wyll not take hym to your grace, he not than merueyld if Reynawde shuld note some dispise against you. For and ye consider wel the greate curtesie that he hath doone unto you: namely whan he had you at his Wyll within mounteban & that he deluyered you, and suffered you goe quide and free fro him at your liberti, ye shuld doo for him other worse than ye doo, but syth that Reynawde seeth þ he may not finde no mercy in you: he Wyll not leese his curtesye, but he shal doo þ wox. Se that he can, as ye maye well perceyue experiance of it every day, for he dōmageth vs dayly, and keepeth his prisoner the best knyght that yee had, that is Richarde þ duke of Normandy, the whiche I weene be dead by thys tyme. Fewew sayd the kinge Charlemayne, I promysle you that Reynawde hath not put hi to death but he kepereth hym wel at his easle & with greate honoure, syr said than þ duke Haynes. Syth that the wodes ben come to this: I must tel you

my mynde. Syr þ Reynawde beseth you domaige: ye canot blame hym for it. For he hath prayed you so many times humbly that ye wold haue mercy on him and ye wold neuer heare hym, but ye haue alwayes shewed your selfe the moste prouide kyngage of the woxlde agaynst hym, & the moste angry, and ye Wyll beleue no connell, and so I tell you if Reynawde hath not made to dye Richarde of Normandy: he is the kyndest man of the woxlde. But I beleue better that he is dead than other wyle: for no man heere can tell whether he be dead or a liue.

Whan the kyng Charlemayne heard þ Duke Haynes speke thus: he knew wel that he tolde hym trouth. So began he to syghe soore, and to these wordes came for the the Bisshop Turpin, & Ogier the Dane that sayd in this maner. Sir wox it verely that Haynes telleth you trouth. For Reynawde hath a good cause to be angry wþ you. And whan Charlemayne heard his bates speke thus: he was all abasshe of it. And called þ Duke Haynes, the Bisshop Turpin, Ogier the Dane, & Escouf the sonne of Devon, & sayde to them. Lordes I pray you goe to Ardetne & tel Reynawde in my behalfe þ he wll sende me Richarde of Normandy. And whan he hath doone so þ he thā deliuer Marogys into my handes for to doo my wyll of hym. And then he shal haue peace wþ me al the dayes of my lyfe. Drene syr sayde

sayde the duke Maymes, ye sende vs  
for nougnt. For I wot wel y aw-  
gis is gone from Reynawde, it is  
thre yeres passed and moze. And yf  
that Reynawde wolde delyuer him  
he may not. For he knoweth not him  
selfe whiche he is. Maymes sayd the  
king Charlemayne, yee shall at leste  
heare what Reynawde shal say unto  
you, and ye shall also know how Ri-  
chard of Normandy dooth. Syz sayd  
the duke Maymes, syth that it plea-  
seth you that I shall goe: I am well  
contente, but I pray our Lorde that  
we maye returne agayne whole and  
sounde of our persones, without to  
be dyshonoured. Whan the barons  
saw that kinge Charlemayne wold  
that they shold goe to Acedyne for  
to doo his message: they durst not  
saye there agaynt. And so they wet  
ther ther anon, and echc of them bare  
in his hande a brauncle of an olive  
tree in token of peace. And whan  
they came vnto the gate: they founde  
it open soz them. For Reynawde had  
seen the come from ferre. Wherfore  
he comanduned y the wicket shold  
be open. And whan the barons saw  
the istic gate open: they went into y  
towne, and cam to the Palays. And  
whan Reynawde wylt y they were  
come within the palays: he wet and  
layde hymselfe downe vpon a bedde  
wyth yrs legges crossed and sware  
God and his blessed mother that he  
should not praye the kinge Charle-  
mayne of nothing. For he had doon  
him to great hartne, for through  
the kyng Charlemayn: he had loste  
his good cosyn Hawgis and Mou-  
tawban, that he loued so muche.

This hanginge came there y messa-  
gers of the king Charlemayne, afor  
Reynawde. Whan the Duke May-  
mes that was the formest saw Reyna-  
wde: he saluted him honourably.  
And after he sayd to hym. Syz Reyna-  
wde the kyng sendeth you wylde  
by vs, that ye lunde hym agayne his  
chardre the duke of Normandy. And  
more ouer he lendeþ you Wylde y  
yk y wyl delyuer him Hawgys y  
hal haue peace with him al y dayes  
of his lyfe. And he shall deliver you  
agayne all your landes. And he shall  
keep bothe your childre in his court  
with him, and he shall make them  
knights with his owne handes.  
My Lordes sayde Reynawde, ye be  
ryght welcome to me as the knigh-  
tes of y woldre that I ought to loue  
best. But I misuayle me greatly of  
Charlemayne, that sendeth me these  
wordes, for certe man knoweth wel  
that I haue not Hawgys. But by  
him I haue lost hym. And Wolde to  
god that I had heere Charlemayn as  
wel as I haue Richard of Norma-  
dye. And yf he wold not graunt me  
peace with him. I promise you he  
should leane his head for a pletge.  
So shold I be than auenged of all  
y great harmes & dommages that he  
hath doone to me, syth that I haue  
be made knight of him. Lordes I neid  
that Charlemayne had be more cur-  
tayn thanly is. For if I had wylt  
that he wold haue ben so fel vpon  
me and my brethern: I shold wel  
auenged it vpon him. But it is to  
late to repente me that I did not so,  
Wherfore that ye boyde out of my  
Palays, and goe tell your kyng that

The booke of the fourte

I haue not MaWgys, but I haue  
louste hym for him, and also yf I had  
him he shold not haue him. And be-  
cause I haue thus louste my good co-  
lyne MaWgys for hym: I shal make  
to morow Richarde the duke of Nor-  
mandy to be hanged vpon the chefe  
gate of this Cittie in hys dispite of him  
for no lenger respit he shal not haue  
of me, how be it that he is of my lig-  
nage, and I tell you, come no more  
heere, nor no man of Charlemayne.  
For I promyse you I shal stryke of  
the heade of as many as shal come  
to him to me without any sayle.

**W**han Ogyer the Dane saw  
Reynawde so angry, & that  
he answered so proudlye: he merua-  
led soze, and drewe him scise by Rey-  
nawde, and said to him. Fayre colin  
I pray you that ye will shewe to vs  
Rycharde of Normandy, to thende  
that we may tell Charlemayne that  
we haue scene hym. Ogyer I haue  
well vnderstande you sayde Rey-  
nawde, but ye shall never see him a-  
fore that I haue hanged hym. And  
yf Charlemayne be angry wyth me  
for it: let him auenge it yf he can, for  
I defic hym and ali his power, and  
goe you hens anon. For by my soule  
if ye abide heere any lenger, it shall  
repente you full soze. And whan the  
barons saw that Reynawde was so  
feruently wrothe, they durst no lenger  
tary there: but tooke leue of hym  
and went out of the Cittie, and went  
lightly to the hoste of Charlemayne  
that awayted after them. Whan the  
kyng saw the Barons come: he said  
vnto them. Loyses ye be welcome,

what tildynges bryng you: haue ye  
not seene Rycharde of Normandye?  
Syr sayde the Duke Naymes. Rey-  
nawde doth you to wit that as lōge  
as he maye tyde vpon Bayarde: yee  
shall not haue MaWgys, for he hath  
lost hym by you. And for the venge-  
aunce to be taken of the same: Rey-  
nawde sedeth you Wylde by vs that  
he shall hange to morow Rycharde  
of Normandye vpon the great gate  
of his towne, and thus shall he dos  
of all your me that he shal take, and  
yet he sayth more, yf he had you as  
well as he hath Richarde of Norma-  
die that if ye Wolde not graunt him  
peace: yee shold leue wyth hym  
your head for a pledge. Whan Bow-  
land heard the wordc that the Duke  
Naymes had reported vnto hys bne  
ele Charlemayne: he sayde. Syr be  
not displeased of that I shal tel you,  
me semerch that ye shall never see the  
duke Richarde, and al for your pride  
Syr we finde in holy scripture that  
god cutes the fruite that never is  
ripe, thus shall it be by you yf never  
wyll tyde nor condicēde to no peace  
with the fourte sonnes of Iymon, the  
best knyghtes of the woldē, yf so ma-  
ny tymes haue prayed for it humbly  
and full pitcoully. Wherfore I swere  
to you vpon all halowes that yf the  
duke Rycharde of Normandy be han-  
ged: ye shall lose honour & worshyp  
all your lyfe dayes. Whan the kyng  
Charlemayne heard his newew Bow-  
lande speake thus: that sayde yf Ryc-  
harde of Normandy shold be han-  
ged: he was so myschewously an an-  
gred that he gnewe the nailes of his  
handes, for great wrath, & ye ought

to wit that Charlemayne was so an  
gyr at that tyme, þ yþe had had any  
maner of fasse in his hād: he wōlde  
haue gladly smitten Rowlond, but  
Whan he sawe that he migh̄t not ac-  
complissh̄ his wil: he called his ba-  
rons and sayde to them, Lordes ye  
wene to make me a ferde with your  
wordes, I am no childe for to be th̄  
abashed, and also I swere you by  
my sayth that if Reynawde were so  
hardy to doo anye harme vnto Ryc-  
hardē of Normandy: I shoulde hāg  
 hym wþ myne owne handes, he &  
 all his lignage that none shoulde be  
left a lyue.

**B**right soze Wrothe Was the  
King Charlemayne, whan he  
hearde tell that Reynawde Wolde  
make Rycharde the duke of Normā,  
die to be hanged. But whan Ogyer  
hearde Charlemayne swere thus: þ  
he shoulde hang all the lignage of rey-  
nawde: he coulde not abyeyne hym-  
self but that the teares fel downe fro  
his eyen, and than he said to the bis-  
hop Turpin. Sir what thynke you  
by our kyng that sayth by his great  
pride that he shal hange vs all: for  
at that he dooth procedeth but of en-  
ups & pride, but god sende me death  
þ I care for hys wrathe, for þ Reyna-  
wde hach not lied to vs: he shal-  
do be hanged to morro we Rycharde  
of Normandy in such a place where  
as Charlemayne shal now see him  
hange with his eyen. This hanging  
the Duke Haymes saw that þ king  
was angry, and he sayd to him. Sir  
wit that we all be soze abashed that  
þe threte vs of one partie & Reynawde

of the other. And I mētuaile me not  
of Reynawde, for he is so wroth for  
bycause that ye haue make him lose  
Maugys that no man migh̄t be  
more. And I promysse you for grete  
angre he shal make Rycharde of noz  
mandy to behanged, and as to you  
namely he Wolde stryke of your hed  
þf he had you in þ case that he hath  
Rycharde nowe, and þf he hangeth  
Rycharde: what may we doo thereto  
that þe threten vs so muche therfore  
Wherfore I counsell all my felas-  
wes that are of the lynage of Rey-  
nawde: that we goe out wayes and  
that we let you shif of the warre of  
the fourre sonnes of Aymon. By god  
sayd þ other peers of fraunce Mai-  
mes speaketh well, and he giueth vs  
good counsell.

**T**hen whan Charlemayne  
saw his barōs so soze mouē  
he wyl not what he shoulde doo, but  
gave them leue to withdraw them  
self vnto the morow that thei shoulde  
returne to him, and he hymself wene  
to his bed, but al night he could not  
fall a slepe: but wē led in his bed w-  
out any rest, and wyl not what to  
doo. And whan þ day came: he a rose  
from his bedde, and sent for all hys  
barons, & whan they were come: he  
sayd to them. Lordes what shall we  
doo of Reynawde that wyl hange þ  
duke Rycharde of Normandy afore  
mine eyen: Sir said thā þ duke Mai-  
mes for nouȝt seeketh one counsell þ  
wyl not put it to effect, whi aske ye  
counsell syþe that ye wyl doo no-  
thing but after your owne heade: but  
and ye wyl beleue me: I swere you

## The booke of the fourte

on my fayth that al good shal come therof. Syz make peace with Reynawde, and ye shall haue the Duke Rycharde, and also ye shall haue the good loue of all your men, for there is none but he is wety of the warre, and they haue reason. Raymes saide the king I wil not doo it, holde your peace therof, for that shalbe the laste wordes that euer I shal say. Syz said Bowland by my soule ye doo great wronge yf ye suffre y good duke Richard to be hanged that so muche loued you and doone great honour, it shall be to you great shame, and so I shal be to you vpon all halowes that yf I see hange Rycharde of normandy I shal part out of your hoste fro your seruice, and I shall goe so ferre that ye shall never haue helpe of me. Bowland sayd Olyuer ween not that I shall abyde after that yee are gone, for the kynge doothe great wronge to Reynawde our colin. Ful soore an angred was the kyng to heere these wordes but he helde thā his peace and sayde never a word. And wyt it that al the hoste was moued bycause they feared soore lest Reynawde shold make Richard of normandy to be hanged, for he was wel beloued of the folke of Charlemaine, & also he was of a greate kynged and a noble lignage.

**T**his morning thā Reynawde that was within Arden after that he had hearde hys masse: he called his three bretherne and sayde to them. My brethern it goeth ful ill with vs that we can haue no peace wȝt Charlemaine, but sythe it is

thus come: by the farrth that I owe to the olde Armon our fader I shal angre hym right sore, for I am sure yf he had vs in his handes he woldे vterly destroy vs. Without pitie, & therfore I am disposed for to doo the woorste that I can agaist hym. for now afore his eyen I shal hange the duke Richard of Normandy, for I am well sure that Charlemayne shal be syze angry for it, whan he shall see him. Brother sayd Alard, I pray you as muche as I can that ye wyl not doo as ye saye, for I shall hange hym my selfe yf ye will. Brother sayd Reynawde I wyl wel now commaunde sayde Alard that yf he be dressed all hys upon the gate, that Charlemayne and all his hoste may see him. Shorly to spek: Reynawde dyd doo make y gibet in suche a place y Charlemayne might see it as well as he had be by. And wyt it that Bowland was the fyrd man y perceived it, and whan he saw this: he began to crye as hys as he myght. Syz, now see howthey wyl hange the duke Richard with great shame alas he hath shrewdly employed his tymc in your seruice. And now he is full yll rewarded for it, and also it is shrewed ensample to al that serue you. Alas sayd Olyuer now shall y good duke Rycharde be hanged with great shame, for I see the Gibet righ ted vp. Holde your peace sayde than Charlemayne, they doo all thys but for to make me abashed, and that they myght haue peace with me, but for all this they shal not haue it, & I promise you they dare doo hym no harme of his bodye. Thus recorded.

for to Charlemayne him selfe. Wercyng that Reynawde had not durst hange the duke Rycharde. This ha- gyng Rowlande (that had the chyng at herre) he helde alwayes to warde the towne, and saw that men righ- ted the ladder to the gybet, than sayd he to Oliver. Ha Oliver truc felawo and good freende, yonder I see the ladder that is set up all ready for to hange Rycharde of Normandy, ful yill he hath bestowed hys good ser- uice Wyth Charlemayne. Syr O- liuer sayde Rowlande, ye saye well trouth, god saue Rycharde.

**A**fect y the ladder was rygh- red to the gybet aboue vpon the hyghe gate of Ardeyne: Reynawd called ten of his folke, and sayde to them. Galantes go set me the Duke Rycharde. For I will that he be han- ged incontinent. Syr sayd they Wee shall doo your comauement. And they went into the chambre where þ noble duke of Normandy was, and founde hym playinge at the Chesse Wyth Ponnet þ sonne of Reynawd, and than these me tooke hym & said. Syr duke come forth, for Reynawde hath comauanded that ye shall be hanged incontinent. Whan the duke Rycharde of Normandy heard these felawes speake thus to hym: he loo- ked vpon them ouer the shoulder, & wolde not answeare to them, but said my fayre Ponnet, hast you for to play for it is tyne that we go to dinner. And whan these galantes saw that Rycharde of Normandy answered no wordes vnto them: they began to take him on every syde and sayde to hym. Arlyse þp duke Rycharde, for in dispise of Charlemayne that loueth you so muche: ye shalbe haged now. Whan the duke Rycharde sa we that these sergauntes had him thus by the armes, and helde in his hāde a la- dy of Juery wher he wolde haue giuen a mate to yonner: he withdrew his armes and gaue to one of the ser- gauentes such a stroke with it into the forehead that he made him tum- ble ouer and ouer at his scete, & than he tooke a rooke & smote another þ all vpon his head that he al to brok it to the brayne, & after that he smote another of the with his syt so great a stroke that he brake hys necke, and fell dead vnto the erth. And whan þ other saw they felawes þ atayed: they began to renne away, and whā Rycharde sawe them goe: he cryed to them. Flee rybaudes Godes curse haue you, come not heere agayne. And whan he had sayd so: he sayd to Ponnet þ was all abashed. Playe well my chylde, for ye shalbe mated, I cro we these truantes were dren- ken that thus Wolde haue had me a- way, but I haue well giuen to them their parte. And whan youner heard hym sayc so: he durste not speake a- gainst it because he sa we hymselfe to soze an angred, but played Wyth his rooke that he shoud not be ma- ted, but he myght not saue the mate. Whan the duke Rycharde had mated Ponnet: he called a yeman þ was there, & sayd to hym. Goe take these carles that lyen heere dead and caste them out at the windowes. The yeman dyd incontinent his comauen- dement. For he durst doo no thynges

The booke of the four

there agaynt, for doubte he shold  
haue fared as the other that he had  
seen Layne in his presence.

**A**larde Was þ same tyme out  
of the castell, & awayced that  
Rycharde were broughte to him that  
he myght goe hange hym, and he saw  
how the dead were cast downe out of  
the wyndowes of the tourte, Wherof  
he was wrothe & went to Reynawde  
and sayd to hym. Syz I knowe that  
the duke Rycharde will not let hym  
selfe be take, and ryght deere it shal  
cost or he be brought to the gibet, see  
how he hath slayne your men, & how  
he hath cast them out at the Towre,  
at the windowes. Brother sayd Ryc-  
nawde, the Duke Rycharde is to be  
doubted in hys takyng, let vs go to  
the helpe of our folk for els they ben  
in daunger of theyz lyuys. And th<sup>o</sup>  
as they wolde haue gone: they that  
he had sente for to take Rycharde,  
came there unto hym. And whan  
they saw Reynawde: they sayd unto  
him. By god syz the duke Rycharde  
shal not be take without great strife  
For he hath slayne thice of our fel-  
wes. And whan we sawe that: we  
fled away, and left hym playig with  
your sonne Yonnet. Wha Reynawde  
understoode this: he was ryght angri  
for it, and swore by all halowes þ  
þf he had not peace that daye wþth  
Charlemayne; Rycharde of Norma-  
dye shold not escape hanging, what  
somerer it shold happe therof. And  
Whan he had sayd these wordes: he  
Went towarde the towre wher Ryc-  
harde was, and his brethern Wente  
with hym, for they wolde not leue hi,

and also. cl. men well armes for to  
take the duke Rycharde if he wolde de-  
fende hymselfe, Whan Reynawde  
was come to the gate of the to Wre:  
he made it to be opened & wente in &  
Whan he was in: he sayd to the duke  
Rycharde. Wassail whye haue you  
slayne my men: Colin sayd he, nowe  
heat me if it please you. It is trouþ  
that x. ribaudes cam here ryght now  
& layde hande vpon me, & they sayde  
that ye had thus commannded them,  
Whiche thinge I coulde not beleue.  
For & ye has sayd so: it shold haue  
be spoken outrageously: so made I  
them to fire out of this chambre in  
great hast and slew of them I wote  
not how many because I might not  
ableine me, & if it semeth you that I  
haue doone amys: so take ye amedes  
upon me. But I will wel that ye wote  
that I wolde not haue doone to you  
suche a shame as yee haue doone to  
me. if I had had you as yee haue me,  
Reynawde if I haue doone amys in  
any maner: I am redy to make ame-  
des for it, but ye know it is no reaso  
that no Earle shal Judge suche a  
man as I am, for that longeth to a  
king, to a duke, or to an erle, the cus-  
tome is suche ye wot it well, if the  
earles haue harme be it þ haue med-  
led them w<sup>th</sup> it, none ought to blame  
me therfore. By god Rycharde sayde  
then Reynawde ye shal say what ye  
wil, but trust me yf I haue not this  
day peace w<sup>th</sup> Charlemayne: I shall  
make you to be haged in such a place  
where that Charlemain may se you  
And wha Reynawde had said this: he  
made Rycharde to be take, & made his  
handes to be bounde fast and after

sayd to hym. I tel you on my faith þ  
þt I haue not this day my peace w  
Charlemayne: þt for no prechynge þ  
þt can make noz for no man of the  
Worlde, I shall not leue but I shal  
make you dye a shamfull death. By  
my soule Reynawde sayd Richardde,  
I fere me not, that ye shall doo that  
þt sayd, for ye dare not doo it as long  
as Charlemayne is a liue. Whan  
Reynawde hearde al the duke speake  
thus: he was so wroth that he looked  
all blacke in the face for angre, and  
than he sayde to Rycharde, by that  
god þt made me, ye shal soone knowe  
what I dare doo ȝ whether I am  
a coward or hardy, & than he made  
him to be brought where as the ga-  
loes were righted, & than he sayde to  
him. Richardde I wyl that of two  
thynges ye chose one þt ye lust, þt is,  
that ye make me haue peace w char-  
lemayne: or ȝt þt ye helpe me against  
him, & but if ye doo this: wyt that I  
shal make you behaged & strangled, &  
I shall not leue you for all this þt ye  
be of my lignage, & þt ye wil take my  
part agaynst the king Charlemain:  
ye shalbe deliuered forthw. By god  
Reynawde sayd than Richard, nowe  
haue I heard you spekellike a childe,  
ween ye þt I shal doo þt ye say for fere  
or death: certes nay, for charlemain  
is my souerayne lord, and of hym I  
holde mine heritage, and though he  
dooth wrong to leue me heere: I ou-  
ght not to fayle him therfore. But ȝ  
þt ye wil doo wel, leue me a messager, þ  
whiche I shal sende to Charlemain  
& to his baroȝs for to wit if he be dis-  
posed for to let me dye heere shame-  
fully. By my faith Richard sayd rei-

na wde ye speake no w wisely, & thā  
he called one of his folke & sayde to  
him. Go & doo þt Richard of Normā  
dy shal tell you, my freende sayd Ri-  
charde to þt messager, ye shall goe to  
charlemayne & tel him on my behalf,  
þt I pray him as to my souerain lord  
that þt euer he loued me: that he wll  
pardon Reynawde, & I shal take wpon  
on me to make amcndes for hym, þt  
he hath in any thing misdone agaist  
him, as the. xi. peeres of Fraunce shal  
Judge him, ȝt if he wil not doo so: þt  
he wil looke vther warde, & he shal  
see me hange shamfully. Of that o-  
ther parte ye shall say to Rowland ȝ  
to all my felawes that þt euer they  
loved me: þt they wil shew to Charle-  
mayne that it shal be a great shame  
to him, þt he suffreth that I dye thus  
shamfullye, syz sayde the messager  
doubt not. I shall doo your message  
well. After these thynges thus sayd:  
the messager went out of the towne  
to the hoste of Charlemayne, the whi-  
che he founde full of thought. And  
whan he saw hym: he made him re-  
uerence, & after sayd to hym. Syz wit  
it that Richardde of Normandye re-  
comendeth hym humbly to you, and  
prayeth you as hertlye as he can as  
to his soueraigne lord þt euer ye lo-  
ued hym: that ye wyl shew it nowe  
for he mynsterch wel of it. For if reyn-  
awde haue not peace this day: tour-  
ne your sight wpon ponder gate af-  
ter that I am come home agayne, &  
ye shall see him hange shamfully, &  
Whan the messager had sayd t. is to  
the kyng: he looked about hym, and  
saw the. xi. peeres, & sayd to them,  
þt to Rowland, & after to the other

The booke of the fourre

Lordes, the duke Rycharde prayeth  
you Rowland, & all ye in generall,  
that ys ye tuer loued him: þe wyl  
pray Charlemaine that he wil make  
peace with Reynawde, or otherwise  
he is dead without mercy. And wha  
Rowland heard this: he spake fyrt  
to the kyng, & sayd. Syr for God I  
pray you, suffre not that ye be bla-  
med, ye know well that þe duke  
Rycharde is one of the best knyghtes  
of the wþerde, & he hath best serued  
you at your need. For God syr make  
peace with Reynawde, for to recouer  
suche a knyght as is þe duke Rycharde  
of Normandy, for greate shame it  
were to you for to let him thus die.  
And whan þe duke Raymes and the  
bysshop Turpin, Ogier, Escout the  
sonne of Dedon, and Oliver of vien  
heard Rowland speake so: they bega  
to say to þe king. By god sir if ye wil  
not make peace with Reynawde for  
to recouer our felaw the Duke Ry-  
charde: ye shall lose muche by it. For  
within shorte tyme ye shall see your  
lande descroped afore you.

**W**han Charlemayne saw that  
his peers were thus moued  
for loue of Rycharde of Normandy,  
& that they accorded all for to make  
peace: he wende to haue gone oute  
of hys minde, and sware by greate  
trathe as a man mad, þe Reynawde  
shoulde neuer haue peace with hym  
but if he had mangis to doo his wil  
with hym. And whan he had sayd so  
he turned him towarde the xiiii. pee-  
res of Fraunce, & layd to them. My  
freende take no tere for Rycharde of  
Normandy. For Reynawde shoulde

sooner let to be drawen one of his  
yes out: than he shoulde doo hym any  
harme or shame. Syr sayd the Bys-  
shop Turpin, ye are beside your self  
for ye see all redy that Rycharde is  
Judget to death. Bisshop said that  
lemanye pe speke well folisshly, know  
we ye not wel that Richard of Nor-  
mandye is of þe lineage of Reynawde  
I promyse you he dare not doo hym  
harme by no maner. By god syr said  
oliver, þe haue wel pated vs by your  
sayinge. Why dare not Reynawde  
hange þe Duke Rycharde: for I know  
so muche by hym that ys he had you  
as he hath Rycharde: he durst well  
hange yourself & al vs. Syr Olyver  
sayd the messanger. Is were you en  
my sayth that Reynawde ceassed not  
all thys day to pray þe Duke Rycharde  
that he shoulde forslake Charlemayn  
and he shoulde laue his lyfe, wherof  
Rycharde of Normandy wold doo  
nothyng, but speake great wordes  
to Reynawde. And whan that the  
messanger had sayd thus: he layd to  
the kyng. Syr gyue me leue to goe if  
it please you, and tel me what I shal  
say to Rycharde of Normandy fro  
you. freende sayd Charlemayne ye  
shal tell him ou my tchalefe þe he put  
no doubt in nothig. For Reynawde  
shall not be so hardy to doo hym any  
harme. wha the messanger that was  
a wyls knyght vnderstoode Charle-  
mayne: he could not abyue hym  
selfe, but he sayd to hym, syr Empe-  
rour ye be ouer proude, but I pro-  
misse you that Reynawde sette hiȝ-  
e by your pypde, and I make you  
sure þe Duke wyltch well for my  
comyng agayne. For he wold not  
take

take a hundred thousand pounde for  
to leue Rycharde but that he shoud  
hang him his owne handes. And as  
soone as he had sayd so he went his  
wayes wþþout any leue taking of  
the kyng streyght to Ardeyne.

**A**nd whan the xli. peers saw  
the messenger go wþþ an yll  
answer: they were full sorþ for it. Ha  
god sayd Ogyer ho wþþ the deuyll the  
kyng is selle and hard of herte, that  
wil noþer peace nor concorde. I am  
well sure that his pride shalbe cause  
of a shamefull deaþ to Rycharde. O  
gyer sayd to Rowlante, ye saye trouth  
but a I see hym hang: god neuer help  
me at my need if I abyde after it wþ  
Charlemayne whyles I live, a wha  
he had sayd so: he went to the other  
peeres a sayd to them. Lordes what  
shall we doo: shall we let thus Ryc  
harde be hanged out sciale one of  
the best knyghtes of the wþþlde and  
moste hardy: for thorouȝe his pro  
wes he is there as he is, neuer no  
soule wþþd issued out of his mouth  
blas we shall now see hym hange wþ  
great shame, certes yf we suffer it  
we ben shamed for cuer.

**B**owland as a man desperat  
came than to þ kyng al wroþ  
and sayd to hym in this maner. Sayz  
þy m. soule I go now oute of your  
scruse without your leue, a after he  
sayd to Ogyer. Ogyer what wþþl ye  
doo, wil ye come with me, a leue this  
Deuyll heere, for he is all beside him  
selue. By my head Rowlant sayde  
Ogyer ye saye trouth. I shall neuer  
in my lyfe abyde with hym, but I

shall go gladlye wþþt you where ye  
wþþl. And I shal not leue you for no  
man in the wþþlde, sþch that he suf  
freþ that such a valiaunt man shal  
dye, as the duke Rycharde of Norma  
ndy, that he loued so muche. He  
shoud soone doo so bi vs, for he is a  
man that hath in hym noþer loue  
nor pitie. And whan Oliver of wþen  
understoode these wordes: he stode  
up, and sayd. Lordes I will go wþþ  
you. I haue dwelled heere to longe,  
and I also sayd the duke Naymes, a  
in likewise Elsoufe the sonne of De  
don. And whan the bishop Turpin  
saw this: he casted a great shþe, and  
sayd. By my sayth Charlemayne, it  
is euill to serue you for of good ser  
uþce ye doo yeelde an euill rewarde,  
as it is well seen now by the Duke  
Rycharde of Normandye that hath  
serued you so well and so truly. And  
if I dwel any leþer wþþt you I pray  
god punishe me for it.

**T**han whþ Charlemayne saw  
his peers that were so sore  
moued wþþt angre agaynst him: he  
sayd to them. Lordes haue no doubt  
of noþyng, for the duke Rycharde  
shall haue no harme. Soþ sayde the  
Duke Naymes ye doo great wrong  
for to say so, for a foole neuer bel  
uettil he scelle loze, weene you to  
make vs fooles wþþt your wordes: we  
se þ galous made by soþ to hag our  
felaþ, wherfore I tel you þ a mys  
chiche take me if I dwel wþþt you a  
ny leþer. Whan the duke Naymes  
had sayd so: he went out of the paui  
lion of Charlemayne and in likewise  
all the peers of Fraunce with hym  
a. iii. and

The booke of the fourre

and wente into hys tente the whiche he made to be pulled downe incontinent. And whan they of the hoste of Charlemayne saw hym: they were soye afraied. And ye ought to wyt that they were so sore moued within a litle while hym there abode in the hoste of Charlemayne not one baron nor knyght but onlye the poore symple gentilmen, and comyn people. whan Rowlande saw hym: he went on his wayes wth the other peers. And wit it at that houre hym hoste of Charlemayne was made lesse than it was afraide by xi. thousande men.

**B**eynawde that was vpon the hyghe gate of Ardeyne saw so greate numbre of folke cominge togidher: so called he to hym the messager that was but comen fro Charlemayne, and sayd to hym in thys maner. Come heere messanger, tell me what Charlemayne hath sayd vnto you. Hym sayd the messanger, wit it that ye haue missed of peace, for charlemayne wil nothing of it, but he seadeth you wodde by me that ye be not so hardy vpon the eyen of your head to doo any harme to the Duke Rycharde of Normandy. And whan he had said this: he turned him toward the duke Rycharde, and sayd to him. Hym duke now may ye know howe muche Charlemayne loueth you. Wit it for certaine that ye get nother helpe nor succoures of him, and for the loue of von Rowlande, and all the other peers of Fraunce ben ful sore an angred with him, for ye may perceve it well by theyz tentes that be pulled downe. And so I am sure that

the moste parte of the hoste shall depart for the loue of you. And so shal not abyde there but only the erle guauillon & his lignage. For theyz tentes ben righted & all the other broughe downe. Whan Reynawde wiste that the frenchemen were angry to Charlemayne for the loue of hym duke Rycharde of Normandy: he chaungeth his courage and could not keep hym from weepynge. And after he turned hym towarde Rycharde of Normandy and sayd to hym, for god my cosyn I praye you for to pardon me the great shame that I haue doon to you. Reynawde sayd Rycharde I blame you not, for I wot wel that ye cannot doo thereto. For the greate pride and crueltie of Charlemayne is causer of al this. Whan Reynawde had cried mercy to the duke Richard he bounde him, and Alarde and Guycharde came to helpe hym for they were all glad that Richard was deliuered. Not withstandynge alioe that they were disposed for to make hym dye shamefully. And whan they had doone so: Reynawde sayd, colin Rycharde leant vpon this walle, and we shall looke what Charlemayne wyl doo. Hym sayd hym duke Rycharde ye say well let vs see it.

**A**nd whan Charlemayne saw that his barons went away as it is said: he was so i for it that he waxed almost madde all quicke for the greate angre that he had, and helde a dentylance in hym handes, the whiche he began to gnawe with his teeth so angry he was, and whan his wraethe was a litle gone: he cal- led

led a knyght and sayd to hym. How lyght on horsbacke lyghtly, and ride after Rowland and after the other barons and tell them in my behalfe that they come speake with me, and I shalbe demened as they wyl chenuise, and that I shall pardon. Reynawde yf they wyl come agayne to me. Sayd sayde the knyght blessed be God that hath brought you to thys mynde. And than this knyght tooke an hors and rode hastelys after the xii. peers of Fraunce. And whan Reynawde that was with the duke Rycharde of Normandie vpon the gate of Isdelyn appercouped this: he sayde to the duke Rycharde of Normandie, colin I se come a knyght out of the pavillon of the kyng Charlemayne. I believe that he goeth vnto the xii. Peeres of Fraunce for to make theym to returne agayne. I weene we shall haue this daye peace and god before. Sayd Rycharde ye shall haue peace maugre them al y leeteth it. I ought for to loue deere my ffe. Wes, the whiche be cause to keepe me from death, & also to haue peace. Wyt it that the knyght rode so fast that he ouer tooke Rowlande, & all the other peers of Fraunce, and said vnto them in this maner of wise. Lordes, the kyng Charlemayne sendeth you word by me that ye wyl returne agayne to hym, and he shall pardon Reynawde for the loue of you & for goddes loue come lyghtly. For he never lest wepyng syde that yee went your wye from hym. Raymes sayd Rowland, let vs returne agayne. For I holde the peace male wherof this sorowfull warre shall

sayle y hath lasted so longe a whyle. Whan the Duke Raymes hearde Rowland speake so: he was ryght glad of it, and Iorned his handes to warde heauen, and sayde in this maner wise. Good lordes Jesus blessed be the tyme that it hath pleased y to tourne the courage of the kyng Charlemayne, and that this vnhappy warre is brought to an ende. And whan the Duke Raymes had sayde this: they returned agayne to warde Charlemayne.

**H**ad whan Reynawde apper  
reliued that the xii. peers  
wente agayne to Charlemayne: he  
sayd to the Duke Rycharde of Normandie. Colyn the Barons returne  
agayne. I believe that the peace shal  
be made, and that we shal now wel  
goe soone at our libertie, now shal  
Reynawde maye say that I and my  
brettern ben at his comandement,  
and shal be as longe as we ben men  
on lyue. Well glad were the Barons  
of the one part, & of the other, bicaus  
that God had luffred that the peace  
should be made. And whan Charle  
mayne saw his barons come agayne  
he went agaynst the & sayd. By God  
my lordes ye are welful of great p[ro]le  
de y ye make me to be come peisable  
With Reynawde agaynst my wyl,  
ye know y I haue hated hi so muche  
that I may not see him, but I shalbe  
angry bycause of his pride that is so  
great. Wherfore yf ye will y I make  
peace wyth hym: I wil that he goe  
into the holy lande poorelye clothed  
on foote. And so I wil haue his hors  
Bayarde. And I shal also returne  
agayne

The booke of the four

agayne to his brethern all they? ly-  
uelode out of my handes. Therfore  
yf thus he wyl doo; I shal fal to pea-  
ce, and accorde with hym, & els not,  
for I make mine a vowe to God þ  
I shall never doo other wyls therin  
thā I tel you now. And therfore loo-  
kis wel whiche of you shall doo thyg  
messenger. Hyz sayd þ duke Naymes  
I shal go to Reynawde with a good  
wyl, yf it be your pleasure that I go  
to hym. Naymes sayd Charlemayn  
It pleasech me well. And than incō-  
rinent the duke Naymes rode to Ar-  
deyn. And whan Reynawde saw him  
come: he knew hym well, and Wente  
him agaynst, and so did the duke Ri-  
charde, and þ brethern of Reynawde  
Whan the duke Naymes saw þ No-  
ble Barons come agaynst hym: he  
lyghted fro n the horse anon & went  
and kyssed them all, and after he had  
doone so: he sayd. Reynawde. Char-  
lemayne lendeþ me to you with his  
greetynge. God yelde hym sayd Rey-  
nawde. Now haue I that I haue de-  
sired so longe. Naymes shal I haue  
peace: yea sayd the Duke Naymes  
vnder a condicōn, the whiche I shal  
tell you. It is that ye must go poore-  
ly clothed, and beggyn your breade  
for godes sake in the holy lande, and  
so shal ye leue bayarde wþt Char-  
lemayn, and this doone: þc shal haue  
peace. And he shal gine agayne your  
betrage to your bretherne. Duke  
Naymes said Reynawde ye be right  
welcom. And I promysse you that  
I am redy to doo the commaundes  
ment of the kinge. And yf he wyl  
haue of me oþry thynge more by any  
wyls: I shal in every poynþ fulfyll

his wil if it be possible, for me to doo  
it. Now shal I be a good trauaþ, for  
I can well aske bread whan me ne-  
dereth. Whan the duke Naymes heard  
Reynawde speake thus: he was wel  
glad of it, and so was the duke Ry-  
charde, that they saw the noble Rey-  
nawde agreed to the will of Charle-  
mayne, so muche as for to become a  
poore begger for to haue peace. And  
after þ Reynawde was thus acor-  
ded thereto: he Went into hys stable  
and tooke Bayarde, & than he tooke  
his baner, & bare it on hie upon the  
highe towre in token of peace. And  
whan Charlemayne saw the baner  
of Reynawde: he shewed it to Ro-  
lland. Ha god sayd Rowlande howe  
mekē is Reynawde, & good of kynde  
to haue made peace in this maner of  
wyls: Blessed be Ihesus that hath  
gauen him that wyl for to go nowe  
a foote, wherof I playne hym soþe.  
Rowland sayd Ogier. Reynawde is  
a lambe full of mekenes, and in him  
are all þ good condicōns þ a knyght  
ought to haue. This hanging: came  
therre the duke Naymes that brought  
Bayarde with hym and preseted him  
to Charlemayne, & said to him. Sir,  
Reynawde is redy for to doo all þ  
þe haue comaunded him, and he shal  
departe to morow yf þe wyl lythe  
your pleasure is so. I wyl wel said  
Charlemayne, but tell me wherē is  
the Duke Rycharde: for I wil know  
it. Hyz sayd the duke Naymes.  
Wyt that the Duke Rycharde sareþ  
well, and is abiden with Reynawde  
for he wyl conter hym whan he  
goeth. And wyt that Reynawde  
thyg

this hangyng: made great cheere to his folke at his easse, and after sayd to the Lordes I beseche you be not sorw that I go, for I haue made this peace more for you than for me. I pray you that ye holde wel together tyl I come agayne, and whā he had sayd this to them: he went into hys chābre and vnclothed hymself from hys good raymentes, and cast vpon him a pooze mantell, & a payre of big shooone wel clouted. & madefor to be brought to hym a palster well pennen for to beate in his hāde. And ye must wyt that þ duke Rychard was styll with him, to whome Reynawde commended his Wyse and his chylđren, and all his brethern. And þ he wold pray the kinge that he shoud haue them for recommended. And whan he had attayned hymself so: he came to wacie þ halle to the duchesse hys Wyse.

**A**nd whan the noble duchesse Clare saw her husband so attayned in his beggers clothyng: she tooke suche sorwe for it that she fel downe in a swoune to the erthe as she had be dead. And whan Reynawde saw her so: he ran for to take her vp and after sayd to her. Lady for God take it not so sore at your herte. For I shall soone come agayne, and god before. And wyt you shall my bretherne abyde that shall serue you as ther lady. And so I tell you that I am so glad of the peace that mesmeth that I am come agayne al ter. Madame my deere Wyse. I pray god keepe you from all euilles. And with this he kissed her full sweetly.

And than he tooke on his way, and whan the duchesse saw hym goe: she tooke for it so great sorw that she swouned agayne, and abode thus a longe while þ all her gentilwomen went she had ben dead. And after she was come againe to hersel: she made great mone for her lord Reynawde for she scratched her face, & pulled her heirest from her head for great sorow, & whan she had made so muche sorow: she said. O good husband Reynawde whose like is not in all the worlde of goodnes, god be w you. For I wot well that I shal never see you. And whan she had sayde these wordes, she went into her chamb're & tooke all her noble raymentes & cast them in a syre, and whā they were al brent: she tooke a pooze smocke, and cast it about her, & said she shoud never were none oþer clothes till she saw her lord husband agayne.

**A**fter that Reynawde had sayde leue of his wife: he departed, the duke Richearde, his brethern and his folke conveyed hym a great waye, alwayes speaking that it was pitte to heare. And whan Reynawde thought that they had gone ferre enough him: he turned him to warden them & sayd. Lordes I praye you hūbly þ ye returne home again, for as long as ye be w me: I am not at my easse, go your way in the name of god and recomforde my Wyse the duchesse that weepeth so sore, & to you my brethern I comende her & my children also. Wyt it whan Reynawde had sayd this: there was none þ could take leue of him so ful of sorow

## The booke of the four

forwore they were, except Warde that sayd to him. My deere brother I pray  
you here help that ye come shortlye a-  
gayne, for your departinge is so he-  
re to me y Jerow I shall die for so-  
row. And whan Warde had sayd so:  
he embrased his brother & tooke leue  
of hym making great sorrow, & so did  
Richardde of Normandye to whome  
Reynawde sayd, my cosyn I comede  
you ones my wife agayne and my  
children & al my bretheren for they be  
of your bloud well ye know it. Bet-  
nowde sayd y duke Richardde, I pros-  
myse & s'were as knyght that I shal  
heipe & defende them agaynst all me  
except agaynst the king, & doubt not  
for them, for they shal want nothig.

**C**Now leueth y hystory to speke of  
Reynawde y went to the holy lande

acaid as ye haue heard; and resour-  
neth to speake of his bretheren howe  
they came to Charlemayne, with the  
duke Richardde of Normandy.

**C**How after that Reynawde was  
departed fro Ardeyn to make his vi-  
age beyonde the sea, clothed poorely  
as a pilgrim aske his meat for god  
sake: the duke of Normandye tooke a-  
larde, Guychard & Richardde, & brou-  
ght tē with him to Charlemayne,  
whiche received them honourably, &  
tooke vp his siege, & went to paris.  
But whan he cam to the citie of lege  
upon y riuere of meuse: he made bay-  
ache to be cast in it, with a millstone  
at the necke of him. But me saven y  
bayarde escaped out, and that he is a  
lyue yet in the forst of Ardeyne.



**A**thyg's patty sheweth the hy-  
Story that whā Reynawde had  
put himselfe to the way as yee haue  
heare: Richard de of Normandy and  
his brethern came agayne to Ardeyn  
full sorwe for Reynawde, wher as  
theþ founde the good duchesse Clare,  
þ made greate sorwe for her lordes  
departyng. And whan they were co-  
me agayne there: the duke Richard  
tooke the duchesse by the hande, and  
began to recomforde her, & so many  
sayre wordes he layde vnto her that  
she slaked a litle her sorow, and after  
þys the duke Richard sayde to the  
brethern of Reynawde, in this ma-  
ner. Lordes goe make you redy, and  
we shal go vnto Charlemayn. Sir  
sayd the thre brethern, let vs whan  
it please you. And then they went &  
tooke on the best cloþing that they  
had. And I promise you they were  
thre sayre knyghtes, and after they  
were wel apparcayled, they mounted  
eche of them vpon a palfreye of yþre  
þyce ryght sayre Wythout anye ar-  
mes. And for to speake shortly: they  
yssued out of Ardeyn and came to þ  
pauillion of Charlemayne. And whā  
the king saw the, he was ryght glad  
So he commaunded al hys barons  
that they shold go agayne them. Ha  
god sayd Ro wland, now comen the  
thre bretherne well sorwe, certayne  
they haue a cause, for they haue lost  
theyþ helpe succoure and hope. Now  
I see that the duke Richard cometh  
With them, wherof he dooth well,  
for he is their bryndis.

**N**ow ye ought to wot that þ  
thre brethern of Reynawde

came to the pauillion of Charlemain  
well honestly arrayed. And whā they  
were afore the kyng: they kneelled hū-  
bly at his fesse, and Alarde spake  
þys & sayd. Sir Reynawde our bro-  
ther recomender h him hūbly to your  
good grace, & salueth you as his so-  
uerayne lord, & he sendeth you Rich-  
ard de the duke of Normandy, whi-  
ch yþre se heire, and so he pratech you  
þ yþre will haue vs for recommended,  
for he hath taken his way towarde þ  
holy lande for to accomplithe your  
commaundement. Freende sayd Char-  
lemyne þe be right welcome. Sþt  
that it please our lord that we shal  
be frendes. I shall doo for you, and  
shal bring you al to honour, as it ap-  
peteyneth to liche knyghtes as yþre  
ben. And yþ god wyl bring Reynawd  
saufe agayne from his viage: I shal  
holde him as deere as I doo mine  
owne newe Ro wland, for he is re-  
plenysched wþ great worthyness. Sþt  
sayd Richard god bring him agayn,  
whan the king had thus spoken wþ  
the brethern of Reynawde: he came  
to the duke Richard de of Normandy  
& killed him more than x. times, and  
whan he had feasted him ynoch: he  
said to him, duke Richard I praye  
you þ yþre will tel me what prisō gaue  
you Reynawde & what meates for to  
eat. Sir said the duke of Normandy  
by the sayth that I owe to god and  
to you I had better prisō, and was  
more at mine easle than curt knyght  
was, for I was serued of the same þ  
Reynawde was, and sometyme bet-  
ter, and so I promysse you sþt that  
the gentyl duchesse hys wyfe made  
me greate chere, and good compaþy  
With

The booke of the four

With her two fayre chyldren. Syr I  
desche you if that euer ye loued me:  
that ye wyl worshyp flatde & hys  
bretcherne yf it please you, for they  
haue done to me great honour, and  
they haue givē me great gifteis. And  
yf it please you ye shal haue the good  
duchess and het chyldren to be recom-  
mended, for she is the humblest lady  
of the Worlde, and the moste wysest.  
Rycharde sayd Charlemayne, wyt  
it that I shal not sayle them as long  
as lyfe shalbe in my body. And whā  
the chyldren of Reynawde shal be in  
age for to be made knyghtes: I shal  
doube them to it mine owne handes  
With great worship, and god spare  
me lyfe, and so shall I gyue them la-  
des yngough for to maynten theyz  
estate. Gramercy syr sayd þ duke Ry-  
charde of Normandye, & god yeelede  
you.

**W**han they had deuyled all y-  
noughc of the thynges afore  
sayd: the kyng Charlemayne com-  
maunded that he shold be dyslodged,  
and a non his commaundement  
was doone, and than euery man put  
hymselfe towarde the way to warde  
his countrie. And whan that þ king  
saw that it was tyme: he mounted on  
horsebacke, and tooke on his way to  
warde the citie of lege. And whan he  
was come in lege: he lodged him vp  
on the bride of the ryuer of meuze.  
And whan the mornyng was come,  
he made be brought afore hym the  
good horse of Reynawde Bayarde.  
And whan he saw him: he began for  
to saye in his Wyse. Ha Bayarde,  
bayarde, thou hast osten angred me,

but I am come to þ poynt, god ges-  
metey for to auenge me, and I pro-  
mystee thee thou shalt now abyte it ful  
deere the tourment and felonys that  
I haue osten times had by thee. And  
whan the kyng had sayd so: he made  
a great milstone to be fastened at the  
necke of bayard, and than made him  
to be cast from the brydge do wone in-  
to the water, & whan Bayarde was  
thus tombled in the ryuer: he sank  
vnto the botome of it. And whan the  
kyng saw that: he made great Joye  
and so sayd. Ha bayarde no we haue  
þ that I desyred and wylshed so lōg  
for ye be now dead, but if ye drinke  
out al the water. And whan the ste-  
chē men sawe the greate cruelnes of  
Charlemayne that auenged himself  
vpon a poore beast: they were yll cō-  
tent. And than spake the bishop tur-  
pyn, and sayd Ogyer of Denmarke,  
What thinke you by Charlemayne:  
he hath well shewed at this a great  
parte of his greate felonys, syr sayd O-  
gier ye say erouth, he hath doone to  
greate folye for to make dye suchē a  
good beast as this horse was. Syr  
sayd Oliver to Rowlande. Charles-  
mayne is now warden all folyshe, ye  
sape full erouth sayd Rowlande. I  
perceyue it full well and for to say  
þ erouth: there was none of the. xli. pee-  
res but he wept for loue of the good  
horse Bayarde. But who someuer  
was sorwe for it. Charlemayne was  
glad of it.

**N**owye ought to know that  
after that bayarde was caste  
in the ryuer of meuze: he wente vnto  
the botom as ye haue hetde, & might  
not come vp for bicaus of the great  
stone

Stone that was at his necke whiche  
was horriblie heuyn, and whan bay-  
arde sawe he myghte none otherwile  
scape: he smote so herte and so hard  
with his scete vpon the mylly stonie  
that he brast it, and came agayne a-  
boue the water and began to swym,  
so that he passed it all ouer at the o-  
ther syde, and whan he was come to  
londe: he shaked hym selfe so to ma-  
ke falle the water fro him and began  
to crie hie, and made a mertueylious  
noyse, and after beganne to renne so  
swyftlye as the tempest had borne  
him awaite, and entred in to the great  
forest of Ardeyn. And whan the king  
Charlemayne saw that bayard was  
escaped: he tooke so grete sorow for  
it that almost he loste his wye for an-  
grie. But all the barons were gladde  
of it. Thus as ye haue heard: escaped  
bayarde out of the handes of Char-  
lemayne, and wit it for very certayn  
that the folke of the countrey saien,  
that he is yet a lyue wotchin the wood  
of Ardeyn. But wot it whan he see-

eth man or weman: he renneth anon  
awaie, so that no body maye come  
neare hym. And after all these chyn-  
ges: the kyng Charlemayne as an-  
grye as he was departed fro Meuse  
and went in to a chapell that was  
nigh, and called to hym al his barons  
and gaue them leue to goe into ther  
countrys, wherof ther were ryght  
glad, for they were sore desynginge for  
to see cheþ wþnes their children and  
their londes.

**H**owre Reynawode found Hawgis  
bis cosyn as he went by the way for  
to accomplishe his voyage to the ho-  
ly sepulchre in the countrey of Con-  
stantynopie. And howe they went to  
gither to Iherusalem, whiche the ad-  
myral of pessle had taken by treason  
vpon the Christen, but Reynawode  
and his cosyn Hawgis dyd so muchi  
with the folke of the countrey: that  
the rite of Iherusalem was gotten  
again by the christen people.



The booke of the fourte

**N**ow tellerh the histori that after that Reynawde was departed from Iudeyn for to goe in to the holy lond: he went so much by the iourneys that he came to constantiopolis, and lodged him in an holme womans house, whiche setued him as well as he coulde, and gaue him suche meat as he had gauen to her, and after he washed his feet as he was wont to doo to other pylgrymes. And whā this good woman had doon so much: sh: tooke Reynawde by the hande, and broughte him in to her owne chambre, and sayde to him, Good man ye sh: til lie here, for in my other chambre ye may not be, for there is a poore pylgryme that is soze lycke. Danie said Reynawde let me see that pylgryme that ye speake of whiche is soze lycke, with a good wyl sayd the poore woman in ye hall see him, for I promyse you there is greace pitie in hym. And than she cooke Reynawde by the hande, and broughte him to the pylgryme that was in his bed. And whan Reynawde saw hym: he knewe well that it was his cosyn Hawgys wherof he was ryghte glad, so began he to speake to him and sayd. Freend howis it with your persone. And whā Hawgys heard Reynawde speake to hym: he lepte oute of his bed as he never had be lycke and embrased Reynawde more than twentye tymis and aker said to him. Cosyn howe is it with you: and what aduenture byngeth you herre in this poore cloathing that ye haue on: tell me yf it please you, haue ye peace with the kyng Chaclemayn: Cosyn said Reynawde,

per by sucha maner as I shall tell you. And then he reborsed hym at the maner as ye haue hearde a done, and all the creature that he had had. Wyth Chaclemayne.

**W**han Hawgys understande the wordes of Reynawde he was ryghte glad of it. And than he embrased againe Reynawde and said to hym I am now whole for the goddes tynges that ye haue broughte to me. And therfore I am dysposed to goe with you, and doubt not we shall not dyefor hungry, for I am mayster to; to begge breade. And whan the good woman sawe that these two pylgrymes made so greate feaste the one to the other: she thought it myghenys otherwile be but they were of greac lygnage, and that they had had soone greate a doo togyther, and the laydes to theym. Fayre lordes I see that ye knowe well eche other, wherfore I praye you tel me what ye be, and from whence ye come: Good woman said. Hawgys syth that ye wyl kno we of our beryngs I shall tell you a partie of it. Witte than that we been we poore gentylmen that are banished oute of fraunce. So muste we goe in suche habycas ye see in to the holme lande, and we been cosins germanes and we shall doo oute voyage to gyber yf it please god. And whā the lady that good woman understande these wordes: she had greate joye. Thenne made she to bryng theym meatenough and wyne. Hawgys that syth so longe hadde drunke no wyne dranke some wyne that nyghte

for the loue of Reynawde. Shorlye to speake: none myghte say no; thynke how great feast made the two cosins to eche other. And whan the day was come: Reynawde and Hawgys arose and rooke leaue of the holy lady, and put hemselfe to the waie. And wye that so muche went the two pylgrymes by their tourneys that they cam ryghte the cite of Iherusalem, and were but a litle myle strom it, so that they myghte see well the temple and the towre of Dauid, and the most parte of Iherusalem. And whan Hawgys and Reynawde sawe that they were ryghte gladde of it, and yeelded graces vnto god that he had suffred them to come so ryghte the holye cite. Whan they had doone thus theyr prayres: they went on their waye so to haue gonnes within Iherusalem. But they were gon but a lytell: whan they sawe a greate hoste aboue the cite eynynge before the towre of Dauid. Where were many pauenions of the christen that were there so to ryghte with the admiral of Perce that by force helde the cite of Iherusalem. Reynawde did tarike whan he sawe the hoste that was afore eynynge: and saide to his cosin Hawgys. Cosin what folke is yonder as ye thinke, for it semeth a greate hoste afore Iherusalem, are they Saracyns or christen, what say you: Surelye saide Hawgys I can not tell, and I am soore mercayled what it may be. Thus as Reynawde and Hawgys spake togidher: there came an olde man rydynge that waye that came from the hoste. And whan Reynawde sawe hym: he wenc hym ayenste and sayde to hym. God

sawe you good man, tell me and I tolde you, what be they afore the holy cite, are they christen or Saracyns: Pilgryme said the olde man they ben christen that haue besieged Iherusalem, and canne not take it, but ye maye well goe without perill. Now tell me said Reynawde who is within Iherusalem: Wye ic saide the olde man, that the admiral of Perce haue taken it by treason. And how ha he taken it by treason sayde Reynawde: Wye sayde the olde man that the admiral all arrayed hym as a pylgryme and manye of his folke with him, & went into the cite one after another and whan they were all within: they blywe an horne ryghte hyghe, and set hande to their swerdes, and foughte strongly, so that they were maysters of the cite or euer the king Thomas could be armed nor his folke, þ which coulde not save them selfe with such fewe folke as was lefte hym alþue, but he was taken prisoner, and anon all the countrey rose up, and haue besieged the cite as ye see, and I criste with the grace of god: that the cite shall be take shorly. Nowe tell me said Reynawde if they of the cite come out upon the christen, yes saide the olde man, for they ben much folke within, and the thing that most gryeth vs: is that oure folke haue no heade nor no lord. And ye wot well that folke that haue no heade nor no lord: canne doo but lytell good. And whan Reynawde hearde this word: he began to smile, and after he said. fare well good man. We wyl goe there so to see what shall hap of it. And whan he hadde said so:

The booke of the feure

he tooke on his waye with his cosyn  
Mawgys, and ceased not till they  
were come in the hoste. And  
whan they were come there: every man  
looked upon Reynawd that was so  
fayre a pylgrym and so faire a man.  
And Reynawd looked here and there,  
and wist not where to put himselfe,  
than he aduised hym and sayde to  
Mawgys. My cosyn we must see that  
we haue a litlet teche or some other  
thing, for to make vs a lodges there  
at one corner of the walles, and whan  
Reynawd had sayd so: Maugis cea-  
sed not till he had made a litlet lod-  
ge. This hanginge that they made  
their lodge, the armysall of Percy  
yssued out of Iherusalem with wel  
three thousande syghtinge men, and  
entered into the christen hoste towrad  
saynt Ieromys churche.

**A**nd whan the gooderle of Ra-  
mes, and wallerauen of fayere  
and Gessray of Nasareth sawe that:  
they came anone to theyr harneys.  
And I tell you that there Jaffas of  
Rames was soone armed sooner then  
the other and incontynente he ranne  
upon the turkes and beganne to crye  
Jassa as he as he could, and smote  
upon the Persians, and dominaged  
them soore, for he was a valiaunce  
in armes. And whan all they of the  
hoste were armid: than began there  
a battayle of the one parte, and of the  
other right cruell. Than came there  
gessraye of Nasareth, in whiche entred  
amonge the thickest of the Saracins  
and began fast to smyte them deade  
to the erthe. Shortly to speake: thys  
battayl was ryght great and mortal

for there were many spores broken,  
and many sheldes clouen, and of the  
one parte and also of the other were  
manye menne ouerthowen to the  
grounde. And re oughte to Wyte that  
wallerauen of fayre smot there dead  
manye a paynyn, so that it was won-  
der to see his faires of armes for no  
persayn durst abyde afoore him. And  
whan the admiral sawe this: he said  
to himselfe, that he shoulde never see  
nothynge by hymselfe, but he shoulde  
avenge upon Gessraye that so cour-  
menced his folke. And aron he tooke  
a spere in his hand, and went ayenst  
Gessray. And whan Gessraye sa-  
we that: he ranne asprely upon him and  
they gaue eche other such strokes in  
theyr sheldes that bothe theyr spes-  
res fleshe in many peces, and with  
this couers was the admiraluer  
thowen from his horse to the erthe,  
but Gessraye of Nasareth abode in  
arslons of his saddle. And whan the  
admirall sawe him on the ground: he  
was angry for it, so rose he up igh-  
tely and set hand to his swerde and  
made greate semblant for to defend  
hym selfe. And whan Gessraye of  
Nasareth sawe this: he turned hym  
toward the admiral and smot hym  
so great a stroke with his swerde up  
on his helme that he astonyed hym.  
And whan Gessraye sawe that he made  
no defence: he bowed hys bodye to-  
ward him, and tooke the admirall  
by the helme and wolde haue broughte  
hym away. And whan the admiral  
sawe that he was take: he cried Percy  
as loude as he myghte, so that his  
folke hearde hym and ranne there as  
he was, and deliuered hym from  
the

the handes of Geffraye and set hym  
vpon a horse and broughee him with  
them, whan than Reynawd saw that  
the baccayll was so cruell: he sayde to  
Mawgis. Alas cosyn yf I had my  
barneys I shoud goe gladly succour  
our folke, for it is that chinge that I  
haue moiste desyred as that I myghte  
beate armes ayenst the sarasins, ha  
said Mawgis to him, ye are not wise  
to saye so, ye wot howe we been tra  
ueylied of our pylgrymage, and that  
it is time that we rest vs a lycell and  
also the warre shall not be ended so  
soone, but that ye maye proue your  
selfe in armes afore the holpe cytie of  
Iherusalem be wonne, wherfore I  
pray you rest your selfe thys nyghe,  
and to morow and god before we shal  
be syghte our enmyes, for I haue de  
lybered that I shal be no hermyng  
longe as we ben togither, but I shal  
helpe you with al my power, but one  
chinge I tell you that never whyle I  
lyue I shal cast no charme more, for  
I haue promyset God and all the  
sayntes to whome I praye to keep  
me cheirke, but I tell you that I loue  
you so hercelye that yf I shoulde be  
dampned, yet shoulde I come oute of  
my hermyng for to succoure you yf  
ye had need. By cosyn sayd Reynaw  
de I thanke you for youre good wyl  
and I knowe well ye saye trouh that  
we haue mylles of rest, but I canne  
not keepe my selfe, but I must goe to  
baccayll. Alas that I haue not Bay  
arde and flamberge my good silerde,  
for I shoulde doo thys daye that god  
shoulde conne me thanke of it.

Byghee soþ was Reynawd that he  
hadde noþer horse nor barneye for

to helpe the chyfsten folke.

**T**his hanging that Reynawd  
and Mawgis spake togither:  
the erle of Rames, Geffraye of Ha  
sarech and Wallerauen made greare  
slaughter of the turkes and of syper  
cians. And whan the admiral sawe  
this: he with drenghis folke again in  
to the cypte of Iherusalem. For he  
migh no lenger suffre the great ha  
me and hurte that the chyfsten made  
hym. And whan the chyfsten saw that  
the Sarasins were discomfited: they  
chased theim Sharpelye, and slew so  
many of theym that none canne tell  
the numbre. And than the erle Jaffas  
that was a worthy knight and a wi  
se, he went to the gate of saynt Steue  
and kepte him there with his folke.  
And whan the Turkes came for to  
sauue theimself within Iherusalem:  
the erle Jaffas went ayenst them and  
kepte the passage that they myghte  
not ente at theye easle within the ci  
tie, and there agayne were manye of  
them slayne. And the admiral sawe  
that he was an angred for it, and  
tooke an oþer waye to the cytie to  
warde the gate for, and it happed  
than that the turkes passed afore the  
lodge of Reynawde and by the great  
prece and stampynge of their horses  
the lodge of Reynawde was broken  
and marrē, wherof Reynawde was  
angrye. Than Reynawde looked a  
boute hym, and founde noþynge for  
to syghte Wyckall but a forke that  
susteyned vp theys lodge, that was  
great & stronge. And he tooke it anow  
wyth boþ hys handes and mounted  
vpon a wall that was by the waye

b.iii. and

### The booke of the soure

And as the turkes passed there by: he  
laid vpon them with a greacc stiffe  
and smote them dwene, two and two  
at once as swynes, and to slaye the  
trouthe; Reynawde beinge thus vpon  
the broken wall slewe mo than a hun-  
dred of them as they passed by him.  
And whan Hawgys sawe that Rei-  
nawd dyd so well, he tooke his palste  
and came vpon the wall by him, and  
began to smite with both his handes  
so great strokē, that thei that he cau-  
ght feild deade to the grounde. Whyle  
that Reynawd and Hawgys dyd the-  
se sayres of armes: came there the erle  
of Rames and Gessray of Nasareth  
that folowed after the Sarasing with  
all dylygence. Whiche saue the greate  
quancie of deade Sarasyng, that  
Rynawde and Hawgys had slayne  
upon the waye by theyr yrownes in so  
muche that all molte menne could ri-  
de nomore that way, for y great heape  
of turkes that laye dead there, wherof  
the Sarasyng were sore abashed.  
Than the erle of Rames shewed to  
Gessray of Nasareth the greate slau-  
ghter that the two pylgrymes hadde  
doon and meruayled of him that held  
the forke that he was so greate and  
so valliaunc a man, and in lyke wise  
that other that helde the palster that  
was not so great. See said he howe y  
waye is couered aboue theym With  
this cursed folke, I beleue that they  
be felawes. Ha goddis sayd Gessray  
I meruayill what folke they are, I be-  
leue that god haue sent them to vs  
for our sauynge, or elles they ben ouer  
hardye fooles sayng that they ben al  
naked, and here not the derh. Sic said  
the earle of Rames, what so euer

they ben: they doo like worshipe men.  
God al mighty keep them from hurr,  
daunger and from euell combaunce.  
For they haue well greued our enem-  
ies and I shall never be at myne case  
tyll that I haue spoken Wryth theym,  
for to wryt what folke they be and fro  
whence they come.

**C**reat Was the chase that the erle  
of rames, Gessray of Nasareth  
.. and waltauen made after the  
Turkes and perlias. For right greate  
slaughter they made of theym or they  
were withdrawen within Iherusalem.  
For they leste not the chase  
tyll they were within the gate foze.  
Whan Reynawde sawe that all the  
Sarasing were passed he calle after  
them his great stiffe for he could doo  
no more to the. And after he behou-  
gher hym and descended stro the wal,  
and sayde he Wolde not lese hys for-  
ke and keit it agayne, for it shoulde  
serue for to make hys lode as it dyd  
before. This hangyng: the earle of  
Rames cam from the chasyng again,  
and soughe the two Pylgrymes  
for to speake with them, and he soud  
them where they were makynge of  
their lode. Than he behelde them  
Wel and sayde nothinge. And whan  
he sawe that they were so greate and  
so well shapen pryncipally Reynaw-  
de, for he wanted nothing, he lighed  
from his horse and tooke them by  
the hande, and made them to syde  
besyde hym. Whan they were set: he  
erle sayd to Reynawde. By strende,  
I praye you telle me trouthe of that  
I shall aske you. By the fatche that

ye owe to the temple where ye purpose to goe. Tell me yowre names and what ye be, and of whence ye come, and why you goe so poorely arrayed. Sir said Reynawd siche that it please you to wit of oure beyng, and of our name: I shall tellle it you with a good wyl. Nowe wyt it that I am called Reynawd of Mountawban, but Charlemayne hathe casted me thensom wrongefull, the Duke Iimmon is my sachet, and I am now come in to the holy londe for to serue our lord ayenst his enmies. For thus hathe commaunded me: o doo Charlemayne my souerayne lorde, whan I made peace with him. And that woyse is: I must needes come thus poorely arrayed as ye see beggyng my woyde where so euer I goe or come, wheresaynst I wolde never goe for to haue peace. Whan the erle of tames understande Reynawd: he was gladde of him, and heaued vp his handes to warde heauen and thanked God and affer sayd. O nob'le knight Reynawde of Mountawban the best knyghte of the woynde, take heere my homage. So I gyue my selfe vneo you and al my goodes. And whan Reynawde sawe this: he sayde to the erle of Tames. Stand vp for ye protec me ouerage. By god sayd the erle I shall never arraye cyll ye haue graunted me a thynge. Sir sayde Reynawde, I graunt it you with a good wyl, and with good herte. Gramercye sayd the erle, and than he stode vp and sayde to Reynawde. Is it trouche that ye haue peace with the great king Charlemayne? I las where been yowre bretcheren the worthy knyghtes and

Ma Wgys yowre cosyn, in whome ye haue so great trust, & your good horse bayard: Sir said Reynawd siche that I had peace with the kinge Charlemaine of the warre that so longe hath lasted by such maner as I shall tell you, that it is siche that I must come heere in such clothyng as ye see vpon me, and heere is Ma Wgis my cosyn that is comen heere with his fre wyl, for he is not constrainyd thereto, for the kyng Charlemayn wouch he be deade longe a goe and my bretherne been abyden with my wyfe and my chyldyn. For the kyng hath returned all oure lyuelode vnes theym again. And whan the erle understande the trouche of all, he was ryghe gladde of it, so that he beganne to crye with a hyghe voyce. Ha duke Reynawde of Mountawban, howe greatly be you welcome heere to vs, as the most valyante knyght of the woynde blis sed be the good lorde that hathe con duyte you byther. And I praye you for god: that ye receyue myne homage so shall ye sauie the Worlippes of the kyng thomas that is nowe prysoner ther within the citie, for and ye be oure capitayne and oure heade: I put no doube but we shall well soone take Iherusalem. And thus shall the kyng Thomas be belyuored oute of the handes of the false sarasyns.

**T**here came all the barons of Surrye that were full glad of the coming of Reynawd of mountawban, to whome they made greate reuerence, and feasted hym ryghly

### The booke of the four

hyghly. And shorly to speake: they al  
prayed him to be they; lorde and head  
capitayne, and that he wolde guyde  
them as the erle of Rames had doon  
afore. And whan Reynawde sawe  
that all the barons of Sutrye desy-  
red and prayed him so soze for to re-  
ceyue they; homages: he sayde vnto  
them. Lordes siche that it pleasech  
you soz to doo me this great honour:  
I take it, sause always the ryght of  
kynge Thomas Whiche is your so-  
uerayne lorde. Sy; sayde the barons  
we will haue it thus. And thenne he  
receyued their homages, and whan  
he hadde receyued them: the erle of  
Rames kneeld before him and sayd  
Sy; I wil that ye give me now thac  
ttinge that ye haue graunted me. Sir  
sayde Reynawde saye what it is and  
ye shall haue it. Sy; sayde the erle of  
Rames it is that ye wyl vouchesaw-  
le to be lodged in my paullton and  
that ye spende none other good but  
myne. And if ye wyl gyue any thing:  
I shall deliuer it to you, and I shal  
gyue you syre of my knyghtes soz  
to serue you. Good erle of Rames  
gramercy of the worship that ye doo  
to me, than the erle tooke Reynawd  
by the hande and broughte so hym in  
to his paullton, and made him to be  
serued as his souerayne lorde, and  
whan all the barons hadde conuyed  
Reynawde to the paullton of the erle  
of Rames: they tooke leave of him  
and went again into their paulltōs  
and thanked God that he hadde sent  
them such a knyghte and so vally-  
aunce a manne to be their capitaine,  
and they; lorde. And than whan the  
erde of Rames sawe that all the

barons were gon to they; paulltōs:  
he made to be broughte there manye  
good horses and fayre paltrays, and  
ryche raymentes of dyuers cooutes  
furred with ryche futes and all ma-  
ner of good harneys for the warre,  
curaces and ryche helmes, and nobis  
swerdes, and greate plentye of plate  
borche of fyne golde and of syuer, and  
all thys he presented to Reynawde.  
But he wolde take nochynge but on-  
lie a compleete harney for his body,  
and a swerde that he chuse ther  
monge all, and an horse. And all the  
temenaunt: he made to be dealed to  
the pooze knyghtes that had mystre  
and need of it. And whan the erle of  
Rames sawe that Reynawde hadde  
taken but one horse, one harney  
and one swerde: he sayde vnto him.  
Sy; for God take on you a nother  
raymement, for ye wot well it apper-  
teyneth not to suche a man as ye be  
for to goe clothed as ys doo. Sir said  
Reynawd pardonne me and it plea-  
se you, for I shall never wete none o-  
ther raymement but this that I haue  
nowe on, syll that I haue kyssed the  
holy sepulcre wherin God was put  
after that he was broughte downe fro  
the crosse. Sir said then the erle, doo  
as ye wil, and than he went to shaw-  
gys and satd to him. I praye you put  
awaye this cappe and this hood and  
take other raymentes, sy; said Daw-  
gis than I pray you be not dysplea-  
sed, for I full syll not youre desyze at  
this tyme, for I tell you that I haue  
promysed that I shall wete no other  
cloch as longe as I lyue but such as  
the same is. Thenne whanne the erle  
sawe that Reynawde no; Dawgys  
woldes

wolde not take none other raymen-  
res for no thinge that he coulde saye  
vnto them: he was so y for it. And  
than he made the tables redy for to  
goe to supper. And whan they hadde  
supped the erle of rames called wal-  
lerauen of saynt and Geffray of Ma-  
zarch and sayde to them. Nowthyn-  
ke for to doo well syth that god hath  
sent to vs such succour. And whan  
the barons heard the erle speake thus:  
they answered we shal doo oure best  
by the grace of god. And than every  
man went to his paulliton, and made  
greate plenarie of torches to be syred  
so that it was merueriles of the lighte  
that was in the hoste, and every man  
began to daunce and to spore cheym-  
sele aboue their rentes and paupi-  
lions a longe while for Joye of the  
comyng of Reinawde. And whan  
turkes that kept the towre of Davyd  
saw the greate lyghte that was in  
the hoste of the christen: they were all  
merueyld of it. Than some of them  
went and shewed it to theyr maister  
and lord. And whan the admiralre  
hearde the tydynge: he began to crye  
hys and said. O Machomet what cil-  
lich now that unhaft folk that ma-  
ke so greate feast. I beleue that they  
ben as the swanne is whan she shall  
die, for I am sure they shal one of the-  
se daies be al slaine, and therfore they  
make so greate feaste. And whan bar-  
ons the admiralre had sayde this, he  
swore by machomet afore all his ba-  
rons that he shold make an issue on  
the morrow for to heve al the christen  
in peices. Spys saide an olde payntryng  
Beware your fleshe well of a greate  
kerle that is therre new come among

them, he whiche beryd a greate forke  
in his hande, for yf he hyt you: ye are  
but dead. I am well sure that all they  
of thoste make this Joye for that luto-  
den. I know him not sayd chadmyrall  
to the payntryng, but and: I canne bry-  
thym with my branke of steele I shal  
make him leue his greate head behynd  
him for a pledge till he comyth a-  
gain, for he is naked, and therfore he  
may not endure ayenst me.

**B**han the kynge Thomas  
that was therre prisoner  
saw the greate feaste & toye  
that the christen made: Wist not what  
he shold thinke, but said to himself.  
Ha goddes what haue now my folke  
that they make such a noyse & such  
a spore, alas doo they not remem-  
bre me? I beleue better ye than nayc,  
for the feaste that they make nowe is  
for som what. Wye it that they of ra-  
mes, and of Jasse and of all the  
country aboue Iherusalem whan  
they saw the greate lighthe: they wende  
that the erle had be set a syre, and so-  
me were sore afarde leste hoste had a  
doo. Thus was all the country a-  
bashed, but they that were in thoste  
cared but litell for it. And whan they  
had spored themselves ymough: they  
ordeined the waiche and after wene  
to rest. And whan the day was come:  
the barons rose and went to the paull  
lyon of Reinawde, whiche was vp  
and redy, and they salued him reu-  
erly, and after said vnto hym thus,  
sir what thinke ye that we must doo?  
Shal we all falle the erle or no? Lordes  
saide the duke Reinawde, me semerh  
thac

The booke of the four

that it were good for to giue to it a  
lawe. For we haue great auauncage  
abore hande, for he that shall dyne  
the lawinge of the holye citie: he shal  
be sauied without doute. Whiles that  
the barons deuised thus together for  
to giue a lawe to the citie: the admiral  
of Pericle made to open the gage  
a force, and issued out of the towne to  
ten thousande fighthers menne well  
armed. And whan Reynawde and the  
barons of Surye knewe it: they camme  
to the batayns. Reynawde was ar-  
med incontinent, & tooke his helme  
and his swerde, and lighched vpon his  
horse: that the erle of Rames had ge-  
uen him. And whan Reynawde was  
on horsebacke: Matogis armed him  
also, and mounched on horsebacke, and  
began to cri. Barons of Surye, be  
not dysmayed in nowys, for I pro-  
misse god I shal never retorne to be  
hempe: yf the turkes be not dyscom-  
fited and ouerthowden. And after  
he had sayde so: he went to Geffraye  
of Nasareth and saide to hym. Ba-  
ron keep you by Reynawde, for if all  
the other knyghtes in the felawshyp  
were suche as ye be: Baras shoule  
be discomfited or noone, and whan al  
the barons were wel armed and wel  
on horsebacke: they ordyned they  
battaynes as wel as they could. And  
than came the admiral baras that  
swot in to chaste of the christen. The  
lyste battaille of the farras was  
conducted by a king that had to name  
Margarys that was lord of the tow-  
ne of Taries, whiche was ryght cu-  
ell, and bare in his armes a dragon  
pynctured with an horriblye sygure.

**M**an the kyng Margarys  
laide it was tyme to smite  
upon the christen: he spur-  
red his horse with his spurres & ran  
ayenst Reynawde. And whan Reynawde  
desaw him come: he said to the erle of  
Rames, Heerecometh one to seeke his  
death. With great hast, ye haue doon  
me greac honoure, but this king shal  
haue dyshonoure for your loue at the  
lyst. And whan Reynawde had saide  
this: he spurred his horse and ranne  
ayenst Margarys so harde that no  
cher shielde nor quyraz could not sa-  
ue him, but he shoued his spete throu-  
gh the brest and ouerthrew sterke  
dead to the grounde. And whan Rei-  
nawde had gyuen that great stroke:  
he falle. Goe thy waye to heile the  
deuill sped thee and beare felawship  
to thy predecessours that went there  
afore thee. And after he put hande to  
the swerde and smot another lara-  
sin so harde throughte the helme that  
he cloue him to the teethe, and forthe-  
withall he caught another vnder the  
bauere so that he made his heade to  
flee from the shouders, and whan he  
had slain these three: he cited Moun-  
tarowan upon these panyms. And  
whan Matogis hearde hym: he put  
himselfe amounghe the Turkes so cou-  
tagiously, that the first that he recou-  
red he sent hym downe in to hell,  
and than tooke his swerde in his han-  
de and dyd merueylyes of armes so  
that he slew so many turkes that Rei-  
nawde and the barons meruayled  
greatly. Than saide Reynawde to the  
earle of Rames. What say you by my  
colin Matogis, saw you euer so good  
an hempe? By my soule said theris  
he

he is to be commended, blessed be the woombe that bare hym, and thoure þ  
þe ben come in to this londe, for no lufe  
I am wyl sure that Iherusalem shal  
be recovered, & the king Thomas de-  
lyuered out of prisyon with the grace  
of God. Whan cherle of Rames had  
sayde this to Reyna Wde: he spurced  
his horse with the spurres and smote  
a cutte such a stroke that he made the  
yren of his spere to speere at the back  
of him that he fel dead to therth, & af-  
ter he tooke his swerde in his hand &  
began to cepe Rames as hie as he  
coulde, sayng he barons smite nowe a  
good, for the persians shall be nowe  
vterly dyscomfyted, if god keep the  
valiaunc Reynawde of Mouncaubra  
& his valiaunc colin Hawgys. Now  
is the house come that the craytoune  
Barbas shall finissh his lise, that th<sup>e</sup>  
bectated the holy citie of Iherusalem  
by his false wit. Chan did set on the  
barons of the londe, whiche began to  
make metueilles of armes agenst the  
saracins. Who had seene that cyne  
Reyna Wde and Hawgys how they  
made way to them that cam after the:  
he woulde haue meruailled greatly, for  
I promise you none durst abide afore  
them were he never so hardy or vali-  
aunc, but he was slayne of them. Af-  
ter Reynawde and Hawgys, was  
cherle of Rames, Gessray of Nasar-  
tech, and Wallerauen of laperce, with  
their folke, and ther made metueilles  
of armes agenst their enemies, and  
whan the saracins sawe that they  
could not abide the greate domage of  
that the christe bare to them: they put  
them selfe to flyght toward the citie.

**B**han chadmal Barbas  
sawe that his folke were  
dyscomfited: he was an-  
gry for it & said whosones, whi doo  
þe flee thus awaie knwo you not that  
I am your lord, that shal defend you  
openly this unhappy christe? Where  
is Margareta become that I see hym  
not? Sic said one of the saracins he is  
dead at the first boutinge that he in  
de, & whan chadmal hearde this: he  
wend so haue gon out of his wyr and  
said who is þo acht boþe me so great  
harme as to slea the noble king Mar-  
gareta, is it not the grete earle with  
the swerde? yea sic said the folke, so; he  
is called the best knyght of the wrold  
and also he bache brought this daye  
to deach many of your men with his  
handes. Muche soþy was chadmal  
for the death of Margareta, and swo-  
te the god mahoune that he shoulde  
perce the herre in his bely. And whan  
he had made this oþ: he gaue þe spur-  
res to the horse and put hym selfe to  
the medle, and the first that he recoun-  
ted: was Wallerauen of laperce to  
whom he gaue such a stroke thorough  
the sheld that he made his spere head  
to apere out at the backe of hym and  
slew hym dead to the erthe. And wha  
the admiral had ginen that stroke: he  
put hande to his swerde and woued  
him amonge the chickes, cryng per-  
cis as hie as he coulde, and saide bar-  
ons smite upon this unhappy chi-  
stens, so; now shal they be dyscomf-  
ited. And whan cherle Jaffas & Gess-  
ray of Nasartech saw that chadmal  
fated so soule wiche the christens: they  
put them in to the peice amouge the  
saracins, and ther was grete  
laughte

The booke of the four

Slaughtred made of both partyes, but  
at the last the christen has ben shewen  
dely handled if Reynawd and maugis  
had not come lyghtly there, Reyna-  
wode that sawe this harde batayl  
shoued hym selfe amouge the chicheste  
as a Wolfe amouge a flocke of sheep  
and smot a persian that was colin  
to thadmyzall that had to name Or-  
tende, and gaue him such a stroke w  
his swerde: that he made his heade to  
flee wel a spere lengthe from his bo-  
dye wch helme and all. And after he  
smote a nocher that was newe we to  
Malbon, so that he slew both horse  
and man wth one stroke. To say the  
trouth Reynawd made there so great  
metueylyes of armes: that al the pa-  
nymes were sore abashed, for he had  
hys shielde cast behynde his backe,  
and held the reyne of hys horse aboue  
hys armes, and helde his swerde in  
bothe his handes and had abandonned  
his body smyng nreueylyous stro-  
kes on ether side vpon the sarasyng  
so that he smot no stroke but he slew  
a turke o; paynim. And whan thad-  
myzall sawe the great greef that Rei-  
nawd bare to his folke: he swore his  
god appolyn he shoulde neuert eate  
meate till he had slaine the great vil-  
lain. Hit said than the king Ilebrd  
dye to him. I pray you leue this en-  
treppye, for I tell you for bety cer-  
taine that it is ye goe afore him: he shall  
kylle you wth one stroke. Than said  
thadmyzall to him, if I had nowe a  
good gyslarn in my hande he shoulde  
as lyttl endure me, n effore as shoud  
a boy. for and I bring him not dow-  
ne: I shall neuert require to beare any  
armes more, nor to ryde vpon anye

horse more.

**M**ichectuell and harde was the  
medyng. Maugis was there  
that made great oceysyon fro the one  
syde and fro the other. And whan Rei-  
nawde saw Maugis that did so wel:  
he was glad, and so smot he a turke  
vpon his helme suche a stroke that  
he cleued his heade in two peeces, and  
so he smot a nocher at the sydes so þ  
he cleued all his ribbes, and cutal to  
gyther a sundre his bodye, and after  
this he smot a nocher so that he hew-  
ed his heade clene of, & one of his ar-  
mes, and whan he had slain these. iii.  
wch one empaint: he cried moun-  
tayn saying, smite batons, for the sa-  
rasins boþ he turkes & persians been  
dead & ouerþowen, and think to  
suenge your lord Thomas, which is  
so excellent a king. And whan thad-  
myzall batons heard cry moun-  
tayn this wodde abashed hym more than  
any other chinge, for he knewe well  
than that he that his men called the  
great catie wth þ forke: was þ val-  
aunt Reynawd of moun-  
tayn, of  
whome he had heard speake of many  
tymes afore that, and that he was þ  
best knight of al the worlde, and whan  
he knewe this: he wold fayne ha-  
ue be again in pectie, & than he took  
his way anon to warden the citye as a  
man discomfited and ouerþowen,  
and drewe to the gate for to haue  
gone in to it, but the valyaunte erle  
of Rames pursued him so nyghe that  
he suffered him not to goe at his wil.  
And than the admiral sawe that  
he was so sore pursued: he was  
afarde to be take, and so he smot  
his horse wth his spurres and gaſt in

to the citie with great payne, & leste  
all his folke behinde and sauad hym  
selfe, but the moste parte of his men  
were there slayne. And whan Reyna-  
wode wiste that the admirall of  
peccie was so scaped: he was right  
sory for it, and than he looked about  
him and saw there a great peice of  
styre that had xv. foote of length, he  
lyghched downe a foote and tooke the  
balle and trussed it vp afoore hym v-  
pon his horse necke as lyghchynge as it  
had be some peice of weelow. Thā he  
sayd to them that had victori as wel  
as he. Lordes folow me yf it please  
you, with a good will sayd the barōs  
for we shall never leue you, nother  
for death nor for life.

**D**W wyl I tel you why Rei-  
naude diotake þ balke afoore  
sayde. Ye ought to wyt þ Reynawode  
bethought well that the admirall  
barōs shold not make the gate to  
be shet after him, for loue hys folke  
shold come in that were out, & ther-  
fore bare Reynawode þ great balke of  
beme, to the ende that if he found the  
gate open he shold put it vnder the  
porte colisse that it shold not be shyt  
lyghtly agayne. And after he had be-  
thought hymself therol: he went on  
his way with the christens as faste  
as they coulde runne towardes the  
gate of Iherusalem, where the ad-  
mirall had sauad hymselfe, & whan  
he came there he sawe the gate open  
wherof he was glad, so tooke he thā  
his beme and put it vnder the porte  
colisse, so that it myght not be lette  
downe, nor þ gate could not be shyt  
nother, but ye may well know that

Reynawode dyd not this wond great  
trauayle, for there was so many bo-  
dies bothe quycke & dead in his way  
that he myght not well helpe hym  
self, but one chyng helpe hym wel,  
for whan the Saralyns saw hym:  
they were so starde of hym that they  
made hym waye, & fled all afoore hym.

**W**han the noble knyght Rei-  
naude saw that þ porche co-  
lisse was well faste vpon the beine  
that he had brought there: without  
any taryng he put had to his swerd  
and put hymself within Iherusalem.  
And whan he was in: he began to  
ctye as hys as he myght Mountaw-  
ban, Mountawban, the citie is wone  
and made there so muche of armes þ  
Hawgys the Erle of Rames, and  
many other barons gate in by fyne  
force. And whan the Saralyns saw  
that the christens were Within the  
citie: they put themself so to flyght, &  
hyd them within the houses, where  
as they myght for to sauay theyr lyues  
and alwayes Reynawode was at the  
gate for to keep the entre. They that  
were vpon the greate towre of Da-  
uid: cryed fast to the other Saralyns  
that they shold shet the gate, sayng  
that yf þ great lorden entred within  
they shold be all lost. And whā Rei-  
naude saw that a great parte of the  
christens were within Iherusalem:  
he sayd to Hawgys, Cysyn keep wel  
þys passage, and I shall go at ano-  
ther gate for to make it open. Cysyn  
sayd Hawgys goe your way hard-  
lye and doubt nothyng, I shall wel  
keep this path. Than departed Rei-  
naude accompanied with many ba-

## The booke of the four

Iaunt Christians and went vnto a  
nother gate whiche he founde well  
garnysshed with paynpons but Rep-  
nawde thorough his prowes put  
them anon to flyght and gat þ gate  
open. Thus as ye heare was doone  
for all the sarasyns lost theyz lyues  
and was reouerted agayne the Citie  
of Iherusalem, through the greate  
prowes of the noble Reynawde of  
Mountawban. And whan the ad-  
miprall sawe this: he wende to haue  
were mad all quicke and fared as  
he had be out of his witt and cur-  
sed his goddes maho Wnce & Appo-  
lyn, & pulled his heres of his berde,  
and rent all hys raymentes, and af-  
ter he sayd. By Apollo the souerayn  
God, þf Thomas helpe me not to  
saue my lyfe: I shall make hym to be  
slayne incontinent, and than he sent  
for the kyng Thomas and sayd vn-  
to hym. Kyng Thomas yee muste  
chuse of two thinges thone, that is  
that yee must saue my lyfe þ I maye  
go to percie agayne with two of  
my men in my felawship: or els yee  
to be now cast out of these wyndo-  
wes do lone. Than sayde the kyng  
Thomas, & please you, yee shal haue  
pacience that I may speake with my  
folke. So on sayd the admipral to the  
at this wyndow, for no ferther yee  
shal not go, and delyuer you lyghti-  
ly. Than went the kinge Thomas  
to the windowes, & saw Reynawde  
of Mountawban & Maugys come  
that cam at the forme of to sawte  
the towre of Dauid, whiche he was  
prisoner to the admiralit. And wha  
he sawe Reynawde and Maugys þ  
forme of all: he knewe them not, &

looked ferther, & sawe the erle of Ra-  
mes behynde them whiche he kneþ  
not well, and thā he aspido Gessray  
of Nazareth, wherof he was glad  
whan he saw him, and than he begā  
to crye. Lorde of Nazareth looke vp  
to your king that is heere prysoner,  
the admiprall Barbas sendeth you  
wordes that if ye let him not gae saue  
into his countrie and realme of per-  
cie wþt two of his men with hym  
he shall caste me noþe downe out of  
thys windo we. Than answered to  
hym therle of Rames, ha good kyng  
god saue you, ye wot well þ a good  
man ought not to make anye lyfe, it  
is trouth that yesterdaye wee made  
our gouernor, & mayster of that lorde  
that ye see heere afoxe vs, whiche is  
the best knyght of the wþrld and to  
hym ye must shew your need, for wi-  
thout hym we may doo noþyng. And  
whan the kyng Thomas vnderstode  
this tidinge: he woxed almosle oute  
of hys wit for sorow, because he wed  
none other, but he shold die an cuiil  
death. Than sayd he to þ erle of Ra-  
mes, haue ye betayed me so, that yes  
haue made a noþer Lorde than me  
þy sayde the Erle to hym agayne  
doubt noþyng, for wee haue doone  
so, your ryght and honour is alway  
saued in this behalfe, nor yee shal nor  
lese noþyng of your owne, for the  
good knyght hath þnough in stausc  
and ye must know that he hatþ take  
this citie, he and his felow, and take  
no suspencion of hym nor of vs, for  
I am sure he shal doo euyn as yee  
wil yourself, for he is heere for none  
other cause but soþ to delyuer you,

for as soone as he shall haue byslit  
the holy sepulcre of our lord he shal  
ghe agayne to Fraunce. Then sayd  
the kyng e Thomas, lordes how is  
the knyght named? syz sayd the rere  
of Rames, he is called Reynawde of  
Mountawban, the sonne of h Duke  
Aymon, and the best knyght of the  
Worde, for he is suche a knyght þ  
the great kyng Charlemayne myght  
never greue hym, and yet haue they  
mayntened the warre. xvi. yeres and  
more the one against the other, and so  
hath he done so many noble & great  
faytes of armes during the warre: þ  
the ronde of the rone therof is fowen ouer al  
the Worlde. Rere of Rames sayd the  
kyng, I pray you that ye wyl tell  
hym in my behalfe this that I haue  
sayd to Gessray of nazareth, syz sayd  
therle wryth a good wyl I shal doo  
so. And than he went to Reynawde  
& shewed to him al that the kyng had  
sayd. Lordes sayd Reynawde we shal  
not doo so, but let vs sawe þ towre  
for at wrost fall, we shal at wryes  
we haue that apoyntement þ thad  
myral asketh, & so I tell you þ we  
sawee wel: the towre shalbe lyghtly  
wonne by force of armes, & we shal  
deliuer the kyng Thomas at oure  
owne wyl, & so shal we clea barbas  
that thoroough treason tooke þe telle.  
Syz sayd therle of Rames, we shall  
doe your comandement doubt not  
of it, Tha commaunded Reynawde þ  
the towre shold be sawed of al sidys  
& made great plente of ladders to be  
rygheed agaynst it, & he hymselfe  
gan syrt to clime vp with his sheeld  
for to couer him with, and after hym  
went Hawys & than therle of Ra-

mes, & after them Gessray of Nazar-  
eth & Wel thysk knyghtes mo, and  
men with it: bowes & other arches  
abode bynch for to shoot vpparde,  
Wher they saw sarasins looke ouer  
& whan thadmirall saw Reynawde  
þ Wolde hane come into þ towre: he  
was sorwe aferde, so wyl he not what  
he shold doo, but ranne to the kyng  
Thomas & caught hym by the necke  
& sayd to hi, by apollo thou & I shall  
lepe bothe at once out of this win-  
dow. Sir sayd the kyng kill not your  
self noz me also, for I shall make þ  
sawie to cesse. I will wel þ ye doo  
so sayd thadmirall, but ye shal come  
with me. So tooke hym by the neck  
& had him to the Wyndo wye & sayd as  
hyc Reynawde of Mountawban I  
shall angre you, for I shall caste the  
kyng Thomas downe if ye pardon  
me not, & I shall clea my self w him,  
for I may Wel die after such a kyng.  
And whan the duke Reynawde saw  
that the kyng Thomas hymselfe thus  
the head downewarde all redy for to  
fall: he had great pitie of hym & said  
Ha good lord what shal I doo: for  
it I leue the sawe; it shalbe greate  
shame, for þ towre is almoste taken,  
and of the other part it shalbe greate  
mysshape þ good kyng Thomas  
take death for it. Tha as Reynawde  
was upon þ laddet thynkyng what  
he might best doo: al the barons of þ  
lande began to crye to Reynawde,  
sweete syz suffre not that our kyng  
lese his lyfe, so it were greate shame  
to vs and to you also. Lordes sayde  
Reynawde by the earth that I owe  
to my bretherne and to my Losyn  
Hawys, I wolde not þ good kyng

The booke of the fourre

Should take death for me, and whan  
he had sayd so he came downe fro the  
ladder, and after creyd to the admiral.  
Leue the kyng Thomas & doo  
 hym no harme, for ye shalbe deliu-  
 red by such a couenant that ye and  
 your two men shall go on foote into  
 percie and ye shall leue here al your  
 goods. By mawne sayd thadmiral  
 I wyl not doo so but shall ryde on  
 horsebacke I and my two men, & so  
 shal ye gyve me laulconduyt vpon  
 your fayre, & if ye wil not doo thus  
 I shall let fall downe þ kyng Tho-  
 mas. Thadmirall sayd Reynawde, þ  
 ye aske I graunt it to you vpon my  
 fayre, for ye haue with you such a  
 pledge that ye shal not be touched at  
 this tyme for me. Thadmirall was  
 ryght glad wha he heard Reynawde  
 speake thus, so drew he vp the kyng  
 Thomas agayne and sayde to hym,  
 kyng Thomas ye shal go quite fro  
 me, and than he wente downe with  
 the kyng & opened the gate, & went  
 out he & his two men. There was  
 made great ioy betwene the kyng  
 Thomas and Reynawde. And after  
 of all the other barons of surre, and  
 the great thankes that the kyng did  
 to Reynawde and to Maugis: are  
 not for to be named, & the langage þ  
 was betwene them to longe to  
 be recounted. After this thadmiral  
 tooke his laulconduyt and went his  
 way toward percie. Herre of him is  
 made none other mention, and after  
 he was gone þ kyng Thomas, reynawde & w<sup>th</sup> all other barons w<sup>th</sup>  
 to gytter into þ towre, & wha they  
 were come vp: the kyng Thomas  
 kneeld asoze Reynawde. Soz sayde

Reynawde ye ought not to doo so.  
 Yes verely sayd the kyng, & whan  
 Reynawde saw that he weped red for  
 shame and tooke vp the kyng & tha  
 the kyng colled hym and sayd. Ble-  
 sed be our lord that brought you in  
 thys lande, for ye haue succoured  
 Iherusalem the holy citie & broughe  
 myself out of the sarasins handes.  
 Now tell me and it please you if ye  
 haue made peace w<sup>th</sup> Charlemayn þ  
 great kyng of Fraunce þ hath doon  
 you so greate hinderaunce. Soz sayde  
 Reynawde yea, & bycause of þ peace  
 I am come heere, beggynge my bread  
& poorely arayed, and wha the kyng  
 Thomas heard him speake: he had  
 greate pitie of him, and swore by the  
 holy Sepulcre that he shalb araye  
 hym honourably as to hym apper-  
 aunchel to returne into Fraunce.  
 After that the kyng had sayd thys  
 w<sup>th</sup> de: they came downe fro þ towre  
 of bauyd for to go to the holy sepul-  
 cre. And ye ought to w<sup>th</sup> þ they made  
 greate feast though out the citie of  
 that was so beslall. Tha went they  
 al to the holy sepulcre, for to yelde  
 thakes to our lord of the citie that  
 was recovered fro the handes of þ  
 sarasins. And whan all this was  
 doone the barons of surre tooke leus  
 of the kyng of Reynawde & of maugis,  
& after went every man into hys  
 place in theyr countrey, & the kyng toke  
 Reynawde & Maugis and broughe  
 them to hys palay where he feasted  
 them a hundred dayes honourably.  
 And this hanging: he shewed them  
 all the countrey aboue Iherusalem,  
& wha Reynawde had spoilt him  
 ynoch with the kyng Thomas: he  
 wold

Wolde depart for to go agayne into  
þ marches of frauce. And whan the  
kyng saw that he gaue to Reynawde  
many riche giftes, as hōsles, silkes  
gold & silver & many other thynges  
in great plenti. And ye ought to wit  
that Maugis Wolde take no thyng  
nor chaunge his hermites arraye in  
no wyse, but arrayed hym agayne  
as a pylgrime and bare foote, wher-  
of Reynawde was sorry. The kyng  
made a ship be ready honourably at þ  
hauen of Japhes, Reynawde ful re-  
derly weeping tooke leue of þ kyng  
& of his barons, and entred into the  
ship. And wit it þ by fortune of we-  
dryng, they were well eyght mon-  
thes vpon þ sea, & at last they tooke  
lande at a towne called Palerne, &  
whan they had take lande: Reynawde  
commaunded that the ship should be  
vnlade, & al thus as they vnlade þ  
ship: the king of Palerne which was  
called Simon al puill looking out at  
a wyndow of his castel, than he said  
to them that were aboue hym. I see  
þonder in the hauen a shyp setteth  
her good a lande, and it cannot be  
but therre mülle be some great man  
in it, for I see hōsles that be had out  
& great riches, I cannot say whate  
it may be, but it were pylgrimes, tha  
he commaunded an hōsle for to be  
made ready: for he wolde spore him  
selfe to the hauen syde.

**T**he valyant kyng Symon of  
Palerne wout any more tary-  
eng: came to the sea syde with many  
a noble knyght in his compayne.  
And whan he was come to þ hauen:  
he founde Reynawde þ was come  
a lande, & assone as the kyng saw hym:

he knew hym well, wherof he was  
ryght glad, & also Reynawde knew  
well the good king Symon. So tha  
embraced they eche with other, and  
made great cheare thone to thoþer  
Reynawde sayd þ kyng, ye be ryght  
welcome, I pray you come lodge in  
my castell, for thadmyzat barbas is  
entered in my lande & wasteth it day-  
ly. I fought yesterday with him, but  
he drove me out of the feilde shame-  
fully & dyd great hatme to my folke  
& I am sure he shal come to besyge  
me to morowe, & I had thought to  
haue sende for succours to warde  
Charlemayn, but sith that god hath  
brought you here: I feare not the  
kyng noþer his admiral of Percie.  
þy said Reynawde I make you sure  
I shall helpe you withal my power,  
& if thadmyzall come to morowe: he  
shall not myse of batayle, for I shal  
neuer eat bread till I haue discom-  
fited him. Than the king Symon  
brought Reynawde to hys palays,  
where he made him good cheere, and  
thus as Symon feasted Reynawde:  
came there a knight that was called  
þmes that said to the king Symon  
þy thadmyzall of Percie is come  
before Palerne with so great folke  
that all therre is couered withall.  
Whan the kyng understoode these  
tidinges: he was sorry for it and Rey-  
nawde glad. Than sayd Reynawde  
to the kyng. þy I pray you be not  
abashed of noþyng, for this daye  
shall ye be auenged and god before, &  
the holy sepulcre fro whens I came  
but late, and whan the kyng hearde  
Reynawde speake so: he made be-  
cried that every man should arm hi-

## The booke of the fourre

self, and whan Reynalde saw that: he leue for his heynys and armed hym, and sware the body of God he should doo greet to thadmyral þ dat siche that he had found hym agayne. And whan Hawgys saw that Reynalde wolde arme him for to fighþ: he sayd to hym. By cosyn I am yes dysposed for your loue to beare armes, for I coulde not suffre you in daunger. And whan the king Symon hearde Hawgys speake so: he sayd hym great thanke, and went & embrased hym and after sayd, by my loule heere is a good hermitte for whan it was need he put wel hand to the swerde. Syz sayd Reynalde ye lay well crouth, and I promyse you men shoulde fynde in the Woxide but few suche knyghtes as he is one. After all these thynges sayde: every man tooke his harueys and þ kinge all armed went to Hawgys & sayd al laughyng. By lcreend Hawgys I pray you that ye wyl beare my stan darde this day. Syz answerde matwo gys þt ye take me it: I promyse you I shall haue it in such a place that ye shall wete or euer ye shall come to me. And whan the kyng hearde Hawgys speake so: he was ryght glad therof, and than he tooke him hyms baner. And whan Hawgys had it in his hande: he sayd to the kyng syz now folow me that will, for this day shal thadmyral be discomfited of it please God, & whan Hawgys had sayd so: he gaue the spurres to his houle & put himself amonge the Catasyngs as a lyon. Reynalde fol wed him nigh & recounctred a per son, whome he smote with his spere

so great a stroke that he made hym tumbel dead to the ground, wherog therher were soze abashed & after he put hande to hys swerde & shoued himself into þyceatest þrce & smote on eyher syde of him upon the perçians so merualouse strokes, þ they were greatly meruayled wþt, for al they that he hit: he brought them to thys ending, and whan thadmyral saw the great effore of armes þ Reynalde made a geynst hys folke: he sayd to a newelw of hys that was by hym. By mahoune I saw not yester day that great ma of armes, nother he that beareth now the baner of Simon, from whens the deuyl are they come that so greatly greueth vs? I see wel they be some straunge knyghtes. I am all tedy to feard of them that all the bloud in my body trembleþ. This hangyng: the kyng Symon & Reynalde made great slaus ghter of the catasyngs. But wha the admiral saw that hys folke bare thes selles so yll: he wylt not whether he wolde flee or abyde. Than came Reynalde brykyng the þrce that cried as loude as he could, mountawban. And whan thadmyral heard that cry he was soze aferde þ he wylt not whether to go but sayd by mahoune I be leue þ this deuyl helpeþ himself to some deuility, for I leſt him in Iherusalem, and now he is heere.

**T**han whan thadmyral Barbas knew that he þ made so great grec to his folke was Reynalde of mountawban: he shooke al for feare & said to his newelw by machomes my god, we haue doone yll to come heere for to make warre a geynst

gannt the king Simon, syth that he  
hath this deuill Reynawde of moun-  
tawne, for his like is there not in  
all the worlde of knighthoode, now  
wolde I be wel in my ship in the mid-  
des of the sea, for yf I abyde hym: he  
shall make an ende of me. Soz sayde  
his folke haue no doubt of y greate  
vilayn, for and he come ones in our  
handes: he shal not lyghtly scape vs  
loordes sayd thadmyrall, ye wot not  
what ye say, ye know not the greate  
prowes of Reynawde, for we were  
ten times mo folke than we ben: yet  
should not we endure agaynst hym,  
& therfore by y fayre that I owe to  
mahoune I wil abide heire no lens-  
ger. And whan he had sayd these wor-  
des: he turned y brydel, & as lone as  
he might fled to warde his galays, &  
al his folke after him. And whan  
Reynawde saw y the paynems were  
discomfited: he began to crye, after  
Ma wgis after for the trauautes are  
discomfited. And whan he had sayd  
so: he put hymself to the chase, & the  
king Simon after him, & went ca-  
styng downe Ma wgis as beastes.  
And whyt y they slew so many of the  
that men shold not beleue the num-  
bre, but they coulde not take thadmy-  
rall: for he was the formest.

**B**ribas the admiral of Persie,  
whan he founde hymself sauued  
in his shipp: he began to looke a lande  
and saw the great damage that Rei-  
nawde & Ma wgis made of hyms fol-  
ke, for all the shores of the sea were  
ful of sarasins slayne, wherof he had  
great sorow, so began he to pull his  
heres of his berde, & cursed thoury

euer he was borne. Reynawde came  
to the shores & saw that thadmyrall  
was sauued, wherof he was full sorp-  
& wist not what he shold doo more  
to him, but he made to be cast boltes  
of yowde syre into the galley of thad-  
myrall, so that he brent y mooste part  
of it, and Barbas was fayne to ens-  
tre into another ship. And ye ought  
to wyt that all y sarasins that bode  
a land: lost theyr liues. whan y king  
Simon saw that he was to his abous  
of his enemies: he was ryght glad  
of it, so ranne he and embraced Rey-  
nawde and after sayde to hym, Rey-  
nawde I know wel that I am big  
by your proues, for & ye had not be-  
the admirall Barbas had destroyed  
me, and had made an ende of me.  
Wherfore it is reasor: that ye be re-  
warded for ic, & therfore (Reynawde)  
I make you loerde of all my goodes  
& of all my lande. Than sayde Rey-  
nawde, syz I thanke you miche of  
your good wyl, for we be not they y  
haue discomfyted the sarasins. I  
was god and none other, for we be  
not so puissaunt, I and Ma wgis  
for to doo ic without him. And whan  
they had thus spoken together a lōg  
whyle at the sea syde: the kyng tooke  
Reynawde with the one hande, and  
Ma wgis with the other hande, and  
went to warde the Cite. And whan  
they wers come there: the kyng made  
the gayne to be brought, & presented  
it to Reynawde and to Ma wgis,  
wherof Reynawde & Ma wgis wolle  
take nothynge, but gaue it to the  
poore knyghtes, & incōlincient Ma w-  
gis tooke agayn his hermites weed  
Than began y feast to be the se great

The booke of the fourte

for the victorye that god had givien them. The cheere that þ kyng made to Reynawde in his palcys is not soz to say, soz it was great, and soz to make shorte tale: Reynawde was honourably feasted þ space of fourre dayes. And than he wolde departe, & asked leue of the kyng, Wherof the kyng was ful soz bycause he wolde bide no lenger, and whan he sawe þ he wolde go he gaue him mani fayre gistes, & made his ship to be garnisched wþ muche good vitayles. And whan this was doone: Reynawde tooke leue of the kyng Symon & of hys barons, and the kyng conneyed Reynawde to the shyp. And whan he came to the parting: the king Symon kisst Reynawde sore weepyng, and after went agayne to Palerne, and Reynawde did doo hale þ sail and tooke sea, & ceassed never tyl he cam to Rome, and there they tooke lanre and he and Hawgys went and confessed them to the Pope, and whan they were confessed: they returned agayne into the shyp and tooke theyz way to warde Fraunce. Shorly to speake they dyd so muche by theyz tourneys þ they came to Ardeyne about noone, & whan þ people of Ardeyne wist þ Reynawde & Hawgys were compnye they were never so glad, & went to Alarde and sayd, wot þ your brother Reynawde our lord is come and also Hawgys your cosin whole and sound thanked be god.

**A**nd than whan Alarde and hys brethern heard these tyllynges of theyz brother Reynawde þ was come, they had almost swoun-

ned for great lote that they had, and anon went to the gate of the towne agaynst theyz brother, but they sound him þ he was all redy in the towne, & whan they saw him: they ran him agaynst and Alarde embraced hym þþt weepyng, and after kylled hym by great loue & in likewyse dyd Gui. charde and Richarde, and þā killed Hawgys therz good cosin. And whan they had thus welcomed hym: they wet together in þ palays, & whā theri were theri, Alarde said to Reynawde sayre brother tell, þs ho we ye haue founde our cosyn Hawgys. Brothes sayd Reynawde I founde him in constantynople bi fortune, & than he began to reherse unto them all his aduentures that he had sith he became pylgryme. And whan he had tolde al he looked on his brother Alarde in his face & saw he was pale, whiche gaue hym susppcion a sayde. Sayre brother how is it with my wyfe and my chilidren: I meruaile me moche þ I see them not heere. Brother sayd Alarde haue no doubt for theym, for they ben whole and sound at Dounstablan, and wot it that sith your departing: we haue wo repayre again the towne, & haue doone garnisshynge þ castell wþ vitayle þnough, for feare of warre þ any chynge had happed vs amyng. And than whā Reynawde hearde good tyllynges of hys wyfe & of his children: he was right glad of it, and so he kneeld downe and thanked god of it.

**W**hy han Reynawde knew that hys wyfe & his childre were wel: it recōforted him muche & begā

to make good cheere, but whā he saw  
that his brether made no great ioy  
he metuayled muche: so turned hym  
selfe towarde Warde þ syghed sore  
and sayd to hym. Brother Hawayre  
soz to heare some heuye tidinges I  
trowe that, that ye haue tolde me is  
not trouth, and if ye tel me not how  
is it of al: I shall go fro my self, and  
therfore I pray you tell it me, for I  
wyll know it. Whā Warde saw that  
Reynawde helde him so shoxe: he be-  
gan to weape full tenderly and than  
said vnto him. Sir sith that it please  
you that I tell you the trouth: I shal  
doo so. wit it that my lady your wife  
is deceassted out of this wrold vnto  
god. For euer sith þ ye departed she  
ceassted not her sorow soz nathynge  
that we could doo of shew vnto her.  
And than she cast all her cloþynge  
into a syre and woldenuer were v-  
pon her but a sorþ marþ a smocke,  
a so longe she wept and sorowed dai  
and night that she died at last, wher  
of I am sorþ for ic, for she was the  
goodliest and the sayreste of all the  
wrold. Whā Reynawde understoode  
these wordes: he swooned doone to  
the erth for great sorow weþ he tooke  
at his herte of the death of the good  
duchelle Clare his wyfe, a whan he  
was come agayne to himselfe: he be-  
gan to weape a sayd, Ha king Char-  
lempne, how woi may I hate you:  
þy you haue I lost my wile, for she is  
dead þycause she se that ye chased me  
out of Fraunce with so great shame  
to make me goe a foote, beggynge my  
bread lyke a trauaun, but I bweve  
well that my sinnes ben cause of al  
this. And whā Reynawde had made

þys mone: he sayd to Warde his bro-  
ther, sayre brother I pray you come þ  
þe w me the combe Where my wyfe  
is begauen. Brother sayde Warde  
w a good wil, I shal doo so, and þā  
he brought him to þ chiche Wher  
his good wif the Duchelle was bu-  
ryed. And whā Reynawde cam there  
he swouned thre times vpon her  
combe, and whā he was come again  
to himselfe: began to make great so-  
row, for he rented his clotyes and  
pulled his heaþes. And whan he had  
sorow vnto longe: he said as a man re-  
plenysshed with sorow. Ha god wha  
a pylgrym I am. I beleue that there  
is none in the wrold more vnhappi  
than I am: So w see I Wel that I  
haue lost all my ioye and my cofort  
þy that I haue lost the sayreste lareþ  
of the wrold and the goodliest. And  
as he was speakeyng these wordes:  
came there his children Aymon &  
Tonnet that kneeled before theys fa-  
ther. And whan Reynawde sawe it  
kneelyng afore him: he wotis heit  
should haue brest. So tooke he them  
up and kisseted them by great loue all  
weepynge, and after sayd to them.  
My sayre children see that ye be good  
men, for I tere me that ye shal misse  
me soone. And whan Reynawde  
had sayd this to his children: he be-  
gan to make more sorow than he had  
doone afore a so did Hawgis. Thā  
begā the sorow through al the towne  
right great, and lasted x. dayes with  
out ceale, and whan came to the  
xiiij. daye: Reynawde tooke hys way  
towarde Mouna vban that was  
almost as well peopled as it was  
þt the warre began. And Hawgis  
habant

## The booke of the fourte

Hab adonned never reynawde where  
sooneuer he went but went alwayes  
on foote in his hermites arraye, and  
as they went thus to Mountawban: the  
bretheren of Reynawde & his chil-  
dren went on foote for to bete com-  
pany to Hawgys they colin. And  
whan they of Mountawban knewe  
þ coming of they; lorde: they were  
ryght glad of it, & made al þ streets  
for to be hanged with fayre clothes,  
& they came agaynst him al together  
makynge great ioye, and made hym  
great reverence, & welcomed hym ho-  
nourably. And Reynawde receyued  
them gladly & made the good cheere,  
for at that tyme he dyssimuled hys  
sorowe þ he had at his hert, because  
he shold not dyscomfote hys folke  
þ so great ioy made for hys coming.  
And also they of Mountawban wel-  
comed Hawgys honourably, because  
they loued hym of olde very well, &  
þe they brought Reynawde making  
great ioye vnto the castell, and whan  
Reynawde founde himself wythin  
hys castell of Mountawban; he was  
glad of it, and came to a window &  
looked downe into the towne, & saw  
that it was as well peopled as euer  
it was, and had mervayle of whens  
so muche people was come there for  
to dwel & he was ryght glad of it,  
for he wold never to haue seen mou-  
tawban in that plighe as it was be-  
fore the warre began. After that the  
feast was ended: Reynawde called  
his bretheren & sayd vnto them. Loz-  
bes I holde me destroyed for loue of  
þ good duchesse, whiche I haue lost  
Wherof I am ryght heuy for it, for  
loue of þ great goodnes that I haue

knowen in her, I make my vowe to  
god that never Whyle Alyle I shall  
neuer mary agayn. Colin sayd maw-  
gys ye doo well, but I praye you re-  
comforthe yourselke, for ye know wel  
that a thyng that may not be amen-  
ded must be left alone. Colyn sayde  
Reynawde ye say well & I shall doo  
so. Whan Reynawde, his bretheren &  
Hawgys had doone great cheere þ  
day at Mountawban: Hawgys on  
the morow next tooke leue of hys co-  
lyngs & wret agayne to his hermitage  
& whan he wold departe; he sayd to  
Reynawde, Colin remembre you wel  
that for you are dead so many folke  
for whome ye beholden to þay god  
þ he wyl haue mercy on their sou-  
les. And whan Hawgys had sayd so  
he tooke his way & wold not suffice  
no body to convey him, and he dyd so  
muche by his tourneyes that he came  
to hys hermitage, wher he lyued a  
holy lyfe. For after he was come a-  
gayne to his hermitage; he etc never  
but herbes and rootes of the wood,  
& in this maner wile liued Hawgys  
þ space of. vii. yeres þ he sawe no-  
ther man nor weman. And whan ic  
came to the. viii. yere: the good maw-  
gys deceased fro this wold about  
Easter. Jesu for his pittie pardþ hys  
soule. Meers leueth the history to  
speke of Hawgys whome god pardþ  
& tourneþ to speke agayne of Rey-  
nawde, of his bretheren & of hys chil-  
dren howþer were made knyghtes.

Chow Reynawde sent his two so-  
nes to þ kyng Charlemayne muche  
honourably. for to be made knyghts  
at Parys.

In



**I**n this party sheweth history that after that Hawgys was executed agayne to his hermitage, Reynawode was euer after sorry for hym & also for his wyfe. But he remoxted hymself as wel as he might with his bretheren. A long while abode Reynawode with his bretheren making as good chere as he could, and wie it that aboue that tyme di-  
ed the olde duke Aymon which left greate goodes to his children, but shortly to speke: Reynawode departed & gaue all his goodes as well that he had of his owne, as y was fallen by the death of his father Aymon unto his bretheren except onylē y he retayned for himself the castell and towne of Mountawban, and found the wayes that they were al marayed

noble & rychely. Who y should speke of the bretheren of Reynawode and of theyz dedes: it were to long to re-  
count. Reynawode thad dwelled long at Mountawban with his children which he endoctrined & taught in al good and vertuous maners as wel as he could, & nouylshed them tylly y they were men, and coulde beare bothe sheelde and spere. And vpon a day he had theym to the feilde on horsebacke, and made to be brought therc speres and sheeldes for to assay themselfe, and tooke with hym twe-  
ty knyghtes, whome whan they were comen in the feild: he made his chil-  
dren to iuste with. And ye ought to  
wite that y two sonnes of Reynawode  
Justed as well as thoughte they had  
be hauntyng the warre ten yeares  
and

## The booke of the sonne

more. And whan Reynawde saw that they did so wel: he called them afore hym & afore the knyghtes and sayd to them. My fayre children thā ked be our lord, ye be calle men and well made of body. It is now tyme that ye were made knyghtes, wherfore I wyl that ye go serue the king Charlemayne your souerayne lord whiche shall make you knyghtes, for of more noble hande ye canne not be drowbed to the noble ordre of knyghtode. Hys sayd Aymonet, we are ready to fulfylly your wyl in every thing þ ye commaunde vs. Father sayde sonnet ye say well to vs, for it is tyme that we folow the warres, but sith it is your pleasure to leude vs to Charlemayne: we must go there honourably, but it canot be wthout great cost. My sonne sayd Reynawde, care not for the cost, for we haue good ymough, grameþer our lord, for to bryng you there accordyng to your astate, & I promise you, I shall sende you there or I be. viii. night elder as honourably as any went thither sin my tyme. Father sayd the childre we are ready to goe whan it please you. Whā Reynawde had sayd this to his children: he wente home agayne to Mountawdā wel toyful of his two sonnes that proued so well, & whan he was within his castell: he called his stewarde and sayd to hym. Stewarde I commaunde you that ye array my childre honorably a richelye of diuersc maners of cloþing and of chynges that longeth of them, for I wil send them to þ court of the king Charlemayne, for to be made knyghtes of hym, & sic that they goe as ho-

nestly as any went thither this. xx.  
þeres. My lord sayd the stewarde, I shall wel doo your comandement sith þ it pleaseþ you, for ye haue inough cloþes full ryche of your owne of diuersc colours.

**W**han the stewarde heard þ comandement of hys mayster wþchout anye taryeng he dyd right well al that was commaunded him by Reynawde, for he made to be redy many palfreys and coursers wel barbed and couered wþch ryche cloth of golde with belles of siluer & gyld in great plentye, and puruyed for two good hauncysses al complete, for spesess 3 swerdes and for al siche other thinges as aperþeyneth for the two yonge bachelers. Shorlly to speake: it was not possible to araye better two yonge squiers than þ two yong sonnes of Reynawde were by þ purwe, auncie of his stewarde, and whā all thinges were redy: he brought þe before his maysters. And whan Reynawde saw this: he was glad & said by god stewarde I conne you thanke that ye haue puruyed so wel for my childre, & Reynawde made. v. L knyghtes wel redy to bere compani to his sonnes. And whan they were al redy Reynawde called to his sonnes and sayd to þe. My fayre sonnes þe be wel apoynted thā ked be god, & heere is a fayre bende of noble me to beare you felawship, & therfore ye shal now go to þ court of Charlemayn our great kyng, whiche shall make you great cheere and honour for my loue, my chyldren ye be of hie lynage & ryght noble, & therfore beware þ ye doo nos thynge

thyng ayenst your noblenes ne thac  
myght returne to anye shame to me  
nor to your rygnage, and I comand  
you upon the faith that ye owe to me  
that the money that I deliuer to you  
now, ye dypspende it honestly, & spa-  
re not to doo good therwith to poore  
gentilmen and yonge bachelers that  
wold faine come to worship, & whan  
ye haue all spended it honestly sende  
to me soz more, and ye shall haue y-  
rough and aboue this I charge you  
that ye serue god alwaies afore anye  
thyng that ye haue a doo, and that ye  
speak no Worde soule oure of your  
mouch to no lady nor damsel, Wox,  
shipp out better and loue your neygh-  
bor, and so shal you be praysed of  
evert man. Moreouer I charge you  
that ye liue frendly cogithet as two  
brothres ought to doo, & to you yonner  
my fayre sonne. I commaunde you þ  
pevere honour and reuerence to your  
brother, for he is your elder, þ know  
ye well.

**T**han syde ponnet, facher be  
you sure I shall serue my de-  
ce brother as I wold dos you, that  
are my lord & my dere facher. By my  
fachte faire sonne laide reinaude, if  
ye do so ye shal be praised for it, wher-  
someuer ye come or goe. But yee one  
thing I forbide you that ye speake not  
to muche, for if ye doo the conterarie  
thelrenshemen shal saie, that ye be  
not like to condictons to your paren-  
tage. Facher saide the chyldren,  
we haue suche a trust in oure Lorde  
god þ he shall keep vs from al thing  
that is contrarie to his will, and  
that we shall so gouerne vs, that ye  
shal gladic auowe vs for your chil-

dren, all thep of the courte of Charle-  
mayne shal loue vs but yf they wil  
doo wrong, & whan Reynawd heard  
his chyldren speake so: he was right  
glad therof and dixe them aside and  
said to them. My fayre chyldren ye  
goe now into fraunce, remembet wel  
beete afer al which I shall tell you  
now, ye must know þ there be in the  
courte of Charlemaine a great syg-  
nage of folke that never loued vs  
but leel, the whiche are of the greate  
power thei be of maner. I charge you  
that ye ne goe nor come wth them, for  
nothing þ they can tell you, & yf thei  
hurt you by any wise: see þ ye reuege  
your selfe wpsely, & the Weitbem þ ye  
be the sonnes of Reynawde of moun-  
tawban. Facher said the chyldren,  
doubte not we shal not suffre þ anye  
outrage be doo to vs if we mai. Fati-  
te chyldren latde reinaude, kneele a  
soze me, & they kneeled anon afore  
their facher & reinaude gaue thei his  
blessyng, & after kissed them weeping  
manie times & gane them leue & ar-  
ter turned him to his knyghtes, and  
saide. My lordes I command you to  
god, & pray you þ ye tend wel my chil-  
dren & suffre not þ any wrong be don  
to them to your power, for ye knowe  
Wel þ we ben haced in fraunce, & I  
praye you giue thei alwaies good cou-  
teil, and that thei be alwaies courte-  
ous gentil & liberal of their goodes,  
for a plice courteous was never prai-  
sed, & whan reinaude had said this he  
wchdrew him soze weeping. Thus  
leuerch chyldren to speake of reinaude  
& of his bretberne, and returneth to  
shew of his chyldren, that were gone  
to the courte of Charlemaine.

d.l. How

The booke of the fourre

¶ Ho we after that the kryng Char-  
lemayne had receyued ful sweetly the  
sonnes of Reynawde: they foughthe  
with the sunes of Foulques of Mo-  
tillon, & discomfited them in the pple

of oure lady, Within Parys, bycause  
they had layde treason vpon Reynaw-  
de their father, for cause that he had  
slayne Foulques: in the playne of  
Valcoloures.



**D**owe sheweth the tale, that  
after that Almonet & Yonnet  
were departed fro theyr fathur: they  
rode so muche by their Journeys,  
that they came to parys, and lodged  
theym by the palays, and whan they  
were lodged: the two childre clorbed  
themselue honestly & all theyr folke,  
& than they wene with their felaw-  
lyp, holdyng ech other by the han-  
des to the palays. And whan the  
barons of Charlemayne sawe come  
the ii. brether so rychely arrayed  
and so goodly a felawlyp of knyghtes  
after them, they metuyled greatlye  
whac they myght be, so said chone to

brother, heire be two sayre chyldeyn &  
by lykelyhod they shoulde be brethre  
and they must be of som hie lignage.  
The barons the followed them, whis  
they moched to the palays, & they en-  
terred within the grete hall, where they  
found the king Charlemayne, that  
deutled with some of his barons, &  
there was the duke nalmis, Richard  
of Normandy, & alamon of breteyn,  
Ogyer the dane, thore Guanelis &  
also Constanç and robars, whiche it  
hated Reynawde of Bourcawban  
ryght sore, for they were the sonnes  
of Foulques of motillon þ reynawd  
had slayne in þ plaine of valcoloures

Whan he and his bretherne defended them so wel at the toch of Mountebron These two bretherne Constans and rohars had great name in the court, but their vertes were full false, and the kinge Charlemayne loued them well for theyr prowes and greate knyghtheode. With Charlemain were also many other greate prynces and barons wherof the booke makeþ no mencion. For it were to long a thing for to be recounted.

**T**han whan the two bretherne the sones of Reynawde were come in to the hall: they saw the kinge amoung his barons so wenc they vnto hym, and kneeled downe afore hym, and kisst his feete. And than Aymon spake first and said. Sir god giue you good lise & longe, and keepe from euill all youte noblie compaþe. Sir we are come to you for to haue the ordre of knyghtheode. If it plesse your good grace to giue it to vs, for of no better hand than is yours: We can not haue it, wherfore sir we beseeche you humbly for god and for the loue of our fader that it will please you to receyue vs in your seruise vnto the tyme þe giue the saide ordre of knyghtheode. Who be you said þe kinge that speake thus? Sir saide Aymon, we are the sones of Reynawde of Mountawban. And whan þe kyng Charlemayne vnderstoode that they were the sones of Reynawde he rose vpon his feet lyghcely and receyued them honourably, and after said vnto theym. Lyþ chyldren, ye be righte welcome and hoþ faretþ your fader: syþ sayde the

chyldrene, he dooþ he well thanked be god, and he recommendeþ him ryghte humbly to your good grace, beseeching you þat þe will haue vs for recommended, and we haue leſte hym at Mountawban, but he draweth now soþe to age. Thus goþ the Worlde my children (said the king) euery man must take in it an ende. Muche glad was the kyng Charlemayne of the cominge of the two sones of Reynawde, and ryghte gladly he lookeþ vpon them for the loue of theyr fader, for the more he behelde them: and the more sayþ he founde them and beterlyked them, and well he loued them, because they were lyke the fader. And wha that he had looked vpon them þaough: he said to his barons. Lordes if the children wold forſake the fader: chyþ coulde not, for neuer children were more lyke to him, than they, & whan he had sayd so: he turned toward the children and sayd to theym. Fayre chyldrene þe shall be made knyghes at al tymes whanye will, for the loue of your fader my good frend, and I shal giue you more londes than your fader hath, and for loue of you: I shal make an hundred knyghes more with you, for ye ben of suche a stocke come that þe be worthy for to be honourde praised and holden dere. And than whan the duke Raines, Roiald & Oliver that came thare and all the other þretes of Fraunce sawe that they were the two sones of Reynawde of mountawban: they were ryghte glad of it, & than euery man kissed theym by great loue, and asked them how þe Reynawde and his bretherne dyd.

o.ii. lordes

The booke of the soure

lordes saide Aymonet, what are you  
that be so glad of our coming, This  
men saide the duke Raymes, we ben  
all youre kynsmen. And than the  
duke Raymes tolde them all ther  
names. And whan the childre knew  
what that they were: they necked  
thenselv before theim honestye and  
after yonner sayde to theim. Lordes  
our fader greteth you wel, and pray  
eth you that ye wyl haue vs for re  
commended as youre kynsmen. And  
than whan the barons heard the two  
children speake so wisely: they were  
glad of it and also of their comming.  
But the two sonnes of Foulques of  
Moryllon were full soray and wrothe  
for it, by my soule sayde Constanſ to  
his brother Bohars the fader of the  
ſe two chyldrene ſle we oure fader,  
wherof the hert in my body swellet  
bighe for angre that I ſee them heere  
nocht min eyen can not looke vpon  
them, brother ſaid Bohars, nor I no  
ther by my couthe, but I counſeyle  
not that we ſyght with them not hee  
re, for it were foly. But let vs awaile  
a tyme and place couenable, for ſyrd  
that they ſhall dwel heere: we ſhall  
auengis vs vpon them. Brother ſaid  
Conſans, lete vs doo one thyng,  
that I ſhall tell you, whiche is eafe  
for to doo, that ye ſhall calle the one  
of treason: and I the other, ſayinge  
that they fader ſlew our fader by  
treason. And alſo we ſhall proue that  
thei fader wroughte treason ayenſt  
the king Charlemayn, brother ſayde  
Bohars, ye ſpeakē well, but we muſt  
ſuffre a while till we ſee howe they  
ſhal bere themſelv in court, for they  
doo any otherwys than they oughte

to doo: we ſhal mowe kylle them and  
be not blamed for it. After this doon:  
ye oughe to knowe that the children  
of Reynawde of Mounawban, bare  
themselv full honestye in courte, for  
all the barons loued them dere, ſaue  
only the two ſonnes of Foulques of  
Moryllon, wherof Aymonet and Con  
ſans perceyued it ryghte well, and ſpa  
ke not with them, nor haunted theim  
not. It was greate miuayll of the  
great giftes þ the ſonnes of Reynawd  
gaue to the Barons and gentilmen  
of the court of Charlemain, as were  
ſayre horſes and haſtays and many  
clothes of ſyke of dyuers coloutes,  
and in lyke wyſe they gaue to the la  
dys and gentilwomen ſayre gounes  
or clothe of golde and of ſilver. And  
of the other parte they kepte a greate  
estate and good house to al poore gen  
tilmen and ſquieres, and dyd ſo much  
good that they were greatlye praiſed  
of euerye manne. What ſhoulde I  
telle you more: the childrene of Rey  
nawde dyd ſo muſche in the courte  
of the king Charlemayne: that of all  
the worlde they were loued, and prai  
ſed of the kinge Charlemayne. Whan the  
kinge ſaw that they be  
haunted theim ſo well and ſo wiſely in  
his courte: he was ryghte glad of it ſo  
doued he theym moſte of anye yonge  
kynghe of his courte, and made them  
his keruers a fore hym. And thenne  
whan the two ſonnes of Foulques  
of Moryllon ſaw that the kyng  
loued theim ſo muſche: they were full  
angrye, in ſo muſche that they were  
mad all quicke for angre of it, and  
ſo ſware by greate angre that they  
ſhould ſleachē, or euer thilſhould goe

from the courte. It h:pped so that vpon Whysunday eyn as the kyng Was at Parys, and wolde keepe opē course, and there was Aymonet and yonnet with the other barons in the halle. This hanging:aryued there a knynghe of Almayne that presented to the kyng a fayre knyfe after the facyon of the londe, then called the king yonnet & gaue it him by greate loue. And whan yonnet had receaved this gyft of the kyng & as he shoule haue gone to his place agayn: he shoued Constans with his elbowe a. yenist his will. And whan Constans saw that yonnet had doon so: he had greate dispise at it, and saide. What is this: must there be so muche set by these two boies the sonnes of a traitour, whiche been not worth a rotten apple: & this one is all redye become so proude that he hathe nowe shoued me with his elbowe by greate enuye and pride, muche other langage constans saide by yonnet: whiche he ought not so: to saye, and whan yonnet hearde that Constans had called him the sonne of traytore: he was sore an angred. So came he to him and saide Constans ye haue learned a foule craft, that is that ye can speake shrewdely without a cause la wfull why, so: I haue hearde that ye haue called me and my brother the sonnes of a traitour, & that the kyng knoweth well that our fader slewe yours by treason, wherof I will ye wrye that ye lie falsely, but your fader did assaill oures by treason as a traitour, come of the lignage of traitours. But God wolde not that my fader shoulde dye so, nor myne uncles.

my fader slewe your fader, it is true, but it was in his defendyng of hys body, & he did then as a noble knyfe, as he is, and if ye be so hardy that ye wil mainein that he did it by treason: heere I cast now my gage afore thys noble companye, saying that ye haue lied falsely, saue the truertene of the kyng Charlemayne, and of his felawshyp.

**T**han whan the kyng Charlemayne sawe that none of the barons said nothyng of the styrke of yonnet and of Constans: he was angry for it, and sayde. Constans ye doo greate wronge for to saye that I and the t welue peers of Fraunce know well that Reina wude of Mountra wan slewe your fader by treason, holde your peace said Charlemayne, for yf ye knewe well how the matter is ye shoude not speake of it, wherfore I commaund you in as much as ye seare to angre me: that ye make amedes to yonnet of that ye haue said, or elles voide inconciuent my courte and my realme, so: ye haue troubled all my courte, wherof I am not concerte. And whan Bohars hearde this that the kyng Charlemayne had sayde to Constans his brother: he was angry and so rose on his seare, and said. Sir I am redy to proue vpon Aymonet & his fader slewe our fader by treason and heere is my gage. Bohars saide Charlemain, heere ye take a wonge wate, and it shall be to you ouer late, whan ye shal repent it. Whan Aymonet and yonnet vnderstoode these wordes: thei kneeled afore the kyng Charlemayne and saide to him. Sirs

The booke of the four

for god we praye you tyghe humblye  
that ye take the gages þ Rohars  
hache caste, for with goddes grace we  
shal wel defend our fader of the crat  
son, that they put vpon him. Childre  
laide the king, sith it please you that  
I take them: I shall doo so, and than  
the king Charlemayne tooke the ga-  
ges, & Constans auanced himself to  
laide. Sy; we vnderstonde that we  
shall syghte two and two, the one a-  
peint the other. Whan the kyng  
Charlemayne had take the gages of  
bataile of Constans and of Rohars:  
he asked them Who shoulde be they  
sureties, than lepte forch the capoure  
Guanellon, berenger, Escouf of mo-  
rylon, Lyon of pygnabel & Gryffon  
of hauchraunce, the Whiche said to  
king Charlemayne, sy; We Will be  
sureties for Constans & Rohars, for  
they be of our lygnage. Lordes laide  
Charlemain I take them you to kee-  
pe, and I charge you to bryng them  
againe to the court whan time shal  
be. Sy; said the sureties we shal doo  
as ye commaund vs. And whan the  
king had received the sureties of Co-  
stans and of Rohars: Aymonet and  
Yonner came forch, & said in this ma-  
ner, Sir heire been our gages howe  
that we wil defende that oure fader  
slewo never Foulques of morillon by  
creasō. Children said the king Char-  
lemayne ye speake well, but I must  
haue surety of you as I haue of the o-  
ther party, þf I wil doo reason, than  
lepte forch Roialand Dlyuet, the du-  
ke Fraimes of bauyze, Ogier of den-  
marke, Richard of Normandy, and  
Escoule the sonne of Dedon, Whiche  
said to the kyng. Sy; we been sure-  
ties to the sonnes of Reynalid, & we  
shall present them to you at the daye  
of bataile. Sirs laide the king Char-  
lemayne it pleaseþ me wel, but the  
chyldryn of Reynalid been not yet  
knightes as ye know, but by the sai-  
the that I owe to god they shall be to  
morrow, and than we shal send our  
letters to Reynalid that he come to  
see the battayl of his childre, for thys  
daye fourty dayes I deuyse it. Whan  
the eyng came: the kyng Charlemain  
made be called by þs stuard and sayde  
to hym. Goe and bryng me to morrow  
the sonnes of Reynalid, for I wyl  
that they ben to morrow named knigh-  
tes, and see that they been well ho-  
noured, for I wyl doo this for the lou-  
ue of they; fader, and putry so that  
they haue eche of them a good cou-  
ser and good hastaynes mete for their  
bodys. Whan the stuard heade the  
commaundement of the king Char-  
lemayne: he dyd well the tenour ther-  
of. And whan the morning came: the  
stuard brought Aymonet, & Yonner,  
Well apointed, and in they; compa-  
nye all suche other as the kyng soz  
cheth loue wolde make knightes that  
daye. And whan that they were afore  
the kyng: Aymonet and Yonner re-  
quired the ordre of knyghthode, to  
whome the kyng gaue it with good  
hearte, and in lyke wise the other soz  
loue of them, and than was a greate  
feast made that daye. And whan the  
feast was finished: Charlemain too-  
ke a messenger, Whiche he sente unto  
Reynalid of Mounteban, and sente  
him word that he shold come to the  
court with good compayne, for þs  
chyldryn were called of treason, by

the

the sonnes of soulques of Roillon  
sayinge that he had slayne they; fa-  
ther by treason, and how they child;e  
had caste their gages, sayinge that  
they had lyed fallely.

**T**han whan the duke Reynal-  
de heade these rydynges that  
Charlemayne sent hym: he metray-  
led of it sore. Than sent he for all his  
bretherne by his letters, þe shoulde  
com to him in armes, for it was nee-  
de. And whan the bretherne of Rey-  
nalde understoode these rydynges:  
without anye raynghe they came to  
the brother ac. Younclawan. And  
whan Reynalde sawe them he was  
glad and kyssed them thone after the  
other, and after he tolde them al that  
the king Charlemayne had giv him  
to knowe, and whan the bretherne of  
Reynalde understoode it: they met-  
rayned of it, brother saide Rycharde  
double not, for the mater shall come  
better than ye wene of, by the grace  
of god. I conseil that we goe to the  
court of the kyng Charlemayne. For  
whan we shall be there we shal soone  
understoode the kinges mynde, and  
what his will is toward you, and I  
promise you, þf he hache doone anye  
wronge to our newe wes your childre  
god never haue mercy on my soule,  
but I shal flee him, whac hap therof  
Brother saide Reynalde I wyl wel  
that we goe to Paris, and whan we  
shal be there, we shal wel understand  
þoþ the kinge Charlemaine beth  
himselfe toward my chyldyn. Bro-  
ther sayd Alard, þe speake well þt  
selve, & me semach aler myne advise  
þtac we oughte to goe therer without

anpe longe raynghe. And whan they  
were thereto accorded: they departed  
fro Roillon wban with a right nobis  
company, and so muche they rode by  
their Journeys that they came to the  
citle of parys. And whan they were  
comether: al the xii. peers knew a-  
non of their coming, and went ayenst  
them, and brought wch them Tymo-  
net & Ponner, and recepued Reynalde  
& his bretherne with greate loþe & bo-  
nour. And whan Reynalde said his  
two fayre sonnes: he said to them in  
this wise. By children now shal it be  
seen if ye be my sonnes or no. For and  
ye be my chyldyn, ye shall auenge  
me of that greate shame that these trait-  
tours put upon me without a cause.  
Fader said the chyldyn: double not  
therof, for & they were xii. ayenst vs,  
yet shall we overcome them by the  
grace of god. For every man know-  
eth well that ye be as true & knyghte  
as any is in the wþlde. And whan  
the kyng Charlemaine knewe the  
comyng of Reynalde that was come  
so well accompanied: he was glados  
of it, and sent wrode to Reynalde  
that he shoulde come to him, þe which  
thynge Reynalde dyd, and whan  
the kyng sawe him he made him good  
cheere and wch good heare, and also  
to his brethern. And whan Reynalde  
had be wch the king a longe whi-  
le: he tooke leue of hym & went to his  
lodges again, and wha he was theris  
he callede his bretherne and his chil-  
dyn & said to them. By sonnes come  
hither, tell me þoþ the kyng Char-  
mayn beth himselfe toward you,  
& what he saþ of this quareil þtac  
ye haue þnderake. I muste knowe

þe

the trouch of it. Farter sayd the chyl-  
dren, wyc it that the kyngge Charle-  
mayne loueuch vs muche, and he en-  
creceyneth vs aboue all other honou-  
rably, for the loue of you that he lo-  
uech tyghe much, as he sayth. And  
than they tolde him how he had ma-  
de them knyghtes, and how he suspen-  
ned their quarell ayenst the traytou-  
res, and all other.

**W**han Reynawde and his  
brethern heard the chylde-  
speak thus: they were  
glad of it, for they doubted lest Char-  
lemayne wolde haue faren euell with  
them. And whan Reynawde of mou-  
tauban wist that the kyng had boorne  
hymself so wel toward his sonnes:  
he saide that he shoulde serue hym e-  
uermoze as his louerayne lord. And  
on the morrow Reynawde went for  
to see the kyng at his risyng from his  
bed and thanked him muche of the  
greate worshyp that he had doone to  
his chyldeyn. Than said Charlemayne  
to him. Reynawde euer syth that  
I saue that ye dyd my commaunde-  
mente with good wil, & that ye were  
obeynge to me: I dyd cast all myne  
angre from me, and all the euill wyl  
that I had ayenst you, and I wyl chace  
ye wit that I am wel yours, and shal  
be as longe as I lyue in this worlde,  
for I take you for one of my best  
freendes. And whan Reynawde heard  
þe debonaertie and the kynde wordes  
of the kyng: he cast hymself to the feet  
of him, and in lyke wise dyd all hym  
bretherne, and thanked him muche,  
& wyp that Reynawde & his bretherne  
abode in partys wch greace Jope and

pleasure vnto the daye of the batayll  
that shoulde be of his childeyne. And  
this hangyng: Reynawde had doon  
make good harnayſ for his chyldeyn  
and had puruyed two good hōſes  
for them.

**T**han whan the day of the ba-  
tayll was come: the chyldeyn  
of Foulques of Morillon came and  
presented them afor the kyng ready  
for to ryght. And whan the kyng saw  
them: he saide to theim. Chyldeyn ye  
haue had euill counsayll to chalenge  
thesonnes of Reynawde of Mou-  
tauban, as ye haue doon. For I am  
sure, it shall repente you, but this is  
not the first faul that your lygnage  
hach doon, no; it shall not be the last.  
I feare me of it. And whan the earle  
Guanellon & al they of þe lygnage of  
Foulques of morillon heard the kyng  
speake so: they were so greate ly abas-  
hed, þt thei wist not what thei shoulde  
doo, but kept al their peace, & alwe-  
red no word. And than said Constans  
to the kyng. Sy; we pray you for  
god that ye wyl telle to vs the place  
where we shall figh ayenst our ene-  
mies. Than stood vp the duke Ray-  
mes of bauyere, & said, sy; Constans  
speakeþ well, ye must deuise the pla-  
ce, and where they shall figh two a-  
yenst it, or one ayenst a nocher alone.  
Raymes sayde the kyng, I wyl that  
ye Judge this matter, sit lith that it  
please you so: I shal bespeake it wch  
a good wyl. Sy; said the duke Ray-  
mes, me semeth, bþcause that Con-  
stans hach called the sonnes of Rey-  
nawde to batayl both for one matter:  
that they ought to figh two ayenst  
two

naudre to battayn both for one maner  
 that they ought to syghe two ayenst  
 two, and al soute cogythe. Hys sayd  
 Reyna Wde, the duke Maynes sayth  
 ryghe well. By my saych Reynawde  
 sayde the kynge Charlemayne, and I  
 graunt it so, but I wyl that the ba-  
 tayle be made in the yslle of our ladye  
 within sauoyne to morrow in the mor-  
 nyng. And whan the kynge Char-  
 lemayne had sayde thus: the barons  
 tooke leue of him, & eche of thē went  
 to their lodges, and Reynawde also  
 the which tooke his two sonnes with  
 him, and the two sonnes of Foulques  
 of Mozyllon went also with theyz  
 freres. Whan Reynawde and his  
 bretcherne had souped, and had made  
 good chere: he made bryngyng harneys  
 ryough, and made Alarde and Ry-  
 charde, and hys two chyldren armes  
 and yonner, to be armes. And thā  
 he made to be shewed to Aymon  
 and to yonner howe they shoulde de-  
 fende thenselfe of their enemys, and  
 in what maner they shoulde assayle  
 them. And whā that this was doond  
 Reynawde dyd sende bys chyldren to  
 sainte Gerroure and the traytours  
 Went to saint Germaine for to war-  
 che that nyghe. And whan the daye  
 came: a byshop that was of the ry-  
 nage of Constans and of rohrs san-  
 ge masse cloze his cosing, & the bys-  
 shoppe Turpyn said masse affore the  
 sonnes of Reynawde, which was with  
 them at sainte Gerroure, and also the  
 tuelue peers of Fraunce. And whan  
 the yonge knyghtes had hearde the  
 masse: they came al in their harnays  
 to the palays before the kynge Char-  
 lemayne. And whan the kynge sawe

then: he called his newe W Rowland  
 and Dyluer, the duke Rainnes of ba-  
 uyer, and Richarde of Normandie,  
 and sayde to them. Lordes, ye ben all  
 my menne: I commaunde you vpon  
 the trouthe that ye owe to me, that ye  
 goe keep the feild by such maner that  
 my honoure be saued by it, and that  
 ye keep to every man his ryghe. For  
 by the saych that I owe to god, if the  
 re be any man so hardy that wyl doo  
 any outrage: I shall angre hym right  
 soze. Wherfore I wyl that ye passe  
 the water of Hayne, in to the yslle  
 wych the syghters, and that ye beare  
 wych you the halowes, for to make  
 theym swete therre vpon, a fore they  
 shall ente in to the feilde, that they  
 goe to it all in good quarell cruly. Sir  
 saide the barons, we shall doo yourte  
 commaundement, and also we shall  
 keep therin well your honour, for we  
 ben bounde therro. Lordes sayde the  
 kynge Charlemayne, ye speake wel,  
 but ye must take good heed to all. For  
 there shall be great folke ga-  
 thered of the one partie, & of the other,  
 wherfore I leare me that some med-  
 linge shall happe amonge them. For  
 Robars is full of greace etason, and  
 all his freres I knowe well. And  
 of the other partie, Reyna Wde & hys  
 bretcherne are ryghe purssauice and  
 wile, and ther haue great powre wych  
 them, and they wyl not see themselfe  
 wronged, and namely Richarde the  
 brother of Reynawde, for if he be ong  
 angyte: he sparceth not her kynges noz-  
 erie. And therfore I leare him most of  
 all the other, for he wold once haue  
 slayne me, I am yet remembred ther-  
 of. Of Reynawde I doubt not soz  
 he

the booke of the four

he is in euery thyng reasonable. So  
saide the duke Maynes be not dys-  
mayed of nothyng, for we shall keep  
well yourte ryghte and your honoure  
Without to doo any wronge to any  
body. This hanging: the children of  
Foulques of Morillon went to the  
said ysl, where as the king Charle-  
main had told them that they shold  
fght. And whan they were passed ouer  
the riuet in to the ysl with their  
horses: they bounde them and than  
they set them selfe downe upon the  
faire grasse, waytinge after theyz  
aduise partie. Now heare what the  
traicours had ordyned, ye oughe to  
wyt that whyle the kyng Charle-  
maine had spoken with his Barons  
as ye haue heard: Berenger, Ardock  
and Grifon of haute braunce dyd  
put themselfe in a bushe, nygh by the  
saide ysl of our lady, and purposed  
that yf the sonnes of Reynawode had  
the better of the scelde agenst the two  
other sonnes of Morillon: that than  
they shoulde pssue oure vpon theym,  
with a right great numbre of folke,  
soz to clea them shamefully.

**R**han that Reynawode saide  
that it was tyme that hys  
sonnes shoulde goe to the  
ysle soz to accomlysh their battaille:  
he called Aymone, & said to him, com  
hicher faire sonne ye be the eldest, and  
therfore ye ought to be honoured afo-  
re the yonger brother, holde I gyue  
you flamberge my good swerde, by  
the whiche ye shall take vengeaunce  
of these traytours. For ye been in the  
righthe, and they in the wrong, farther  
said Aymonet, ye may be in a surte

that ye shal see this day such a thing  
that shal be to yourte herres toye, soz  
we shal bring the traicours to their  
shamefull death, & it please god. And  
whan Reynawode heard hys sonne so  
valiauncly speake: he was glad, and  
kissed him. And than he gaue hym  
his benediction, and in lyke wise to  
yonner. And whan he had doon this:  
he broughte his bretherne & his chil-  
dren to the ysl of our lady. And wha  
they were ouer: he and his bretherne  
came again towarde the kyng. But  
as they wolde haue gone: ther came  
a messengar that asciied to Reynawode  
as ioude as he myght. Reynawode  
haue mercy on thy children. For ye  
thou see not wel to them: they be lost.  
Wyt that Grifon of haute braunce  
is embulshed with a greate numbre  
of folke by the ysl for to clea thy chil-  
dren. And whan Reynawode vnder-  
stoode these wordes: he blistred red  
in his face all soz angre, and sayde.  
Ha sweet traunce, that it is greate do-  
mage that ye may neuert be without  
traytours. And whan he said this:  
he called his brother Richard, and  
said to him. Faire brother goe wyth  
our taryng, and arme your selfe, and  
doo arme al our folke, and than bring  
theym to the ysl and if the false tra-  
toure Grifon of haute braunce come  
for to greue my childeyne: clea hym  
incontinence. And whan ye be there:  
doo that ye may be seen of both pat-  
ties. And for God keepe well yf the  
sonnes of Foulques of morillon haue  
the better: that ye help not in no wise  
my childeyne, but let theym dye if it  
come so. For it were greate dysho-  
noure soz to vs: yf ye dyd otherwise,

Brother sayd Richarde, let me alone therof, our worship shal be sauved by the grace of god. for I wolde not helpe yf it came so for al the good of the wortle. for all oure lyfe dayes we shoulde be rebuked of it, & all oure lygnage also. And whan Richarde had sayd so: he departed fro his brethen, and went and armed hym and all his tolke, and then they lyghed on horsebacke, & went anoon there as Reynawode had sayd. This hanging: went Reynawode to the kyng in his palays, and whan the kyng sa we hym, he sayde to him Reynawode ye be syghe welcome. Sir sayde Reynawode, god increase youre honoure, and whan Charlemayne saue not Richarde with his brethen: heooke some suspecion of him and sayde to Reynawode. Where is youre brother Richarde that he is not heere with thother. Sir sayd Reynawode he is gone there as I haue sent him but take no suspecion at al for him: no more I doo sayd Charlemayn as lode as ye be a lwe, but we must goe vpon the towre of saine for to see the bataille of youre children, let vs goe there, so said Reynawode whan it please you, than went they vpon the towre, & wch them the bishop Turpyn Salomon of breten, Ogier the dane, Guidellon of bauyere and manye other barons.

**T**hus as the kyng Charlemayne was gon vpon ycoure for to see the bataill: he looked & sa we come the brother of Reynawode, and a great company of men armed. And whan Charlemayn saw him: he knew hym well, for he bare his

owne cote of armes, and Richarde had doon so for because he shoulde be knownen. And whan Charlemayne saw this: he was all abasshed of it, and thenne he called Reynawode and sayde to hym. What wyl ye doo Reynawode, wyl ye dyshonour me: haue ye forgoten all tedy youte trouthe? Sir sayde Reynawode nay, saue your reuerence, but I wyl serue you and worship you as my souerayn lorde. why said the kyng Charlemayne, is Richarde gon in to the yste of our lady with so great felawship for to breake the feilde of the which chyng. I shal be dyshonoured? Sir sayd Reynawode haue no double therof, for I take god to suretye and waraunte that knoweþ all chynges that richarde shal doo no chyng that shal turne to your dyshonour ne to no damage to you, and I shal tell you why my brother richarde hath put hym selfe in armes, we must wyt that the traytore Gysloun of haubzalunche is enbusched vnder Haynre Harcell in a gatdyn with a greate numbre of folke armed, that wyl bryake your feilde for to flee my chyldeyn. And therfore hath my brother armed hym for to succoure them if neede be, and yf ye see that richarde doo any chyng againste youre wyl and comandement: heere I am, that vpon me take the vengeance. is It trouthe sayde Charlemayne, that Gysloun hath doon so as ye saye: yea said Reynawode verely, for I wolde not tell you none otherwise. Right angry was Charlemayne whan he hearde that Reynawode had colde him. Than he swore god and all his sayntes, that if he migh

The booke of the soure

might take Giffon of hauchbraunch: that he wold make hym be hanged, and all his folke with him. He called than Salomon, and the earle of voynys and Guidellur of bauete, & laid to them. Lordes make me answa a thousande knyghtes to be armed. For I wil go in to yngle for to see the pride of these traitours. And I swerte you by saint James, yf I may they shall doo me no more dyshonour and yf I cane lynde theym: they shal aby it ful deereley. Syr sayde Reyna Wde ye speake lyke a kynge. The barons than dyd that Charlemayne had sent in to the ylle sawe rycharde with his folke in armes. And whan towland sawe that they were armes: he was not well contente with it, and sayde to the other Barons that were come wryth hym for to keepe the feilde. Whac wyl Rycharde doo: blame haue the kynge Charlemayne yf he take not vengeance vpon Reyna Wde of that they haue doon ayenst his comandement, by my faith sayd Rycharde and the duke Raymes yslaye well. Than sayd Ogyer, lordes Apemys, se you that Reynawde knowe chyng of that, that rycharde dooth. Thus as the peers of feaunce were spekyng of that: rycharde was come to to the feilde in armes. Gryffon ysued oute of his bushement with his folke, because he was aferde that rycharde wold greue the chyldren of foulques of Morillon. And whan towland sawe hym: he cryed to him wryth a lie vicer. By god raynoute this shal nonghe auapl you for afore that aye stroke begynen of theym: chey shal make theym othe, and ye

shall abyte it full deereley that ye haue doon. Kygh: loye was Rowlande whan he saw the soure treason that Gryffon wold haue brought aboar. This hanging: came there Charlemayne wryth a great company of folke well armes. And whan he sawe Rowlande: he sayd to hym. Newewe whys doo ye suffre the ouerage that the sonnes of foulques of Morillon wold doo to the chyldren of Reynawde, of mountawban. I blamed Reynawde, because his brother had armes him: but I know now wel that they had treason, sir said Rowlande none ca beware of traitours. Newewe said Charlemayne ye saye trouthe: but by the sayth that I owe to god. I shall make theym all to be hanged in dyspyte of all they; lygnage onely for y treason that thei haue doon this day. By god syr sayde Rowland ye shall doo well. And than came there Reynawde vpon a palfrai without swerd. And whan Rowlande sawe hym: he sayde vnto hym. Syr Reynawde is it youte will that Richardde youte brother is com hithe in armes: sir towlande sayd Reyna Wd, yea verely, for nothing that I haue doon shal not be hydde from you, ye haue now seen y treason that the traitours wold haue wrought ayenst my children, & therfore whan I knew their faishode: I commaunded my brother Richard y he shold put himselfe shortly in armes to my men for to succour them y the traitours came them vpon, & yf ye thinke y richarde or I haue doon smys in any chinge: so let the kyng make Justice of it. By my soule laid Rowlande, neither you nor her youte brother

brother be not to be blamed, but ye haue doone as good knyght shoud doo. And I promise you that your enemies shalbe this day brought to shame and confusyon.

**A**nd whan Rycharde of mountawban sawe Charlemayn: he knew well that he was come soz to keepe the feild, and that the traytours shoud not con doo any thing to his newews. So said he to his folke let vs take of our harneys. For slyth that the kyng is here himself: we need not to wayte heere no more. Than went Rycharde and his folke and dysarmed them. And whan Rycharde had doone so: he lyghte agayn upon his horse, and came agayne ouer the ryuer of Hayne Swyninge vnto the foreshayd yle. And whan he was on lande: he spurred his horse, and made him to lepe thre or fourre lepes afore the company. And than he came streyght afore the kyng, and made to him reuerens honourably. Whan the kyng sawe Rycharde: he said to hym, and ye Rycharde wylle ye dyshonour me, that are come to acme toz to breke my feild? Soz said Rycharde saue your grace, for I never thought it, but wylle I well for certayn, that ye Gryffon of haunte braunche had come soz to greue mine newes: I wold haue made his foz head soz to swete. Soz ye be our souerayne lord, so ought ye to mayntain and keepe vs. and so shall I tell you a thing afore al your barons, þ yf ye belue the traytours of Hayne: ye shall ones repent it. I am well a payed that ye a your xxx. pices haue

seen the treason of Gryffon of haunte braunche, how he wold haue layne mine newes. Soz god said charlemayne, ye saye trouth, he is well worthy to be blamed, and I tell you they that shalbe ouer come shalbe hanged, nor shal not be saued for none of theyz lynage. Soz said Rycharde it pleasech me well, but I tell you þ yf I shold dye: I shold never suffice my newews to be wronged. By my head said the kyng, ye shall see that I shal doo reason vnto euery party. For I shal bryng them together, let god helpe the ryght. Than whan Charlemayne had layde so: he went to the two chyldren of Foulques of Morillon, and said to them no w lordes hye you of that ye haue to doo, goe and swere vpon the halowes þ justly ye entre in this quarell. Soz said they we shal doo it w ryght good wyl, for the chyldren of Reynawode ben dead, but þ that they confesse, that theyz father he woulde fader by treason. Then spake þ bisshop Turpin, and said, Lordis come hither, and swere vpon the halowes, & see to that ye folswere not yourself, for he that folswerech him self shalbe ouer ryghtowen, no doubt therof, whan the bisshop Turpin had said this: the two sonnes of foulques of morillon kneeld downe afoore the halowes, and swere that reynawode of mountawban had slayn theyz father by treason, & after they had made theyz oþre: they kyld the halowes, and offred two belans of golde. And than went and lyghted vpon theyn horses. And þ as they lyghted: they were to nye eche other

### The booke of the four

so that thone hurted thother so hard: that they fel downe almoste both to the erth. And whan Reynarde saw this, he sayd to þ other barons heere is an evill token. I beleue that they bein forsworne. This hanging: cain the children of Reinawde, that kneeled afore the halowes and swore þ the two sonnes of foulques of Mortyon had lied falsely all that they had sayd. And then they put their ha des vpon the halowes, and offred a tyche gifte, and þ Bysshop Turpyn gaue them the benediction, & in lyke wyse the kynge Charlemayne, and all the other barons, & than of Reynarde, and of his brethern and after they wente and molited vpon their hōsles lightly.

**W**han the four Champions were vpon theyz hōsles: they made none other tarynger: but gaue the spures to theyz hōsles, and ran one against an other and smote eche other in theyz sheeldes so soze: þ the spures flew in pieces without þ any of them fell on the ground. And whā they had broken their spures wch set hande vnto their swerdes. Than Bymonet that helde Flamberge in hys hande sayde vnto Tonnet hys brother. I pray you brother thynke to doo well. For if ye helpe me, they shalbe vterely shamed and disconfuted as traytors as they ben. Bro ther sayd Yonnet doubt not, for I shall never sayle you to the deaþ, & also we ouȝt to recomfort vs. for we ben in the ryght, and they be in þ wronȝe. Whan the two brethern

had spoke ynough: they went botha at ones vpon theyz enemyes, wþtþ theyz swerdes in theyz handes. And than Bymonet overtooke Constans wþtþ Flamberge his swerd, and gaue him suche a stroke that the swerde flyded vpon the viser, and hurt it and his nose a sunder. And whan Bymonet sawe that the nose of his enemis fall to the erth: he mocked him & said to him. By god Constans it is worse with you than it was afore, for ye shall never ben without a moche, for that, that this stroke hath doone vnto you. for Flamberge lew your fa ther, and so shal it do you & it please god. And whan Rohars sawe that his brother was so sore wounded: he ranne vpon gonnet and gaue hym so myghty a stroke vpon hys helme: so that þt had not ben of good steele: he had slaine hi without sayle. This hangyng: Bymonet ranne a gayne vpon Constans and gaue hi suche a stroke vpon hys helme, that he made him for to bowe hys backe vpon the saddle, & for the great myght of the stroke: the horse muste for veri need fall down vpon his knes, and smote his muste into the erth. And whan that the horse fel that stroke: he rose lightly vp agayne all astay ed, and began for to runne thoro ghe þ medo wch mangere of his mastier as mad, noþ Constans had not the myghte for to rule hym: because he was a maled and a stonied of that stroke, that he had receyld. And than Bymonet and Yonnet wente bothe vpon Rohars, and beganne to fere foule with him, and whan Rohars sawe hymself so sharpclye

handled: he began to crye with a hie  
voynce. Brother whare be you, shall  
ye let me thus to be slayne fally? Lo  
uans that canne throughe the me-  
dow was comen agayne to himself  
and apeased his horse a litle heard  
his brother crye. So came he agayn  
to hym: and smote Aymonet vpon  
his helme a great stroke, but the hel-  
me was good, and dommaged hym  
not. And whan that Constans sa  
that he had not slayne Aymonet w  
his stroke: he wend to haue gone out  
of his wile, & of y other part: he saw  
the place that was al couerted with y  
bloud of his brother, so wist not co-  
stans what to doo. For Aymonet  
gaue hym so muche to doo.

**T**rys hanging: Yonnet tooke  
Rohars bi the helme, & wold  
haue strangled hym by syne force. But  
Whan Constans saw that: he spur-  
red hys horse with the spurres, and  
moued hym betwene Rohars & Yon-  
net, so that it was to xee to yonnet to  
let goe hys prisone wolde he or no. And  
Whan Aymonet saw that Constans  
had deliuered Rohars from the ha-  
deg of yonnet: he went & rane vpon  
Constans and smote him with flan-  
verge vpon the sholdres so harde that  
he made of it two peeces. Wherlye  
to speake: the chyldren of Reynawde  
hasted so muche the two sonnes of  
foulques that they began to lese  
place, & were so wryte, that they al-  
ked none other thing: but for to rest  
themselues. But Aymonet & Yonnet  
had none other wryt: but for to fighte  
still, & tell you for certayne y they  
were all founre sole wounded y they

lost much bloud for they had fought  
longe. And whan Constans had so-  
tourned a litle: he came vpon Aymon-  
et and gaue him suche a stroke: so  
that he made him a great wounde,  
but no ded wounde. And wha Aymo-  
net saw hym so wounded he gaue  
Constans so great a stroke vpon y  
ear: that he bare it away withal the  
iawe bone, whan charlemayne saw  
that great stroke: he myght not for-  
beare, but he said. By god now is he  
worse arrayed thā he was before, for  
the two sonnes of foulques of mo-  
rillon be shamed and confusid. Sic  
sayd Reynawde they haue well deser-  
ued it, for they haue losst yorne the  
selfe fally. This hanging: Yonnet  
Went vpon Rohars, and gaue him  
so great a stroke vpon hys helme: y  
he brake it, and made his swerde to  
entre in his head a finger deep. Wre  
it that the batarie lasted longe the  
one agaynst the other, and it happyd  
y by force of fighting, y one against  
the other: they were syghtynge two &  
two together, Wel a bothe shot from  
eche other, and so made they two  
batayles, for Aymonet fought against  
Constans, & Yonnet fought agaynst  
Rohars, which was so greuid, for  
Yonnet had brought hym to the erth  
And whan Yonnet sawe that he had  
brought downe Rohars: he sayd that  
it were shame to syghte with hym on  
hys backe agaynst him on soote, so  
lighted he downe for to syghte with  
Rohars. But wha he had habadon-  
ned his horse: Incontynent the said  
horse ran to y horse of Rohars and  
wolde haue strangled him. And wha  
Charlemayne saw that: he began to  
laugh

## The booke of the fourre

laughe with it and sayd, by my say,  
th we haue thre batayles. But I se  
Well that Yonnet hath brought Bo-  
hars so lowe that he may no more.  
Whan Bohars saw that he myght  
no more endure the great strokes of  
Yonnet: he began to crye and sayde  
Ha cappe brother Constans, where  
are ye þe come not & helpe me þare  
so good a knyght, and that toke first  
the quarell in hande, wherof ic goeth  
full euill with vs. for þe succour  
me not now: I shall dye incontinent  
And whan Constans heard his bro-  
ther crye thus: he left Ymonet, and  
went to warde & onnet, for to helpe  
hys brother, but wyt ic well that he  
went not very sounre from Ymo-  
net, for he had made hym moe than  
xx. wondres. And whan Constans  
was come to hys brother: Incon-  
tent he rame vpon Yonnet with  
his horse. And whan Ymonet saw  
that: he began to cri after Constans  
and sayd. By my soule he baptysed  
you full yl þ named you Constans.  
For I saw never moe cowarde thā  
ye be that so renneth awaþ for feare  
of me, & whan he had sayd soþeran  
after for to succour hys brother Yon-  
net. And whan he was come there:  
he went a stellhe vpon Constans, &  
Constans vpon hym, þ whiche gaue  
him a great stroke vpon his helme  
but the stroke flyded vpon the horse.  
And slew hym withall. And whan  
Ymonet saw him a groud he righ-  
ted hym quickly & smote Constans  
vpon his helme and it was so haire  
that clamberge coulde not ente in  
it & the stroke flyded vpon the wyster  
& bialf it, and a greate part of his he-

lage, so that the treib were seen plai-  
nely, and with þ sel þ stroke vpon þ  
horse necke, so that he hit it in two  
peices, and so fell the horse dead to  
the erth.

**S**o dreabasslyed was Constans  
whan he saw his horse slaine,  
and than Ymonet sayd to him. By  
god false traytour noþe shal thow  
dye, ye dyd yll Bohar þe called euere  
my fader of treason, whiche is as  
true a knyght as is anye in all the  
worlde, but now is the daye come þ  
þe shall abyte it ful deere. And whan  
Reynawode heard his sonne speake  
thus: he was ryght glad of it, & tha-  
ked God therof herteily, & whan Ymo-  
net saw Constans vpon his feet  
agayn: he went hym vpon, and ha-  
stid hym ryght soxe with strokes so  
þ Constans had no power to strike  
one stroke more, but he went abacce  
heire and thereto for to eschew þ stro-  
kes of Ymonet. And whan Con-  
stans saw þ he wylt no more what  
to doo: he cast hys sheeld to the erth,  
and tooke Ymonet by the walle for  
to wattle with hym. And whan Ymo-  
net saw this he was not afeare  
of it, for he was stonge and ryght so  
tooke he Constans by the helme, and  
drew it to warde him to such myght  
that he pulid it from the head of  
him. And whan Constans saw him so  
soxe handled: he cryed vpon his bro-  
ther Bohars & sayd. þs brother suc-  
coute me, for I haue no power for to  
defende my selfe. Whan Bohars  
heard his brother say thus: he was  
ful sorri þ he myght not help him for  
he had lost so much bloud þ he myght  
not

Not well stand vpon his feete but also  
Wayes he forced himselfe so muche  
that he came vnto his brother Con-  
stans, and wende to haue smitte Aymo-  
monet from behynde, but he dyd not  
bycause Aymonet saw hym come, &  
went and smote hym such a stroke  
that he felled hym to the earth. And  
than went agayne vpon Constans,  
and gaue hym such a stroke that  
he smote almoste his left arme of.  
Than began Constans to crye and  
sayd. Ha sayre brother succour me:  
or els I am dead. Brother sayde Bo-  
gars I can gue you nother succou-  
res nor helpe, for I am my selfe nere  
gone, and whan Charlemayn saw  
this: he sayd, by god now are dead þ  
sonnes of foulques or morillon by  
theyr false wit. Hyz sayd Ogier ye  
ought not to recke, for they mayn-  
teyned a false quatell, ye sayt con-  
th sayd Charlemayn. Nowe theyr  
falschode apereth well. Whan Reys-  
nawde saw that his children were to  
their aboue: he was ryghte glad of it.  
but so was not Guanellon, for he  
was so angry for it: that he became  
as blacke as a moore. Then called  
the sayd Guanellon Berenger, Ha-  
rdock, Henry of Lyon and Pigna-  
bell of Morillon and sayd to them.  
Lordes nowe be we all dyshonoured,  
for þ sonnes of foulques of Moril-  
lon are discomfited, I wolde sayne  
succour them yf I durst but I feare  
so sore þ kynge that is there Wyth  
great puyllance. Hyz sayd Hardres  
or Hardocke, Wo is me for it, but we  
can not doo none other thing as for  
this tyme, therfore we muste restrain  
out wyrath, & shew a good face, to þ

ende that no medlyng falle not vpo  
vs, & let vs abide tyll tyme come, þ  
we may auenge vs therof.

**T**his hanging: Aymonet saw  
that he had smitten Constans  
a deas woside: so was he ryghte glad  
of it, by god brother ye haue doone  
yli þ ye haue slayne this false tray-  
tore, for I wolde haue slayne hym  
wyth myne owne handes, but syth  
ye haue brought it so ferre: make an  
ende of hym at ones and I shall gos  
slea Robarts. Brother sayde Aymo-  
net ye speake wel, now go flea the  
one and I the other, for thus ought  
men to doo wyth traytours. Tha-  
ran the two brethren vpon theyr co-  
nemies that laye on the ground, that  
is to wyt vpon Constans to whom  
he sayd al on hys, bycause all they þ  
looked vpo should heare it. Tel me  
Constans false traytore, why dyd  
ye call my father of treason: Witch-  
standynge that men know wel that  
he is one of the truest knyghtes of þ  
worlds. And that he lew your fathur  
in his bodye defendynge. Where as  
your fathur had purchased for to  
haue slayne hym by treason. Now tell  
me your falschode and conseille your  
treason afore the kynge, or els I shal  
now cut your throte. Aymonet sayd  
Constans, for god haue merci on me  
for I yeilde me to you, and than he  
tooke him his swerde. And wha Aymo-  
net had the swerde of the sayd con-  
stans: he tooke him vp & brought him  
afore the kynge Charlemayne, to  
whome he said, Hyz holde this tra-  
tore a doo with him as reason re-  
quires, and whan Charlemayne

The booke of the fourre

Same tis: he was glad of it and said to Aymonet, strende ye haue doone well your deuoyz. I can no more aske of you. And wit it that whan the other is vanquisched: I shall make theym bothe to be hanged.   
 Hys sayd Aymonet, doo your Wyll wryth them. And whan he had sayde so: he went agayn to his brother Ponnet for to helpe him holdynge his swerde in his hande all bloudy w the bloud of Constanç and sayd to Bohars, by God false traytour ye shal dñe heire anon, and wolde haue snyten hym but Ponnet that sawe that: sayd to his brother. Fayre brother I leah him not, nor touche hi, but goe your way and rest your self, for I Wyll conquerre him by my selfe as ye haue doone yours, brother sayde Aymonet ye say yll, for it was or deyned that we shalde eche helpe other, and whan Ponnet sawe that his brother Wolde needes helpe agaynst his Wyll: he sayde to hym. Fayre brother I make mine a bove to god, if ye touche Bohars: I shal never loue you, brother sayde Aymonet, ye saye not well, but I shal forberde me liche it please you so, but I promise you if I see you in daunger: I shal help you if ye shalde lea me, brother sayd Ponnet I Wyll wel, than Aymonet wdrow him a litle abacke, and than tanne Ponnet vpon Bohars, he rose vpayayne for to defende hymselfe, than gaue Ponnet to hym so great a stroke vpon his shoulder: that his arme with his shoulder bone fell clene of to the grounde and his swerde withal. Whan Ponnet had giuen his stroke, he put his swerde agayn into his heeche

he sayd to Bohars, þ false traytour þ must now confess with thine owne mouth that Reynawode my fader is no traytour, but he is one of þ truest knyghtes of the wold, and þ thou Wyrt not doo so: thou shal die incōtinent. And whan he had sayd so: he tooke Bohars by the helme and pulled hym to hym Wardes so hard þ he drew it fro his head, and bega for to smite him with the pomell of his swerde vpon þ bare head. And whan Bohars saw þ he was so shewolde handled: he began for to crye a sayd good lord haue mercy vpon my soule for I know well þ it is doone wryth my body. And whan Constanç heard his brother say so: he began to wepe for he coulde none other doo. And whan Ponnet sawe þ Bohars wolde not for sake þ he had sayd, nor wolde not cry hym mercy: he smote hym w his owne swerde so hard þ he tooke a wryte the one legge from the body of him. And than he put his foote vpon him and said. Now anon false traytour confess þurh falsode, or els ye ben now dead, to the whiche thynge Bohars answered not. And whan Ponnet sawe þ he smote hym the head of. Whan Aymonet sawe þ his brother Ponnet had slayne Bohars: he was ryght glad of it, and went to hym and sayde. Brother ye haue doone valiantly, lord gramer cy that ye haue slayne so thy traytour, the two brether tooke eche other by the hande and went to charleynne, to whome Aymonet sayd in thy Wyse. Hys like it you þ we haue doone, for we be redi for to doo muche more for you, þ ye comande

vs. fayresonnes said Charlemayn  
ye need not soz to doo more. For ye  
haue doone p noughe, for Constanſ  
is ouercomen, & Rohars dead. Now  
go rest your ſelf, and ſee that ye haue  
good leches for your woundes. And  
I promple you that I ſhal doo with  
the traytoures as it aperneſch, and  
than Charlemayne commaunded þ  
Conſans ſhould be hanged, and the  
body of his brother by him, & whan  
the king had giuen this commaun-  
dement Conſans was anon taken  
and the body of his brother, & were  
drawen at horſes tayles beforo all  
theyr lygnage, and than were han-  
ged as they had well deserued, whā  
they were haged: Charlemayne ſaid  
Lordes wyt that I wolde not for a  
great thynge that it went otherwile.  
Wyt it that whan Guanellon ſaw  
hange the ſonnes of Foulques that  
were his neuedres: he was ſore an-  
gred for it that he almoſt had loſt  
hys Witte. Than caſled he Hardres  
Berenger & Malger that wyt moſe  
ſalhode than Lucifer, Henry of Li-  
on, Pygnabell & Goffray, men that  
neuer dyd good and ſayde to them.  
Lordes ye ſee ho we Charlemayne  
hath doone to vs great dyſhonour,  
for he hath doone hange our kinſme  
ſhamefully, but we ſhall ſee yet the  
day that this ſhame ſhall be auenged  
he ſayd trouth þ traytoure. For he be-  
trayed afterwarde the xii. Peeres of  
Fraunce, and made them all die at  
the batayle of Bounſcuales.

**A**ſter theſe thiges aboue ſaid  
Reynawde of Mountauban  
ſaw that his childe had batne quic-

ched þ childeſ of Foulques: he was  
right glad of it & thanked much our  
lorde god therof, than he and his vze  
thenn went to them and asked howe  
they dyd: fater ſayde the childeſ  
we doo ryght well lorde gramercy.  
Than Alarde & Guicharde behelde  
theyr woundes wherof they were  
glad. This haging: came there char-  
leſayne and the childeſ came hym  
againſt & kneeld afroze hi, whā char-  
leſayne asked them, childeſ how is  
it with you be ye ſore wounded: ſyſ  
ſayd the childeſ it is well with vs  
thanked be our lorde & you: we ſhal  
ſoone be whole. Than the kyng ſet  
for al the leches & ſayd to them that  
they ſhould looke the woundes of  
Aymon & of Ponner, the whiche  
thynge they did wout any tatyeng, &  
after they ſayd to the kyng that they  
made no doubt of them & that they  
ſhould be ſoone whole. And after þ  
the Justice was doone of the ſonnes  
of Foulques of Morillo: Reynawde  
abode in Paris til his childeſ were  
whole, & whan they were whole: they  
went to the Palays to ſee the kyng  
Charlemayne, the whiche made the  
good cheere & gaue the manye fayre  
giſtes as ben castles & forterſſes of  
great name, whā Reynawde and hys  
brethern alſeke leue of the kyng, & he  
gane it the against his wil, & prayed  
them that they wolde come ſee hym  
agayne, ſyſ ſayd Reynawde, we ſhal  
do gladly your comandeſment. Whā  
Reynawde had taken leue of þ kyng  
and alſo his brethern & childeſ: they  
tooke on their way towarde mountau-  
ban, and they did ſo muſe by theyr  
Journeys þ they came to boudewis

And

And whā Reynawde had rest hym a  
little he called his childdren afore his  
brethern and sayd to them, my chil-  
dren, heare what I wyl say to you.  
I ordyned at this tyme that yonnet  
shai haue ardeyne for his parre and  
Aymonet Mountawban, for it is  
not longe a goe syth I heard saye þ  
god sayd, that the tree þ beareth frui-  
te. shai never dye, wit it that I haue  
offended god greatil, and me semeth  
that þ tyme is now come þ I shold  
a mend my self. þ I feare soore my  
poore soule, wherfore I shal doo my  
deuorce for to yeelde it agayne to þ  
blessed lorde þ made it after his I-  
mage, & whan his brethern hearde  
speake this: they knew wel what he  
wold: deo, and therfore they began  
to make great sorow. And whan reyn-  
awde saw that he sayd to them, for  
sothe syrs ye are not wylde to make  
suche sorow we, for ye knowe not yet,  
what I wyl doo, see ye not that I  
am yet with you? Wherof are yee as-  
hasted: be not yee ryche þougher  
ther is nother of you but mat keep  
a thousand horses in his stable. Of  
the other part, thoughe I am nowe  
whole of my bodye thanked be our  
lorde, þ at wyl I gyue in my lyfe to  
my childdren theyr part, to the ende þ  
they shall not in dyscorde after my  
death, and therfore I wyl that eche  
of you knowe from hens forþon  
what he shal haue. And whan Reyn-  
awde had th' ordyned for his chil-  
dren: yonnet departed from his fa-  
ther with his blessing, & went to Ar-  
deyne, wher they of the land recey-  
ued him to be their lorde and made  
to him swete a homage. And after þ

yonnet was gone: Reynawde & his  
brethern with Aymonet wente to  
Mountawban, and whan they of  
Mountawban saw theyr lordes: they  
were glad & receyued hym honoura-  
bly. And whan the feast was passed:  
Reynawde commaunded al his sub-  
iectes that they shold make theyr  
homage unto hys sonne Aymonet,  
& whan al this was doone, & that  
nyght was come: every man went  
to bed, & than Reynawde entered hys  
chambre & walked in it til it was mid-  
nyght passed, than Reynawde unclo-  
thed himself al naked, & tooke a core  
of sorowfulnes upon his fleshe wout  
any shert, & ther vpon a great mantel  
of the same. And thus arayed bare-  
foote & wout any wepyn (but onyls  
a stafke in his hand to defende hym  
from the dogges) yllued out of hys  
chambre, & went out of the palays  
& came to the gate of the towne, and  
made it to be opened, & whā þ porters  
saw his lordes so yll & in so poorely a-  
ray & barefoote he sayd to hym. Syz  
alas whether goe ye thus wthout  
felawship, & so yll apoynted? I wyl  
go awake yur brethern & my lorde  
your sonne, for ye be in great daun-  
ger of theues because ye haue nother  
armour nor wepyn for to defends  
your selfe, freende sayd Reynawde  
let alone, go not there. For my cruse  
is in god that he shal keep me from  
all daunger. But thou shalte tell my  
bretherne whan thou seest them to  
morowe that I greate them wel, & to  
my sonne also, and that they chynke  
al wares to doo wel, & þ they loue  
eche other as thei ought for to doo,  
and so tel them that they shal neuerg  
see

See me more as I well trove. for I  
go to saue my soule ys God giue me  
the grace to doo so, & so shall I dye  
whan it please god, soz thoroughe mi  
cause are dead many a man, wherof  
I leele my poore soule grieved sore, &  
therfore wyl I beare Payne on my  
body soz it, doinge penaunce all the  
remenant of my lyfe, and if I maye  
saue my soule: I aske none other  
thing. And whan Reynawde had said  
this: he looked on his finger & tooke  
a ring w<sup>t</sup> a pretious stome, whiche  
was wel worth. v. mark & gaue it to  
the portere & sayd to him, my frende  
ye be wel rewarded of your service y  
ye haue done to me. Syr said y portere  
gramercye of this gifte, but alas  
syr ye put no w<sup>t</sup> all your countreis in  
great sorow for your departyng, &  
than he began to weape right sore.  
This hanging went Reynawde on  
hys waye thus arrayed as ye haue  
heard, and as he went y portere loo-  
ked evermore after hym by the light  
as longe as he might see hym, & whan

he might no more see hi: he fel down  
in a swoune to the erth, and was th<sup>t</sup>  
a longe while, & whan he was come  
agayne to himselfe: he made greate  
mone, & sith sayd. Ha God wheret  
goth no w<sup>t</sup> my lord so poorely array-  
ed: after he had made greate sorow  
a longe whyle: he shet the gare again  
and went into his house. And whan  
he was therer he looked upon y ring  
that Reynawde had giuen him, and  
knew wel that it was a ryche gyft,  
wherof he was glad. ¶ We shal Ius  
hcre to speake a little of the valyant  
Reynalde of Mountawhan, y goth  
for to saue his soule, and to doo pe-  
naunce for hys synnes thoroughe  
the woodes looking downwarde:  
and we shall speake of his brethern,  
and of his sonne Aymoun.

¶ Howaster y Reynawde was gone  
from Mountawhan never to returne  
his brethern and his sonne Aymoun  
made greate sorow, whan they knew  
of it, that he had not take leue of the



The booke of the four

**N**ow sheweth the hystory that whan the morowe came and that Aymonet & his uncles were vp they went to þ churche Wrennyng to haue Reynawde ther as they were wont. And whan they saw hym com not to matyns: they meruayled soþ there was come his chapeleyne soþ to say matyns there With hym, the Whiche whan he soude noþ his mayster in the churche: he was all abashed and spred after him to his bȝ chern. Soþ sayd Alarde, I wene he be sick for god let vs go see how he dooth, and than he wet to seeke him in his chambre, Where they founde him not, Wherof they wende all to haue ben desperate. Lordes sayde Alarde no woe be we lost, for heere ben his gownes his shert his shone his swerde and all his armours, nowt he gone from vs. I see it well in poore art, god be with him. And as they were thus makyngh theyȝ move: came in the portre that made greate sorrow for þ loue of his mayster Reynawde. And whan he was come in to the chabre: he began to crye as he had be from hymselfe sayde. Fayre lordes what shal we doo with þ we haue lost our lordes for he is gone his wayes wulwarde a barefoote w a sorȝ staffe in hys hāde, & he sendeth you greeting by me, a prayere you soþ god that it euer ye loued him: that ye myll worship eche other and that euer man haue his partie as he hath deuyled it. And he doth you wit that ye shall never see hym, for he is gone to saue hys soule, & so hath he giuen me the ringe of his finger, þ ye may see hecre.

**V**van Alarde, Guicharde and Richardarde, & Aymonet heard these tidiges: they tooke so great sorrow at the hert þ they fell downe in a swoune to the erth, & whan they were come agayn to themselfe: they began to make a ryght great sorow and so meruaylous that he that had seen it: hys hert had be full hard, but he shold haue wept for pitie. Alas sayd Alarde my fayre brother Reynawde, ye haue leste vs in muche greate sorow. Certes it had be muche better soþ vs that ye had slayne vs all, than soþ to haue leste vs in this wise. For from herte for he we be noþ thyng. And whan he had sayd soþ he fell agayne in a swoune. And whan he was come agayne to himselfe: he pulled hys heres of his bearde and scratched his visage. Alas my brother sayd Guycharde holde shall we nowt live without you. Alas now haue we lost hiþ by whome we haue had so greate honour in this wold, alas my brother ther is not your like vnder the cope of heauen that euer bare swerde, shert or speare, syþ þ we haue lost you: we may say farewell the joy of this wold, & whan he had sayd soþ his herte swelled soþ he lost his speche soþ that he coulde not speake a good wylle after. Of Aymonet and of Guycharde, what shall we say? I promise you none can tell whatche halfe of the sorow that they made, soþ that it was greate pitie to beholde. Great sorow we was made of all fourte for the loue of reynawde that was gone as ye haue heard, praying our lord to be whise and for to remoue hys bȝ therne Bus

**C**But presently leueth the historpe  
to speake of Ilarde, Guicharde, Ky-  
charde and Aymonet that were at  
Mountawban making their mone  
and returneth to speke of Reynawde  
that was gone at his aduenture, se-  
kyng his brede for to sauе his soule,

**C**how Reynawde went to Coleyne  
vpon the Rine, where he found that  
men edestid the churche of saynt Pe-  
ter. And there tooke hym a Wyll for  
to serue there the masons for þ loue  
of our lord, and did so, but at the  
last the other labourers had so great  
enuye because he dyd better hys de-  
uoyze thā they and that he was bet-  
ter loued than they of the masters,  
for the good seruise that he did: that  
the flew hym and put hym in a sacke  
and casted hym in the water of þ rine  
But by the wyll of god: his body a-  
pered abouc the water makynge  
great myzacles, so that he was na-  
med a Saynt that daye that he was  
buryed.

**I**n this party sheweth the hys  
story þ whan Reynawde was  
departed from mountawban: he tooke  
his way through the woodes & went  
a longe whyle that he eate but Ap-  
ples and Medlers wilde all that  
day, and whan the night was come:  
he layde him down vnder a tree, and  
as he wolde slepe: he made the sygne  
of the croſſe vpon him, and commen-  
ded to our lord and slepe till it was  
day. And whan the day appered: Rei-  
nawde rose vp & went on his wayes  
through the wood, and wente cuer-  
more through the trauers of þ wood-  
des well the space of. viii. dayes wi-  
thout any other meat, but wilde fruit  
and so longe he wente by hys lou-  
ning: that he cam out of the woodes  
and incontinent he founde a house  
of religion where he abode þ night,  
the monkes woulde haue giuen hym  
meat but he tooke nothing but bread  
and water. And whan the day came:  
he went on his way, & dyd so muche  
day by day that he came to Coleyne  
vpon the rine, and whan Reynawde  
was come to the Cittie: he founde the  
churche of saynt Peter a makynge,  
where were many masons and ma-  
ni labourers that serued them. And  
whan he saw this: he wente into it,  
and kneeled before the hie aulter and  
made his prayars bi great deuotion  
And as he was thus kneelynge full  
busely abouc his orysons: It came  
sodaynlye into hys mynde that he  
wolde abyde there and serue the ma-  
sons for þ honour of god & of saynt  
Peter. And whan he had made hys  
prayer: he rose vp & began to looke þ  
place well & vpon the werkemē thac  
wrought

### The booke of the soure

wrought there, and sayd to hym selfe  
that it was better to serue the Ma-  
sons, than to walke stilly in the forest  
among þ wilde beastes. & whan Reyna-  
wode had bethought hym wel; he  
wente to the mayster mason and said  
to hym. Mayster I am a straunger  
and haue no goodnes of the worlde,  
wherof I maye lyue, if it please you.  
I shall serue the Masons of luche  
rynges as them needeth for they  
werke as a poore labourer needeth,  
and whan the mayster mason heard  
Reynawode speke so: and saw he was  
a tall man and wel made: he answe-  
red to hym sweetly in this wise. By  
fcrende ye seme not to be pssued of a  
poore house, for ye are more lyke a  
kyng than a mason or a labourer.  
Wherfore I dare not put you in wer-  
ke by no wile. Notwithstanding þ  
ye be thus poorely arrayed. Mayster  
sayd Reynawode, care ye not therfore  
soz and it pleseth you: I shall serue you  
truly after my power. By fcreed said  
the mayster of þ werke, lyth it please  
you to doo so: it pleaseth me ryghte  
well, but I wyl not receyue you for  
that pris that I doo to knaues, for I  
shall pay you in conscience, after the  
werke that ye shal doo. Mayster said  
Reynawode I am wel content. Tha  
the mayster mason sayd to hym, my  
fcrende goe helpe these soure that ye  
see there, that may not bete the sto-  
ne, for they be but truantes, mayster  
sayd Reynawode, be not angry with  
the poore folke, for I wyl go fetche  
it to you anon, fcrend sayd þ mayster  
payne not your selfe thereto, for it is  
not in your purssance wout ye had  
more helpe than thylike knaues. For

the stone is of great weighe, mayster  
let me alone sayd Reynawode I shal  
bringe it to you, and whan Reyna-  
wode had sayd so he cast his man-  
tell fro him & cam to the soure men  
that helde the stone and sayd to them  
Lordes and it please you, goe fetche  
another stone, and I shal beare the  
same, fcrende sayde the soure men ye  
say well if ye can, & we wyl let you  
doo with a good wyl. Than Reyna-  
wode tooke vp þ stone and charged  
it upon his necke, and bare it upon  
the walle where it shold be set, and  
whan the other labourers saw that:  
they were abashed & mettayled gret-  
ely of it, and begā to say the due to  
the other heere is woder fro whens  
may thys deuyl become, we shal ne-  
uer winne but a litle as longe as he  
is with vs heere. And whan the ma-  
ster masons saw Reynawode beare so  
great a stone & so heuy: he was glad  
of it. And whan Reynawode had bro-  
ght the stone there as he shold be set  
the mayster sayd to hym, fcrend put  
not downe the stone yet from you.  
þy sayd Reynawode I shal wel holde  
it in my armes as longe as ye wyl,  
than the mayster made the place redy  
there as þ stone shold be set, & whan  
he was redy: he sayd to Reynawode,  
let go the stone my fcrende whan ye  
wyl, and blessed be god & the houre  
that euer ye were borne, & whan Reyna-  
wode had set downe the stone: the  
mayster comaided hym þ he shold  
set hym morter, wa good wyl sayde  
Reynawode. Than came Reynawode  
downe and laded of þ morter more  
thā x. other me shold haue doone, &  
bare it to þ mayster mason & sayd to  
þyn

hym. Mayster care not for nothyng  
for I shall serue you wel of al thing  
that ye need by the grace of god, and  
see that ye Werke as faste as ye can  
for I shall bringe you more stonnes  
and morter my selfe alone than yee  
shall con occupye, but ye haste you  
well. And Whan the mayster Ma-  
son heard Reynawde speake thus:  
he was merueried and sayd. By my  
soule freende yf ye doo halke that yee  
say: ye shall doo ynoughe. Then wēt  
Reynawde agayne and brought vp  
so many stonnes that he made with it  
a great hepe vpon þ walle snyough  
for to occupye at ones all the masōs  
that were there, and than Reynawde  
sayde to the. Fayre maysters thinke  
to werke wel, for Whan these stonnes  
ben layde and this morter occupied  
I shall bryng you more. And whā  
the masōs heard him speke so: they  
began to say amonge them that the  
churche of saynt Peter had founde a  
goodlabourer, & that he ought to be  
well rewarded, By my fayth may-  
ster sayde Reynawde I care not for  
no money. And Whan came at cuyn  
þ the laborers shold leau werke &  
receyue theiȝ money: the Mayster  
Mason set him downe for to pare þ  
labourers, which tooke. v. penys a  
day. Than the mayster called Rey-  
nawde and sayde to hym, come hy-  
ther my fayre freende and take heere  
what it pleseth you, for ye haue serued  
better than any of other. than put  
himself forth, & tooke a peny sore a-  
gaynst his Wyll. And Whan the mai-  
ster saw that he sayde to hym, by the  
bodi of God my fayre freende ye shal

haue twenty more for els my consci-  
ence shold be charged wyth your  
labour, and yf ye wyl Werke: ye shal  
euery daye haue so muche, for there  
was never so good a labouret as ye  
be one, Mayster sayde Reynawde yf  
ye Wyll that I shal werke any more:  
giv me but one peny, Whiche shal  
be for to bye bread for to susteyne  
all my body, for this that I doo: I  
doo it for the loue of God & for none  
other. Freende sayde the Mayster, I  
wyl not trouble you no moze, doo  
as ye wyl. Than tooke Reynawde  
leue of the mayster Mason and went  
to the to wone for to get hymself a lod-  
gyng and bought a penye worthe  
of bread, and so had he nomore to his  
supper but bread and a litle water.  
And whan he had eaten: he wēt and  
layed hym vpon a lytle strawe for  
to take his rest that nyght, and whā  
the day was come: Reynawde rose vp  
and Went to hys wortke and founde  
no body there, and than he Went to  
the Churche and sayd his prayers a-  
fore any image of our Ladye. This  
hangyng: the Masōs came for to  
goe to theiȝ wortke. And Whan they  
were vpon the walle: they asked yf  
the stronge man were not com. May-  
ster answered Reynawde I am heere  
wyll ye any thyng: Freende sayd thā  
the mayster Mason, bring þs stonnes  
and morter. Hyȝ sayd Reynawde I  
shall wyth a good Wyll and that a-  
non. Than set he stonnes and morter  
in great plentie, and brought it vp  
vnto them. And I promyse you that  
Reynawde laded more at ones than  
þv. other dyd, and thus serued Rey-  
nawde

l.i. naudē

## The booke of the four

ndwde the masons in the churche of  
saynt Peter at Coleyn many dayes  
and every day at evyn he tooke hys  
prey of the mayster and nomore for  
to by hym bread whas ys haue heard  
for he eate nuer but bread & dranke  
water. Thus liued Reynawde there  
a longe whyle seruing there the ma-  
sons as it is sayd, for the loue of god  
and of saynt Peter, and dyd so trulyn  
his deuoyz that the other labourers  
had great enuy at him, for they were  
all set at nought (for yloue of hym)  
of the masons, for the great seruyce y  
he did to them. Soze an angred were  
the other labourers whan they saw  
that they were all thus forslaken &  
all set a syde and sayde to eche other  
in this wylle. By god we be diffamed  
by thys greate knaue that dothe so  
muche labour, and therfore we be  
put a side of the maysters, the greate  
devyll brought hym well heere, for  
we shall never get nothyng as long  
as he is heere, for he serueth all the  
Masons alone of all that they need  
for to haue a thus we ben left alone.  
Then sayd one of them, my lelo wes  
ys ye wyl beleue me: we shal slea him  
How say ye that sayde a nother: ye  
wot well it is impossibl to vs to  
doo so, for he is horible stonge, and  
ys we set vpon hym: he shal kyll vs  
all. Freende sayd he I shall tell you  
how we shal doo so. Se you yonder  
vawte by the greate houses: yea sayd  
therother. Wit it y the greate knaue go-  
eth a sleape there eny night whan  
we ar gone home. And therfore ys ye  
wil beleue me: we shal go this night  
there wher he is a slepe, and we shal

take eche of vs a pikeax, or els an  
hamer, and therwith we shall dashe  
the brayne out of his head, and wha  
we haue thus slayne hym: we shall  
put hym in a greate sacke and shall  
cast hym vpon the riuere, that is thers  
nyghe, & thus shalbe no more haerde  
of hym. And whan the other labou-  
ers heard this traytour speake these  
accorded all to his counsel, and they  
dyd as they were purposed soner  
than they wende they shold haue  
doo. For at noone whan the Masons  
left worke and went to theyz dinner:  
the poore Reynawde went and tylled  
hymself vnder the vawte, wher he  
was wont to rest hymselfe euery  
nyght. And whan the traytours saw  
that they came to him that syryst had  
spoken the treason and tooke hym in  
greate hamer of a mason in hys hede.  
And whan they spyd that Reynawde  
was fallen a sleape: thys traytour  
wyth the hamer went to Reynawde  
softly and smote hym with the ha-  
mer well deepe into the brayne. And  
whan Reynawde felte the stroke y  
the traytour had gyuen hym: he set  
his armes in maner of a crosse vpon  
his brest and sayd in this maner. O  
good lord Iesu Chrysostome haue mercys  
on my soule, and wyl pardon them  
that hath brought me to my death,  
and whan he had sayd these wordes:  
the soule departed out of the bodye.  
And whan the traytour had thus  
slayne Reynawde: they put hym in  
to a greate sacke that they had ordene-  
ned therfore, and than they laded the  
cart wherin they brought the stones  
with the body of hym, and so carayd  
him

him into the ryuer of Ryne, wherin they cast him, & whan they had doone so they laded the carre with stones & brought hem to the church worke as they were wont to doo, & as they were by the way: they met the mayster mason, that sayd to the. By my sayth galantes I con you now thā he for ye mende your selfe. For ye haue doone great diligence byth dypner that ye haue laden so many stones, and that ye ben so ferre wyth them to the wōrke warde. Mayster sayd the traytors mocke not wyth vs so, but go to your purse and giue vs some drynkyng money.

**S**ore meruayled was þ mayster of that he saw his labouers more diligent than they were accustomed. Than the labouers began to say to þ mayster of the wōrke by maner of a mocke, where is that great burden that he helpeth not now I holde hym gone without leue, by cause he might not labour no leger, for we heard say that he shold never ceasse till he had founde hym agayne. And whan the mayster mason heard that he was soþ and said to them agayne. By my sayth I beleue that ye haue chased hym away, but I promise you yf I can wryt that ye haue doone soþ it were better for you that ye were at Iherusalem. Mayster sayd the labouers ye may well say to vs what ye wyl, but we dyd never say ought to him that shoulde displease hym. And whan the noble Reynawde was thus cast into the ryuer of Ryne by the labouers of

the churche of saynt Peter: ye must wryt that he went not to the botome of the water, but went haþde aboue the water a longe the streme. And at that our Loþde the wed soþ hym a sayze myacle. For all the sysshe of the ryuer gathered them aboue the corps, and by the strength of the fisshes it was carred, and went no farrer with the streme by the wayl of our loþde. And the greate sysshes put theymself vnder hym and bare hym vpon the water so that he apered to every mans syght. And therer the fisshes bare hym soþ vnto night. And whan the night was come apered aboue the corps a greate quanteþie of torches by the vertue of our loþde, & aungelles that songe therre so melodiously: that they that heard it wold never haue gone fro it. And so þaþ trouþ therre was so greate lyght aboue the corps that al they þaþ we it wende that all the water of the Ryne had be a fyre. And whan the folke of the citie saw so greate a myacle: they ran all thyþher boþe men and women and chylðren. And also the archebisþop of saynt Peter wæþ ther with al his college in a sayze procession, syngyng by greate deuotion, and tarped vpon the Ryne, soþ they durst not goe no ferreþ, and they saw the fisshes that bare byþ the corps aboue the water. And whan they that were therre saw that: they were abashed & meruayled greatly what it might be, and began to say þ one to the other. God what maþ he be, for whome our loþde the wed soþ a myacle. Lordes sayd þ archbishop

## The booke of the four

bysshop. I shall tell you as myne a-  
upse giue me. Wyt it that it is the  
bodye of some saynt that our Lorde  
wyll haue worshipped that is come  
heare from somwhere. Whiche God  
wyll not that he be lost, nor drowned  
in the water. See ye not how the fis-  
ches holde hym aboue the water, by  
the vertue of our lorde. Than þ bis-  
hop commaunded that men shold  
go see what it was, and anon folke  
Went there w hōtēs, & they founde þ  
it was the great man that was one  
of the labouers with the masons in  
the churche of saynt Peter. And whā  
the mayster of the wōrke lawe this:  
he was greatly abashed, and wenc  
to them that had slayne hym, & sayd  
to them in thys maner of wyle. Be  
hōresons false traytours, ye haue  
slayne þ good man, say ye þ trouth,  
þorlycē deny it. I shal proue it vpon  
yon. And whā þ labouers heard þ  
maister mason speke thus: they begā  
to crye, and sayd. By God mayster,  
we haue doone it without doubt for  
enuy that we had at hym. And ther-  
fore let vs be drowned, haged or dra-  
wen, or what iuste þe wyl. For we  
haue well deserved for to be punys-  
hed. And whā the archebisshop  
hearde the traytours speake so: he  
began for to wepe ful cenderly, and  
at his colege also. And the archebis-  
shop was counseled that he shold  
let go the murdereres at theyr au-  
tore for to do penance for theyr sin-  
nes, the whiche chyngē the archebis-  
shop dyd wylth a good wyl. Than  
was the body of Reynawde brought  
to lande, and was put vpon a carre

for to beare hym to the churche, wher  
as he was had worshypfully wylth  
sayre procession. And whā þ corps  
was in the churche: the archebisshop  
made him ready for to syng the masse  
by great deuotion. And whā that þ  
service was doone: the archebisshop  
wolde haue gone a processyon wylth  
the corps aboue the churche, & com-  
maunded fourt lordes þ Were there  
that they shold bere the corps. And  
than the barons wolde haue doone  
þys commaundement, but whā  
they came thereto: they coulde not  
move the corps by no strenght that  
they could put thereto. Soze mer-  
uyled were the barons, whā they  
saw that, and sayd vnto eche other.  
Now may we well knowe that we  
be not worthy for to touche this ho-  
ly corps. For we be wicked synners  
wherfore let vs go for to shryue vs &  
put our seise in good estate. And  
while that they speake thus together:  
the corps rose vp of hym selfe, and  
was boȝnt, no man knoweth howe  
out of the churche into the carre, whis-  
che anon moued and went his way-  
es streyght out of the citie, wherof  
they were al greatly meruayled, and  
whā the carre was out of Cleyne:  
he went a pace all the hye waye. And  
whā the people saw that: they begā  
all to wepe bycause þ corps wolde  
not abyde. Than sayd the archebis-  
shop vnto them. Syrs now may ye  
well see that this is a holy corps by  
the great myracles that our Lorde  
sheweth by him now, and al this day  
afore vs all. Wherfore let vs goe af-  
ter him for to worship hym. For it  
were

were not very well doone for to let hym go thus alone. My lord sayd þ people, ye say wel, & than at the clergie and at the comyn people litle and great that myght go: folowed þ corps. And ye ought to wit that in all the citie of Loleyn abode nother man nor woman, but went with þ corps and all the clergie folowed after singyng in great deuotion. So muche went the carre that he came to a lytle towne that is called Croyne, and there he abode syll. And ye must wit that our lord dyd shew there many fayre myracles for the loue of the holy body, for al sycke people of what syckenes it was that came there for to worshyp the holye bodye: were whole incontinent. This happed of the noble knight Reynawde of mouawban, as ye haue hearde. And ye ought to wyt that the renome of the holye body was so spred all aboute, that folke came to Croyne wher it abode from ferre wayes for to seeke hym, and he made there so fayre myracles that of all the Realme and of almayne folke drewen therethen. And so muche were wox the the offringes that were done there within a shorte while: that of a litle chapell there as the bodye rested, whiche was of our lady, is now a roiall churche and a great. And whan the holye body was abyden in this lytle chapell as it is sayd, wher god made contynually myracles: the archebisshop of Loleyn & al the clergi came to the corps & uncouered his visage that euery body shold see him þ came there, þ haply þ ony man or woman myght

know hym for to haue his name, for none coulde name hym, but the holye corps. But there came no man that could know. And whan the archebisshop saw þ no body could say what he was: he was so sy for it; for yf he had known his name: he wold haue put him in a shryne of golde, because of the great myracles that he made dayly, for he made the deke to haire, þ blinde to see, the lame to go & ryght many that were dombe he made to speake, & often times aperte synges of wire brennyng aboute the corps.

**N**ow shall ye heare howe the noble Reynawde was known. Yee ought to wyt that the bretcher of Beynawde, that is to Wynt Alarde, Guicharde & Richarde were on a daye vpon mountayne so soyle that they could haue no ridinges of theyþ bretcher Reynawde. Than cam a Pylgrime forthby that salued the barons. Pylgrime sayde Alarde, Iro Whes come ye: yf ye wet any tydinges of Ielit vs I pray you. Lordes said the pigrime It is a good wyl I shall tell you that I know. Wynt it that I come out of Amaine, from a towne that is called Croyne by Loleyn vpon the tyne, wher I haue seen many great myracles doone of god, for the loue of a man that came to the Litle but late ago, the whiche was so great that every body said there that he was a Siaunte. And wynt ye that whan he came there: þ he saue men make the churche of saynt Peter, so dyd he present there bys seruice to the mayster mason, the whiche recey

## The booke of the four

ned hym gladly. Shortly for to say: this great man dyd wonder of bea-  
tynge of stones and of morter. For he  
bare moze at ones:than. xv. other of  
the labourers that were there with  
him, and he was all day wout meate  
sane at clyn:he tooke a peny that he  
gate, for no moze he wolde haue for  
hys laboure a day, and therwyth he  
bought hym a peny lufe, and dranke  
none other to it, but water, and thā  
he went to his rest vpon a litle straw  
vnder a great daute. And ye muste  
wyt, that this great man was well  
loued of the maysters masons of the  
sayd churche, Whyche Wolde often  
haue gyuen him meate and wypne, &  
more money. But he wolde never  
take nothynge but a peny onely by þ  
day, for to brye hym selfe a peny lufe  
as I told you afoze. He serued so wel  
all the masons there that they were  
more contente of hym alone:then of  
the other labourers. And whan the  
labourers saw that they were so ly-  
tle set by for þ loue of this great ma-  
they were soze an angred, and tooke  
great enuy at hym and conspired to-  
gyther for to slea hym shamefully.  
So dyd they aspye hym wher as he  
slept vnder the baute, whyle that þ  
mayster masons were gone to therz  
dyner: and then one of them came  
to hym with great hamer in his hand  
and brayned him, then they put hym  
in a sacke and carayd hym in a cart  
to the kyuer of the Ryne, Where  
they cast hym. And wyt it that whā  
they had doone so: our lord shewed  
ther a great myracle. For al the fis-  
ches of the Ryne assembed hem a-

boute the corps, and made þ abyde  
in one place aboue the water. And  
whan that the nyght was come:au-  
gilles were hearde there, Whyche  
songe melodiously the seruyce of the  
dead so hys:that all they of the Lijje  
myght haue heard them, and it seemed  
that al þ water about hym had ben in  
a fyre of the greate lyght that was  
seen there. Then came the archebis-  
hop of Loleyne wyth all his colage  
and made the corps to be taken and  
brought in a Carte to the Churche.  
And whan he was there:the Arch-  
ebisshop songe masse, for this was  
in the mornynge, and whan that the  
seruyce was doone:the Archebisshop  
sayd to fourre Lordes Whyche were  
there, that they shold take þe corps  
for to haue hym into his graue  
wyth fayre procesyon. But these  
fourre barons coulde neuer moue hym  
from þ place wher as he was. But  
the corps tacontynent to every bo-  
dies sight, that was there, was brou-  
ght into the carte agayne, Wyth the  
wynkelyng of an eye, and sodeynly  
the carte departed, and wente a way  
alone out of the towne, as good a  
pace as thoughe ten horses had dra-  
wen at it, Whyche was soze agaynst  
the wyl of the people that wept ful  
tendely, because that it wolde not a  
byde with them. But all they of the  
Lijje, bothe lytie and great went a  
procesyon after it, vnto a lytle towne  
where the corps of the great man a-  
bode styll Whyche is called Lroyne  
in a lytle chapell of our lady, where  
he doth now many a fayre myracle,  
for I ensure you þ al the sickle folkes  
that

I seeke hym there be made whole, &  
returme to their home in good helth.  
And so I haue left there the archebis-  
shop of Coleyne, and all the clergye  
that hath doo make of þ offerynges  
that ben gauen there vnto thyþ holy  
corps a fayre place and a roial chur-  
che, there as the sayd chapell of our  
lady was afore.

**W**han Alarde, Guicharde and  
Rycharde, heard the pilgry-  
me speake so; they began all three to  
weepe ful soore for pitie that they had  
of theyþ brother Reynawde, for well  
they knew, it was he of Whome the  
Pylgryme spake of. Alas my bre-  
thren sayd Rycharde. Now ben we  
well destroyed, and vndoone for ever  
more. For I know wel that it is our  
deere brother that we haue sought  
so longe. Wyt it þ the three brethren  
made there so great soore we, that it  
cannot be rehersed. And whan they  
had made this greate soore: they  
ooke leave of the pilgrime and thar-  
ked hym, and went to make them re-  
dy, & than tooke theyþ waye toward  
Croyne, by Coleyne vpon the Ryne.  
And they dyd so muche by theyþ tour-  
neys: that they came vnto Croyne.  
And lyghted before the churche they  
and theyþ folke, wher they found so  
great flowing and gathering of the  
people and so great prese of folke; þ  
wyth great paine they myght entre  
wythin the Churche. And whan the  
knyghtes were within: they Wente  
nyghe the holye corps that was v-  
pon a fayre berte all vncouered, and

173  
saw so great lyght aboute the corps  
as there had ben an hundred torches  
Than wente they as nyghe hym as  
they coulde for to looke hym in the  
face and anon ther knew that he was  
theyþ brother, & with that they loked  
vpon hym: they fell downe in a swo-  
one to the erthe. And whan the arche-  
bysshop saw that he was soore abas-  
hed and sayd to some of his College.  
Syzs I beleue that we shall soone  
know that we haue desyred so long.  
For I wene that these lordes knowe  
wel this holy corps. This hanging:  
were the three brethren come agayn  
to the meselte, and began to crye and  
fare as they had ben mad, than sayd  
Alarde al weepynge in thyþ maner,  
Alas what shall we nowe caplyng  
knyghtes doo, poore of honour and  
of al wele, syth that we haue lost our  
brother by Whome we were so sore  
doubted and dyred. Alas deere brother  
Who was so hardy to laye hande on  
you I beleue that he knew not yow  
debonayrie & kindnes, for he wolde  
not haue slayne you so cruellye. And  
than he turned hym to warde bys  
two brethren and sayd. Sþy fayre bre-  
thren we ought wel to be sorry, syth  
þ we haue lost our brother Reynawde  
that was all our hope our trust and  
comfort. Alas sayde Rycharde, bre-  
ther Reynawde whi had yeuer that  
courage for to habandone vs as  
ye did: sayng that ye loued vs so mu-  
che. Alas ye stale awaie yorself by  
night, for to come amon ge þ handes  
of the murderers, that haue slayne  
you so cruelly. Alas they wyl not þ  
great domage that is of your death.  
Whan

The booke of the fourre

Whan the thre brethern had wepte  
ynough in greate sobbynges and la-  
mentacions, for plore of they; deere  
brother Reynawde: they went & kis-  
sed the corps on the mouth, the one  
after the other, and with this they fel  
downe agayne in wounre. And whā  
they were come agayn to themselves;  
Rycharde began to crye and saye. Al-  
as saye b̄retheru, now ben we loste  
for euer. For we shall nomore be let  
by, nother doubted, noz dyed more  
than children, Wherfore I say that  
we shold flea our selfe, to the ende  
that we may be with you, for we ou-  
ght not to liue after your death. wit  
it þ who had be therre he shold haue  
had an harder herte but he shold haue  
wept so; to see þ thre brethern make  
þeþ mone.

**W**han the archebishop and þ  
Burges that were there  
saw the greate sorowe that the thre  
knights made: the good Archebis-  
hop came to them and sayd, Lorde  
þe re not dyspleased of that I shall  
say to you. Syȝ to my leynyng, ye  
doo not wel so; to make so greate so-  
rolo nor to discomfort your selfe so  
much as ye do, but rather ye shold  
make greate ioy, and be glad for your  
brother that is a layne in heuen, the  
whiche had suffred martyrdome in þ  
seruice of our lord, wherof ye may  
see that he rewarderh him wel soþt.  
For ye see now before your eyen the  
greate miracles þ he dooth, wherfore  
I pray you that ye w̄ll recomforþe  
your selfe. And tell vs þt it please  
you what ye ben, and howe is þys

holy body named, and what þys na-  
me was whā he liued in this wōrld  
to the ende that his name be w̄ryen  
aboue his tombe. And whan his bre-  
thern heard the archebishop speake  
thus: they began a lytle to leue theyz  
sorow. And thā Arde that was  
cheldest after Reynawde sayd to him  
Lorde syþe it please you to knoþe  
what we be and ho we this corps is  
calleo; I shal tel it you w̄out faute.  
Ye muste w̄yt that this corps was  
called (whan he was amouȝe vs ali-  
ue) Reynawde of Mountawban the  
ryght w̄orthi knyght, and we thre  
that ben heire are his brethern, and  
wel I wot that ye haue heard speake  
of the fourre sonnes of Aymon, the  
whiche Charlemayne the greate king  
of Fraunce warred so longe. Then  
whan the archebishop and the peo-  
ple hearde that they were the fourre  
sonnes of Aymon, of the whiche all  
the wōrld spake, and that the holy  
corps was the good Reynawde of  
Mountawban the noble and valiant  
knight; they began all to weape for  
pitie and for ioye, because they sawe  
al before them the moste noble & w̄or-  
thiest knyght of the wōrld, that in  
his lyfe was more to dñe than any  
man al iþue, that was dead in the ser-  
uise of our lord, doynge penaunce.  
After that these thre brethern had  
thus left a lytle theyz sorow: they  
made theyz brother to be layde in his  
tombe, that was ryght riche, that the  
archebishop had doone make where  
the holy corps resteth yet at this day  
as euydently is knowen, and he is  
called layne Reynawde the martyre.

The

The memory of him was that time  
put in wryting auctentably, & every  
yere is there kept for him great solēp-  
nitie and feast. And after the sepul-  
turyng of the holye corps : the bre-  
thren went agayne into theyr owne  
Countrie.

**M**y fayre lordes who that this  
present booke shall rede or  
heare, we shall pray our lord god &  
the gloriouse Haynt Reynawde the  
marter, that he giue vs grace to per-  
seuer, and continue our lyfs in good  
worches, by the whiche we may haue  
at our endyng the life that euer shal  
last.

A M E R.

Here finissheth the hystory of the  
noble & valiaunt knyght Reynawde  
of Mounteban, and his thre bre-  
thren. Imprinted at London, by  
Wynkyn de Worde, the viii. daye of  
Maye, and yere of our lord. M. C  
CCCL. iiiii, at the request and com-  
maundement of the noble and pu-  
issant erie, the Erle of Oxenforde,  
And now Imprinted in the yere of  
our Lord. M. CCL. iiiii. the  
vi. daye of Maye, By wylliam Cop-  
land, for Thomas Petet.